

Class PC 2109

Book .L7

PRESENTED BY

1849

THE FOLLOWING WORKS
BY A. BOLMAR,

May be had from any of the Principal Booksellers in the United States.

1st. A Collection of One Hundred Fables, with two Keys: one for the literal and free translation, and the other for the pronunciation of the French text.

2d. Les Aventures de Télémaque with a Key for the literal and free translation of the first eight books, and intended as a Sequel to the Fables.

3d. A Collection of Colloquial Phrases, on every topic necessary to maintain conversation; arranged under different heads; with numerous remarks on the peculiar pronunciation and use of various words. The whole so disposed as considerably to facilitate the acquisition of a correct pronunciation of the French.

4th. A Complete Treatise on the Genders of French Nouns; in a small pamphlet of 14 pages. This little work, which is the most complete of the kind, is the fruit of great labour, and will prove of immense service to every learner.

5th. All the French Verbs, both Regular and Irregular, in a small volume.

The verbs *être* to be, *avoir* to have, *parler* to speak, *finir* to finish, *recevoir* to receive, *vendre* to sell, *se lever* to rise, *se bien porter* to be well, *s'en aller* to go away, are there all conjugated throughout—*affirmatively*—*negatively*—*interrogatively*—and *negatively* and *interrogatively*; an arrangement which will greatly facilitate the scholar in his learning the French verbs, and which will save the master the trouble of explaining over and over again what may be much more easily learned from books, thus leaving him more time to give his pupil, during the lesson, that instruction which cannot be found in books, and which must be learned from a master.

6th. The Institutes of Morality, for the instruction of Youth, with numerous Scriptural References, by questions and answers. Translated by Eli K. Price and A. Bolmar.

This little book on Morality will soon be published for the use of French Scholars, in the form of French and English dialogues.

N. B. The above *Treatise on the Genders*, and the volume of *French Verbs*, which may be had separately, are to form part of a *French Grammar* on quite a new plan, and which will soon be published. Like the *Fables* and *Telemachus*, the *French Grammar* will be calculated for school and self instruction.

A KEY to the exercises of this Grammar will shortly be published.

That Key will be so arranged as to suit equally well this present edition of Levizac's, or the edition sold previous to the publishing of this one.

A

THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL

GRAMMAR

OF THE

FRENCH LANGUAGE;

IN WHICH

THE PRESENT USAGE IS DISPLAYED AGREEABLY TO THE DECISIONS OF THE FRENCH ACADEMY. BY M. DE LEVIZAC.

WITH

NUMEROUS CORRECTIONS AND IMPROVEMENTS,

AND WITH THE ADDITION OF

A COMPLETE TREATISE

ON THE

GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS,

AS ALSO WITH THE ADDITION OF

ALL THE FRENCH VERBS,

BOTH REGULAR AND IRREGULAR, CONJUGATED AFFIRMATIVELY—NEGATIVELY —INTERROGATIVELY—AND NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

BY A. BOLMAR,

PRINCIPAL OF THE WEST CHESTER ACADEMY, AND AUTHOR OF SEVERAL WORKS TO FACILITATE THE ACQUIREMENT OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

TWENTY-NINTH EDITION.

PHILADELPHIA:

CAREY AND HART.

SOLD BY GRIGG & ELLIOTT, HOGAN & THOMPSON, THOMAS, COWPERTHWAIT & CO., *Philadelphia.*—WILEY & PUTNAM, A. S. BARNES & CO., PAINE & BURGESS, *New York.*—W. D. TICKNOR, C. C. LITTLE & CO., *Boston.*—J. STEELE, *New Orleans.*—W. H. BERRETT, *Charleston.*—F. TAYLOR, *Washington.*

1849.

PC2109
.L7
1849

Entered according to the act of the Congress of the United States, A. D. 1834, by Anthony Bolmar, in the office of the Clerk of the Eastern District of Pennsylvania.

Oct. 31 1935

Printed by T. K. & P. G. Collins.

CONTENTS.

PAGE

Names of the French Letters..... 1
Observation on the French Letters 1
Sounds of the French Letters..... 2
Table of the Simple Sounds of Vowels..... 7
Table of Dipthongs..... 8
Observation on the Pronunciation of *a* in *mare* and *è* in *mère*..... 10
Pronunciation and Accentuation..... 11
Introduction to the Exercises 12
Elision or Apostrophe, &c..... 14
Words alike in both Languages..... 16
English Words which become French by changing their Termination..... 17

PART I.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR NATURE AND INFLECTIONS.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Substantive or Noun 18
Of Genders..... 19
List of Nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and *eure* for the feminine 32
List of Nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and *rice* for the feminine 36
List of Nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and which form their feminine variously..... 38
Of Numbers 39
Formation of the plural of French Substantives or Nouns..... 39
Formation of the plural of Compound Nouns..... 41

CHAPTER II.

Of the Definite Article..... 41
Elision of the Article 42
Contraction of the Article..... 43
Cases in which Contraction does not take place..... 43
General Rule of the Article..... 44
Of the Article in a Partitive Sense 45

CHAPTER III.

Of the Adjective 46
Of the Formation of the Feminine of French Adjectives..... 46
Of the Formation of the plural of the French Adjectives..... 51
Of the Degrees of Signification of French Adjectives 54

PAGE
Of the Positive 54
Of the Comparative of Superiority 54
Of the Comparative of Inferiority 54
Of the Comparative of Equality 55
Observations on *Meilleur*, *Moindre*, and *Pire* 55
Of the Superlative 56
Of the Superlative Absolute 56
Of the Superlative Relative 56
Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive 57
When the Adjective relates to two Substantives Singular of the same Gender 57
When the Adjective relates to two Substantives Singular of different Genders 58
Nouns and Adjectives of Number 58
Observations on several Numerical Adjectives 60

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronouns 61
Of the Personal Pronouns 61
Pronouns of the 1st Person 61
Pronouns of the 2d Person 62
Pronouns of the 3d Person 63
Reflected and Reciprocal Pronouns 64
Of the Relative Pronoun EN 65
Of the Relative Pronoun Y 66
Of Possessive Pronouns 66
Pronominal Adjectives relating to *one* Person expressed 67
Pronominal Adjectives relating to *many* Persons expressed 67
Pronominal Adjectives relating to *one* Person understood 68
Pronominal Adjectives relating to *many* Persons understood 68
Of the Relative Pronouns 69
Of Pronouns Absolute 69
Of Demonstrative Pronouns 70
Of Indefinite Pronouns 71
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 1st Class 71
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 2d Class 72
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 3d Class 73
Of Indefinite Pronouns of the 4th Class 73

CHAPTER V.

Of the Verbs 74

☞ *See at the end of the Verbs for a Table of the Contents of the part containing the Verbs.*

Exercises on *Avoir* to have Affirmatively 74
Exercises on *Avoir* to have Negatively 77
Exercises on *Avoir* to have Interrogatively 79
Exercises on *Avoir* to have Interrogatively and Negatively 79
Exercises on *Etre* to be 80
Exercises on the 1st Conjugation in ER 83
Exercises on the 2d Conjugation in IR 87
Exercises on the 3d Conjugation in OIR 89
Exercises on the 4th Conjugation in RE 91

PAGE
Of the Pronominal Verbs 94
Of the Passive Verbs 97
Of the Neuter Verbs 98
Of the Impersonal or Unipersonal Verbs 98
Of the Verb FALLOIR 99
Of the Verb Y AVOIR 99
Exercises on the Irregular Verbs of the 1st Conjugation 100
Exercises on the Irregular Verbs of the 2d Conjugation 100
Exercises of the Irregular Verbs of the 3d Conjugation 103
Exercises on the Irregular Verbs of the 4th Conjugation 105

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Prepositions 110
Of the Prepositions denoting Place 110
Of the Prepositions denoting Order 111
Of the Prepositions denoting Union 111
Of the Prepositions denoting Opposition 112
Of the Prepositions denoting Derivation 112
Of the Prepositions denoting the End 112
Of the Preposition denoting the Cause and Means 113
Of the Preposition *à* 113
Of the Preposition *de* 114
Of the Preposition *en* 114

CHAPTER VII.

Of the Adverbs 115

CHAPTER VIII.

Of the Conjunctions 119

CHAPTER IX.

Of Interjections 122

PART II.

SYNTAX,

OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Substantive 123
Of Compound Nouns 123

CHAPTER II.

Of the Article 124
A Comparative Table on the use of the Article 125
On Measure and Weight 127

CHAPTER III.

PAGE
Of the Adjectives 128
Difference of Construction between the English and French Languages 129
Regimen of the Adjectives 130
Promiscuous Exercises 130

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronouns 131
Of the Personal Pronouns 131
Of the Place of Personal Pronouns 131
Of Personal Pronouns used as Subject 131
Of Personal Pronouns used as Regimen 133
Of the Relative Pronouns 135
Of Pronouns Absolute 138
Of Demonstrative Pronouns 140
Of Indefinite Pronouns 141
Of Indefinite Pronouns 1st Class 141
Of Indefinite Pronouns 2d Class 144
Of Indefinite Pronouns 3d Class 145
Of Indefinite Pronouns 4th Class 149
A General Exercise on the Pronouns 151

CHAPTER V.

Of the Verb 153
Agreement of the Verb with the Subject 153
O the Regimen of Verbs 154
Of the Nature and Use of Moods and Tenses 157
Of the Indicative 157
Of the Conditional 160
Of the Imperative 160
Of the Subjunctive 161
Of the Infinitive 162
Of the Participle 162
Of the Participle present 162
Of the Participle past 163
Agreement of the Participle past with its Subject 163
Agreement of the Participle past with its Regimen 165

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Adverbs 168
Situation of the Adverbs 168

CHAPTER VII.

Of the Conjunction 170
Of the Conjunction *que* 170
Government of Conjunctions 171
Conjunctions that are followed by an Infinitive 171
Conjunctions that are followed by the Indicative 172
Conjunctions that are followed by the Subjunctive 173
Promiscuous Exercises on the nine Parts of Speech 173

PART III.

PAGE
IDIOMS, OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES ... 177

CHAPTER I.

Of the Substantive 177

CHAPTER II.

Of the Article..... 179
Cases in which the Article is to be used..... 179
Cases in which the Article is not used..... 183

CHAPTER III.

Of the Adjectives..... 187
Of the Adjective with the Article 187
The Place of the Adjectives..... 189
Regimen of the Adjectives 191
Adjectives of Number..... 192

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronouns 194
Of the Personal Pronouns 194
Office of Personal Pronouns..... 194
On the Pronoun SOI 198
Cases in which the Pronouns ELLE, ELLES, EUX, LUI, LEUR, may apply to things..... 199
Difficulty respecting the Pronoun LE explained 201
Repetition of the Personal Pronouns 203
Relation of the Pronouns of the 3d person to a Noun as expressed before..... 205
Possessive Pronouns..... 206
Explanation of some difficulties attendant on the Use of the Possessive Pronouns..... 206
Relative Pronouns 210
Of QUI 210
Of QUE 212
Of LEQUEL and DONT 213
Of QUOI 214
Of OU..... 214
Absolute Pronouns..... 215
Demonstrative Pronouns 216

CHAPTER V.

Pronouns Indefinite..... 220
Of ON..... 220
Of QUICONQUE..... 220
Of CHACUN 220
Of PERSONNE 221
Of L'UN ET L'AUTRE 222

PAGE
Of NI L'UN NI L'AUTRE 222
Of TOUT and RIEN 222
Of QUELQUE—QUE and QUEL QUE 223

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Verb 225
Agreement of the Verb with the Subject 225
Of the Collective Partitive 226
Place of the Subject with regard to the Verb 227
Government of the Verbs 230
On the use Proper or Accidental of Moods and Tenses 232
Of the Indicative 232
Of the Conditional 238
Remark on the use of the Conditional and Future 239
Of the Subjunctive 240
Relations between the Tenses of the Indicative 242
Relations between the Tenses of the Subjunctive and the Indicative 244
Further Observations upon the Conditional and Subjunctive 247
Relations between the Tenses of the different Moods 248
Relations of the Indicative 248
Relations to the Conditional and of the Conditional 249
Relations of the Present and Future Absolute, &c 249
Principal Relations with the Subjunctive 250
Of the Infinitive 251

CHAPTER VII.

Of Prepositions 253
Of the Use of the Article with Prepositions 254
Repetition of the Prepositions 255
Of the Government of Prepositions 256

CHAPTER VIII.

Of the Adverbs 257
Of the Negative *ne* 257
Of the Place of the Negatives 257
Of the Use of *pas* and *point* 257
When *may* both *pas* and *point* be omitted 258
When *ought* both *pas* and *point* to be omitted 259
Of *plus* and *davantage* 262

CHAPTER IX.

Of Grammatical Construction 263
Of Inversion 267
Of the Ellipsis 268
Of the Pleonasm 268
Of the Syllepsis 269

CHAPTER X.

Of Grammatical Discordances 269
Of Amphibologies 270
Of Gallicisms 271

PAGE
FREE EXERCISES 275
PHRASES 283
Examples of Phrases on the principal Difficulties of the French Language 283
On the Collective Partitive 283
On some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with *Avoir* to have... 283
On Words of Quantity..... 283
On the Personal Pronouns 284
On *soi*, *lui*, *soi-même*, and *lui-même* 284
On the Relative Pronouns..... 284
On the Demonstrative Pronouns 285
On the verb *Avoir* to have employed Impersonally 286
Promiscuous Phrases 287
Phrases in which the Article is used..... 288
Phrases in which the Article is omitted 289
Phrases on the Pronoun LE 290
Phrases on the Participle Past 291
Phrases on the Relations of Moods and Tenses..... 291
Phrases on the Negative NE 292
Phrases on some Delicacies of the French Language 294

EXPLANATION

Of the Abbreviations and Signs used in this Grammar.

---

h. when the letter *h* at the beginning of a word is followed by a (.) *period*, it shows that *h* is mute in that word.

m. after or in the place of a French word, shows the word to be *masculine.*

f. after or in the place of a French word, shows the word to be *feminine.*

pl. under an English word or after a French one, shows that that French word is to be put in the *plural*, though the corresponding English word is in the singular.

art. put before a French word indicates that the definite article must be put before that word, though there is no article before the corresponding English word.

* an asterisk (*) under an English word, means that that word is not to be expressed in French.

When under an English word there is neither a French word or an *, it means that the French of that word has already been given in some previous exercise, or is to be Frenchified according to the directions given page 16th and 17th.

The Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. placed before French words, show the order in which they must be placed in writing down the French exercises. If the Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. are placed before English words, they show the order in which the corresponding French words must be placed in writing down the French exercises.

When several English words are put between a parenthesis (), they are all expressed by the French word or words placed under them.

The letters A. P. C. D., &c. placed under an English verb, shows the tense in which the French corresponding verb must be put.

GRAMMAR

OF THE

FRENCH LANGUAGE.

1. French Grammar is the art that teaches how to speak and write the French Language with propriety.

2. The French alphabet consists of twenty-five letters:

3. *Of the Names of French Letters.*

a, b, c, d, e, f, g†, h, i, j†, k, l, m, n, o, p, q†,
ah, *bay*, *say*, *day*, *a*, *eff*,**zhay*, *ash*, *e*,**zhee*, *kah*, *el*, *em*, *en*, *o*, *pay*, *ku*,
r, s, t, u†, v, x, y, z.
air, *ess*, *tay*, *u*, *vay*, *eeks*, *ee-greck*, *zed*.

† 4. The names of letters thus marked, † cannot be given with precision, and must be learned from a teacher.

5. Letters are either vowels or consonants.

6. A vowel is a letter that forms a perfect sound when uttered by itself.

7. There are in French six vowels: a, e, i, o, u, y.

8. The letter *y* is by some considered as a consonant, but as it has the sound of *i* and often of two *i's*, it is preferable to call it a vowel.

9. A consonant is a letter that forms but an imperfect sound when uttered by itself.

10. There are 19 consonants, b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z.

11. The letter *w* which is named in French *double vay*, does not belong to the French alphabet, it is never met with in French books, except in foreign words.

12. *Of the Sounds of the French Letters.*

The *sound* of a letter, or of a combination of letters, must not be confounded with the *name* of the letter or letters; for instance in English, the letter *a*, which is named *ay*, has several *sounds*, as heard in f*a*te, f*a*r, f*a*t, f*a*ll, wh*a*t; the name of *d*, in English, is *dee*, and its *sound*, that heard at the beginning and at the end of the word *dead* when pronounced. The letters *sh*, are

* *Zh* in the name of *g* and *j* are pronounced like z, glazier.

named, in English, *ess*, and *aitch*, and their *sound*, when to gether, is that heard in *she*, pronounced *sh*-e. The same might be said of other letters, and combinations of letters.

13. *Of the Sounds of the French Simple Vowels.*

a, sounds like-*a* in *a*t, f*a*t, m*a*t, r*a*t, m*a*rry, fl*a*t.
â, sounds like-*a* in *a*rm, b*a*rn, f*a*r, d*a*rt, p*a*rt, m*a*rk.
e, sounds like-*u* in t*u*b, b*u*rn, g*u*st, l*u*rk, r*u*st, d*u*sk.
é, sounds like-*a* in *a*le, b*a*le, c*a*ve, d*a*le, f*a*te, g*a*me.
è, sounds like-*a* in m*a*re, f*a*re, or *ai* in *ai*r, p*ai*r, f*ai*r.*
ê, sounds like-*e* in th*e*re, wh*e*re.†
i, sounds like-*i* in *i*diom, d*i*p, k*i*t, b*i*g, t*i*n, p*i*n.
î, sounds like-*ee* in *ee*l, b*ee*, d*ee*r, k*ee*l, r*ee*d, p*ee*r.
o, sounds like-*o* in *o*pera, n*o*t, cr*o*p, fr*o*g, pr*o*p, tr*o*t.
ô, sounds like-*o* in *o*ver, m*o*re, n*o*, b*o*ne, r*o*pe, n*o*te.
u†, sounds neither like *u* as heard in t*u*be, nor *u* as heard in b*u*ll.

14. It has nearly the sound of *w* in the word *twenty*, in which this letter is not pronounced so full as in other words. In order to pronounce *u*, let the pupil pronounce the English letter *e;* then, without changing the posi tion of his organs, let him close his lips a little more than for the *e*, and articulate the sound of the French *u*.

û†, has the same sound as the above, only a little longer.
y, sounds like *i*, in *i*diom, d*i*p, b*i*t, b*i*g.
y, sometimes sounds like two *i's*.
y, sometimes has the sound of *y* in *y*ard, *y*ear, and may then be considered as a consonant.

15. *Of the Sounds of the French Compound Vowels.*

eu, sounds like *u* in m*u*ff, c*u*ff, p*u*ff.
eû†, has the same sound as the above, only much longer.
eur, that is *eu* followed by *r* sounds exactly like *ur* in bl*ur*, f*ur*.
ou, sounds like *oo* in t*oo*, or *u* in b*u*ll, f*u*ll, p*u*ll.
oû, sounds like *oo* in f*oo*l, m*oo*n, c*oo*l, m*oo*d

16. *Of the Sounds of the French Nasal Vowels.*

an†, sounds nearly like *an* in r*an*g, s*an*g, spr*an*g, h*an*g.
in†, sounds nearly like *en* in str*en*gth, str*en*gthen, l*en*gth.
on†, sounds nearly like *on* in wr*on*g, l*on*g.
un†, sounds nearly like *un* in cl*un*g, h*un*g, r*un*g, s*un*g.

17. *Of the Compound Sounds, of oi, oî.*

oi†, sounds nearly like *o* in *o*pera and *a* in *a*t, put together; as b*oi*ter, *to limp*—pronounce bo*a* té.

* See page 10. † When *there* and *where* are pronounced with great emphasis.

oît, sounds nearly like *o* in *o*pera and *a* in *a*rm, put together; as bo*î*te, *a box*—pronounce bo*a*t, or like *wa* in *wa*ter.

† 18. All these sounds, and particularly those marked †, will be better learned from a master than from any direction; however, an intelligent person may, from the above directions, learn enough of the pronunciation to make himself perfectly understood.

19. *Of the Sounds of the French Consonants.*

b, sounds like *b* in *b*ad, ru*b*, *b*ed, mo*b*.
c, before a consonant sounds like *k* in *k*ey, *k*ite.
c, before *a*, *o*, or *u*, sounds, like *k* in *k*ey, *k*ite.
c, before *e*, *i*, sounds like *s* in *s*at, *s*eat.
ç, that is *c* with a *cedilla* before *a*, *o*, or *u*, sounds like *s* in *s*at, *s*eat.
c, sounds like *g* in second and its compounds.
ch, sounds like *sh* in *sh*ad, da*sh*.
ch, sometimes sounds like *k* in *k*ick.
d, sounds like *d* in *d*ead, *d*en, ba*d*, ro*d*, *d*id.
d, sometimes takes the sound of *t* at the end of words, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, to which it must be joined, if the meaning of the sentence requires it.
f, sounds like *f* in *f*it, *f*an, i*f*, cal*f*, *f*or.
f, sometimes takes the sound of *v*, at the end of words, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, to which it must be joined, if the meaning of the sentence requires it.
g, before a consonant sounds like *g* in *g*ag.
g, before *a*, *o*, or *u*, sounds like *g* in *g*ag.
g, sometimes takes the sound of *k* in *k*ick, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, to which it must be joined. *u*, after *g* is very seldom pronounced.
g, before *e* or *i*, sounds like *j*. (See that sound.)
gn, sounds like *ni* in u*ni*on, pi*ni*on, mi*ni*on, o*ni*on.

20. Pay great attention to the pronunciation of this combination of letters, for it is difficult; and hence it is not uncommon, even in France, to hear *magnifique*, *&c.* pronounced as if spelt *ma-ni-fique*. The same sound in the Italian language is represented by the same letters *gn*, and in the Spanish by n. There are a few words in the French language, in which *gn* are sounded as *g* and *n*, as in *magnétique*, pronounced *mag-né-tique*.

h, there are two kinds of *h*, one silent, the other aspirated.

21. But in either case it has no sound; (such is also the case with the Italian and Spanish language.) By aspiration is not meant, in French, as in English, *a forcible breathing*, as heard in *h*igh, *h*orse, *h*ouse, &c. The best proof of this, is the difficulty which *every Frenchman* has to pronounce the English aspirated *h*, even after a number of years' practice. Besides

my own observation, as a native of France, I can here mention L'Abbé d'Olivet, whose opinion and writings are for us, what Walker's are for an Englishman. He says, in speaking of the aspiration of the Greek and German languages, the French language, which always aims at softness and euphony, attributes no other effect to the aspiration of the *h*, than that of communicating to the vowel, following the said aspirated *h*, the property of a consonant; that is, to prevent the *elision* of the final vowel of the preceding word. For instance, *le héros*, in which the *h* is called aspirated, is pronounced *le-é-rô*, and not *lé-rô*, as would be the case with *l'héritier*, in which the *h* is called mute, and which is pronounced *lé-ri-tié*, and not *le-é-ri-tié*. The aspirated *h*, prevents, also, the final consonant of the word that precedes it, from being connected with the vowel which follows it; for instance *plus haut*, in which *h* is called aspirated, is pronounced *plu ô* and not *plu zô;* while *plus honorable*, in which *h* is mute, is pronounced *plu-zo-no-rable* and not *plu-o-no-rable*. Again, *des auteurs* some authors—is pronounced *dè-zô-teur*, and *des hauteurs* some heights—is pronounced *dè-ô-teur*; the only difference in the pronunciation of the above two expressions, merely consists in joining the *s* of *des* to *auteurs* authors—whereas it must not be done to *hauteurs* heights. From my acquaintance with the English pronunciation, I am confident that if Boyer, Chambaud, &c., from whom all others have copied this error, without taking the trouble of ascertaining the fact, had been well acquainted with the nature of the English aspirated *h*, they would never have assimilated the French to it.

j, sounds like *s* in pleasure, or like *z* in glazier, azure.

22. The sound of which letter is represented by Walker by *zh*.

k, sounds like *k* in *k*ick, *k*eel, wea*k*, *k*id, clo*a**k*.

l, sounds like *l* in *l*ad, coa*l*, *l*ot, pupi*l*, *l*ump, sou*l*.

il or ill, sounds like *lli* in Wi*lli*am, bi*lli*ard, co*llie*r.

23. With regard to the pronunciation of the *l* or *ll*, *mouillées*, it is proper to mention that they are differently pronounced by different persons, thus the words *soleil*, *fille*, *travail*, *tailleur*, &c. instead of being pronounced as directed above, are pronounced as if written thus: *so-lè-ye*, *fi-ye*, *tra-va-ye*, *ta-yeur*, giving to the *y* the sound it has in the word *y*ear.

24. This last pronunciation being the easier of the two, has been adopted by so many people in France, that it is no longer considered as a fault, except by grammarians. However I recommend the former, not only on account of its correctness, but also on account of its being a sound very common to the Spanish, the Italian, and the Portuguese languages; in which languages this sound does not admit of any variation. It is represented in the Spanish by ll, in the Italian by *gli*, and in the Portuguese by *lh*.

25. When in a word *l* or *ll* preceded by *i*, are *liquides*, or *mouillées*, I have, in the figured pronunciation of the verbs, and of the fables, represented this sound by *ill*, standing by itself; and this with a view of forcing the attention of the pupil. It will be seen also, that in those words in which the *i* that precedes the *l*, or *ll*, is pronounced; I have repeated it, as in *fille*, *fi-ill*, *billet*, *bi-ill-è*, in which the *i* is distinctly heard, before the utterance of the *ll*, *mouillées;* which is not the case in *travail*, *tra-va-ill*, *tailleur*, *ta-ill-eur; soleil*, *so-lè-ill; sommeiller*, *so-mè-ill-é*.

m. sounds like *m* in *m*an, *m*en, ste*m*, *m*ini*m*, sli*m*.

am, em, im, om, um, ym, are pronounced like
an, en, in, on, un, in, which see.

n, sounds at the beginning of syllables like *n* in *n*ap, *n*ip, *n*ote.

n, preceded by the vowels *a*, *i*, *o*, *u*, form the four nasal sounds *an*, *in*, *on*, *un*, mentioned under article 16th, which see

n, at the end of a word, although preceded by a vowel, sometimes has the sound of *n* in pa*n*, pe*n*, pi*n*, to*n*, su*n*.

26. When it is to be pronounced so, it is indicated by a capital N, which refers to the word *amen*, in the key to the figured pronunciation of the verbs of this Grammar, and in that of the Fables.

n, final—When a word ends with an *n*, and is followed by a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute to which it must be joined, the *n* final is doubled; that is, another *n* is added in the pronunciation; and that added *n* is joined to, and pronounced with the next word, for instance:

ancien ami, bien *h*eureux, are pronounced as if spelt,
ancien nami, *bien neureu*.

27. However it is a pretty general custom with regard to the four following words: *bon*, *mon*, *ton*, *son*, not to double the final *n*, but to pronounce the final *n* of each of these words, with the following words, beginning with a vowel, or an *h* mute, for instance:

bon ami, *mon ami*, *ton ami*, *son ami*, must be pronounced as
bo nami, *mo nami*, *to nami*, *so nami*. [if spelt,

28. I must also here observe, that *un* when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or a silent *h*, is pronounced in two ways. Thus for instance, the *masculine* nouns, *un esclave*, *un exemple*, *un ami*, will be pronounced by some, *u-nesclave*, *u-nexemple*, *u-nami*, as they would pronounce the *feminin* nouns, *une esclave*, *une exemple*, *une amie*; by others, *un esclave*, *un exemple*, *un ami*, will be pronounced as if written, *un nesclave*, *un nexemple*, *un nami*, and *une esclave*, *une exemple*, *une amie*, *u-nesclave*, *u-nexemple*, *u-namie*.

29. By the latter way of pronouncing *un*, the speaker, besides preserving the proper nasal sound of *un*, does away with the *ambiguity* about the gender, to which the former way of pronouncing gives rise. I have adopted the latter in the figured pronunciation; not because it is the most used, but because it is considered the most correct way of the two.

p, sounds like *p*, in *p*ap, *p*et, ste*p*, *p*ip, *p*op.

q, sounds like *k*, in *k*ic*k*, *k*id, *k*eel, *k*oran.

30. *U* after *q* is very seldom pronounced.

r, sounds like *r* in *r*oar, *r*at, *r*ap, *r*ed, *r*id, *r*od, *r*ub.

31. The French *r*, must always have the jarring sound. The jarring sound of the initial or rough *r*, is formed, says Walker, by jarring, or vibrating the tip of the tongue against the roof of the mouth, near the fore teeth,

s, sounds like *s* in *s*assafra*s*, atla*s*, *s*eldom, *s*ilk, *s*ole.

s, between two vowels, or at the end of a word, followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or an *h* mute, to which it must be joined, has generally the sound of *z*, as heard in *z*eal, *z*one, or *s* in ro*s*e.

sh, sounds like *sh* in *sh*ad, da*sh*, *sh*ed, fre*sh*, *sh*ip, fi*sh*, *sh*op, cla*sh*, *sh*un, blu*sh*.

t, sounds like *t* in *t*art, *t*ell, je*t*, *t*op, spo*t*.

t, in the middle of a word, has sometimes the sound of *s*, as in *s*at, *s*eat, for instance, in pa*t*ience, cau*t*ion, &c.

th, sounds like *t* in *t*ap, *t*op.

t, at the end of a word, is generally joined and sounded with the next word, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

v, sounds like *v* in *v*at, *v*ent, *v*il, *v*otive, *v*ulgar.

x, has five sounds { k, k-s, g-z, s, z } as in the French words { excellence–è*k*-sé-lans. / axiome——-a*k*-*s*i-om.* / exemple——è*g*-*z*an-ple / soixante——soi-*s*ant. / sixième——-si-*z*i-ème.

32. * In the words in which *x* is pronounced like *k-s*; *s* must not be pronounced like *sh*, as it is in the English word *axiom*, pronounced *ak-shum*, but like *s* in *sister*.

z, sounds like *z* in *z*eal, *z*est, *z*one, and *s* in ro*s*e.

w, is generally pronounced like *v* in *v*ery.

w, is in a few words pronounced as it is in the English, in *w*ork, *w*ord.

33. I should have mentioned that new names have been given to the letters of the French alphabet, which, though far preferable to the old ones, are as yet not generally taught.

a,	b,	c,	d,	e,	f,	g,	h,	i,	j,	k,	l,	m,	n,	o
a,	*be**,	*ke*,	*de*,	*a*,	*fe*†,	*ge*,	*he*,	*e*‡,	*je*,	*ke*,	*le*,	*me*,	*ne*,	*o*,

p,	q,	r,	s.	t,	u,	v,	x,	y,	z.
pe,	*ke*,	*re*,	*se*,	*te*,	*u*,	*ve*,	*kse*,	*e grec*,	*ze*.

* The *e* after each consonant has the sound of *u* in t*u*b, and is pronounced but feebly.

† *g* here has the sound it has in gag, gig, &c.

‡ *j* sounds like z in glazier.

34. Table of the Simple sounds of Vowels; showing at one view the different combinations, by which these simple sounds are represented in different words.*

sounds	examples	sounds like	represented by	examples	
a	ami	a, in at	e	femme	*woman*
			ea	il gagea	*he betted*
â	âne	a, in arm	a	bas	*stocking*
e	te	u, in tub	eâ	rougeâtre	*reddish*
			ai	nous faisons	*we do*
é	écrit	a, in ale	ai	aigu	*sharp*
			eai	geai	*jay*
			ée	année	*year*
			æ	æsophage	*æsophagus*
è†	mère†	a, in mare†	ai	aide	*aid*
			aie	baie	*bay*
			ei	baleine	*whale*
			eai	monnaie	*money*
ê‡	être‡	e, in there‡	aî	aîné	*eldest*
	idole	i, in idiom	i	imiter	*to imitate*
î	gîte	ee, in eel	ie	folie	*folly*
o	opéra	o, in opera	au	aurore	*aurora*
			eo	flageolet	*flagelet*
ô	ôter	o, in over	au	auteur	*author*
			eau	marteau	*hammer*
			eo	geole	*goal*
u	mur	*none*	eu	gageure	*wager*
			eue	eue	*had*
			ue	laitue	*lettuce*
û	mûr	*none*	û	flûte	*flute*
eu	jeune	u, in muff	æu	œuf	*egg*
eû	jeûne	*none*	æu	nœud	*knot*
			eue	queue	*tail*
ou	tout	oo, in too	ou	tout	*all*
oû	voûte	oo, in fool	aoû	août	*august*
			oue	roue	*wheel*
an	ancre	an, in sang	am	ample	*ample*
			aon	paon	*peacock*
			ean	affligeant	*afflicting*
			em	membre	*member*
			en	entendre	*to hear*
in	ingrat	en, in length	aim	essaim	*swarm*
			ain	crainte	*fear*
			ein	peinture	*picture*
			im	impoli	*impolite*
			ym	symbole	*symbol*
			yn	syntaxe	*syntax*
on	onde	on, in long	aon	taon	*ox-fly*
			eon	pigeon	*pigeon*
			om	ombre	*shade*
un§	un§	un§, in sung	eun	à jeun	*fasting*
			um	parfum	*perfume*

* See page 10. † See page 10. ‡ See note page 2. § See page 5, Art. 23

Table of Diphthongs.

35. A diphthong is a coalition of two sounds, which are distinctly heard by a simple emission of the voice. The diphthongs of the French language will all be found in the following table, opposite to the simple sounds of which they are composed.

36. *In the figured pronunciation of the Fables, and of the Verbs, the two sounds forming a diphthong have been separated, with a view of causing the pupil to pronounce distinctly the two sounds. The master must not allow the pupil to pause between the two vowels, but pronounce them as closely as possible.*

diphthongs	simple sounds	examples.	
ia	i-a	fiacre	*hackney coach*
ia	i-â	galimatias	*nonsense*
iai	i-é	je défiai	*I challenged*
ié		amitié	*friendship*
ie		riez	*laugh*
iai	i-è	je purifiais	*I purified*
iè		bière	*beer*
ie		ciel	*heaven*
io	i-o	violon	*violin*
iau	i-ô	miauler	*to mew*
iu	i-û	reliure	*binding*
ieu	i-eu	relieur	*book binder*
ieu	i-eû	mieux	*better*
ieue		lieue	*league*
iou	i-ou	chiourme	*the crew of a galley*
ian	i-an	viande	*meat*
ien		audience	*audience*
ien	i-in	chrétien	*christian*
ion	i-on	passion	*passion*
oi	o-a	boite	*maturity of wine*
oî	o-â	boîte	*box*
oie		foie	*liver*
oe	o-è	moelle	*marrow*
eoi		nageoire	*fin*
oi	ou-è	voisin	*neighbour*
oin	ou-in	besoin	*want*
oua	ou-a	rouage	*wheel-work*
ouâ	ou-â	nous nouâmes	*we tied*
oueu	ou-eu	boueur	*dust man*
oue	ou-é	dénouer	*to untie*
oué		déjoué	*baffled*
ouée		trouée	*opening*
ouai		je jouai	*I played*
oi	ou-è	oiseau	*bird*
oue		fouetter	*to whip*
ouai		je louais	*I praised*
oui	ou-i	cambouis	*coom*
ouie		l'ouïe	*the hearing*
oueu	ou-eû	noueux	*knotty*
ouan	ou-an	louange	*praise*
ouen		Rouen	*Rouen, city of France*

diphthongs	simple sounds	examples.	
ouin	ou-in	babouin	*baboon*
ouon	ou-on	nous jouons	*we play*
ua	ou-a	lingual	*lingual*
ua	u-a	nuage	*cloud*
uâ	u-â	nous tuâmes	*we killed*
ueu	u-eu	lueur	*glimmering*
uai	u-é	je remuai	*I moved*
ue		éternuer	*to sneeze*
ué		dénué	*stript*
uée		nuée	*cloud*
ue	u-è	menuet	*minuet*
uai		il suait	*he perspired*
ui	u-i	buisson	*bush*
uie	u-î	pluie	*rain*
uo	u-ô	impétuosité	*impetuosity*
ueu	u-eû	majestueux	*majestic*
uan	u-an	nuance	*shade*
uen		influence	*influence*
uin	u-in	juin	*June*
uon	u-on	nous tuons	*we kill*

37. *A single view of the two tables, here given, will show of what advantage figured pronunciation will be to him, who is desirous of acquiring an accurate pronunciation, whether he has a master or not. If he has a master he will be able to revise his reading lesson, and by this means make great progress; if he is deprived of the assistance of a master, he will be able to obtain a tolerable pronunciation, which would have been impossible for him, without this help.*

38. The following table treats of some terminations which differ very materially in pronunciation from the English. English learners, in these terminations, are always inclined to sound *e* before *l* or *r* as they do in their own language; for instance, they will pronounce *acre*, *akur*.

In English these terminations would be nearly pronounced as if spelt		*Giving to the* u *a slight sound of* u *in fur*	*In French, these final termnations must be pronounced, leaving out the* e *and giving to the two consonants the sounds they have at the beginning of the following English words.*	
ble	bul		ta-ble	bl-aze
bre	bur		sa-bre	br-ace
cle *for* kle	kul		mira-cle	kl-ick
cre *for* kre	kur		a-cre	cr-ane
dre	dur		pou-dre	dr-ain
fle	ful		buf-fle	fl-ame
fre	fur		cof-fre	fr-ame
gle	gul		an-gle	gl-are
gre	gur		mai-gre	gr-ave
ple	pul		am-ple	pl-ane
pre	pur		pro-pre	pr-aise
tre	tur		an-tre	tr-ain

* In comparing this table of *simple sounds of vowels* with Levizac's, it will be seen that though he gives but seventeen sounds I give twenty.

Since Levizac gives the short and long sounds of *o* and of *eu*, I do not see why he omitted the long sound of *i*, of *u*, and of *ou*.

† Soon after the publication of my book of Fables, at the beginning of which I have drawn an approximative comparison between the French and the English sounds, I saw in a number of the YANKEE, then (1829) published in Portland or in Boston, an article which reproved me for having dared to compare the sound of *è* in *mère* with the sound of *a* in *mare*, or which amounts to the same thing, for having dared to make a difference between the sound of *a* in *mare*, *fare*, &c. and the sound of *a* in *ale*, *fate*, &c.

At the time I made that difference I looked for no authority, but I trusted to my ear, which seldom deceives me with regard to the least shades in the sounds of languages. Since the publication of the above mentioned article in the YANKEE, I have made some researches, the result of which has proved to me, that if I was wrong, many eminent English and American orthoëpists were so too.

For the information of the writer of said article in the YANKEE I shall quote the authors who are in favour of the difference I made, and still make between, the above two sounds.

See J. A. CUMMINGS' Pronouncing Spelling Book, third edition, Boston, 1822 ; preface, page ix.

See JOHN FRANKLIN JONES' Analytical Spelling Book, second edition, New York, 1824, page 14, line 10th; page 19, the word *rare ;* page 60, the word *beware ;* page 61, column 4th, the word *affair*, and following.

See E. HAZEN's Speller and Definer, New York, 1830 ; page 7, the word *fare ;* page 189, the words *pair*, *pare*, and *pear*.

See WILLIAM PELHAM's System of Notation, Boston, 1808, page xxiii. the words *mare*, *tare*, and *care*.

See WEBSTER's 4to. Dictionary, Vol. I. Directions for the pronunciation of words, page 2, 17th line from the bottom.

See WEBSTER's 8vo. Dictionary, page iv., 21st line from the bottom. There will be seen not only the opinion of Mr. Webster himself, but that of Mr. J. E. WORCESTER of Cambridge, and of Professor GOODRICH of Yale College, who, we are told by Webster's preface, have had much to do with the editing of his 8vo. dictionary.

In the passage referred to, it will also be seen that PERRY, the English orthoëpist, has made the same difference in his Dictionary, which is, and has been, since its publication, the best authority quoted by well informed people in England.

See I. E. WORCESTER's 12mo. Dictionary, New York, 1830, page iii. Key to the sounds of the marked letters, and also, page xi., 14th line from the bottom.

See HENRY BUTTER's Etymological Spelling Book, London, 1831, a book much esteemed in England.

See WILLIAM RUSSELL's Lessons in Enunciation, Boston, 1830, page 12, 11th line from the top.

Mr. WILLIAM RUSSELL is the editor of the Journal of Education (first series), and taught elocution for many years in Cambridge and Boston.

Punctuation and Accentuation.

39. Besides the marks of punctuation, which are the same both in French and in English—comma , *virgule*—semicolon, ; *point-virgule*—colon : *deux points*—period . *un point*—note of interrogation ? *point d'interrogation*—note of admiration, or exclamation ! *point d'admiration ou d'exclamation* —the parenthesis () *la parenthèse*—the dash — *le trait de séparation*—a quotation " " *guillemets ;* there are other marks called accents.

40. The acute accent ' *accent aigu*—is placed over *e* in certain words, and gives it the sound called *fermé ;* as heard in *préféré, régénéré, &c.*

41. The grave accent ` *accent grave*—is placed over *a, e, u,* in certain words; and gives to the *e* the sound called *ouvert ;* as heard in *mère, procès, &c.*

42. The grave accent, put over *a, u,* has no influence on their sound : it is used principally to distinguish one part of speech from another ; for instance, to distinguish *à* to, from *a* has—*là* there, from *la* the—*où* where, from *ou* or, &c.

43. The circumflex accent ^ *accent circonflexe*—is placed over *a, e, i, o, u,* in certain words, to give these vowels a long sound ; as in *âge, tête, épître, côte, bûche, &c.*, which were formerly written *aage, teste, épistre, coste, busche, &c.*

44. The cedilla ç *cédille*—is a kind of comma placed under *c*, to give it the sound of *s*, before *a, o, u,* as in *façade, façon, reçu, &c. ;* in which words *c* would be *hard*, and pronounced like *k* in *kick*, were it not for the *cedilla.*

45. The diœresis ¨ *tréma* or *diérèse*—are two dots placed over the vowels *e, i, u,* to indicate that these vowels are not to form a diphthong with the preceding vowel, but are to be pronounced separately ; as in *poëte, naïveté, saül, &c.*

46. The hyphen - *tiret* or *trait d'union*—is used to connect—1st, compound words ; as *belles-lettres, arc-en-ciel, &c.* 2dly, the personal pronouns ; *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, to the verb, when used interrogatively : as *parlé-je, parles-tu, &c.* 3dly, the conjunctive pronouns ; *moi, toi, lui, &c.* to the verb, when put after it ; as *parles-moi, dites-lui.* 4thly, and also, to show at the end of a line, that a word has been divided, part of which begins the following line.

47. The apostrophe ' *apostrophe*—is used to show the suppression or elision of a vowel before another vowel, or before an *h* mute ; as—*l'église*, instead of *la église—l'homme*, instead of *le homme, &c.*

INTRODUCTION TO THE EXERCISES.

48. The learner is to render the English definite article *the* by
- *le* before a noun masculine
- *la* before a noun feminine
- *l'* before a noun masculine or feminine beginning with a vowel or *h* mute

} in the singular.
- *les* before nouns of either gender in the plural.

49. The learner is to render the English indefinite article *a* or *an* by
- *un* before a noun masculine singular.
- *une* before a noun feminine singular.

EXAMPLES.

Le livre	*the book*	*les* plantes	*the plants*
la rue	*the street*	*un* homme	*a man*
*l'*ame*	*the soul*	*une* femme	*a woman*
*l'*histoire	*the history*	*un* héros	*a hero.*

EXERCISES.

The wood, *bois*, m. — the forest, *forêt*, f. — the houses, *maisons*, — the men, *hommes*, — the court, *cour*, f.

the foot, *pied*, m. — the arms, *bras*, — the room, *chambre*, f. — the garden, *jardin*, m. — the windows, *fenêtres*,

a history, *histoire*, f. — a novel, *roman*, m. — a foreigner, *étranger*, m. — a walk, *promenade*, f. — a day, *jour*, m,

a night, *nuit*, f. — the sun, *soleil*, m. — the moon, *lune*, f. — the stars, *étoiles*, — a body, *corps*, m.

a card, *carte*, f. — a crown. *écu*, m.

50. The learner will render the English prepositions *of* and *from* by *de*, and when followed by the article *the* he will render *to* and *at* by *à* them thus:

of the by or *from the* by
- *du* before a noun masculine
- *de la* before a noun feminine

} singular beginning with a *consonant* or *h* aspirated.
- *de l'* before any noun beginning with a *vowel* or *h* mute.
- *des* before any noun in the plural.

to the by or *at the* by
- *au* before a noun masculine
- *à la* before a noun feminine

} singular beginning with a *consonant* or *h* aspirated.
- *à l'* before any noun beginning with a *vowel* or *h* mute
- *aux* before any noun in the plural.

51. When the above prepositions *of*, *from*, *to*, and *at*, are followed by *a* or *an*, he will render them thus:

of a or *from a* by
- *d'un* before a noun masculine.
- *d'une* before a noun feminine.

to a or *at a* by
- *à un* before a noun masculine.
- *à une* before a noun feminine.

* Lévizac in his own grammar writes *âme* contrary to the best authorities. See Grammaire des Grammaires, 7th ed. page 1073.

EXAMPLES.

Du parc	*of the park*	à l'esprit	*to the mind*
de la rivière	*of the river*	aux carrosses	*to the coaches*
de l'esprit	*of the mind*	d'un jour	*of a day*
des carrosses	*of the coaches*	d'une nuit	*of a night*
au parc	*to the park*	à un jour	*to a day*
à la rivière	*to the river*	à une nuit	*to a night*

EXERCISES.

The palace of the king, of the queen, of the man, to the
palais, m. *roi*, *reine*, *homme*,
king, to the queen, to the man, to the men, from
a balcony, from a window, of a prince, to a princess,
balcon, m. *fenêtre*, f. *prince*, *princesse*,
of the gardens, of the evening, to the courtiers, of a table,
jardins, *soir*, m. *courtisans*, *table*, f.
to the master, to a lady, of the soul, of the horse, to a cat,
maître, *dame*, *ame*, f. *cheval*, *chat*, m.
of the houses, of a carpet.
maisons, *tapis*, m.

55. The learner will render

	(a) *singular, m.*	(b) *sing. f.*	(c) *plur. m., and f.*
of or *from my* by	de mon	de ma	de mes
of or *from thy* by	de ton	de ta	de tes
of or *from his*, *of* or *from her*, *of* or *from its* by	de son	de sa	de ses
of or *from our* by	de notre	de notre	de nos
of or *from your* by	de votre	de votre	de vos
of or *from their* by	de leur	de leur	de leurs
to or *at my* by	à mon	à ma	à mes
to or *at thy* by	à ton	à ta	à tes
to or *at his*, *to* or *at her*, *to* or *at its* by	à son	à sa	à ses
to or *at our* by	à notre	à notre	à nos
to or *at your* by	à votre	à votre	à vos
to or *at their* by	à leur	à leur	à leurs.

(a) *Mon, ton, son,* are put before nouns singular m. and before nouns sing. f. when the sing. f. nouns begin with a *vowel* or an *h* mute.

(b) *Ma, ta, sa,* are put before nouns singular f. beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated.

(c) *Mes, tes, ses,* are put before any nouns plural m. or f.

53. The learner will render

of this, of that, from this, from that by *de*
to this, to that, at this, at that, by *à*

ce before a noun singular m. beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated.
cet before a noun singular m. beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.
cette before any noun singular f.

of these, of those, from these, from those, by *de ces* } before any noun
to these, to those, at these, at those, by *à ces* } in the plural.

EXAMPLES.

de mon père	*of my father*	à leur travail	*to their work*
à ta mère	*to thy mother*	de cette terrace	*from this terrace*
de son frère	*of his brother*	de ce lieu	*of that place*
de notre ville	*of our town*	de cet homme	*of this man*
à votre maison	*to your house*	de ces arbres	*of these trees*

EXERCISES.

Of my clothes, of thy handkerchief, of his pocket, of your
habits, *mouchoir*, m. *poche*, f.

letters, of our treasure, to their house, of this steeple of
lettres, *trésor*, m. *maison*, f. *clocher*, m.

that hero, of this tower, of these models, of my sister, to
héros, *tour*, f. *modèles*, *sœur*,

your relations, the top of this mountain, to my friend, of these
parens, *sommet* m. *montagne*, f. *ami*, m.

pleasures, of our duties, to their connexions, of his acquaintances,
plaisirs, *devoirs*, *liaisons*, *connaissances*,

to my neighbours.
voisins.

ELISION.

54. The *Apostrophe* ' marks, we have said, (page 11, art. 47.) the suppression of a vowel before another vowel or an *h* mute.

55. This suppression is called *Elision*. The only vowels that suffer *elision* before another vowel or *h* mute are *a*, *e*, *i*.

56. The vowel *i* is only suppressed in the word *si* when it comes before either of the two following words *il*, he or it —*ils*, they, thus : *s'il*, if he or if it, instead of *si il*, if he or if it—*s'ils*, if they, instead of *si ils*, if they.

57. The vowels *a*, *e*, are suppressed in the following words: when these words are placed before other words beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

58. Throughout this book, whenever a word begins with an *h* mute, the *h* will be an italic *h* if the French word is in Roman ; if in italics, then a . will be put after the *h*—thus, *h.omme*.

si	if	See article 56, above.			
le	the	before a vowel, or *h* mute,			l'
*le**	him	"	"	"	l'
*le**	it	"	"	"	l'
la	the	"	"	"	l'

*la**	her	before a vowel or *h* mute,			l'
*la**	it	"	"	"	l'
*je**	I	"	"	"	j'
me	me	"	"	"	m'
te	thee	"	"	"	t'
se	himself	"	"	"	s'
se	herself	"	"	"	s'
se	itsel	"	"	"	s'
se	themselves	"	"	"	s'
ce	this	"	"	"	c'
ce	that	"	"	"	c'
*ce**	it	"	"	"	c'
de	of	"	"	"	d'
ne	not	"	"	"	n'
que	that	"	"	"	qu'
que	which	"	"	"	qu'
que	whom	"	"	"	qu'
parceque	because	"	"	"	parcequ'
quoique	although	"	"	"	quoiqu'
puisque	since	"	"	"	puisqu'
jusque	till	"	"	"	jusqu'
vû que	since	"	"	"	vû qu'
dès que	as soon as	"	"	"	dès qu'
quelque	some	"	"	"	quelqu'
entre	between	"	"	"	entre

59. The *e* in *entre*, before *eux*, *elles* and *autre*, may or may not be suppressed; it is indifferent whether we write, *entre eux*, or *entr'eux*—*entre elles*, or *entr'elles*—*entre autres*, or *entr'autres*.

60. *When the words (all pronouns) thus marked * in the above list, are put after the verb of which they are the nominative—or by which they are governed in the objective case—they do not suffer elision, although the word that comes after them begins with a vowel or an *h* mute—thus, *apportez-le ici*, *est-ce à lui*, &c.

EXERCISES.

The soul, the heroine, the mind, he loves him, she loves her
ame, f. *héroïne*, f. *esprit*, m. *il* 2*aime* 1*le*, *elle* 2*aime* 1*la*,

I love this man, you do not understand me, he esteems thee,
je aime h.omme, *vous* * *ne* 3*pas* 2*entendez* 1*me*, *il* 2*estime* 1*te*,

he goes away, it was the golden age, do not go there, if
se en va, *ce était* 2*d'or* 1*âge*, *1*ne* 3*pas* 2*allez* 4*là*, *si*

he comes, if they please, what has he said? till night,
vient, *ils veulent*, *que a-t-il dit?* *jusque au soir*, m.

though he says, since he knows, when he saw, between them,
quoique dise, *puisque sait*, *lorsque vit*, *entre eux*,

somebody is come.
quelque un est venu.

61. In the following French negative modes of speech, which answer to the accompanying English translation, the *caret* ^ points out the place which the French verb must occupy, whenever it is not in the infinitive mood.

Not	ne ^ pas / ne ^ point	as	je ne *suis* pas, &c.	*I am not*, &c.
			nous n'*avons* point,	*we have not.*
never	ne ^ jamais		il ne *joue* jamais,	*he never plays*
nothing	ne ^ rien		vous ne *dites* rien,	*you say nothing.*
nobody	ne ^ personne		je ne *vois* personne,	*I see nobody.*
not a jot	ne ^ goutte		je ne *vois* goutte,	*I do not see*, or *I see not in the least.*
no where	ne ^ nulle part		je ne *vais* nulle part,	*I go no where.*

62. But in compound tenses, it is the auxiliary verb that parts the negative *ne* from the *pas*, or *point*, &c. that accompanies it, as nous n'*avons* point parlé, *we have not spoken ;* on n'*aurait* jamais cru, *one could never have believed.*

63. The addition of *pas*, or *point*, to the negative particle *ne*, must not be considered as a second negation; but only as a complimental part of it. For in such cases, *pas*, *point*, *goutte*, are mere restrictive terms, nearly resembling the English word, jot, bit, tittle, sometimes added to not, with this difference, that *pas* and *point* in French have nothing trivial in them.

I do not say, I have not said, I have never seen, I never (tell a
* *dis*, *ai* *dit*, *vu*,

falsehood), I do nothing, I have done nothing, is he not arrived?
mens, *fais* *fait* *est-il* *arrivé?*

does he not come? I see nothing, has he never seen? he never loses
* [2]*il* [1]*vient?* *vois* *a-t-* *vu?* *perd*

his time, that (is worth) nothing, I met nobody.
temps, m. *cela* *vaut* *rencontrai*

N. B. *The above exercise and direction, article* 61, *are out of place. Lévizac ought to have remembered that the scholar knows as yet nothing about simple and compound tenses.*

64. There are many words which are alike in both languages, and others which differ only in their termination.

65. The expressions, which are perfectly alike, are particularly those that have the following terminations :

-al	as	animal, cardinal, fatal, général, local, moral, natal, original, principal, &c.
-ble	——	capable, fable, &c. bible, éligible, &c. noble, double, soluble, insoluble, &c.
-ace	——	face, grimace, grâce, place, préface, race, surface, trace, &c.
-ance	——	chance, complaisance, extravagance, ignorance, lance, tempérance, &c.
-ence	——	abstinence, conférence, continence, diligence, éloquence, patience, &c.
ice	——	artifice, auspices, édifice, justice, injustice, office, orifice, précipice, solstice, &c.

-acle	as	miracle, oracle, obstacle, réceptacle, tabernacle, spectacle, &c.
-ade	——	ambuscade, cavalcade, brigade, esplanade sérénade, rétrograde, &c.
-age	——	âge, adage, bandage, cage, cordage, image, page, plumage, rage, &c.
-ege	——	collége, privilége, sacrilége, siége, sortilége, &c.
-ge	——	vestige, doge, barge, charge, orange, forge, rouge, réfuge, déluge, &c.
-ule	——	globule, ridicule, animalcule, corpuscule, formule, module, mule, pustule, valvule, &c.
-ile	——	bile, débile, agile, docile, ductile, facile, fragile, nubile, reptile, versatile, &c.
-ine	——	carabine, fascine, doctrine, heroïne, machine, marine, famine, mine, rapine, &c.
-ion	——	action, fraction, légion, nation, opinion, passion, question, religion, &c.
-ant	——	arrogant, constant, élégant, éléphant, pétulant, piquant, poignant, vigilant, &c.
-ent	——	absent, accident, compliment, argument, content, élément, fréquent, serpent, &c.

66 Many other English words require only the change of termination, in the following manner:

-gy	into	-gie	as	*energy*	énergie
-ary	——	-aire	—	*military*	militaire
-ory	——	-oire	—	*glory*	gloire
-cy	——	-ce	—	*clemency*	clémence
-ty	——	-té	—	*beauty*	beauté
-ous	——	-eux	—	*dangerous*	dangereux
-our	——	-eur	—	*favour*	faveur
-or	——	-eur	—	*error*	erreur
-ine	——	-in	—	*clandestine*	clandestin
-ive	——	-if	—	*expressive*	expressif
-ry	——	-rie	—	*fury*	furie
-dy	——	-die	—	*perfidy*	perfidie

N. B. Adjectives in { -eux, -if, -in } make their feminine in { -euse, -ive, -ine }

EXERCISE.

The beauty of the fable, the horror of vice, the utility of science,
f. f. *horreur*, m. art. m. f. art. f.

the atrocity of this action, the violence of his passions the simplicity of
f. f. f. *passions* f.

that machine, an [2]audacious [1]conspirator, the absurdity of that opinion.
f. f. f.

the military evolutions, an [2]industrious [1]nation, an [2]important [1]victory,
[2]*militaires* [1]*évolutions*, f *importante* f.

an [2]alimentary [1]pension, a [2]dangerous [1]animal, a [2]figurative [1]expression,
f. m. f.

a famous general, his [2]constant [1]generosity, he is incapable of attention,
constante f. *est* f.

his imprudence is visible, his fidelity is indubitable, she is very at-
f. f. *elle très-*
tentive, your clemency is admirable, the destruction of his fortune was
f. f. f. *fut*
the consequence of his temerity, she is very scrupulous, his condition
f. f. *très-* f. f.
is horrible, his parents are very miserable, this history is incontestable,
parens sont misérables, f.
your facility is prodigious, his perfidy is odious, it was a [1]horrible [2]famine,
f. *perfidie,* f. *ce était* f.
the sublimity of his sentiments is still preferable to the energy of his
f. *sentimens encore energie,* f.
expressions, it was a [2]decisive [1]action, the carnage was terrible, that
expressions, f. f. m. *fut*
obstacle is invincible, this instrument is not harmonious, the prosperity
m. m. f.
of the wicked is not durable, your [2]insidious [1]presents are not acceptable,
méchans, présens sont acceptables,
his memory is truly extraordinary, that is his [2]principal [1]occupation, a
f. *vraiment ce est principale* f.
[2]central [1]position, his extravagance is visible, these arguments are
centrale f. f. *argumens*
insoluble.
insolubles

PART I.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR NATURE AND INFLECTIONS.

67. There are, in French, nine sorts of words, or parts of speech, namely:

1. Substantive, or Noun,
2. Article,
3. Adjective,
4. Pronoun,
5. Verb,
6. Adverb,
7. Preposition,
8. Conjunction,
9. Interjection.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE, OR NOUN.

68. The substantive is a word, which serves to name a person, or thing, as *Pierre*, Peter; *livre*, book, &c.

69. There are two sorts of substantives, the *substantive proper*, or *proper name*, and the *substantive common*, also called *appellative*.

70. The *proper name* is that which is applied to a particular person, or thing, as *César*, Cæsar; *la Tamise*, the Thames.

71. The *substantive common* is that which belongs to a whole class of objects. The word *homme*, man, is a substantive common, as it is applicable to any individual.

72 Of these nouns, some are *collective*, and others *abstract*.

73. *Collective nouns* express either a whole mass, as *une armée*, an army; *une forêt*, a forest: or a partial assemblage, as *une quantité de*, &c., a quantity of; *la plupart*, most part, &c.

74. *Abstract* nouns are the names of qualities abstracted from their subjects, as *surface, rondeur, science, sagesse;* surface, roundness, knowledge, wisdom, &c.

75. In substantives, are to be considered *Gender* and *Number*.

OF GENDERS.

76. GENDER is the distinction of sex, or the difference between *male* and *female*.

77. There are in the French Language but two Genders: the *Masculine*, which belongs to *men* and *animals* of the *male* kind; as, *John*, *lion*, *&c.* The *Feminine*, which belongs to *women* or *animals* of the *female* kind; as, *Lucy*, *lionness*, *&c.*

78. This distinction has, through imitation, been extended in the French to all those substantives (inanimate objects) that are neither *male* nor *female;* and which, in English, are of the neuter gender. Thus in French—un livre *a book*, is *masculine*—une table *a table*, is *feminine*, *&c.*

79. The gender of French nouns, which in English are neuter, is commonly ascertained by their terminations.

A great number of writers have endeavoured to give rules; but none have had the patience to go carefully over the "DICTIONNAIRE DE L'ACADÉMIE," to make themselves sure that the rules they were giving embraced a greater number of words, than the list of exceptions to those rules.

They all found it less irksome, after having given the exceptions they could remember, to have recourse to this phrase—"You must except such and such words; *and others that usage will teach.*" By this method it is evident that the scholar cannot know whether the nouns, whose gender he wants to ascertain, come under the rules given, or is one of those words that *usage* is to teach him: in this predicament he must have recourse to a dictionary; and if there is none within his reach, he must expose himself to make a blunder in the gender of some noun, which will sometimes change entirely the meaning of his phrase, and sometimes excite laughter.

The following few pages contain A TREATISE ON THE GENDERS OF FRENCH NOUNS, as short as the subject would admit. The rules are precise, and the list of exceptions complete; so that any person, after having learned the rules and exceptions, can, without the help of any dictionary, which he cannot always carry about him, ascertain at once the gender of any noun contained in the DICTIONNAIRE DE L'ACADÉMIE and in the supplement to that work.

A. Bolmar's Complete Treatise

MASCULINE,

FROM THEIR SIGNIFICATION.

1. Dieu *God*—homme *man*—all animals of the male kind—lion *lion*, &c.—and all those objects to which we fancifully attribute *masculine qualities*; as—ange *angel*—satire *satyr*—soleil *sun*, &c.
2. The names of TREES; as—chêne *oak*—peuplier *poplar*, &c.

EXCEPTION.

yeuse *holm*.

3. The names of SHRUBS; as—rosier *rose-bush*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

aubépine *hawthorn*,
bourdaine *black alder*,
épine *thorn*,
ronce *briar*,
vigne *vine*.

4. The names of the SEASONS of the year; printems *spring*—été *summer*, &c.

automne *autumn*, is of both genders.

5. The names of the DAYS of the week; dimanche *sunday*—lundi *monday*, &c.
6. The names of METALS and MINERALS; as—fer *iron*—mercure *mercury*, &c.
7. The names of COLOURS; as—noir *black*—blanc *white*, &c.
8. The letters of the ALPHABET; as—un *a*—un *b*, &c.
9. Adjectives, numeral adjectives, pronouns, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interjections, used substantively; as—le bon *good*—le manger *the eating*—un quart *one fourth*—un dixième *one tenth*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

une moitié *a half*, and all Nos. ending with *aine* as douzaine, quinzaine, &c.

une antique *antique*,
une courbe *a curve*,
une perpendiculaire *a perpendicular*,
une tangente *a tangent*,

are fem. *statue* statue or *médaille* medal in the 1st, and *ligne* line in the three last being underst.

on the Genders of French Nouns.

FEMININE,

FROM THEIR SIGNIFICATION.

1. Déesse *goddess*—femme *woman*—all animals of the female kind; lionne *lioness*—and all those objects to which we fancifully attribute *feminine qualities;* as—lune *moon*, &c.
2. The names of VIRTUES; as—modestie *modesty*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

courage *courage*, mérite *merit*.

3. The names of VICES; as—jalousie *jealousy*, &c.
4. The names of HOLY-DAYS; as—Toussaint *all-saint's day*—Pâque *the passover*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Pâque or Pâques *easter*, is masculine.
Noël *christmas*, is masculine.

N. B. When the diminutive *mi* half, is prefixed to a noun, the noun is then *fem.* as *la mi-carême.* All other diminutives follow the gender of the nouns from which they are derived; thus *une globule* a small globe, is masc.

5. The names of the FOUR PARTS of the world; as—Europe *Europe*—Amérique *America*, &c.

FEMININE,

FROM THEIR TERMINATION.

Nouns with the following terminations are feminine.

1. té] as—santé *health*—bonté *goodness*, &c

EXCEPTIONS.

aparté *aside*,	comité *committee*,	pâté *pie*,
arrêté *decree*,	comté *county*,	précipité *precipitate*,
bénédicité *grace at meal.*	côté *side*,	traité *treaty* or *treatise*

2. tié] as—amitié *friendship*—moitié *half*, &c.
3. ion] as—nation *nation*—religion *religion*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

bastion *bastion*,	camion *minikin pin*,	pion *pawn*,
bestion *beak-head*,	galion *galleon*,	scion *twig*,
brimborion *bauble*,	lampion *small lamp*,	talion *retaliation*

MASCULINE.

10. Nouns compounded of A VERB and A NOUN are also masculine; as—cure-dent *tooth-pick*—casse-noisette *nut-cracker*—tourne-broche *a jack*, &c. Although dent, noisette, broche, are feminine.

EXCEPTION.

garde-robe *wardrobe.*

11. The names of the CARDINAL POINTS, and of the WINDS; as—le sud *the south*—le nord *the north*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

bise *north-east wind*,	tramontane *tramontane*,
brise *light wind*,	mousson *monsoon*,

12. The names of EMPIRES, KINGDOMS, and COUNTRIES; as—Brésil *Brasil*—Portugal *Portugal*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Those names of Empires, Kingdoms, and Countries, that end with *e* mute, are *feminine;* as—Russie *Russia*—France *France*, &c.

However, Bengale *Bengal*—Mexique *Mexico*—Péloponèse *Peloponnesus*—Le Caire *Cairo*—are *masculine*, although ending with *e* mute.

13. The names of MOUNTAINS; as—Caucase *Caucasus*—Parnasse *Parnassus*—Vésuve *Vesuvius*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Alpes, Cordillière, | Pyrénées, Vosges.

14. The names of TOWNS, BOROUGHS, and VILLAGES; some are *masculine*, some *feminine*; and as no good rule can be given it is better both for a Frenchman and a foreigner, to avoid mistake, to use after them, the words *ville*, *bourg*, *village*—and say, for instance—Paris est une belle ville *Paris is a fine town*, &c. instead of Paris est beau *Paris is fine.*

15. The names of RIVERS, follow their termination, if they end with any other letter except *e mute*, they are *masculine*; as—le Rhin *the Rhine*—le Nil *the Nile*, &c.

Those ending in *e mute*, are feminine; as—la Seine *the Seine*—la Tamise *the Thames*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

le Rhône, le Tibre, le Danube, le Cocyte, are *masculine*, though they end with *e mute*

FEMININE.

4. son] as—chanson *song*—maison *house*, &c.

Exceptions.

blason *heraldry*,	poison *poison*,
diapason *diapason*,	tison *firebrand*.
oison *gosling*.	

N. B. All nouns ending with *sson* or *on*, except those ending with the above terminations (*ion* and *son*) are *masculine*, according to the rule 1st, in the masculine column; *all nouns ending with a consonant are masculine.* For the exceptions, see the table annexed to that article.

5. eur] as—fureur *fury*—douceur *mildness*, &c.

Exceptions.

bonheur *happiness*,	extérieur *the outside*,
chœur *chorus*,	honneur *honour*,
cœur *heart*,	intérieur *the inside*,
déshonneur *dishonour*,	labeur *labour*.
équateur *equator*,	malheur *misfortune*.

Except also all nouns ending with *eur*, which can only be applied to man; as—docteur *doctor*, &c. And also those nouns ending with *eur*, which have a feminine, as—*masculine*, acteur *actor*—*feminine*, actrice *actress*—*masculine*, parleur *talker*—*feminine*, parleuse *talker*—*masc.* pécheur *sinner*—*fem.* pécheresse *sinner*, &c.

6. All nouns ending with *e* mute, are *feminine*, provided they be neither comprised under the rules of *Masculine* nouns, nor in the following list of those *Masculine* nouns ending with *e* mute, which cannot be brought under any particular rule.

List of Nouns which cannot be brought under any particular rule, and which are *Masculine*, though ending with *e* mute.

Abaque	Abacus.	aide	*assistant*.
acousmate	acousma.	aide	*support*, is fem.
acrostiche	*acrostic*.	aigle	*eagle* (bird) or *a great genius*.
acte	*act*.	aigle	*eagle* (a standard,) is [fem
adminicule	adminicle.		
adverbe	*adverb*.		

MASCULINE,

16. The names of some ANIMALS, BIRDS, FISH, SHELL-FISH, REPTILES, and INSECTS, in which the *male* is not distinguished from the *female*, and that do not end with *e* mute; as—ours *bear*—vautour *vulture*—saumon *salmon*—homard *lobster*—ver *worm*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

fourmi *ant*,	souris *mouse*,
perdrix *partridge*,	chauve-souris *bat*.

Those names of animals, birds, fish, shell-fish, reptiles and insects, in which the *male* is not distinguished from the *female*, and that end with *e* mute, are feminine, as—panthère *panther*—colombe *dove*—truite *trout*—huître *oyster*—vipère *viper*—mouche *fly*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

aigle *eagle*,	cygne *swan*,
bièvre *beaver*,	dromadaire *dromedary*,
buffle *buffalo*,	lièvre *hare*,
capricorne *capricorn*,	merle *black-bird*,
crabe *crab*,	rouge-gorge *redbreast*.

MASCULINE

FROM THEIR TERMINATION

1. Nouns ending with a consonant; as—fusil *gun*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

amours *amours, flame.*
amours *loves, plural of amour is masc.*
boisson *beverage*,
chair *flesh*,
chaux *lime*,
clef *key*, [*feiting*,
contrefaçon *counter-*
cour *yard*,
croix *cross*,
cuiller *spoon*,
cuisson *baking*,
délices *delights*,
délice *delight, in the singular is masc.*
dent *tooth*,
dot *dower*,
façon *making*,
faim *hunger*,
faux *sithe*,
fin *end*,
fin *main point*, is
fois *time.* [mas.
forêt *forest*,
gent *nation, race*,
gens *people* m. & f.
hart *halter*,
leçon *lesson*,
main *hand*,
mœurs *manners*,
mer *sea*,
moisson *harvest*,
mort *death*,
nef *nave*,
noix *walnut*,
nuit *night*,
paix *peace*,
part *share*,
plupart *most part*,
poix *pitch*,
prémices *first fruits*,
rançon *ransom*,
soif *thirst*,
tour *tower*,
tour *trick*, is mas.
toux *cough*,
vis *screw*
voix *voice*.

List of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

alvéole	*alveolus.*
ambe	*combination of two numbers at the lottery.*
amiante	amiantus.
amulette	amulet.
animalcule	*animalcule.*
antidote	*antidote.*
antipode	*antipodes.*
aphélie	*aphelion.*
apogée	*apogee.*
apographe	autograph.
apologue	*apologue.*
aromate	*aromatic.*
astérisque	*asterisk.*
astragale	astragal.
athénée	*athœneum.*
augure	*augur.*
automate	*automaton.*
axe	*axis.* [*baptism.*
baptistère	*certificate of*
basalte	basaltes.
bécarre	*c-sharp.*
béjaune	ninny.
beurre	*butter.*
branle	jogging.
caducée	*caduceum.* [ing.
calque	counter-draw-
calville	calville.
camée	*camea.*
campestre	campestre.
camphre	*camphire.*
cantique	*canticle.*
capitole	*capitol.* [teer.
câpre	a sort of a priva-
câpre	caper (*a pickle*)
capuce	capuche [is fem.
carrosse	*coach.*
caractère	*character.*
casque	*helmet.*
catafalque	catafalco.
catalogue	*catalogue.*
catarrhe	catarrh.
caustique	*caustic.*
cénotaphe	cenotaph.
cerne	circle.
chambranle	jamb.
chose (quelque)	*something.*
chose	*thing*, is fem
cimeterre	*cimeter.*
cimetière	*church-yard.*
cippe	cippus.
cirque	*circus.*
cistophore	cistophorus.
cloaque	sink.
coche	*barge.*
coche	*notch*, is fem
code	*code*
codicille	codicil.
codille	codil.
colisée	coliseum.
colloque	colloquy.
collyre	collyrium.
collosse	*colossus.*
colure	colure.
commerce	*trade.*
compte	*account.*
conciliabule	conventicle.
conclave	conclave.
cône	*cone.*
conte	*tale.*
controle	register.
conventicule	private meeting.
corpuscule	corpuscle.
corymbe	corymbus.
coryphée	coryphœus.
cothurne	*buskin.*
coude	*elbow.*
courage	*courage.*
crâne	*skull.*
cratère	*crater.*
crêpe	*crape.*
crêpe	*a kind of pancake*, is fem.
crépuscule	*twilight.*
cromorne	krumhorn.

MASCULINE.

From the *Masculine* nouns, that end with a *consonant*—except, also, nouns ending with

ion } which are *feminine*, with very few exceptions;
son } *see* these terminations among the feminine
eur } terminations.

Nouns ending with the following letters, are *Masculine*

2 a] as—opéra *opera*—sofa *sofa*, &c.

3. é] as—café *coffee*—dé *thimble*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

Nouns ending with

té } are feminine; *see* feminine terminations.
tié }

4 i] as—parti *party*—pli *fold*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

après-midi *after-*	loi *law*,	merci *thank*, is masc.
foi *faith*, [*noon*.	merci *mercy*,	paroi *partition*.

5. o] as—piano *piano*—numero *number*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

albugo *albugo*, | virago *virago*.

6. u] as—chapeau *hat*—couteau *knife*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

eau *water*,	peau *skin*,	vertu *virtue*,
glu *bird-lime*,	tribu *tribe*,	

7. ge] as—usage *usage*—cirage *blacking*.

EXCEPTIONS.

alonge *eking-piece*,	grange *barn*,	orge *barley*,
apophyge apophyge,	horloge *clock*,	page *page of a book*,
auge *trough*,	*hypallage* hypallage,	*parasange* parasang,
bauge *retreat of a*	image *image*,	phalange *phalanx*,
cage *cage*, [*wild boar*,	jauge *gage*,	plage *flat shore*,
énallage enallage,	litige *litigation*,	*purge* cleansing,
épitoge Roman coat,	loge *hut, box*.	rage *rage*,
éponge *sponge*,	longe *loin*, [*sire*,	rechange *re-ex-*
fange *mire*,	malerage *violent de-*	serge *serge*, [*change*
frange *fringe*,	*méninge* meninges,	tige *stalk*,
forge *forge*,	à la nage *swimming*,	toge *Roman gown*,
gorge *throat*,	neige *snow*,	vendange *vintage*,
gouge gouge,	orange *orange*,	vidange *clearing*.

List of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

cube	*cube.*	génie	*genius.*
culte	*worship.*	genre	*gender.*
décalogue	*decalogue.*	gîte	*abode.*
décompte	*discount.*	glaive	*sword.*
dédale	*labyrinth.*	globe	*globe.*
délire	*delirium.*	globule	*globule.*
démérite	*demerit.*	golfe	*gulf.*
derrière	*back part.*	grade	*degree.*
diacode	dyacodium.	greffe	*rolls, graft.*
dialecte	*dialect.*	groupe	*group.*
dialogue	*dialogue.*	guide	*guide, tutor.*
dièse	*sharp.*	guide is fem.	*rein.*
diocèse	*diocese.*	gymnase	*gymnasium.*
disque	*disk.*	*gynécée*	gymnœceum.
distique	distich.	*gypse*	gypsum.
dithyrambe	dithyrambus.	*hâle*	sun-burning.
dividende	*dividend.*	hémisphère	*hemisphere.*
divorce	*divorce.*	hémistiche	*hemistich.*
domaine	*domain.*	*hère*	*poor wretch.*
doute	*doubt.*	hiéroglyphe	*hieroglyphic.*
ellébore	hellebore.	*horoscope*	horoscope
élysée	*elysium.*	hyménée	*hymen.*
émétique	*emetic.*	hymne	*hymn.*
empire	*empire.*	*iambe*	iambus.
empirée	empyreum.	incendie	*conflagration.*
entr'acte	*interlude.*	*indicule*	index.
épilogue	epilogue.	insecte	*insect.*
épisode	*episode.*	interligne	*interline.*
équinoxe	*equinox.*	intermède	*interlude.*
érysipèle	*erysipelas.*	intervalle	*interval.*
escompte	*discount*	*jable*	crome.
espace	*space.*	*jade*	jade.
euphorbe	euphorbium.	*jaspe*	jasper.
exergue	exergue.	jeûne	*fasting.*
exode	exodus.	labyrinthe	*labyrinth.*
exorde	*exordium.*	*laque*	lacco.
faîte	*top, summit.*	*laticlave*	laticlavium
faune	faun.	*leurre*	lure.
feurre	kind of a straw.	*levitique*	leviticus.
filigrane	filigrane.	*lexique*	lexicon.
fleuve	*river.*	libelle	*libel.*
fluide	*fluid.*	*limbe*	limb.
foie	*liver.*	*lithophyte*	lithopyton.

MASCULINE,

8. me] as—crime *crime*—baume *balm*, &c.

Exceptions.

alarme *alarm*,
ame *soul*, [*ness*,
amertume *bitter-*
arme *arm*,
brume *thick fog*,
cime *top*,
coutume *custom*,
crême *cream*,
dîme *tithe*,
drachme *drachm*,
écume *froth*,
enclume *anvil*,
énigme *enigma*,
épigramme *epigram*,
escrime *fencing*,
estame *worsted*,
estime *esteem*,
ferme *farm*,
flamme *flame*,
forme *form*,
frime *pretence*,
gamme *gamut*,
gomme *gum*,
gourme *the stranggles*.
lame *blade*,
larme *tear*,
légitime *share*,
lime *file*,
maxime *maxim*,
palme *victory*,
palme *a hand's breadth*, is m.
pantomime *pantomime*,
paume *tennis*, *palm of the hand*,
plate-forme *platform*,
plume *feather*, *quill*, and *pen*.
pomme *apple*,
prime *prime*,
rame *oar*, *ream*,
réforme *reform*,
rime *rhyme*,
somme *sum*,
somme *nap*, is m
trame *woof*, *plot*,
victime *victim*.

9. ice] as—orifice *opening*—sacrifice *sacrifice*, &c.

Exceptions.

avarice *avarice*,
cicatrice *scar*,
délices *delights*, is fem. but délice *delight*, is masc.
épice *spice*,
immondice *rubbish*,
injustice *injustice*,
justice *justice*,
lice *list*,
malice *malice*,
matrice *mould*,
milice *militia*,
notice *notice*,
office *pantry*,
office *office*, is m.
police *police*,
varice *varix*,

10. ile or yle] as—asile *asylum*—style *style*, &c.

Exceptions.

argile *clay*,
bile *bile*,
file *file*,
huile *oil*,
île *isle*,
tuile *tile*,
vigile *vigil*,
voile *sail*,
voile *veil*, is m.

11. aire] as—dictionnaire *dictionary*—vocabulaire *vocabulary*—inventaire *inventory*, &c.

Exceptions.

affaire *business*,
aire *area*,
chaire *pulpit*,
circulaire *circular*,
grammaire *grammar*
haire *haircloth*,
paire *pair*.

LIST of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

lobe	lobe
lobule	lobulus.
logogriphe	riddle.
luxe	*luxury.*
lycée	*lyceum.*
malaise	*trouble.*
manche	*handle.*
manche, is fem.	*sleeve.*
manipule	maniple.
manque	*want.*
masque	*mask.*
mausolée	*mausoleum.*
mécompte	*mis-reckoning.*
ménisque	meniscus.
mercure	*mercury.*
mérite	*merit.*
mésaise	*trouble.*
Messie	*Messiah.*
météore	*meteor.*
microscope	*microscope.*
ministère	*ministery.*
mode	*mood.*
mode, is fem.	*fashion.*
modèle	*model.*
module	module.
môle	pier.
monde	*world.*
monocorde	monochord.
monologue	soliloquy.
monopode	monopodium.
monopole	*monopoly.*
monastère	*monastery.*
monticule	*small hill.*
moule	*mould.*
multiplicande	*multiplicand.*
murmure	*murmur.*
musée	*musæum.*
mystère	*mystery.*
navire	*ship.*
négoce	*traffic.*
nimbe	nimbus.
obélisque	*obelisk.*
olympe	*olympus.*
omoplate	*shoulder-blade.*
opuscule	*opuscule.*
orbe	*orb.*
organe	*organ.*
orgue	*organ.*
orgues, is fem.	*organs.*
ovale	*oval.*
pacte	*bargain.* [*thers.*
panache	*bunch of fea-*
pancrace	pancratium.
panégyrique	*panegyric.*
pantographe	pantograph.
paradoxe	*paradox.*
paragraphe	*paragraph.*
parafe	*flourish to a signature.*
parallèle	*parallel.*
parapluie	*umbrella.*
parère	advice.
parjure	*perjury.*
parterre	*flower-garden,* or *pit* (*theatre.*)
participe	*participle.*
patrimoine	*patrimony.*
pécule	peculium.
pédicule	pedicle.
peigne	*comb.*
pendule	*pendulum.*
pendule, is fem.	*clock.*
pène	bolt.
pentacorde	pentachord.
pentateuque	pentateuch.
périgée	perigeum.
périnée	perinæum.
période	*pitch, summit.*
période, is fem.	*period.*
péritoine	peritoneum.
personne	*nobody.*
personne, is f.	*person.*
pétale	*petal.*
phare	*light-house.*
phénomène	*phenomenon*
phosphore	*phosphorus.*

MASCULINE.

12. oire] as—auditoire *auditory*—mémoire *account*, &c

EXCEPTIONS.

armoire *press*, [*tub*,
baignoire *bathing-*
décrottoire *shoe-*
foire *fair*, [*brush*,
écritoire *ink-stand*,
gloire *glory*,
histoire *history*,
mémoire *memory*,
nageoire *fin*,
passoire *strainer*
poire *pear*,
victoire *victory*.

13 cide] as—homicide *homicide*—acide *acid*, &c.

14. ste] as—buste *bust*—poste *post*, (military station,) &c

EXCEPTIONS.

améthyste *amethyst*,
batiste *cambric*,
liste *list*,
peste *pest*,
piste *track*,
poste *post*, (for let
veste *vest*. [ters,)

15. ble, cle, fle | gle, ple | as sable *sand*—couple *a couple* (as man and wife)—siècle *century*—exemple *example* —ongle *nail*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

aigle *eagle* (stand-
bible *bible*, [ard,)
boucle *buckle*,
couple *couple*, *two*,
débâcle *breaking of ice*,
étable *stable*,
exemple *copy*,
fable *fable*,
règle *rule*,
table *table*.

16. bre, cre, dre, fre | gre, pre, tre, vre | as câpre *a sort of a privateer*—foudre *large vat*—livre *book*—pourpre *purple* (stuff) —monstre *monster*—cadre *frame*, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

acre *acre*,
algèbre *algebra*,
ancre *anchor*,
anti-chambre *anti-chamber*,
balafre *scar*,
calandre *calender*,
câpre *caper* (pickle)
chambre *chamber*,
cendre *ashes*,
chartre *charter*,
dartre *tetter*,
encre *ink*
épitre *epistle*,
escadre *squadron of ships*,
fibre *fibre*, [*vre*,
fenêtre *window*,
fièvre *fever*,
foudre *thunder bolt*,
gaufre *wafer*,
guêtre *gaiter*
lettre *letter*,
lèvre *lip*,
livre *pound*, [*vre*,
manœuvre *manœu-*
mitre *mitre*,
montre *watch*,
nacre *nakre*,
œuvre *works of an*
offre *offer*, [*author*,
ombre *shade*,
outre *leather bottle*,
poudre *powder*,
pourpre *purple* (co-
poutre *beam*, [lor,)
rencontre *meeting*
vitre *pane of glass*.

List of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

planisphère *planisphere.*
plébiscite plebiscitum.
poêle *or* poile *stove, pall.*
poêle, is fem. *frying-pan.*
pôle *pole.*
polygone *polygon.*
polype polypus.
polypode polypodium.
ponche *punch.*
pore *pore.*
porche *porch.*
porphyre *porphyry.*
portique *portico.*
pouce *thumb, inch.*
préambule *preamble.*
précepte *precept.*
prêche protestant ser-
prélude *prelude.* [mon.
presbitère *presbytery.*
prétexte *pretext.*
principe *principle.*
prologue *prologue.* [ing.
prône sermon, scold-
protocole protocol.
proverbe *proverb.*
pylore pylorus. [*gure.*
quadrilatère *quadrilateral fi-*
quadrille *quadrille.*
quaterne combination of four numbers at the lottery.
quinconce quincunx.
quine combination of five numbers at the lottery.
quinquenove quinquenove.
quinquerce quinquertium.
règne *reign.*
régule *regulus.*
relâche *relaxation.*
relâche, is fem. *harbour.*
remède *remedy.*
remise *hired coach.*
remise, is fem. *coach-house.*
repère mark.
reproche *reproach.*
rêve *dream.*
réverbère *street-lamp.*
risque *risk.*
rôle *part.*
sacerdoce *priesthood.*
scandale *scandal.*
scrupule *scruple.*
sexe *sex.*
signe *sign.*
silence *silence.*
simulacre *simulacre.*
site *site.*
socque *sock.* [*count.*
solde *balance of ac-*
solde, is fem. *soldier's pay.*
soliloque *soliloquy.*
somme *nap.*
somme *sum,* is fem.
sourire *smile,*
sphéroïde. *spheroid.*
spécifique *specific.*
spondée *spondee.*
squelette *skeleton.*
stade stade.
store blind.
subside *subsidy.*
symbole *symbol.*
synode synod.
tarse tarsus.
télégraphe *telegraph.*
télescope *telescope.*
ténare tænarus
téorbe or *tuorbe* theorbo.
terne combination of three numbers at the lottery
texte *text.*
thyrse thyrsus.
tintamarre *thundering noise*
tithymale tithymal

List of *Masculine* nouns, ending with *e* mute.

tonnerre	*thunder.*	ulcère	*ulcer.*
topique	*topic.*	vase	*vase.*
toxique	toxicum.	vase, is fem.	*mud.*
traité	*treaty, treatise.*	vaudeville	*ballad.*
trapèze	*trapazium.*	véhicule	*vehicle.*
tribule	calthrop.	verbe	*verb.*
triomphe	*triumph.*	vermicelle	*vermicelli.*
trochée	*trochee.*	verre	*glass.*
trochisque	trochisch.	vestibule	*lobby.*
trône	*throne.*	viatique	*viaticum.*
trope	*trope.*	vide	*emptiness.*
trophée	*trophy.*	vignoble	*small vineyard.*
tropique	*tropic.*	violoncelle	*violoncello.*
tube	*tube.*	*viscère*	intestines.
tubercule	tubercle.	vote	vote.
tumulte	*tumult.*	zèle	*zeal.*
tuorbe	theorbo.	zodiaque	*zodiac.*
type	*type.*		

80. Among the French nouns ending with *eur*, there are some that are used both for the masculine and the feminine. We say, in speaking of a gentleman, *il est l'auteur de ce livre*, he is the author of this book; and of a lady, *elle est l'auteur de ce livre*, she is the authoress of this book. Some change the termination *eur* into *euse* for the feminine; thus we say of a gentleman, *un danseur*, a dancer; and of a lady, *une danseuse*, a dancer. Some change the termination *eur* into *rice* thus, we say of a gentleman, *un lecteur*, a reader; and of a lady, *une lectrice*, a reader. Some others are very irregular in the formation of the feminine.

81. Some of the nouns ending with *eur* are also used as adjectives; they will be found among the adjectives, page 49, and will be pointed out in the three following lists, by an *asterisk* * placed before them.

82. All substantives ending with *eur*, not found in the three following lists, have no feminine, or their feminine is like the masculine.

83. List of nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and *euse* for the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
.Accaparcur	accaparcuse	*monopoliser.*
.acheteur	acheteuse	*buyer.*
affronteur	affronteuse	*impostor.*
.arracheur	arracheuse	*puller.*
avaleur	avaleuse	*one that swallows.*
.baigneur	baigneuse	*bather.*
.balayeur	balayeuse	*sweeper*

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
baragouineur	baragouineuse	*jabberer.*
barguineur	barguineuse	*haggler.*
bateleur	bateleuse	*juggler.*
bayeur [*er*	bayeuse	*gaper.*
.blanchisseur, *bleach-*	blanchisseuse	*washerwoman.*
.boudeur	boudeuse	*one who pouts*
bousilleur	bousilleuse	*bungler.*
.brasseur	brasseuse	*brewer.*
bredouilleur	bredouilleuse	*stammerer.*
brocardeur	brocardeuse	*scoffer.*
brocheur	brocheuse	*stitcher.*
.brodeur	brodeuse	*embroiderer.*
brunisseur	brunisseuse	*burnisher.*
.buveur	buveuse	*drinker.*
.cajoleur	cajoleuse	*cajoler.*
caqueteur	caqueteuse	*prattler.*
cardeur	cardeuse	*carder.*
*.causeur	causeuse	*talker.*
.chanteur	chanteuse	*singer.*
singer	cantatrice	*a theatrical singer.*
.chasseur	chasseuse	*huntress.* [*huntress.*
hunter	chasseresse	*used in poetry,*
chercheur	chercheuse	*seeker.*
chicaneur	chicaneuse	*chicaner.*
chuchoteur	chuchoteuse	*whisperer.*
clabaudeur	clabaudeuse	*clamorer.*
.coiffeur	coiffeuse	*hair dresser.*
.complimenteur	complimenteuse	*complimenter.*
.confiseur	confiseuse	*confectioner.*
.connaisseur	connaisseuse	*connoisseur*
conteur	conteuse	*teller.*
.coucheur	coucheuse	*bed-fellow.*
.coupeur	coupeuse	*cutter.*
.coureur	coureuse	*runner.*
.cracheur	cracheuse	*spitter.*
craqueur	craqueuse	*fibber.*
criailleur	criailleuse	*squaller.*
crieur	crieuse	*bawler.*
.danseur	danseuse	*dancer.*
.débiteur	débiteuse	*spreader of news.*
.débiteur	débitrice	*debtor.*
découpeur	découpeuse	*carver.*
demandeur	demandeuse	*begger.*
demandeur	demandresse	*prosecutor.*
dévideur	devideuse	*winder.*
.devineur	devineuse	*guesser.*
devineur, *diviner*	devineresse	*divineress.*
discoureur	discoureuse	*tattler*
.diseur	diseuse	*teller.*
.donneur	donneuse	*giver.*
doreur	doreuse	*gilder.*
.dormeur	dormeuse	*sleeper.*
écornifleur	écornifleuse	*spunger.*

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
.écouteur	écouteuse	*listener.*
emboiseur	emboiseuse	*coaxer.*
empailleur	empailleuse	*one that makes straw bottoms for chairs.*
empeseur	empeseuse	*starcher.*
empoisonneur	empoisonneuse	*poisoner.*
.emprunteur	emprunteuse	*borrower.*
enjôleur	enjôleuse	*wheedler.*
enlumineur	enlumineuse	*one who colors maps [or prints.*
ensorceleur	ensorceleuse	*bewitcher.*
.entrepreneur	entrepreneuse	*undertaker.*
éplucheur	éplucheuse	*picker*
escroqueur	escroqueuse	*sharper.*
.faiseur	faiseuse	*maker.*
faneur	faneuse	*haymaker.*
fendeur	fendeuse	*cleaver.*
.fileur	fileuse	*spinner.*
finasseur	finasseuse	*a sly person.*
flagorneur	flagorneuse	*sycophant.*
* flatteur	flatteuse	*flatterer.*
flûteur	flûteuse	*whistler.*
frappeur	frappeuse	*striker.*
fraudeur	fraudeuse	*cheat.*
gageur	gageuse	*better.*
.gagneur	gagneuse	*gainer.*
gardeur	gardeuse	*keeper.*
gaspilleur	gaspilleuse	*squanderer.*
gausseur	gausseuse	*flouter.*
.glaneur	glaneuse	*gleaner.*
glisseur	glisseuse	*slider.*
gloseur	gloseuse	*censurer.*
goailleur	goailleuse	*jeerer.*
grapilleur	grapilleuse	*grape gleaner.*
.grasseyeur	grasseyeuse	*lisper.*
.grondeur	grondeuse	*scolder.*
hableur	hableuse	*boaster.*
jargonneur	jargonneuse	*gibberer.*
.jaseur	jaseuse	*prater.*
jeûneur	jeûneuse	*faster.*
.joueur	joueuse	*gamester.*
jugeur	jugeuse	*judger.*
louangeur	louangeuse	*praiser.*
loueur	loueuse	*praiser, or a person who lets out any thing.*
laveur	laveuse	*washer.*
leveur	leveuse	*one who takes up printed sheets.*
ligueur	ligueuse	*leaguer.*
liseur	liseuse	*a lover of reading.*
mâcheur	mâcheuse	*chewer.*
.mangeur	mangeuse	*eater.*
.marcheur	marcheuse	*walker.*

masculine	Feminine.	English.
marieur	marieuse	*matchmaker,*
*.menteur	menteuse	*liar.*
.moissonneur	moissonneuse	*reaper.*
*.moqueur	moqueuse	*mocker.*
.nageur	nageuse	*swimmer.*
ouvreur	ouvreuse	*box-keeper.*
.parfumeur	parfumeuse	*perfumer*
.parleur	parleuse	*talker.*
piailleur	piailleuse	*squaller.*
.plaideur	plaideuse	*narrator.*
.pleureur	pleureuse	*weeper.*
plieur	plieuse	*folder.*
polisseur	polisseuse	*polisher.*
.porteur	porteuse	*porter.*
pourvoyeur	pourvoyeuse	*purveyor.*
.preneur	preneuse	*taker*
.prêteur	prêteuse	*lender.*
.prometteur	prometteuse	*promiser.*
.prôneur	prôneuse	*praiser.*
*.querelleur	querelleuse	*quarreller.*
.questionneur	questionneuse	*questioner.*
quêteur	quêteuse	*one that goes about to obtain money for charitable purposes.*
rabâcheur	rabâcheuse	*one that makes tiresome repetitions in discourse.*
raccomodeur	raccomodeuse	*mender.*
raconteur	raconteuse	*relater.*
.radoteur	radoteuse	*dotard.*
*.railleur	railleuse	*jeerer.*
.raisonneur	raisonneuse	*reasoner.*
rançonneur	rançonneuse	*exacter.*
.rapporteur	rapporteuse	*reporter.*
ravaudeur	ravaudeuse	*patcher.*
recéleur	recéleuse	*concealer.*
.receveur	receveuse	*receiver*
rempailleur	rempailleuse	*one who puts new straw bottoms to chairs.*
remueur	remueuse	*mover.*
.repasseur, *grinder*	repasseuse	*one who irons linen.*
.revendeur	revendeuse	*huckster*
*.rêveur	rêveuse	*dreamer*
.ricaneur	ricaneuse	*giggler.*
.rieur	rieuse	*laugher.*
rioteur	rioteuse	*smiler.*
rogneur	rogneuse	*clipper.*
.ronfleur	ronfleuse	*snorer.*
rôtisseur	rôtisseuse	*one that roasts meat.*
roupilleur	roupilleuse	*dozing person.*
sarcleur	sarcleuse	*weeder.*
.sauteur	sauteuse	*leaper*

Masculine	Feminine.	English.
.siffleur	siffleuse	*whistler.*
souffleteur	souffleteuse	*one who slaps the cheeks of another.*
souffleur	souffleuse	*prompter.*
suborneur	suborneuse	*suborner.*
tâteur	tâteuse	*feeler.*
tâtonneur	tâtonneuse	*fumbler.*
tilleur	tilleuse	*one who takes the filaments from the hemp or flax plant.*
.tisonneur	tisonneuse	*one who likes to poke the fire*
tousseur	tousseuse	*cougher.*
.trembleur	trembleuse	*coward.*
tricoteur	tricoteuse	*knitter.*
*.trompeur	trompeuse	*deceiver.*
troqueur	troqueuse	*swapper.*
veilleur	veilleuse	*night watcher.*
.vendeur	vendeuse	*one whose profession is to sell any thing.*
vendeur	venderesse	*one who sells.*
vendangeur	vendangeuse	*vintager.*
verbiageur	verbiageuse	*a prolix talker.*
vétilleur	vétilleuse.	*punctilious person.*
vielleur	vielleuse	*player of the hurdy gurdy.*
.voleur	voleuse	*thief.*
.voyageur	voyageuse	*traveller.*

84. List of nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine and *rice* for the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
Accélérateur	accélératrice	*accelerator.*
.accompagnateur	accompagnatrice	*accompanist.*
.accusateur, *accuser*	accusatrice	*accuseress.*
.acteur, *actor*	actrice	*actress.*
administrateur, *administrator*	administratrice	*administratrix.*
.admirateur	admiratrice	*admirer.*
*.adorateur	adoratrice	*adorer.*
.adulateur, *adulator*	adulatrice	*adulatress.*
.ambassadeur, *ambassador*	ambassadrice	*ambassadress.*
approbateur	approbatrice	*approver.*
.bienfaiteur, *benefactor*	bienfaitrice	*benefactress.*
.calomniateur	calomniatrice	*calumniator.*
.collaborateur	collaboratrice	*fellow-labourer.*
.conciliateur	conciliatrice	*conciliator.*
.conducteur, *conductor*	conductrice	*conductress.*
.conservateur	conservatrice	*conservator.*
.consolateur	consolatrice	*consoler.*
contemplateur	contemplatrice	*contemplator.*
co-opérateur	co-opératrice	*co-operator.*
.correcteur	correctrice	*corrector*

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
.corrupteur	corruptrice	*corruptor.*
*.créateur, *creator,*	créatrice	*creatress.*
.curateur	curatrice	*curator.*
.débiteur	débitrice	*debtor.*
.débiteur	débiteuse	*spreader of news.*
.délateur	délatrice	*delator.*
.dénonciateur	dénonciatrice	*denunciator*
*.désapprobateur	désapprobatrice	*blamer.*
.dessinateur, *draught-*	dessinatrice	*a lady who draws.*
détenteur [*man*	détentrice	*detainer.*
*.dévastateur	dévastatrice	*destroyer.*
dilapidateur	dilapidatrice	*spendthrift.*
.directeur, *director*	directrice	*directress.*
.dispensateur	dispensatrice	*dispensator.*
.dissimulateur	dissimulatrice	*dissembler.*
.dissipateur	dissipatrice	*waster.*
.distributeur	distributrice	*distributer.*
divulgateur	divulgatrice	*divulger.*
dominateur	dominatrice	*dominator.*
.donateur	donatrice	*donor.*
émulateur, *emulator*	émulatrice	*emulatress.*
.exagérateur	exagératrice	*amplifier.*
.exécuteur, *executor*	exécutrice	*executrix.*
.expositeur	expositrice	*expositor.*
fauteur, *fautor*	fautrice	*fautress.*
.fondateur	fondatrice	*founder.*
.générateur	génératrice	*generator.*
.imitateur	imitatrice	*imitator.*
*improbateur	improbatrice	*one who improbates.*
improvisateur	improvisatrice	*one who speaks ex temporc.*
inoculateur	inoculatrice	*inoculator.*
insidiateur	insidiatrice	*insidiator.*
.inspecteur	inspectrice	*inspector.*
.instigateur	instigatrice	*instigator.*
.instituteur, *instructor*	institutrice	*instructress.*
.interprétateur	interprétatrice	*interpreter.*
interrupteur	interruptrice	*interrupter.*
introducteur	introductrice	*introducer.*
.inventeur	inventrice	*inventor.*
investigateur	investigatrice	*indagator.*
.lecteur	lectrice	*reader.*
.législateur, *legislator*	législatrice	*legislatress.*
.libérateur	libératrice	*liberator.*
.littérateur	littératrice	*a literary character.*
.médiateur, *mediator*	médiatrice	*mediatress.*
.modérateur	modératrice	*moderator.*
*.observateur	observatrice	*observer.*
.opérateur	opératrice	*operator.*
.persécuteur	persécutrice	*persecutor.*
perturbateur	perturbatrice	*perturbator.*
présentateur	présentatrice	*patron.*
.profanateur	profanatrice	*profaner.*

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
*.protecteur, *protector*	protectrice	*protectress.*
.réconciliateur	réconciliatrice	*reconciler.*
.réformateur	réformatrice	*reformer.*
.séducteur	séductrice	*seducer.*
.spectateur, *spectator*	spectatrice	*spectatress.*
subornateur	subornatrice	*bribber.*
tentateur, *tempter*	tentatrice	*temptress.*
.testateur	testatrice	*testator.*
.tuteur	tutrice	*guardian.*
.violateur	violatrice	*infringer.*
.usurpateur	usurpatrice	*usurper.*
.zélateur	zélatrice	*zealot.*

85. List of nouns ending with *eur* for the masculine, and which form their feminine variously.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
·Avant-coureur	avant-courière	*forerunner.*
bailleur	bailleresse	*lessor.*
chanteur	cantatrice	*opera singer.*
chanteur	chanteuse	*singer.*
.chasseur, *hunter*	chasseresse chasseuse	*huntress, (in poetry.)* *huntress.*
défendeur	défendresse	*defendant.*
demandeur	demandresse	*prosecutor.*
demandeur	demandeuse	*beggar.*
devineur	devineresse	*divineress.*
.devineur	devineuse	*guesser.*
dissertateur disserteur	disserteuse	*dissertator.*
.empereur, *emperor*	impératrice	*empress.*
*.enchanteur, *enchanter*	enchanteresse	*enchantress.*
.gouverneur, *gover-*	gouvernante	*governess.*
.pécheur [*nor*	pécheresse	*sinner.* [*proxy.*
procureur	procuratrice	*one who acts by*
procureur, *solicitor*	procureuse	*the solicitor's wife.*
.serviteur	servante	*servant.*
.vendeur	venderesse	*seller.* [*is to sell.*
.vendeur	vendeuse	*one whose profession*
*.vengeur, *avenger*	vengeresse	*avengeress.*

86. I have said much on the nouns ending with *eur* because the subject could not be treated in a shorter way to be of any use. No grammar that I know gives any information on this subject. Wanostrocht does not speak of it. What Lévizac says about it, page 87, of his own grammar, is no direction for the learner. Many nouns in the above three lists are seldom used. It would be well if the learner committed to memory those before which a . is placed as the most used.

OF NUMBERS.

87. By Number is understood that property which nouns have of denoting either *one* or *several* persons or things.

88. There are *two numbers*, the singular and the plural.

89. The singular number expresses but one person or one thing—as, *a man, a table*, &c.

90. The plural number expresses more than one person or thing—as *men, tables*, &c.

Of the Formation of the Plural of French Substantives.

Direction.

91. Whenever you want to form the plural of any French noun—1st, See whether that noun does not come under the following exceptions (which may be ascertained by its termination in the singular): if it does not come under any of the exceptions, then it comes under the general rule.

General Rule.

92. The plural of French nouns, is generally formed, as in English, ry the addition of an *s* to the singular, as:

porte	*door,*	portes	*doors,*
rue	*street,*	rues	*streets.*

Exceptions.

93. 1st, All nouns ending in the singular, with *s, x*, or *z*, remain the same for the plural, as:

fils	*son,*	fils	*sons,*
voix	*voice,*	voix	*voices,*
nez	*nose,*	nez	*noses.*

94. 2d, All nouns ending in the singular with *au, eu*, or *œu*, take *x* to form the plural, as:

bateau	*boat,*	bateaux	*boats,*
feu	*fire,*	feux	*fires,*
vœu	*vow,*	vœux	*vows.*

95. 3d, Of nouns ending in the singular, with *ou*, 6 of them take *x* to form the plural; the rest follow the general rule, that is, they take *s*.

bijou	*jewel,*	bijoux	*jewels,*
caillou	*pebble,*	cailloux	*pebbles,*
chou	*cabbage,*	choux	*cabbages,*
genou	*knee,*	genoux	*knees,*
hibou	*owl,*	hiboux	*owls,*
joujou	*plaything*	joujoux	*playthings.*

96. 4th, Of nouns ending in the singular with *al*, 21 of them change that termination *al* into *aux*, to form the plural. The rest follow the general rule, that is, they simply take *s* to form the plural.

amiral	*admiral,*	amiraux	*admirals.*
animal	*animal,*	animaux	*animals.*
arsenal	*arsenal,*	arsenaux	*arsenals.*
canal	*canal,*	canaux	*canals.*

capital	*principal,*	capitaux	*principals.*
cheval	*horse,*	chevaux	*horses.*
cristal	*crystal,*	cristaux	*crystals.*
fanal	*light-house,*	fanaux	*light-houses.*
général	*general,*	généraux	*generals.*
hopital	*hospital,*	hopitaux	*hospitals.*
madrigal	*madrigal,*	madrigaux	*madrigals.*
mal	*evil,*	maux	*evils.*
maréchal	*farrier, marshal,*	maréchaux	*farriers.*
métal	*metal,*	métaux	*metals.*
minéral	*mineral,*	minéraux	*minerals.*
quintal	*quintal,*	quintaux	*quintals.*
rival	*rival,*	rivaux	*rivals.*
signal	*signal,*	signaux	*signals.*
total	*total,*	totaux	*totals.*
tribunal	*tribunal,*	tribunaux	*tribunals.*
vassal	*vassal,*	vassaux	*vassals.*

97. 5th, Of nouns ending in the singular with *ail*, 8 of them change that termination *ail* into *aux*, to form the plural. The rest follow the general rule, that is, they take *s* for the plural.

bail	*lease,*	baux	*leases.*
corail	*coral,*	coraux	*corals.*
émail	*enamel,*	émaux	*enamels.*
soupirail	*vent,*	soupiraux	*vents.*
sous-bail	*under-lease,*	sous-baux	*under-leases.*
travail	*work*	travaux	*works.*
vantail	*a leaf of a folding door,*	vantaux	*leaves of a folding door.*

98. 6th, Nouns of more than one syllable ending in the singular with *ant* and *ent*, according to the most general practice, drop the *t* and take *s* to form the plural, as:

enfant	*child,*	enfans	*children.*
moment	*moment,*	momens	*moments.*

99. 7th, Monosyllables retain the *t* and take *s* to form the plural, as:

gant	*glove,*	gants	*gloves.*
dent	*tooth,*	dents	*teeth.*

100. 8th, The only monosyllable that drops the *t* and takes *s* is *gent*, nation, which makes *gens*, people.

101. 9th, The six following nouns are quite irregular in the formation of their plural.

ail	*garlick,*	aulx	*garlicks.*
bétail	*cattle,*	bestiaux	*cattle.*
aïeul	*grandfather,*	aïeux	*ancestors.*
ciel	*heaven,*	cieux	*heavens.*
œil	*eye,*	yeux	*eyes.*
bercail	*sheepfold,* has no plural.		
miel	*honey,* has no plural.		

102. 10th, *Aïeul, œil, ciel,* make also *aïeuls, ciels, œils,* as: ses aïeuls, meaning a person's *two grandfathers;* des ciels-de-lit, *testers of beds;* des œils de bœuf, *ovals.*

Of the formation of the plural of Compound Nouns.

103. N. B. As several parts of speech are here introduced which have not yet been explained, no exercise on them will be given in this place. I give these rules now to be referred to hereafter.

104. When a noun is compounded of a substantive and an adjective both take the mark of the plural, as:

un gentilhomme, a nobleman, *des gentilshommes*, noblemen;
une basse-cour, a poultry-yard; *des basses-cours*, poultry yards.

105. We say for the sake of pronunciation without giving to the adjective the mark of the plural:

grand'mère	grandmother,	*grand'mères*	grandmothers.
grand'messe	high mass,	*grand'messes*	high masses.

106. When a noun is compounded with a verb or with an adverb and a substantive, the substantive alone takes the mark of the plural, as:

un tournebroche	a jack,	*des tournebroches*	jacks.
un avant-coureur	a fore-runner,	*des avant-coureurs*	fore-runners.

107. When a noun is compounded of two substantives united by a preposition, the first alone takes the mark of the plural, as:

un maître-d'hôtel, a steward. *des maîtres-d'hôtel*, stewards.

108. *Coq-à-l'âne*, and *tête-à-tête* do not take the mark of the plural, We say un coq-à-l'âne, des coq-à-l'âne, un tête-à-tête, des tête-à-tête.

109. Words compounded with a verb and an adverb, or with a preposition, do not take the mark of the plural, as:

un passe-partout, a master key. *des passe-partout*, master keys.

110. The following nouns, compounded with *sieur*, *dame*, *demoiselle*, and with the possessive pronoun *mon* and *ma*, take *s* for the plural, and change *mon* and *ma* into *mes:*

Monsieur, Sir or Gentleman,	*Messieurs*, Sirs or Gentlemen,
Madame, Madam,	*Mesdames*, Ladies,
Mademoiselle, Miss,	*Mesdemoiselles*, Misses.

111. N. B. In the following exercises the French noun, when put under the English, will be put in the singular: the learner will have to form the plural according to the foregoing rules and exceptions whenever the English noun is in the plural:

EXERCISE.

The flowers of the gardens, the niceties of the languages,
fleur jardin, délicatesse langue,
the palaces of the kings, the woods of those countries,
palais roi, bois pays,
the walnuts of their orchards, the pictures of those painters,
noix verger, tableau peintre,
the feathers of these birds, the melody of their voices, the gods of
plume oiseau, mélodie f. *voix, dieu*
the pagans, the jewels of my sisters, the cabbages of our gardens,
païen, bijou, sœur, chou jardin,
these charming places, the horses of my stables, the fans of these
[2]*charmans* [1]*lieu, cheval écurie, éventail*
ladies, the (front gates) of those churches, the actions of my
dame, portail église,

ancestors, the evils of this life, the victories of those generals,
aïeul, *mal* *vie*,
the works of those architects, the corals of those seas, the
travail *architecte*, *corail* *mer*,
(learned men) of those times, the presents of my parents, the
savant *temps-là*,
teeth of your combs, the playthings of our children, the heads of
dent *peigne*, *joujou* *enfant*, *tête*
these nails.
clou.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

112. The *definite article* is a small word prefixed to substantives to determine the extent of their signification.

The French definite article is { *le* before a sing. mascu. substantive. / *la* before a sing. femin. substantive. } the plural is *les* for both genders.

EXAMPLES.

Sing. { *le* jour the day / *la* nuit the night } plur. { *les* jours the days. / *les* nuits the nights.

EXERCISE.

The sun, the moon, and the stars, are the glory of nature.
soleil, m. *lune*, f. *étoile*, f. *soxt* f. art. f.
The king, the queen, and the princes are well pleased. The
roi, *reine*, *très-satisfaits*.
rose, the violet, the tulip, the narcissus, the hyacinth,
f. *violette*, f. *tulipe*, f. *narcisse*, m. *jacinthe*, f.
the gilliflower, the jasmine, the lily, the honeysuckle, the
giroflée, f. *jasmin*, m. *lis*, m. *chèvre-feuille*, m.
ranunculus, are the delight of the sight. Poetry,
renoncule f. *délices* f. pl. *vue* f. art. *poésie*, f. art.
painting, and music are (sister arts). The day and the
peinture, f. art. *musique* f. *sœurs*. *jour* m.
night are equally necessary.
nuit f. *également* *nécessaires*.

113. The article is subject to elision and contraction. (*See page* 14.)

114. Elision of the article is the omitting of the *e* in *le*, or the *a* in *la*, when these articles precede a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

EXAMPLES.

l'argent / l'histoire instead of { *le* argent the money. / *la* histoire the history.

115. But in this case the place of the letter thus omitted is supplied by an apostrophe.

The soul of man without cultivation is like a diamond
ame f. art. *homme* m. *sans* *culture* *est comme* *diamant* m.

(in the rough). The history of Spain is sometimes very interesting.
brut. *histoire* f. *Espagne est quelquefois très-intéressante.*
(Look at) the amaranth and the anemone; what beauty!
Considérez *amaranthe* f. f. *quelle*
Self-love and pride are always the offspring of a weak
art. *amour-propre* art. *orgueil sont toujours partage* m. [2]*faible*
mind. Honesty, innocence, honour, and the love of
[1]*esprit* m. art. *Honnêteté*, art. art. *honneur* *amour* art.
virtue are (very much esteemed). Summer, autumn, and
vertu f. *très-estimés* art. *été* art. *automne*, art.
winter are very changeable. France is separated from Italy by the
hiver *variables.* art. *séparée* *de* art. *Italie par*
Alps, and from Spain by the Pyrenees.
Alpes, art. *Pyrénées.*

116. Contraction in grammar is the reducing of two syllables into one, and takes place when the preposition *à* or *de* precedes the article; in which case, instead of putting *de le* before a masculine singular, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated, *du* must be employed; instead of *à le*, *au* must be used; and before the plural substantives of both genders, *de les* is changed into *des*, and *à les* into *aux*.

Thus	Du roi	is instead of	*de le* roi	of the king
	du héros	——	*de le* héros	of the hero
	au roi	——	*à le* roi	to the king
	au héros	——	*à le* héros	to the hero
	des rois	——	*de les* rois	of the kings
	des reines	——	*de les* reines	of the queens
	aux rois	——	*à les* rois	to the kings
	aux reines	——	*à les* reines	to the queens

EXERCISE.

The top of the mountains and the bottom of the vallies are
sommet m. *montagne* *fond* m. *vallée*
equally agreeable. Silk is soft to the touch. The
également. *agréables*, art. *Soie* f. *douce* *toucher* m.
happiness of a [2]feeling [1]man is to relieve the wants of the poor.
bonheur m. *sensible* *de* *subvenir* *à* *besoin* *pauvre* m. s.
A man given to pleasure was never a great man. He obeyed the
livré art. *plaisir* m. *fut* *grand* *Il* *obéit à*
orders of the king. The warbling of birds, the murmuring of
ordres *gazouillement* m. art. *oiseau*, *murmure* m. art.
streams, the enamel of meadows, the coolness of woods, the
ruisseau, *émail* m. art. *prairie*, *fraîcheur* f. art. *bois*,
fragrance of flowers and the sweet smell of plants contribute
parfum m. art. *fleur* *douce odeur* f. art. *plante contribuent*
greatly to the pleasures of the mind and to the health of the body.
beaucoup *esprit* *santé* f. *corps* m.

117. *De* and *à* are never contracted with *la* before a sing. fem. substantive beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated.

EXAMPLES.

De la reine of the queen *à la* reine to the queen.

118. Nor are *de* and *à* contracted with *le* or *la* before any substantive singular beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, but then the article suffers elision.

EXAMPLES.

De l'esprit	of the mind	*de l'homme*	of the man
A l'esprit	to the mind	*à l'homme*	to the man
De l'ame	of the soul	*à l'ame*	to the soul
De l'histoire	of the history	*à l'histoire*	to the history

119. Contraction likewise does not take place when the adjective *tout*, all, every, intervenes between *de* or *à* and the article.

EXAMPLES.

De tout le monde,	of every body	*A tous les hommes*,	to all men
De tous les hommes,	of all men	*De toutes les vertus*,	of all virtues
A tout le monde,	to every body	*A toutes les maisons*,	to all houses

EXERCISE.

The hope of success strengthened the cause of virtue *espérance* f. art. *réussite* f. *fortifia* f. art. *vertu* f. and weakened the audaciousness of rebellion. Fire of *affaiblit* *audace* f. art. f. art. *Feu* m. art. imagination, strength of mind, and firmness of soul, f. art. *force* f. art. *esprit*, art. *fermeté* f. art. *ame*, are gifts of nature. We saw with horror that man (given up) *des don* art. f. *Nous vîmes avec* *livré* to avarice and voluptuousness. Good cultivation is that art. *à* art. *volupté* f. art. *Bonne culture* f. *ce* which contributes most to the fertility of the soil. More or less *qui contribue le plus* *terre* f. *Plus ou moins* pain is the lot of (every body.) The history of man under *de peine* *partage* m. *tout le monde* m. art. *dans* all the circumstances of life is the study of the wise. *toutes* *circonstance* f. art. *vie* f. *étude* *sage* m. sing. Playfulness (does not become) all ages nor all art. *Enjouement* m. *ne sied ni à* art. m. *ni à* art. characters.
caractère m.

120. General Rule. In French, the article always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

EXAMPLES.

Le *livre que je cherche*,	The book which I am looking for.
La *femme que je vois*,	The woman whom I see.
Les *hommes qui étudient*,	The men that study.

EXERCISE.

The father, mother, brothers, sisters, uncles, aunts, *père* art. *mère* art. *frère* art. *sœur* art. *oncle* art. *tante* and several other relations were present. What we *plusieurs autres parens étaient présens. Ce que nous* value is health, frugality, liberty, vigour of *estimons c'est* art. *santé* f. art. f. art. f. art. *vigueur* f. art. mind and body; it is the love of virtue, reverence *de* art. *corps* m. *ce* *amour* m. art. f. art. *crainte* f. for the gods, fidelity to all mankind, moderation in *de dieu* m. art. f. *envers* art. *monde* m art. f. *dans* prosperity fortitude in adversity, courage, good art. f. art. *force* f. art. f. art. m. art. *bonnes* morals, and the abhorrence of flattery.
mœurs, *horreur* f. art. f.

121. General Rule. The article and the prepositions *à* and *de*, whether contracted or not, are invariably to be repeated before every substantive.

EXAMPLES.

L'*esprit*, les *grâces*, *et* la *beauté nous captivent*.	Wit, grace, and beauty, captivate us.
Je vis hier le *roi*, la *reine*, *et* les *princes*.	I saw yesterday the king, queen, and princes.
L'*ignorance est* la *mère* de l'*erreur*, de l'*admiration*, *et* des *préventions de toute espèce*.	Ignorance is the mother of error, admiration, and prejudices of every kind.

EXERCISE.

Innocence of manners, sincerity, obedience, and
art. f. art. *mœur* art. f. art. *obéissance* f. art.
abhorrence of vice, inhabit this happy region. The plants
horreur art. m. *habitent heureuse* f. *plante*
of the gardens, the animals of the forests, the minerals of the earth,
jardin, m. *forêt*, f. *terre* f.
the meteors of the sky, must all concur to store the mind
météore ciel, m. *doivent tous concourir à enrichir*
with an [2]inexhaustible [1]variety. Neither suffering punishment
par inépuisable f. * art. *peine*. f. art. *châtiment* m.
nor kindness (make any) impression on those minds.
* art. *carresse* f. pl. *ne font nulle sur ame*.
The lily is the emblem of virginity, candour,
lis m. *symbole* m. art. f. *de* art. f. *de* art.
innocence, and purity.
f. *de* art. *pureté* f.

122. *Du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*, answering to the English indefinite adjective pronoun *some* or *any*, expressed or understood, have by way of ellipsis passed into habitual use. The same directions must be attended to as are given page 12, art. 50.

EXAMPLES.

Je mange du *pain*.	I eat bread.
Il prend de la *peine*.	He takes some trouble.
Nous mangeons du *hachis*.	We eat some hash.
Elle conçoit de la *haîne*.	She conceives a hatred.
Vous avez de l'*amitié*.	You have some friendship.
Vous prenez de l'*humeur*.	You go into an ill humour.
Nous cueillons des *pommes*.	We gather apples.
Ils vendent des *oranges*.	They sell oranges.

EXERCISE.

Give me some bread and butter. Offer him some meat.
Donnez-moi pain m. *beurre* m. *Offrez-lui viande* f.
Take some salt. (There is) mustard. We have some girkins.
Prenez sel m. *Voilà moutarde* f. *Nous avons cornichon*.
(Shall I offer you) some chicken? (Shall I help you to) some fruit?
Vous offrirai-je poulet m. *Vous servirai-je* m.
I (will take) (with pleasure) some broth. Bring me some bread.
Je prendrai volontiers bouillon m. *Apportez-moi*
(Pour me out) some beer. Drink some wine. Take some tea.
Versez-moi bière f. *Buvez vin* m. *Prenez thé* m.

(Put in) some sugar and milk. I hear some noise. (There
Mettez-y sucre m. *lait* m. *J'entends bruit* m. *Il*
falls) some hail. She has some pride. Have you any ink
tombe grêle f. s. *Elle a orgueil. Avez-vous encre* f.
and pens? Put some oil and vinegar to the salad. Eat
plumes? Mettez huile vinaigre m. *sur salade* f. *Mange*
some lobster. He has received gold and silver.
homard m. *Il a reçu or* m. *argent* m.

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

123. The adjective is not, like the substantive or noun, the name of any person or thing, physical, metaphysical, or abstract, but it is a word which, when added to a substantive or noun, expresses the particular quality or defect of that substantive or noun, as

bon père,	good father.	*bonne mère,*	good mother.
mauvais pères,	bad fathers.	*mauvaises mères,*	bad mothers.
bon ange,	good angel.	*mauvais ange,*	bad angel.
beau livre,	fine book.	*mauvais livres,*	bad books.

124. In the above sentences, *good* and *bad* are the adjectives which express the qualities and defects of the substantives or nouns *father, fathers, mother, mothers, angel, angels, book, books.*

125. In English the adjective is invariable; that is, the English adjective is the same before a noun, whether that noun be masculine or feminine, singular, or plural, as

un homme savant,	a learned man.
une femme savante,	a learned woman.
hommes savans,	learned men.
femmes savantes,	learned women.

126. In French, the adjective must agree with the noun which it qualifies, in gender and number; that is, the adjective must be masculine singular, if the noun be mas. sing.; feminine singular, if the noun be fem. sing.; masculine plural, if the noun be mas. pl.; feminine plural, if the noun be fem. pl. The adjective *learned*, which is the same in the above four English sentences, has in French four different terminations.

Of the formation of the Feminine of French Adjectives.

127. N. B. Whenever you want to form the feminine of any adjective, first see whether that adjective is to be found amongst the lists of exceptions to the different rules: if not to be found there, find out from its masculine termination under what rule it comes.

128. For the formation of the plural of French adjectives, see page 51 art. 150.

129. French adjectives that end in the masculine singular with an *e* mute* remain the same for the feminine singular.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
aimable	aimable	*amiable.*
aveugle	aveugle	*blind.*

130. *The name of mute is given to the French *e* without an accent; it is not pronounced at all at the end of French words of more than one syllable, but causes the consonant that precedes it to be pronounced very forcibly: it is of the same nature as the English *e* at the end of *love*, *mate*, *tare*, &c.

131. French adjectives that do not end in the masculine singular with *e* mute, take *e* mute to form the feminine singular, if not found under the following rules or exceptions:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
prudent	prudente	*prudent.*
sensé	sensée	*sensible.*
poli	polie	*polite.*
tortu	tortue	*crooked.*
instruit	instruite	*informed.*

132. Adjectives ending in *er* in the mas. sing., besides taking an *e* mute to form their fem. sing., require a grave accent to be put over the *e* that precedes the *r* in the masculine, as

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
léger	légère	*light.*
cher	chère	*dear.*

133. French adjectives that end in the mas. sing. with the following terminations,

el, eil, ien, on, et,

form their feminine by doubling the last consonant and taking *e* mute.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
cruel	cruelle	*cruel.*
pareil	pareille	*like.*
ancien	ancienne	*ancient.*
bon	bonne	*good.*
net	nette	*clean.*

134. The following adjectives, although ending with *et*, form their feminine by taking an *e*, and placing a grave accent on the *e* that precedes the *t* in the masculine:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English
concret	concrète	*concrete.*
discret	discrète	*discrete.*
indiscret	indiscrète	*indiscreet.*
inquiet	inquiète	*uneasy.*
complet	complète	*complete.*
incomplet	incomplète	*incomplete.*
replet	replète	*replete.*
suret	surète	*sourish.*

135. The thirteen following French adjectives, though not ending in the masculine singular with *el*, *eil*, *ien*, *on*, or *et*, form their fem. sing. by doubling the last consonant and taking an *e* mute:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
bas	basse	*low.*
cas	casse	*hoarse*, or *broken.*

Masculine.	Feminine	English
gras	grasse	*fat.*
las	lasse	*tired.*
exprès	expresse	*express.*
profès	professe	*professed.*
épais	épaisse	*thick.*
métis	métisse	*mongrel.*
gros	grosse	*big, large.*
sot	sotte	*foolish,* or *silly.*
vieillot	vieillotte	*oldish.*
nul	nulle	*null,* or *none.*
gentil	gentille	*genteel.*

136. The French adjectives that end in the masculine singular with an *f,* change this letter *f* into *v,* and take *e* mute to form the feminine singular, as

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
bref	brève	*short.*
actif	active	*active.*
naïf	naïve	*ingenuous.*
neuf	neuve	*new.*

137. French adjectives that end in the masculine singular with an *x,* change this letter *x* into *s,* and take an *e* mute to form the feminine singular:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
honteux	honteuse	*shameful.*
vertueux	vertueuse	*virtuous.*
jaloux	jalouse	*jealous.*

138. EXCEPTIONS.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
préfix	préfixe	*prefixed.*
faux	fausse	*false.*
roux	rousse	*reddish.*
doux	douce	*sweet.*
aigre-doux	aigre-douce	*tart.*

139. The *five* following French adjectives have two masculines singular, and they form their feminine singular by doubling the *l* in the masculine singular before a vowel and taking an *e* mute:

Masculine, before a cons. or *h* aspirated.	Masculine, before a vowel or *h* mute.	Feminine.	English.
beau	bel	belle	*fine.* [*zy.*
fou	fol	folle	*mad* or *cra-*
nouveau	nouvel	nouvelle	*new.*
mou	mol	molle	*soft.*
vieux	vieil	vieille	*old.*

140. The nineteen following French adjectives are entirely irregular in the formation of their feminine singular:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
blanc	blanche	*white.*
franc	franche	*frank.*
frais	fraîche	*fresh.*
sec	sèche	*dry.*
grec	grecque	*Greek.*
public	publique	*public,*

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
caduc	caduque	*decrepit.*
turc	turque	*Turkish.*
long	longue	*long.*
bénin	bénigne.	*benign.*
malin	maligne	*malignant.*
tiers	tierce	*third.*
tors	torse *or* torte	*twisted.*
coi	coite	*still.*
favori	favorite	*favorite.*
jumeau	jumelle	*twin.*
traître	traîtresse	*traitor.*

141. French adjectives ending with *eur*, and which are also used as substantives, form their feminine singular as follows:

The eight following change the mas. termination *eur* into *euse* for the f.

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
causeur	causeuse	*prattler.*
flatteur	flatteuse	*flattering.*
menteur	menteuse	*lying*
moqueur	moqueuse	*mocker.*
querelleur	querelleuse	*quarrelsome.*
railleur	railleuse	*jeering.*
rêveur	rêveuse	*thoughtful.*
trompeur	trompeuse.	*deceitful.*

142. The seven following change the masculine termination *eur* into *rice* for the feminine:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
adorateur	adoratrice	*adoring.*
créateur	créatrice	*creating.*
désapprobateur	désapprobatrice	*blamer.*
dévastateur	dévastatrice	*destructive.*
improbateur	improbatrice	*disapproving.*
observateur	observatrice	*observing.*
protecteur	protectrice.	*protecting.*

143. The two following change the masculine termination *eur* into *eresse* for the feminine:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
enchanteur	enchanteresse	*charming.*
vengeur	vengeresse	*revengeful.*

144. The eleven following adjectives, ending also with *eur*, simply take *e* mute to form their feminine:

Masculine.	Feminine.	English.
antérieur	antérieure	*anterior.*
citérieur	citérieure	*citerior.*
extérieur	extérieure	*exterior.*
inférieur	inférieure	*inferior.*
intérieur	intérieure	*interior.*
majeur	majeure	*of age.*
meilleur	meilleure	*better.*
mineur	mineure	*minor.*
postérieur	postérieure	*posterior.*
supérieur	supérieure	*superior.*
ultérieur	ultérieure	*ulterior.*

145. The eleven above adjectives, ending with *eur*, are not used as substantives, as those of the three preceding lists are.

146. The above twenty-eight adjectives are the only adjectives ending in *eur* in the French.

147. Some adjectives have no feminine, as dispos, *active;* fat, *foppish;* paillet, *pale*, &c Others have no masculine, as blette, *mellow*, &c.

148. For the formation of the plural in French adjectives, see page 51.

149. N. B. In the following exercises, when the French adjective is put under the English, it is put in the masculine: the learner will have to form the feminine, when required, by the foregoing given directions:

EXERCISE.

She is decent. This house is well situated. This pear is
Elle *Cet* *maison* f. *bien* *situé.* *poire*
too ripe. She is tall and well formed. This story is very enter-
trop mûr. *grand* *bien fait.* *histoire* f. *très-amu-*
taining. This person is very unsteady. This mountain is steep.
sant. *personne* f. *bien léger.* *montagne* f. *escarpé.*
This road is not very safe. The door is not open. This
route f. *sûr.* *porte* f. *ouvert.*
room is dark. This street is too narrow. It is an ancient cus-
chambre f. *obscur.* *rue* f. *étroit.* *Ce* *cou-*
tom. She has carnation lips. His memory will be immortal.
tume f. *a* art. *2vermeil* *1lèvre* f. *Sa* *immortel.*
His manners are natural. The engagement was warm. (That is) an
manière *naïf.* *action* f. *fut* *vif.* *voilà*
original thought. This cloth is the best of all. They are
2neuf *1pensée* f. *étoffe* f. *meilleur* *toutes.* *Ce* *des*
delusive promises. He seduces by his fawning manners. The
2trompeur *1promesse* f. *séduit par* *2flatteur* *1manières* f.
delightful valley of Tempe is in Thessaly.
délicieux *vallée* f. *Tempé* *dans* art. *Thessalie* f.

EXERCISE.

The grass is very thick. That soup is very good, but too fat. It
herbe f. *soupe* f. *mais trop*
is a foolish undertaking. (There is no) truth in all that. This
sot *entreprise* f. *Il n'y a nul* *vérité* f. *dans tout celà.*
water is not clean. It is a *2very* silly *1history. It is in the newest
eau f. *net.* *Ce* *fou* f. *à* *nouveau*
fashion. It is a fine statue. The law is express upon that point.
mode f. *beau* f. *loi* f. *sur* m.
He lives in a state of luxurious idleness. This wax is not very white.
Il vit dans * * *mou* *oisiveté* f. *cire* f.
She is as fresh as a rose. The paint on that wainscot is not dry.
* *comme* f. *peinture* f. *de* *lambris* m.
His answer is a mere evasion. The thing is public. That plant
réponse f. *franc* *défuite* f. *chose* f. *herbe* f.
possesses a pernicious property. She (is of) a benevolent character.
a *2malin* *1qualité.* *a* *2bénin* *1humeur* f.
The avenging thunderbolt smote that (impious wretch). He extended
2vengeur *1foudre* f. *frappa* *impie* m. *2tendit*
to us a protecting hand. This woman is jealous and deceitful. His
* *1nous* *2protecteur* *1main* f. *femme* f. *jaloux* *faux.*

temper is mild. This color is too red. These old clothes
humeur f. *doux.* *couleur* f. *trop roux.* *hardes* f.
are good for nothing.
à ne rien.

Formation of the Plural of French Adjectives.

150. General Rule. The plural of adjectives and participles is generally formed like the plural of nouns by adding an *s* to the singular:

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	Fem. sing.	Fem. plu.	English.
grand,	grands,	grande,	grandes,	*great.*
poli,	polis,	polie,	polies,	*polite.*
aimé,	aimés,	aimée,	aimées,	*loved.*

151. The above rule admits of no exceptions with respect to the formation of the plural feminine from the sing. fem. of adjectives, but in forming the masculine plural from the mas. sing. there are several exceptions, which must be attended to.

152. N. B. To form the plural feminine of any adjective, it is necessary first to find its feminine singular, from which the feminine plural is formed by the addition of an *s:*

153. First exception—Adjectives ending with *s* or *x* in the mas. sing. do not change their termination for the plural masculine:

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	English.
gras,	gras,	*fat.*
heureux,	heureux,	*happy.*

154. Second exception—Adjectives of more than one syllable (polysyllables), ending with *ant* and *ent*, according to the most general practice, change *t* into *s* to form the plural masculine:

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	English.
reconnaissant,	reconnaissans,	*grateful.*
diligent,	diligens,	*diligent.*

155. Third exception—However, adjectives of one syllable (monosyllables) retain the *t* final and take an *s* to form the plural masculine:

lent,	lents,	*slow.*

156. Fourth exception—The adjective *tout* makes *tout* mas. sing.; *toute*, fem. sing.; *tous*, mas. plu.; *toutes*, fem. plu. *all.*

157. Fifth exception—Adjectives ending with *au* in the sing. mas. take *x* to form the plu. mas.; as

Mas. sing.	Mas. plu.	English.
beau,	beaux,	*fine.*
nouveau,	nouveaux,	*new.*

158. Sixth exception—Some adjectives, ending with *al* in the masculine singular, change that termination *al* into *aux*, to form the plu. mas.:

159. List of adjectives ending with *al*, which form their plural masculine in changing that termination *al* into *aux:*

Masculine singular.	Masculine plural.	English.
annal	annaux	*annual.*
austral	austraux	*austral.*
automnal	automnaux	*autumnal.*
banal	banaux	*common.*
baptismal	baptismaux	*baptismal.*
biennal	biennaux	*biennial.*

Masculine singular.	Masculine plural.	English.
.brutal	brutaux	*brutal.*
bursal	bursaux	*pecuniary.*
.capital	capitaux	*capital.* [*brain.*
cérébral	cérébraux	*belonging to the*
cérémonial	cérémoniaux	*ceremonial.*
claustral	claustraux	*claustral.*
collatéral	collatérau	*collateral.*
.collégial	collégiaux	*collegiate.*
.colossal	colossals colossaux	*colossal.*
commensal	commensaux	*commensal*
conjugal	conjugaux	*conjugal.*
costal	costaux	*costal.*
crural	cruraux	*crural.*
décemviral	décemviraux	*decemviral.*
décennal	décennaux	*decennial.*
décimal	décimaux	*decimal.*
.déloyal	déloyaux	*disloyal.*
diagonal	diagonaux	*diagonal.*
doctrinal	doctrinaux	*doctrinal.*
domanial	domaniaux	*belonging to a de-*
dorsal	dorsaux	*dorsal.* [*mesne.*
dotal	dotaux	*dotal.*
.égal	égaux	*equal.*
.électoral	électoraux	*electoral.*
.épiscopal	épiscopaux	*episcopal.*
.équilatéral	équilatéraux	*equilateral.*
.équinoxial	équinoxiaux	*equinoxial.*
féal	féaux	*trusty.*
féodal	féodaux	*feudal.*
fiscal	fiscaux	*fiscal.*
.fondamental	fondamentaux	*fundamental.*
.général	généraux	*general.*
.grammatical	grammaticaux	*grammatical.*
.horizontal	horizontaux	*horizontal.*
idéal	idéaux	*ideal.*
.illégal	illégaux	*illegal.*
.immoral	immoraux	*immoral.*
impartial	impartiaux	*impartial.*
.impérial	impériaux	*imperial.*
inégal	inégaux	*unequal.*
infernal	infernaux	*infernal.*
.latéral	latéraux	*lateral.*
.légal	légaux	*legal.*
.libéral	libéraux	*liberal.*
.littéral	littéraux	*literal.*
.local	locaux	*local.*
.loyal	loyaux	*loyal.*
machinal	machinaux	*machinal.*
.martial	martiaux	*martial.*
.médicinal	médicinaux	*medicinal.*
.méridional	méridionaux	*méridional.*
.moral	moraux	*moral.*

.natal	{ natals / nataux }	*natal.*
.national	nationaux	*national.*
.numéral	numéraux	*numeral.*
.nuptial	nuptiaux	*nuptial.*
.occidental	occidentaux	*occidental.*
.ordinal	ordinaux	*ordinal.*
.oriental	orientaux	*oriental.*
.original	originaux	*original.*
paradoxal	paradoxaux	*paradoxical.*
patrimonial	patrimoniaux	*patrimonial.*
.partial	partiaux	*partial.*
patriarcal	patriarcaux	*patriarchal.*
.pectoral	pectoraux	*pectoral.*
présidial	présidiaux	*presidial.*
prévôtal	prévôtaux	*provostal.*
primordial	primordiaux	*primordial.*
.principal	principaux	*principal.*
.proverbial	proverbiaux	*proverbial.*
.provincial	provinciaux	*provincial.*
.pyramidal	pyramidaux	*pyramidal.*
quatriennal	quatriennaux	*quadrennial.*
.radical	radicaux	*radical.*
.royal	royaux	*royal.*
.rural	ruraux	*rural.*
seigneurial	seigneuriaux	*seigneurial.*
.septentrional	septentrionaux	*northly.*
sépulcral	sépulcraux	*sepulchral.*
.social	sociaux	*social.*
spiral	spiraux	*spiral.*
synodal	synodaux	*synodal.*
transversal	transversaux	*transversal.*
triomphal	triomphaux	*triumphal.*
trivial	triviaux	*trivial.*
vénal	vénaux	*venal.*
verbal	verbaux	*verbal.*
vertical	verticaux	*vertical.*
vital	vitaux	*vital.*

160. All adjectives ending with *al* not found in the above list have no plural or are only used in the plural feminine. The learner will do well to commit to memory those most commonly used in conversation, and which are marked with a . before them.

EXERCISE.

They are envious and jealous. Those fowls are big and fat.
Ils *poulet* m.

Owls are frightful birds. (There are) some beautiful jewels.
art. *hibou* m. *des* [2]*hideux* [1]*oiseau* m. *Voilà* *de* *beau* *bijou* m.

The two new operas have succeeded. Men are only
deux *nouveau* m. *ont* *réussi.* art. [2]*sont* [1]*ne* [4]*que*
equal in the infirmities of nature. The [2]general [1]officers are assem-
[3]*égal par* art. f. *officiers* *assem-*
bled. This fruit is excellent. His proficiency is slow, but solid.
blé. m. pl. *sont* *Ses progrès* m. pl. *sont* *solide.*

All his friends have been very glad to see him. Those ladies are
ami m. *ont été bien aise de* [2]*voir* [1]*le.* *dame*
tired with walking. You have powerful enemies, but their efforts
las de marcher. *Vous avez de* *ennemi* m. *mais leurs*
(will be) vain and useless. The four [2]cardinal [1]points are the
seront *inutile.* *quatre* *point* m.
east, west, south, and north.
orient m. art. *occident* m. art. *midi* m. art. *nord* m.

Of the Degrees of Signification of the Adjective.

161. Grammarians commonly reckon *three* degrees of comparison: the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

162. The *positive* is the adjective expressing the quality of an object, without any increase or diminution, as *beau*, fine; *bon*, good.

EXERCISE.

A child gentle, amiable, and docile, is beloved (by every body.)
enfant m. *doux, aimable,* *aimé de tout le monde.*
An [2]ingenuous [1]candour, an amiable simplicity, and a lively artlessness,
ingénu f. f. [2]*piquant* [1]*naïveté* f.
are the charms of youth. The sight of an agreeable landscape
charme m. art. *jeunesse* f. *vue* f. *agréable paysage* m.
is a [2]varied [3]and [4]rapid [1]source of [2]delightful [1]sensations.
varié *rapide* f. *délicieux* f.

163. The *comparative* is so called because it draws a comparison between two or many objects. When two things are compared, the one is either superior, inferior, or equal to the other; hence, three sorts of comparison—that of *superiority*, *inferiority*, and *equality*.

164. The adverbs *plus*, *moins*, and *aussi*, which mark these three kinds of comparison, are to be repeated before every adjective, when several are joined to the same substantive, and are followed by the conjunction *que*, rendered in English by *than* or *as*.

165. The *comparative* of *superiority* is formed in French by putting *plus*, more, before the adjective, and *que*, than, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La rose est plus belle que la violette, The rose is more beautiful than the violet.

166. Observe that in English the *comparative* of *superiority* may be expressed by putting *more* before the adjective—as *more wise;* or in adding to the adjective the termination *er*—as *wiser*. When the comparative is expressed in English in the last manner, it must be rendered in French as if it stood *more wise*.

EXERCISE.

The republic of Athens was more illustrious than that of Lacede-
république f. *Athènes a été* *illustre* *celle* *Lacédé-*
mon. Homer was perhaps a greater genius than Virgil; but Virgil
mone. Homère était peut-être *grand génie* m. *Virgile; mais*
had a [2]more [3]delicate [4]and [5]more [6]refined [1]taste [7]than Homer
avait *fin* *délicat goût* m. *Homère.*
Milton appears (to me)more sublime than all the other epic poets.
[2]*paraît* [1]*me* *autre* [2]*épique* [1]*poète.*

167. The *comparative* of *inferiority* is formed by prefixing *moins*, less, to the adjective, and adding *que*, than, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La violette est moins belle que la rose, The violet is less beautiful than the rose.

EXERCISE.

Shipwreck and death are less fatal than the pleasures
art. *naufrage* m. art. *mort* f. *funeste* m.
which attack virtue. The violet is less brilliant to the eye than
qui attaquent art. f. f. *brillant* m. pl.
the lily, a true emblem of modesty and of pride.
lis, m. * [2]*véritable* [1]*emblême* m. art. f. *de* art. *orgueil* m.
Autumn is less varied than spring, but it is richer.
art. *automne* f. *varié* art. *printemps* m. *elle riche.*

168. The *comparative of equality* is formed by placing *aussi*, as, before the adjective, and *que* as, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La tulipe est aussi belle que la rose. The tulip is as beautiful as the rose.

EXERCISE.

†Pope's images are as perfect as his style is harmonious. Deli
Pope f. *parfait son* m. art. *déli-*
cacy of taste is a gift of nature, as scarce as true
catesse f. art. *goût* m. *don* m. art. f. *rare* art. *vrai*
genius. The love (of our neighbour) is as necessary in society
génie m. *amour du prochain dans* art.
for the happiness of life, as in Christianity for eternal
pour bonheur m. art. *vie* f art. *Christianisme* m. art. [2]*éternel*
salvation. It is as easy (to do) good as to do evil.
[1]*salut* m. *aisé de faire du bien du mal.*

†*Pope's images* translate *The images of Pope.*

169. The three following adjectives—*meilleur*, better, *pire*, worse, *moindre*, less—are comparatives in themselves:

170. N. B. As most beginners are apt to confound these comparative adjectives with the comparative adverbs, MIEUX, PIS, and MOINS, because they are generally rendered by the same English words *better*, *worse*, and *less*, it may be advisable to subjoin here these comparative adverbs with their positives, that the difference of meaning may serve as a distinction:

Adjectives.

Meilleur, better, is the comparative of *bon*, good, and is used instead of *plus bon*, which is never said.

Pire signifies *plus mauvais*, worse, or more wicked, and is used instead of *plus mauvais*.

Moindre means *plus petit*, less, or smaller, and is used instead of *plus petit*.

Adverbs

Mieux, better, is the comparative of *bien*, well, and is used instead of *plus bien*, more well, which is said in neither language.

Pis is the comparative of *mal*, badly, and is used for *plus mal*, worse, which is likewise employed.

Moins is the comparative of *peu*, little, and is used for *plus peu*, which is never used.

EXAMPLES.

Ce fruit-là est bon, mais celui-ci est meilleur,	*That fruit is good, but this is better.*
Sa condition est mauvaise, mais elle a été pire,	*His condition is bad, but it has been worse.*
Ma dépense est petite, mais la vôtre est moindre,	*My expense is small, but yours is smaller.*
Il se conduit bien, mais elle se conduit encore mieux,	*He behaves well, but she behaves still better.*
Il se portait mal, mais il est pis que jamais,	*He was unwell, but he is worse than ever.*
Je parle peu, vous parlez encore moins,	*I speak little; you speak still less.*

EXERCISE.

His reasoning is not better than yours. Your style is
Son raisonnement m. *le vôtre. Votre* m.
(a great deal) better than that of his brother. The thickness of this
de beaucoup *celui* *son* *épaisseur* f.
wall is less than that of the [2]next [1]wall. This column is less than
mur m. *celle* *voisin* *colonne* f.
the other in height and thickness. The remedy is worse than
autre en hauteur f. *en grosseur* f. *remède* m.
the disease. Your horse is worse than mine.
mal m. *cheval* m. *le mien.*

171. The adjective is in the *superlative* degree when it expresses the quality in a very high, or in its highest state; hence there are two sorts of superlatives, the *absolute* and the *relative.*

172. The *superlative absolute* is formed by putting *très, fort, bien,* very, before the adjective; it is called *absolute,* because it does not express any relation to other objects.

EXAMPLE.

Londres est une très-belle ville,	London is a very fine city.

173. Remark. The adverbs *extrêmement,* extremely, *infiniment,* infinitely, are likewise marks of the superlative absolute.

EXAMPLE.

Cet homme est extrêmement savant,	That man is extremely learned.
Dieu est infiniment heureux,	God is supremely happy.

EXERCISE.

That landscape is very diversified, very extensive, and infinitely
paysage m. *varié* *étendu*
agreeable (on every side). The Alps are very high and very steep.
agréable de tout côté m. *Alpes* f. *haut* *escarpé.*
The style of Fenelon is very rich and very harmonious, but it is some-
m. *Fénélon* *il quelque-*
times prolix; that of Bossuet is extremely sublime, but it is sometimes
fois prolixe; celui *élevé,*
harsh and unpolished.
dur *rude.*

174. The *superlative relative* is formed by prefixing the article *le* to the comparatives *meilleur, moindre, pire,* and to the adverbs *plus* and *moins;* it is called *relative,* because it expresses a relation to other objects.

EXAMPLES.

Londres est la plus belle des villes.	London is the finest of cities.
Je préfère une maison de campagne au plus beau palais.	I prefer a country-house to the finest palace.

175. *Plus* and *moins* with the article are repeated before every adjective

EXERCISE.

The most beautiful comparison (that there is) perhaps in any
comparaison f. *que il y ait peut-être dans aucun*
language is that which Pope has drawn from the Alps, in his Essay
langue f. *celle que tiré* f. *de dans son Essai*
on Criticism. The most able men are not always the most
sur art. *Critique* f. *habile gens toujours*
virtuous. The most ancient and most general of all kinds of
vertueux. f. f. art. *espèce* f.
idolatry was the worship rendered to the sun. The least excusable
était culte m. *rendu soleil* m.
of all errors is that which is wilful.
art. f. *celle qui volontaire.*

Agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive.

176. Rule I. The adjective always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

EXAMPLES.

Le bon père,	The good father.
La bonne mère,	The good mother.
De beaux jardins,	Fine gardens,
De belles promenades,	Fine walks.

177. *Bon* is masculine singular, because *père* is mas. and in the sing.; *bonne* is feminine singular, because *mère* is fem. and in the sing.; *beaux* is in the masculine plural, because *jardins* is mas. and pl., &c.

EXERCISE.

These hills are covered with trees loaded with fruit already
coteau m. *couvert de arbre* m. *chargé de* m. pl. *déjà*
ripe. A pure stream rolls its limpid water through the
mûr. *clair ruisseau* m. *roule son* [2]*limpide* [1]*eau à*
midst of meadows enamelled with flowers. (Every thing) interests
milieu m. *de prairie* f. *émaillé de fleur.* *Tout intéresse*
the heart in this abode, which is full of charms. Fly, incon-
cœur m. *séjour* m. * * *plein attrait* m. *Fuyez,* [2]*incon-*
siderate youth, fly from the enchanting allurements of a vain
sidéré [1]*jeunesse* f. * [2]*enchanteur* [1]*attrait* [2]*vain*
world: its perfidious sweets are a [2]slow [1]poison, which (would
[1]*monde* m. *ses* [2]*perfide* [1]*douceur* f. *lent* m. *qui dé-*
destroy) in your soul the noble enthusiasm of goodness and
truirait dans ame enthousiasme m. art. *bien* m.
the precious seeds of [2]sublime [1]virtues.
germe m. art. *vertu.*

178. Rule II. When the adjective relates to two substantives singular of the same gender, it must be put in the plural, and agree with them in gender.

EXAMPLE.

Le roi et le berger sont égaux après la mort, The king and the shepherd are equal after death.

EXERCISE.

Uprightness and piety are much esteemed even by the art. *droiture* f. art. *piété* f. *très estimé même de* wicked. A man in the most elevated and a man in the *méchant* pl. *Le dans* [3]*le* [4]*plus* [5]*élevé* [1]*le* [2]*état le* [2]*le* most obscure situation are equally precious in the eyes of God. [4]*plus* [5]*obscur* [1]*le* [2]*état* m. *également à* m. *Dieu.* Pilpay and Confucius are very celebrated among the nations of Asia. *célèbre parmi peuple* m. art.

179. RULE III. When the two substantives to which the adjective relates are of different genders, the adjective is to be put in the masculine plural.

EXAMPLE.

Mon père et ma mère sont contens, My father and mother are contented.

EXERCISE.

His probity and disinterestedness are known (every where). f. *son désintéressement* m. *connu partout.* The love of life and the fear of death are natural to *amour* m. art. *vie* f. *crainte* art. *mort* f. *naturel* man. Ignorance and self-love are equally presump- art. art. f. art. *amour-propre* m. *présomp-* tuous. My sister and brother were very attentive to the instruc- *tueux.* f. *mon ont été* tions of their masters. *maître* m.

NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

180. Numbers are divided into five classes, viz. *cardinal, ordinal, collective, distributive,* and *proportional.*

CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
1	un, une	*premier*	*first*	unité	*unit*
2	deux	deux*ième*, *second*	2d	couple, paire	*couple*
3	trois	trois*ième*	3d	trio	*trio*
4	quatre	quatr*ième*	4th	deux couples	*two couple*
5	cinq	cinq*uième*	5th		
6	six	six*ième*	6th	demi-douzaine	*half a dozen*
7	sept	sept*ième*	7th		
8	huit	huit*ième*	8th	huitaine	*eight*
9	neu*f*	neu*vième*	9th	neuvaine	*nine days of prayer*
10	dix	dix*ième*	10th	dizaine	*half a score*
11	onze	onz*ième*	11th		
12	douze	douz*ième*	12th	douzaine	*dozen*

CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
13	treize	treizième	13th		
14	quatorze	quatorzième	14th		
15	quinze	quinzième	15th	quinzaine	*fortnight, fifteen*
16	seize	seizième	16th		
17	dix-sept	dix-septième	17th		
18	dix-huit	dix-huitième	18th		
19	dix-neuf	dix-neuvième	19th		
20	vingt	vingtième	20th	vingtaine	*a score*
21	vingt-et-un	vingt-et-unième	21st		
22	vingt-deux	vingt deux-ième, &c.	22d		
30	trente	trentième	30th	trentaine	*a score & a half*
31	trente-et-un, &c.	trente-unième	31st		
40	quarante	quarantième	40th	quarantaine	*two score*
41	quarante-et-un	quarante-unième	41st		
50	cinquante	cinquantième	50th	cinquantaine	*two score and a half*
51	cinquante-et-un	cinquante-unième	51st		
60	soixante	soixantième	60th	soixantaine	*three score*
61	soixante-et-un	soixante-unième	61st		
*70	soixante-et-dix	soixante-dixième	70th		
71	soixante-onze	soixante-onzième	71st		
72	soixante-douze, &c.	soixante-douzième	72d		
80	quatre-vingts.	quatre-vingtième	80th	quatre-vingtaine	*four score*
81	quatre-vingt-un, &c.	quatre-vingt-unième	81st		
90	quatre-vingt-dix	quatre-vingt-dixième	90th	centaine	*five score*
91	quatre-vingt-onze	quatre-vingt-onzième	91st		
100	cent	centième	100th	1 centaine	*one hundred*
101	cent-un, &c.	cent-unième, &c.	101st		
200	deux cents	deux-centième	200th	2 centaines	*two hundred*
1000	mille	millième	1000th	1 millier	*one thousand*

* Lévizac had *soixante-dix;* in his dictionary, at the word *soixante*, he gives *soixante-dix;* and in the same dictionary, at the word *seventy*, he gives *soixante-et dix.* It should be *soixante-et-dix.* See Grammaire des Grammaires, 7th ed. page 333

CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
2000	deux mille &c.	deux-mill-*ième*, &c.	2000th	2 milliers	2 *thousand*
10,000	dix mille	dix-mill*ième*	10,000th	1 myriade	1 *myriad*
1,000,000	mille-fois mille	million*ième*	millionth	1 million	1 *million*

181. The formation of the ordinal number from the cardinal does not require any explanation, except that *-unième* is only found in compound numbers, where *premier* and second are inadmissible.

182. When mentioning the days of the month, the French make use of the cardinal instead of the ordinal number, and say *le onze d'avril*, not *le onzième*, &c. *le vingt-cinq du mois prochain*, and not *le vingt-cinquième*, &c. except, however, that instead of *l'un du mois*, they say *le premier*, the first day of, &c., and sometimes *le second*, though not so well, for *le deux ;* but this mode proceeds no farther.

183. Although *onze* eleven, and *onzième* eleventh, begin by a vowel, when the article is put before them it does not suffer elision ; for we say *le onze*, *le onzième*, and not *l'onze*, *l'onzième ;* we say also *sur les onze heures*, and not *sur lè zonze heures.*

184. Remark that in French we use the conjunction *et*, and, although not used in English, in the following numbers :—*vingt-et-un*, *vingt-et-une*, twenty-one ; *trent-et-un*, *trente-et-une*, thirty-one ; *quarante-et-un*, *quarante-et-une*, forty-one ; *cinquante-et-un*, *cinquante-et-une*, fifty-one ; *soixante-et-un*, *soixante-et-une*, sixty-one ; *soixante-et-dix*, seventy. The above are the only ones used with *et* and ; for though we say *vingt-et-un*, &c., we cannot say *vingt-et-deux*, &c. ; some say and write *soixante-et-onze*, *soixante-et-douze ;* but it is not right.

185. The following mode of counting in English, *one-and-twenty*, *six-and-thirty*, &c., is not used in French.

186. When in *quatre-vingts*, *vingt* is immediately followed by a *noun*, either expressed or understood, it takes an *s* as the mark of the plural. We say, for instance, *quatre-vingts chevaux*, eighty horses ; how many books have you ? *j'en ai quatre-vingts*, I have eighty, &c. ; but if in *quatre-vingts*, *vingt* is followed immediately by any other *number*, it does not take *s*, and we say *quatre-vingt-trois chevaux*, eighty-three horses ; how many books have you ? *j'en ai quatre-vingt-quatre*, I have eighty-four, &c.

187. When in *deux cents*, *trois cents*, &c., *cent* is immediately followed by a *noun*, either expressed or understood, it takes an *s* as the mark of the plural : we say, for instance, *trois cents livres*, three hundred books ; how many pens have you ? *j'en ai quatre cents*, I have four hundred, &c. ; but if in *deux cents*, *trois cents*, &c., *cent* is immediately followed by another number, it does not take *s*, and we say *trois cent six livres*, three hundred and six books ; how many pens have you ? *j'en ai cinq cent huit*, I have five hundred and eight, &c.

188. *Mille*, thousand, takes no *s* as mark of the plural : we say *deux mille*, two thousand, &c. ; but *mille*, mile, takes an *s* for the plural ; as *il y a deux milles de B. à P.*, it is two miles from B. to P.

189. *Mil*, instead of *mille*, is used for the date of the year: thus we write *mil huit cent trente*, one thousand eight hundred and thirty.

190. Observe that *a*, *one*, put in English before hundred and before *thousand*, are not expressed in French; and that *and* put in English after hundred and after thousand, when followed by another number, is not expressed in French: thus we say, for instance, *cent cinquante tables*, one hundred and fifty tables; *mille soixante tables*, one thousand and sixty tables, &c.

191. In some parts of France, instead of *soixante-et-dix*, *soixante-onze*, &c., they say *septante*, *septante-un*, *septante-deux*, &c.

192. Instead of *quatre-vingts*, *quatre-vingt-un*, *quatre-vingt-deux*, &c., they say *octante*, *octante-un*, *octante-deux*, &c.

193. Instead of *quatre-vingt-dix*, *quatre-vingt-onze*, *quatre-vingt-douze*, &c., they say *nonante*, *nonante-un*, *nonante-deux*, &c.

194. There are many other numerical expressions used in poetry, music, games, &c., as *distique*, *tercet*, *quatrain*, *sixain*, *huitain*, &c.; *solo*, *duo*, *trio*, *quatuor*, *quinque*, *quinte*, *octave*, &c.; *beset*, *sonnez*, &c.

195. *Un millier* is very often employed for one thousand *weight*; *quintal* is never used except in the sense of one hundred weight.

196. The DISTRIBUTIVE numbers are those which express the different parts of a whole; as *la moitié*, the half; *le quart*, the quarter; *un cinquième*, a fifth, &c.

197. The PROPORTIONAL denote the progressive increase of things; as *le double*, the double; *le triple*, treble; *le centuple*, a hundred-fold, &c.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUN.

198. A PRONOUN is a word substituted in the place of a noun.

199. There are several kinds of pronouns, as the *personal*, *possessive*, *relative*, *absolute*, *demonstrative*, and *indefinite*.

Of the Personal Pronouns.

200. Personal pronouns are used for the names of persons or things.

201. There are three *persons*: the first, who speaks; the second, who is spoken to; and the third is the person or thing spoken of.

202. *Pronouns of the First Person.*

Singular.

Subject.	je			*I*	je loue Dieu	*I praise God.*
Object.	me	for	à moi	*to me*	il me donne	*he gives me.*
	me	for	moi	*me*	il me blesse	*he hurts me.*
	moi	for	à moi	*to me*	donnez-moi	*give me.*
	moi	for	moi	*me*	aidez-moi	*help me.*

Plural.

Subj.	nous			*we*	nous louons Dieu	*we praise God.*
Obj.	nous	for	à nous	*to us*	il nous donne	*he gives us.*
	nous	for	nous	*us*	il nous blesse	*he hurts us.*

203. They are both masculine and feminine; that is, of the same gender as the person or persons they represent.

204. In general, *je* and *me* are put before the verb, *moi* after it, and *nous* before, but sometimes likewise after it.

EXERCISE.

I cast my eyes upon the objects which surrounded me, and
portai vue f. sing. *sur objet qui environnaient me,*
saw with pleasure that all was calm and tranquil. Do [3]you [1]not[4]
je vis avec que était calme tranquille. *
[2]see in all the features of my father that he is satisfied with me?
voyez dans trait m. *que il content de moi?*
We have told the truth. What were they saying of us? If we desire
avons dit vérité f. *Que* * [2]*on* [1]*disait Si désirons*
to be happy, we [2]must [1]not[3] deviate from the path of virtue.
de être devons nous écarter de sentier m. art. f.

205. *Pronouns of the Second Person.*

Singular.

Subj.	tu			*thou*	tu crains Dieu	*thou fearest God.*
Object.	te	for	à toi	*to thee*	il te parle	*he speaks to thee.*
	te	for	toi	*thee*	il te voit	*he sees thee.*
	toi	for	à toi	*to thee*	donne-toi la peine	*give thyself the trouble.*
	toi	for	toi	*thee*	habille-toi	*dress thyself.*

Plural.

Subj.	vous			*ye* or *you*	vous louez Dieu	*you praise God.*
Obj.	vous	for	à vous	*to you*	il vous parle	*he speaks to you.*
	vous	for	vous	*you*	il vous respecte	*he respects you.*

206. In general *tu* and *te* are put before the verb, *toi* after, and *vous* before, but sometimes after it.

207. Remark. Politeness has led to the use of the plural *vous*, instead of the singular *tu*: as *vous êtes bien bon*, you are very good, for *tu es bien bon*, thou art very good. (See verbs page 6. art. 55.)

EXERCISE.

Thou art greater than I; and from thee I have [2](at once) [1]learnt
es moi; toi ai en même temps appris
humility and wisdom. I (was telling) thee that dancing is
art. f. art. *sagesse* f. *disais te que* art. *danse* f.
to the body what taste is to the mind. You [2]have [3]shown [1]us
m. *ce que* art. m. *esprit.* *avez montré de*
great talents; when [2](will you show) [1]us great virtues? How [3]amiable
m. *quand montrerez-vous de* f. *Que*
[1]you [2]are! How [3]good [1]you [2]are (to have thought) of us! (It was said)
êtes! de vous être occupé On disait
of you the other day, that (you intended to) spend a winter in
autre jour m. *vous vous proposiez de passer* m. *à*

London, (in order to) see (every thing) [6]curious [1]which [2]that [3]city
Londres pour voir tout ce que cette ville
[4]presents.
offre de.

208. *Pronouns of the Third Person.*

Singular.

Subject.	il *m.*		*he*	il perd son temps	*he loses his time.*
	elle *f.*		*she*	elle travaille toujours	*she is always at work.*
	il		*it*	il pleuvra	*it will rain.*
Object.	lui *m.*	for	à lui	*to him*	dites-*lui* que je *lui* parlerai — *tell him that I will speak to him.*
	lui *f.*	for	à elle	*to her*	dites-lui que vous *lui* donnerez — *tell* her *that you will give her.*
	lui *m.*	for	le	*him*	je ne connais que *lui* de capable — *I know but him capable.*
	le *m.*	for	lui	*him*	je *le* méprise — *I despise him.*
	la *f.*	for	elle	*her*	je *la* respecte — *I respect her*
	elle *f.*		elle	*her*	il ne connaît qu'*elle* — *he knows but her.*
	le *m.*	for	cela	*it*	je ne *le* savais pas — *I did not know it.*

Plural

Subject.	ils *m.*	—	—	*they*	*ils* chantent — *they sing.* (gentlemen)
	elles *f.*	—	—	*they*	*elles* rient — *they laugh.* (ladies)
Object.	leur *m.*	for	à eux	*to them*	payez *leur* ce que vous *leur* devez — *pay* them *what you owe to* them (to men).
	leur *f.*	for	à elles	*to them*	dites-*leur*, que je désire *leur* parler — *tell them that I wish to speak* to them (to ladies).
	les *m.*	for	eux	*them*	vous *les* trouverez — *you will find* them (men).
	les *f.*	for	elles	*them*	il *les* admire — *he admires* them (ladies).
	eux *m.*	—	—	*them*	je ne vois qu'*eux* — *I see but* them (gentlemen).
	elles *f.*	—	—	*them*	il ne connaît qu'*elles* — *he knows but* them (ladies).

209. All the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, elle, nous vous, ils, elles,* when subjects, are put after the verb in interrogations, as

	Singular.			
Sujet.	je	*I*	dois-*je* payer ?	*must* I *pay ?*
	tu	*thou*	as-*tu* dit ?	*hast* thou *said ?*
	il	*he*	chante-t-*il* bien ?	*does* he *sing* well ?
	elle	*she*	travaille-t-*elle ?*	*does* she *work ?*
	Plural.			
Sujet.	nous	*we*	irons-*nous ?*	*shall* we *go ?*
	vous	*you*	viendrez-*vous ?*	*will* you *come ?*
	ils *m.*	*they*	chantent-*ils ?*	*do* they *sing ?*
	elles *f.*	*they*	travaillent-*elles ?*	*do* they *work ?*

210. *Il, le, ils, eux,* are always masculine : *elle, la, elles,* feminine; and *les, leur,* of both genders, as well as *lui,* when meaning *to him* or *to her :* in other cases, *lui* exclusively belongs to the masculine.

211. All personal pronouns, when subjects, are placed before their verbs, except in interrogative sentences, and most of them likewise, when objects precede them, except in the imperative affirmative. But the objective *eux, elles, lui,* for *le,* and *moi, toi, soi,* with one exception of this last, in *soi-disant,* styling himself, are invariably placed after the verbs by which they are governed.

EXERCISE.

He loved them because they were mild, attentive, and grateful.
aimait m. *parce que* *doux* *reconnaissant*
He [2](was saying) [1](to them) do [3]you [1]not[4] [2]know that the property
disait *savez que* *propre* m.
of merit is to excite envy ? She often exhorted me to
art. *mérite* m. *de exciter* art. *envie* f. [2]*souvent* [1]*exhortait*
the study which is the most useful, that of the [2]human [1]heart. They
étude f. * * *utile, celle* m.
make us love virtue, more by their examples than by their words.
font *aimer* art. f. *par* *exemple* m. *parole* f.
What (has been said) of them ? Did they speak of them ? Do
[1]*Que* [3]*on* [2]*a-t* [4]*dit* m. * [2]*on* [1]*parlait* f ? *
[4]you [1]not[5] [3]see [2]her ? With what pleasure she plays !
voyez *quel* *joue !*

212. *Reflected and Reciprocal Pronouns of the Third Person.*

		Singular.		EXAMPLES.	
Object.	soi	with a *preposition*	chacun tire *à soi*	*every one draws* to himself.
	soi	governed by the *verb*	l'égoïsme fait qu'on ne voit que *soi*	*egotism makes a person see none but* himself.
Object	se for	*à soi, à lui-même*	il *se* donne des louanges	*he gives* himself *praises.*
	se for	*à elle même*	elle *se* fait illusion.	*she imposes* on herself.
	se for	*soi* or *lui-même*	il *se* perd	*he ruins* himself.
	se for	*soi* or *elle même*	elle *se* flatte	*she flatters* herself.

	Plural.		EXAMPLES.	
Object.	se for	*à eux-mêmes*	ils *s'*attribuent la gloire de, &c.	*they attribute* to themselves *the glory of*, &c.
	se for	*à elles-mêmes*	elles *se* prescrivent pour règle de, &c.	*they prescribe* to themselves *as a rule to*, &c.
	se for	*l'un à l'autre*	ils *s'*entredonnent, ou *se* font des cadeaux	*they exchange gifts.*
	se for	*eux-mêmes*	ils *se* sont déshonorés	*they have disgraced* themselves.
	se for	*elles-mêmes*	elles *se* sont flattées	*they have flattered* themselves.
	se for	*l'un l'autre*	ils *s'*entr'aident	*they help* one another.
	se for	*les uns les autres*	les rats, dit-on, *s'*entre-dévorent	*rats, it is said, eat* each other.

213. REMARK. *Se* is placed before a verb, and *soi* after a preposition, and sometimes after a verb.

EXERCISE.

In a thousand instances we do not watch sufficiently over ourselves.
* *mille occasion* f. *on* * *veille assez sur soi.*
The glory of the world (passes away) in an instant. He gives himself
monde m. *s'évanouit en* m. [2]*donne* [1]*se*
(a great deal) of trouble. She tires herself. People should (very seldom)
beaucoup peine f. *lasse se. On doit rarement*
speak of themselves. Virtue is amiable in itself. We must take
parler soi. art. f. *de soi. On doit prendre*
upon ourselves the care of our own affairs.
sur soi soin m. *ses propre affaire* f.

214. *Of the Relative Pronoun* EN.

EN for	de lui	*of him*	cet homme vous plaît, vous *en* parlez souvent	*that man pleases you, you speak* of him *often.*
	d'elle	*of her*	je ne crois pas cette femme sincère, je m'*en* méfie	*I do not believe that woman sincere, I distrust* her.
	d'eux	*of them*	ces fruits paraissent bons, j'*en* mangerais volontiers	*these fruits look good, I should like to eat* some of them.
	d'elles	*of them*	voilà de belles oranges, voulez-vous m'*en* donner ?	*these are beautiful oranges, will you give me* some.
	de cela	*of it*	on ne m'a pas trompé j'*en* suis sûr	*I have not been imposed upon, I am sure* of it.
	d'ici	*hence*	il arriva ici, comme j'*en* partais	*he arrived here as I was setting off* from hence.
	de là	*thence*	vous allez à Paris, et monsieur *en* vient	*you are going to Paris, this gentleman comes* from thence.

215 *Of the Relative Pronoun, or Adverb* Y.

Y for				
	à lui	*to him*	c'est un honnête homme, fiez-vous-*y*	*he is an honest man' trust* him.
	à elle	*to her*	cette raison est solide, je m'*y* rends	*that reason is good, I yield* to it.
	à eux	*to them*	ces argumens sont pressans, je n'*y* vois point de réplique	*these arguments are cogent, I see no reply* to them.
	à elles	*to them*	accablé de vos civilités, je ne sais comment *y* répondre	*loaded with your civilities, I do not know how to acknowledge* them.
	à cela	*to it*	j'ai éprouvé cette perte quand j'*y* pensais le moins	*I experienced that loss, when I least thought* of it.
	ici	*here*	nous partions de Londres, quand vous *y* veniez	*we set off from London, when you came* hither.
	là	*there*	c'est un endroit charmant, je compte m'*y* fixer	*It is a fine place, I intend to settle* there.

216. Remark. *Y* and *en* are always put before the verb, except with the imperative affirmative.

EXERCISE.

They speak (a great deal) of it. You like French authors, you
On parle beaucoup aimez art. *2français 1auteur,*
are 2always 1speaking of them. That is a 2delicate 1affair; the success
* *parlez Ce délicat* f. *succès* m.
of it is doubtful. See them; I consent to it, but (do not trust
douteux. Voyez consens ne vous y fiez
them). That is a fine appointment: he had 3long 2aspired
pas. Ce charge f. * *depuis long-temps aspirait*
to it. He has done it; but he will get nothing by it.
a fait 3gagnera 1ne 4rien y.

OF POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

217. These pronouns (now called pronominal possessive adjectives), denote the possession of things. When we say *mon habit*, my coat; *votre maison*, your house; *son jardin*, his or her garden; it is the same as saying *l'habit qui est à moi*, the coat which belongs to me; *la maison qui est à vous*, the house which belongs to you; *le jardin qui est à lui*, or *à elle*, the garden which belongs to him or to her.

218. Of these pronominal adjectives, *some* always agree with a noun *expressed*, and *the others* with a noun *understood*; hence there are *two sorts* of possessive pronouns.

219. Of those that always agree with a noun *expressed*, some relate to *one* person and others to *several*.

220. *Pronominal Adjectives relating to One Person.*

	PERSON.	Singular.		Plural.	
for the	1st	mon, *m.*	ma, *f.*	mes, *m. f.*	*my.*
	2d	ton, *m.*	ta, *f.*	tes, *m. f.*	*thy.*
	3d	son, *m.*	sa, *f.*	ses, *m. f.*	*his, her, its.*

221. *Pronominal Adjectives relating to Many Persons.*

	PERSON.	Singular.	Plural.	
of the	1st	notre, *m. f.*	nos, *m. f.*	*our.*
	2d	votre, *m. f.*	vos, *m. f.*	*your.*
	3d	leur, *m. f.*	leurs, *m. f.*	*their.*

222. N. B. These possessive pronouns in French always agree in gender and number with the object *possessed*, and not with the *possessor* as in English, for which reason they must be repeated before every noun.

EXAMPLES.

Mon *père*, ma *mère*, *et* mes *frères sont à la campagne avec* vos *amis et* leurs *enfans*,

My father, mother, and brothers are in the country, with your friends and their children.

Mon *cousin est allé consoler* sa *sœur, qui a perdu* son *fils*,

My cousin is gone to visit and console his sister, who has lost her son.

223. *Mon, ton, son*, are also used before a noun feminine when beginning with a vowel or *h* mute; thus, *mon ame*, my soul; *ton humeur*, thy humour; *son amitié*, his friendship; must be said instead of *ma ame, ta humeur, sa amitié*.

EXERCISE.

My principles, my love of retirement, my taste for
principe m. *goût* m. *pour* art. *retraite* f. *amour* m.
(every thing) that (is connected) with learning, and my detestation
tout ce qui tient à art. *instruction*, *haîne*
of all spirit of party, (every thing) has induced me to prefer a life
pour esprit parti, *tout porté préférer la vie* f.
passed in the closet, to the [2]active [1]life of the world. Do not think,
* *de* * *cabinet*, f. *monde* m. * *pense*,
my daughter, that thy candour, thy ingenuousness, thy taste, so delicate
que f. *ingénuité* f. m. *si délicat*
and so refined, and even thy graces, can (shelter) thee from
fin, *même* m. *puissent mettre à l'abri de*
censure. His wit, his talents, his honesty, and even his
art. f. *esprit* m. m. *honnêteté* f. *même*
(good nature), make him beloved (by every body). Our constancy and
bonhomie f. *font aimer de tout le monde.* f.
our efforts will (at last) surmount all obstacles. I see nothing
m. * [2]*enfin* [1]*surmonteront* art. m. *vois ne rien*
that can (be censured) in your conduct. Their taste for the
que on puisse reprendre dans conduite f. *pour*
fantastical, the monstrous, and the marvellous, gives to all their
bizarre m. *monstrueux* m. *merveilleux*, m. *donne*
compositions, although very fine in themselves, an air of deformity,
f. *quoique beau en elles-mêmes*, m. *difformité* f.
which shocks at first sight.
qui choque à art. *coup-d'œil* m.

224. Of the pronouns, which always agree with nouns *understood*, some relate to one person and others to several persons.

225. Those which relate only to one person are:

PERSON.	m. Sing.	f. Sing.	m. Plur.	f. Plur.	
1st	Le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes,	*mine*
2d	Le tien,	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	*thine*
3d	Le sien,	la sienne,	les siens,	les siennes,	*his, her, its.*

226. Those which relate to several persons are:

PERSON.	m. Sing.	f. Sing.	Pl. of both gen.	
1st	Le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres	*ours.*
2d	Le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres	*yours.*
3d	Le leur	la leur	les leurs	*theirs.*

227. N. B. The real use of these pronouns is to spare the repetition of the nouns which have been expressed a little before.

EXAMPLE.

Avez-vous toujours votre *cheval?* Have you still your horse? I *je n'ai plus* le mien. have disposed of mine.

EXERCISE.

Is it your temper or hers that hinders you from living well together?
ce *humeur* f. *qui empêche* *de vivre* *ensemble?*
If it be yours, it [2]is [3]easy for [1]you (to remedy) it (by mastering
ce est *il* *aisé* * *de porter remède y* *en le prenant*
your temper;) if it be hers, redouble (your) complaisance, atten-
sur vous-même; *ce* *redoublez* *de* *de*
tion, and good behaviour; it is very seldom that this method
de *procédé* m. pl. *il* *très-rare* *ce* *moyen*
(proves unsuccessful). If my friends had served me with the same
ne réussisse pas. *Si* *avaient servi* *même*
zeal as yours, it is very certain that I (should have) succeeded: but
zèle m. *que* *il* *très-sûr* *aurais réussi:*
yours have been all fire, and mine all ice. All the pictures which
ont été *de* *de glace.* *tableau* m. *que*
we expected from Rome are arrived: (there are some) that are a little
attendions *arrivés:* *il y en a* *qui* *un peu*
damaged; but yours, his, and mine are in good condition. We know
endommagés; *en* *état* m. *savons*
perfectly well what are your amusements in town, and I assure
parfaitement * *quels* *à* art. *ville* f. *assure*
you we are very far from [3]envying [1]you [2]them; but if you
que *sommes bien éloigné* *envier*
knew ours in the country, (it is most likely)
saviez quels sont *à* *campagne* f. *il y a toute apparence que*
you (would not be long) in giving them the preference. You have
ne tarderiez pas *à donner leur* f. *avez*
opened your heart to me with that noble frankness which [2]so [3]well
ouvert *franchise* f. *qui si*
[1]becomes an honest man: this confidence [3]well [1]deserves mine.
sied *à* *honnête* *confiance* f. *mérite*

228. REMARK. When through politeness *vous* is used for *tu*, then *votre*, *vos* must take the place of *ton, ta, tes*, and *le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres*, must be used for *le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes.*

EXAMPLES.

Que vous ressemblez peu à vos *ancêtres !*	How little you resemble your ancestors !
Quand vous aurez entendu nos *raisons, nous écouterons* les vôtres.	When you have heard our reasons, we shall listen to yours.

OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

229. Relative pronouns are those which relate to a preceding noun, or pronoun, called *the antecedent.* In the phrase *l'homme qui joue*, the man who plays, *qui* relates to the substantive *homme ; l'homme* is then the *antecedent* to the pronoun relative *qui.*

Qui	who	*Dieu* qui *voit tout*	God, *who* sees every thing.
	which	*les chevaux* qui *courent*	the horses *which* are running.
Que	whom	*l'homme* que *vous cherchez*	the man *whom* you seek.
	which	*les lois* que *nous observons*	the laws *which* we observe.
Dont or *de qui*	of which	*l'insulte* dont *vous vous plaignez*	the insult *of which* you complain.
	whose	*la nature* dont *nous ignorons les secrets*	nature *whose* secrets are unknown to us.
	of whom	*les gens* de qui *vous parlez*	the people *of whom* you speak.
Lequel Laquelle	which	*c'est une condition sans* laquelle *il ne veut rien faire*	it is a condition, without *which* he will do nothing.
Auxquels Auxquelles	to whom	*ceux* auxquels *il s'est adressé, ont refusé de le défendre*	those *to whom* he applied, refused to protect him.
Quoi	which	*ce sont des choses* à quoi *vous ne pensez pas*	these are things of *which* you do not think.
	why	*la cause,* pourquoi *on l'a arrêté, est connue*	the reason *why* he was arrested, is known.

230. *Qui, que,* and *dont,* are of both genders and both numbers.

231. *Lequel* is a compound of *quel,* and the article *le, la, les,* with which it coalesces in the following manner:

m. Singular.	f.	m. Plural.	f.	
lequel	laquelle	lesquels	lesquelles	*which*
duquel	de laquelle	desquels	desquelles	*of which*
auquel	à laquelle	auxquels	auxquelles	*to which*

232. This pronoun always agrees in gender and number with its antec dent. *Quoi,* which sometimes supplies its place, is always governed by a preposition.

OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

233. Pronouns absolute are those which have no relation to an antecedent. They are the five following:

Qui	who	*je vous dirai* qui *l'a fait*	I will tell you *who* has done it.
	whom	*vous pouvez consulter* qui *vous voudrez*	you may consult *whom* you please.
	whom	qui *consulterez-vous ?*	*whom* will you consult ?
Que	what	*il ne sait* que *résoudre*	he does not know on *what* to determine.
	what	que *ferez-vous ?*	*what* will you do ?
Quoi	what	en quoi *puis-je vous servir ?*	in *what* can I serve you ?
	what	*il y a là je ne sais* quoi *d'obscur*	there is in it I do not know *what* obscurity.
Quel.	what	quelle *instabilité dans les choses humaines !*	*what* instability in human affairs !
	what	*il ne sait* quel *parti prendre*	he does not know *what* resolution to take.
Lequel	which	lequel *aimez-vous le mieux de ces tableaux ?*	*which* do you prefer of those pictures ?
	which	*je sais bien* lequel *je choisirais*	I know well which I would choose.

234. *Qui* applies only to persons. *Que* and *quoi* to things.

235. *Quel*, mas. sing., *quelle*, fem. sing., *quels*, m. pl., *quelles*, f. pl., always precede a substantive, the gender and number of which they take.

236. *Lequel*, m. s., *laquelle*, f. s., *les quels*, m. pl., *les quelles*, f. pl.—which ; *duquel*, m. s., *de laquelle*, f. s., *desquels*, m. pl., *desquelles*, f. pl.—of which ; *auquel*, m. s., *à laquelle*, f. s., *aux quels*, m. pl., *aux quelles*, f. pl.—to which ; are used to mark a distinction between several nouns or objects.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

237. Demonstrative pronouns are those which point, as it were, to the objects spoken of. They are,

Singular.			Plural.		
mas.	*fem.*		*mas.*	*fem.*	
ce, cet*	cette	*this* or *that*	ces	ces	*these* or *those*
celui	celle	*this* or *that*	ceux	celles	*these* or *those*
celui-ci	celle-ci	*this*	ceux-ci	celles-ci	*these*
celui-là	celle-là	*that*	ceux-là	celles-là	*those*
ceci		*this*	these have no plural.		
cela		*that*			

m.	CE	before a consonant	CE *livre*	*this book*
	CE	before an *h* aspirated	CE *héros*	*that hero*
	CET	before a vowel	CET *enfant*	*this child*
	CET	before an *h* mute	CET *homme*	*that man*
f	CETTE	before any feminine noun	CETTE *femme*	*that woman*

238. CE when without a noun, intimates a person or thing spoken of, as *qui est*-ce ? who is it ? ce *que je vous dis* est vrai what I tell you is true.

EXERCISE.

Nothing is so opposite to that true eloquence, [2]the office [2]*ne* [1]*rien* *opposé* *véritable* f. *fonction* f. [1](of which) is to ennoble (every thing), as the use of those refined *de* [2]*ennoblir* [1]*tout* *que* *emploi* m. [2]*fin* thoughts and hunting after those light, airy, (unsolid) [1]*pensée* f. art. *recherche* f. *de* [2]*léger* [3]*délié* [4]*sans consistance* ideas, which, like a leaf of [2]beaten [1]metal, [2](acquire) [1]*idée* f. *comme* *feuille* f. *battu* m. *prennent* *de* [3]brightness [1]only[4] by losing part of their solidity. This man art. *éclat* m. *ne que* *en perdant* * * art. f. has nothing in common with that hero. This long restrained *en commun* *héro.* [2]*long-temps* [3]*contenu* hatred (broke out), and was the unhappy source of those dreadful [1]*haîne* f. *éclata* *fut* *malheureux* f. *terrible* events. It is a great pleasure to me. It was a great *évènement* m. *plaisir* m. *pour* *fut* pain to us. *déplaisir* m. *pour*

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

239. Indefinite pronouns are those which are of a vague and indeterminate nature. They are of four sorts:

FIRST CLASS.

240. *Those that are never joined to a substantive.*

ON: one	on *aime à se flatter*	*one* is apt to flatter one' self.
a man	on *n'est pas toujours maître de soi*	*a man* is not always master of his own temper.
a woman	on *n'est pas toujours maîtresse d'aller ou** l'on *veut*	it is not always in the power of a *woman* to go where *she* wishes.
somebody	on *frappe à la porte*	*somebody* knocks at the door.
people	on *pense et* * l'on *dit tout haut*	*people* think and say openly.
they	on *raconte diversement cette histoire*	*they* relate that story differently.
we	on *acquiert l'expérience à ses dépens*	*we* acquire experience at our own expense.
you	on *trouve partout des importuns*	*you* will find troublesome people everywhere.

---

*Instead of { *et on* / *ou on* / *si on* } and thus { et *l'on* / ou *l'on* / si *l'on* } it is better for euphony to part these words with an *l'* when the next word does not begin with an *l*, as is seen by the examples.

*Instead of { les habitudes *qu'on contracte.* / ce après *quoi on court.* / *quoiqu'on* croie. / un homme à *qui on* reproche. } say rather { les habitudes que *l'on* contracte / ce après quoi *l'on* court. / quoi que *l'on* croie. / un homme à qui *l'on* reproche.

NO	I	*on prévient qu'on n'a point eu l'intention de, &c.*	*I* beg to observe, that *I* had no intention to, &c.
	I	*Quand on vous dit que * l'on compte sur vous*	when *I* tell you that *I* depend upon you.
	they	*si * l'on vous blâme et si * on le loue, on a tort*	if *they* blame you and praise him, *they* are wrong.

Quelqu'un	one, somebody, some one	*quelqu'un m'a dit*, somebody told me.
Quiconque	whoever, whosoever	*quiconque connaît les hommes, apprend à s'en défier*, whoever knows mankind, learns to distrust them.
Chacun	each, every one	*chacun s'en plaint*, every one complains of him.
Autrui	other people	*n'enviez pas le bien d'autrui*, do not covet the property of others.
	others	*ne faites pas à autrui ce que vous ne voudriez, pas qu'on vous fît*, do not do to others what you would not have done to you.
Personne	nobody, no one	*la fierté ne convient à personne*, pride becomes nobody.
Rien	nothing, not any thing, any thing	*rien ne lui plaît*, nothing pleases him. *y a-t-il rien qui puisse lui plaire ?* is there any thing that can please him ?

EXERCISE.

If you (behave yourself) (in that manner), what will people say of
vous conduisez *ainsi* *que* * [2]*on* [1]*dira-t*
you ? It (is thought) that this news is true. They write me word
On croit *nouvelle* f. *écrit* *
from Ispahan that thou hast left Persia, and art
Ispahan *as quitté* art. *Perse* f. *que tu es*
now at Paris. One (cannot) read Telemachus without becoming
actuellement à *ne peut lire Télémaque sans devenir*
better: we there find (every where) a mild philosophy, [2]noble
meilleur : on y trouve partout doux f. *des*
[3]and [4]elevated [1]sentiments: we there find in every line the effu-
élévé *. y voit à chaque ligne épan-*
sions of a noble soul, and we admire precepts calculated to
chement m. *beau* f. *des précepte propre*
effect the happiness of the world.
faire *bonheur* m. *monde* m.

SECOND CLASS.

241. *Those which are always joined to a substantive.*

Quelque	some	*si cela était vrai, quelqu' historien en aurait parlé*, if that were true, some historian would have mentioned it.
Chaque	each, every	*à chaque jour suffit sa peine*, the trouble of each day is sufficient of itself.

Quelconque	whoever / whatever	*il n'y a raison quelconque qui puisse l'y obliger*, no reason whatever can oblige him to it.
Certain, m. s. *Certaine*, f. s. *Certains*, m. pl. *Certaines*, f. pl.	certain / some	*certain homme*, a certain man. *certaines nouvelles*, some news.
Un, m. *une*, f.	a, an	*j'ai vu un homme*, I saw a man; *prenez une orange*, take an orange.

THIRD CLASS

242. *Those which are sometimes joined to a substantive and sometimes not.*

Nul, m. s. *Nulle*, f. s. *Nuls*, m. pl. *Nulles*, f. pl.	no, none	*nulle raison ne peut le convaincre*, no reason can convince him. *nul d'eux ne l'a rencontré*, not one of them has met him.
Pas un, m. s. *Pas une*, f. s.	no, not one	*il n'y à pas une erreur dans cet ouvrage*, there is no error in that work. *pas un ne le dit*, not one says so.
Aucun, m. s. *Aucune*, f. s. *Aucuns*, m. pl. *Aucunes*, f. pl.	no, none.	*je ne connais aucun de vos juges*, I know none of your judges. *il n'a fait aucune difficulté*, he has made no difficulty.
Autre, m. f. s. *Autres*, m. f. pl.	other	*servez-vous d'une autre expression*, make use of another expression. *je vous prenais pour un autre*, I took you for another.
Même, m. f. s. *Mêmes*, m. f pl.	same	*c'est le même homme que je vis hier* he is the same man I saw yesterday. *cet homme n'est plus le même*, that man is no longer the same.
Tel, m. s. *Telle*, f. s. *Tels*, m. pl. *Telles*, f. pl.	such / like	*il tint à peu près un tel discours*, he delivered nearly such a discourse. *je ne vis jamais rien de tel*, I never saw any thing like it.
Plusieurs, indeclinable	several / many	*il est arrivé plusieurs vaisseaux*, several vessels are arrived. *il ne faut pas que plusieurs pâtissent pour un seul*, many must not suffer for one.
Tout, m. s. *Toute*, f. s. *Tous*, m. pl. *Toutes*, f. pl.	all / every / every thing	*tous les êtres créés*, all created beings. *tout disparaît devant Dieu*, every thing vanishes before God.

FOURTH CLASS.

243. *Of those which are followed by* QUE.

Qui que	whoever	*qui que tu sois*, whoever thou mayest be. *qui que ce soit*, whoever it may be.

Quoi que	whatever	*quoi que ce soit*, whatever it may be. *quoi que vous disiez*, whatever you may say.
Quel que	whoever whatever	*quel que soit cet homme*, whoever that man may be. *quel que soit votre courage*, whatever your courage may be.
Tel que	such as	*cette étoffe est telle que vous la voulez*, this stuff is such as you wish for.
Quelque—que	whatever however	*quelque raison que vous donniez*, whatever reason you may give. *quelque puissant que vous soyez*, however powerful you may be.
Tout—que	however	*tout savant qu'il est*, however learned he may be.

CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERBS

244. HERE, instead of adopting Lévizac's plan about the arrangement of the different kinds of verbs—that is, instead of scattering them in different parts of the Grammar—I have placed them all at the end of it.

The arrangement and division or classification of the verbs adopted by Lévizac I know, by long experience, is far from being advantageous to scholars; and if I have adopted a different arrangement, &c., it is because I have been convinced in the course of my teaching that the verbs in Lévizac's own Grammar are not laid down at sufficient length to make plain to scholars the difference and the relation of the French and English verbs.

N. B. At the beginning of each exercise on the verbs, I have indicated the page of the particular verb on which each exercise is given; and in order to facilitate the finding out of the verbs, the part that contains every thing about them is of a different color from that of the rest of the Grammar.

A thorough knowledge of the French verbs is one-third of the acquisition of the French language, and should of course be better explained and better learned than is generally done.

NOTE.—The verb *avoir*, to have, must of course be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

EXERCISES ON *AVOIR*, TO HAVE—VERBS, PAGE 10.

245. In the following exercises, the substantive being taken in a partitive sense, it will be necessary to use the article according to the direction given, page 45, art. 122.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I have books. Thou hast friends. He has honesty.
livre. *ami.* *honnêteté* f.
She has sweetness. We have credit. You have riches They have
douceur f m. *richesse* pl. m.
virtues. They have modesty.
vertu f. f.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have had pleasure. Thou hast had gold.
plaisir m. *or* m.
He has had patience. She has had beauty. We have had honours.
f. f. *honneur.*
You have had friendship. They have had sentiments. They have had
amitié f. m. f.
sensibility.
f.

IMPERFECT.—I had ambition. Thou hadst wealth. He had sincerity,
f. *bien* m. f.
She had graces. We had oranges. You had pears. They had apples.
poire. m. *pomme*
They had lemons.
f. *citron.*

PLUPERFECT.—I had had apricots. Thou hadst had nectarines. He
abricot. *brugnon.*
had had walnuts. She had had hazel-nuts. We had had chestnuts. You
noix. *noisette.* *châtaigne.*
had had figs. They had had medlars. They had had filberts.
figue. m. *nèfle.* f. *aveline.*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—I had plums. Thou hadst cherries. He had
prune. *cerise.*
strawberries. She had pineapples. We had almonds. You had cur-
fraise. *ananas.* *amande.* *gro-*
rants. They had raspberries. They had grapes.
seille. m. *framboise.* f. *raisin.*

246. In the following exercises, the addition of an adjective, after the substantive, will make no change in the remark on the preceding exercise.

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—I had had [2]very [3]black [1]ink. Thou hadst had
fort *noir* *encre* f.
[2]honest [1]proceedings. She had had [2]uncommon [1]graces. We had had
honnête *procédé.* *rare*
[2]very [3]ripe [1]grapes. You had had [2]exquisite [1]melons. They had had
mûr *exquis* m.
[2]ready [1]money.
comptant *argent* m.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall have [2]studious [1]pupils. Thou wilt have
appliqué *élève* m.
[2]horrid [1]pains. He will have [2]ridiculous [1]ideas. We shall have
horrible *peine* f. *ridicule* *idée* f.
[2]useless [1]cares. You will have [2]true [3]and [4]real [1]pleasures. They will
inutile *soin* m. *réel* m.
have [2]poignant [1]griefs.
cuisant *chagrin* m.

247. But if the adjective precedes the substantive, then *de* before an adjective beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated, and *d'* before an adjective beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, only is to be used.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—I shall have had good paper. Thou wilt have
papier m.
had excellent fruit. She will have had charming flowers. We shall have
m. pl. *charmant* *fleurs* f.

had good pens. You will have had large buildings. They will
plume f. *grand bâtiment* m.
have had fine clothes.
superbe habit m.

PRESENT OF THE CONDITIONAL.—I should have fine engravings. Thou
gravure f.
shouldst have pretty playthings. He should have immense treasures.
joli joujou m. *trésor* m.
We should have beautiful pictures. You would have pretty houses.
tableau m. f.
They should have long conversations.
f.

248. After words expressing quantity, such as *beaucoup*, a great deal, great many; *peu*, little, few; *plus*, more; *moins*, less; *trop*, too much, too many, &c., *de* and *d'* are used as directed art. 247.

249. After *bien*, much, many, *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*, are used as directed page 45, art. 122.

CONDITIONAL PAST.—I should have had a great deal of trouble. Thou
peine f.
wouldst have had more pleasure. He would have had (a vast deal) of
infiniment
knowledge. We should have had more opportunities of succeeding
connaissance f. pl. *occasion* f. *réussir.*
You would [2]certainly [1]have [3]had many advantages over him.
certainement *beaucoup avantage sur lui*
They would have had many enemies.
bien ennemi.

250. Observe that when the verb is followed by several substantives, the proper article and preposition must be repeated before each.

IMPERATIVE.—Have complaisance, attention, and politeness. Let him
f. *égard* m. pl. *politesse* f.
have modesty, and [2]more [3]correct [1]ideas. Let her have more decency.
f. *juste* *décence.*
Let us have courage and firmness. Have gravy soup, nice
m. *fermeté* f. *un* [2]*gras* [1]*soupe* f. *bon*
(roast beef), and a pudding. Let them have ale, rum, and punch.
rosbif m. *pouding* m. m. *aile* f. *rum* m. *ponche* m.
Let them have manners and conduct.
f. *mœurs* f. *conduite* f.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

251. The subjunctive, in French, is always preceded by the conjunction *que*, that, which is often suppressed in English.

PRESENT.—That I may have many friends. That thou may'st have
beaucoup
good reasons to give him. That he may have [2]elevated [1]sentiments.
donner lui. *élevé* m.
That we may have courage and magnanimity. That you may have
bravoure f. f.
[2]delightful [1]landscapes, and beautiful (sea-pieces). That they may
délicieux paysage m. *marine* f. pl.
have more condescension and [2]more [3]prepossessing [1]manners.
condescendance *prévenant manière* f.

PRETERIT.—That I may have had wine, beer, and cider. That
vin m. *bière* f. *cidre* m.
thou may'st have had a good horse, and a fine dog. That he may have
cheval *chien.*
had [2]enlightened [1]judges. That we may have had snow, rain, and
éclairé *juge.* *neige* f. *pluie* f.
wind. That you may have had a great (dining-room), a beautiful
vent m. *salle à manger* f. *superbe*
(drawing-room), a pretty (dressing-room), and a charming
salon m. *joli* *cabinet de toilette* m. *charmant*
(bed-room). That they may have had vast possessions, fine
chambre à coucher f. *vaste* f.
meadows, and [2]delightful [1]groves.
prairie f. *délicieux* *bois* m.

IMPERFECT.—That I might have a sword, musket, and pistols.
épée f. *fusil*, m. *pistolet* m
That thou might'st have a knife, a spoon, and a fork. That
couteau m. *cuillère* f. *fourchette* f.
we might have a penknife, pencils, and good copies. That he might
canif m. *pinceau* m. *modèle* m.
have a coach, a good house, and furniture, simple but elegant.
carrosse m. f. *meuble* m. pl. *mais*
That you might have health and great respect That they might
santé f. *un* *considération* f.
have [2]fruitful [1]lands.
fertile *terre* f.

PLUPERFECT.—That I might have had friendship. That thou might'st
amitié f.
have had gloves, boots, and horses. That he might have had [2]zealous
gant m. *botte* f. *cheval* m. *zélé*
[3]and [4]faithful [1]servants. That we might have had fine clothes, [2]precious
fidèle *domestique* m.
[1]jewels, and [2]magnificent [1]furniture. That you might have had [2]warm
bijou m. *magnifique* m. pl. *chaud*
[1]friends. That they might have had greatness of soul and pity.
grandeur f. *pitié* f.

Sentences on the same Verb, with a Negative.

252. In the following sentences, the preposition *de* or *d'* is put before the substantive, according as it begins with a consonant, an *h* aspirated, a vowel, or an *h* mute (see art. 247); *ne* is put between the personal pronoun and the verb, and *pas* or *point* after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle in the compound tenses; as,

Je n'ai pas de livres,	*I have no books.*
Tu n'avais pas de bien,	*Thou hadst no wealth.*
Elle n'eut pas d'honnêteté,	*She had no honesty.*
Nous n'avons pas eu d'amitié,	*We have had no friendship.*
Vous n'aviez pas eu de puissans amis,	*You had not had powerful friends.*
Ils n'auront pas d'ennemis redoutables,	*They will not have formidable enemies.*

EXERCISE—*See* VERBS, *page* 13.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I have no [2]precious [1]medals. We have no [2]useless
médaille f. *inutile*
things. PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have had no constancy. We have
chose f. f.
had no generosity. IMPERFECT.—Thou hadst not a beautiful park.
f. *parc* m.
You had no good cucumbers. PLUPERFECT.—He had had no fine
concombre m.
houses. They had had no money. PRETERIT DEFINITE.—He had not
argent m.
a skilful gardener. They had no carpets. PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—
habile jardinier m. *tapis* m.
Thou hadst had no complaisance. You had had no great talents.
f. m.
FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall have no great business. We shall have
affaire f. pl.
no [2]uncommon [1]prints. FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Thou shalt have had
rare *estampe* f.
no consolation. You shall not have had [2]quiet [1]days.
f. *tranquille* m.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.—He should not have bad pictures. They should
mauvais *tableau* m.
have no leisure. PAST.—I should have had no griefs. We should
loisir m. *chagrin* m.
have had no troubles.
peine f.

IMPERATIVE.

Have no impatience. Let him not have [2]absurd [1]ideas. Let us not
sing. *absurde* f.
have [2]dangerous [1]connexions. Have no such whims. Let them not
liaison f. *caprice* m
have [3]so [4]whimsical [1]a [2]project.
bizarre *projet* m.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.—That I may have no protectors. That we may have no
m.
success. PRETERIT.—That he may have had no perseverance. That
succès m. f.
they may have had no valour. IMPERFECT.—That thou might'st have
bravoure f.
no principles of taste. That you might not have a just
principe m. *goût* m. *juste*
reward. PLUPERFECT.—That I might have had no good advice.
récompense f. *avis* m. pl.
That we might have had no news.
nouvelle f. pl.

The Verb Avoir, interrogatively.

253. In interrogations, the personal pronoun, accompanied by a hyphen (-), is placed after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle in the compound tenses; and when the third person singular of the verb ends with a vowel, for euphony a *t* is put between it and the pronoun, preceded and followed by a hyphen; thus, (-).

254. Mind what has been said page 45, art. 122.

Ai-je des livres ?	*Have I books ?*
Avais-tu du bien ?	*Hadst thou wealth ?*
Eut-elle de l'honnêteté ?	*Had she honesty ?*
Avons-nous eu de bons conseils ?	*Have we had good advice ?*
Aviez-vous eu de la prudence ?	*Had you had prudence ?*
Aura-t-il de l'argent ?	*Will he have money ?*
Aura-t-elle eu des protecteurs ?	*Will she have had protectors ?*

EXERCISE.—*See Verbs, page* 16.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—Hast thou needles ? Have you [2]coloured [1]maps ?
aiguille f. *enluminé carte* f.
PRETERIT INDEFINITE—Have I had pens ? Have we had [2]convenient
plume f. *commode*
houses ? IMPERFECT.—Had she silk ? Had they large buildings ?
soie f. *grand bâtiment* m.
PLUPERFECT.—Had she had pins ? Had they had [2]extensive [1]fields ?
épingle f. *spacieux champ* m.
PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Had he good shoes ? Had they (looking-glasses) ?
soulier m. f. *miroir* m.
PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—Hadst thou had lace ? Had you had [2]odoriferous
dentelle f. *odoriférant*
shrubs ? FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—Shall I have gold, silver, and pla-
arbuste m. m. *argent* m. *pla-*
tina ? Shall we have (good luck) ? FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Will she
tine m. *bonheur* m.
have had joy ? Will they have had company ?
joie ? *compagnie* f.

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.—Shouldst thou have happy moments ! Should you have
heureux m.
good wine and [2]nice [1]cordials ? PAST.—Should he have had
vin m. *fin liqueur* f.
uncommon fruits ? Should they have had rich clothes ?
rare m.

The Verb Avoir, interrogatively and negatively.

255. In interrogative and negative sentences, observe the different rules (art. 245, 246, 247, 248, 249), and always place *ne* at the beginning of sentences, and *pas* or *point* after the personal pronoun, whether in the simple or compound tenses.

N'ai-je pas des livres ?	*Have I no books ?*
N'avais-tu pas des amis ?	*Hadst thou no friends ?*

N'a-t-elle pas beaucoup d'esprit ?	*Has she not a great deal of wit ?*
N'avons-nous pas eu de bons procédés ?	*Have we not acted fairly ?*
N'aviez-vous pas eu de nouvelles robes ?	*Had you not had new gowns ?*
N'aura-t-il pas des ressources ?	*Will he have no resources ?*
N'auront-elles pas eu des consolations ?	*Will they have had no consolations ?*

EXERCISE.—*See Verbs, page* 18.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—Hast thou no diamonds ? Have you no [2]indulgent [1]parents ?
diamant m. m.
PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Hast thou not had contempt and even hatred
mépris m. *même haîne* f.
for that man ? Have you not had better examples ? IMPERFECT.—
pour *meilleur exemple* m.
Had he not a [2]rigid [1]censor ? Had they not [2]inattentive [1]children ?
sévère censeur m. *enfant* m.
PLUPERFECT.—Had I not had other views ? Had we not had amethysts,
autre vue ? f. *améthyste* f.
rubies, and topazes ? PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Had I no great wrongs ?
rubis m. *topaze* f. *tort* m.
Had we not [2]perfidious [1]friends ? PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—Had he not
perfide
used [2]far-fetched [1]expressions ? Had they not excellent models ?
eu très-recherché f. *modèle* m.
FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—Wilt thou not lead a [2]more [3]regular [1]life ? Will
avoir *réglé* *conduite* f. ?
you not have [2]fashionable [1]gowns ? FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I have
à la mode *robe* f.
had no sweetmeats ? Shall we not have had a good preacher ?
confiture f. ? *prédicateur* m.

CONDITIONAL

PRESENT.—Should she not have [2]clear [3]and [4]just [1]ideas ? Would
clair
they not have [2]more [3]extensive [1]knowledge ? PAST.—Should she
étendu *connaissances* f. pl.
have had no patience ? Should they have had no rectitude ?
f. *droiture* f. ?

NOTE.—The verb *être*, to be, must of course be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

EXERCISES ON *ETRE*, TO BE.—*See Verbs, page* 24.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I am very glad to see you. Art thou not pleased with
aise de voir *satisfait de*
that book ? Is she really amiable ? We are happy. Are you
véritablement *heureux.*
not too condescending ? *Are your friends still in London ?
complaisant ? *encore à Londres ?*

---

* About such sentences, see Verbs, page 8, art. 63.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Have I not been constant? Hast thou always been steady? She has been faithful. Have we been firm and courageous? You have been charitable. Have those men always been good and benevolent?

posé ? fidèle. ferme bienfaisant ?

IMPERFECT.—I was too busy to see you. Wast not thou troublesome? Was this girl idle? Were we not too untractable? You were not [2]quiet [1]enough. They were vain, frivolous, and coquettish.

occupé pour recevoir importun ? fille paresseux ? indocile ? tranquille assez. f. frivole coquette.

PLUPERFECT.—I had hitherto been very indifferent. Hadst thou not been too imprudent? Had his wife been sufficiently modest and reserved? We had not yet been sufficiently attentive. Had you been envious and jealous? They had not been grateful.

jusqu'alors insouciant. épouse assez assez réservé ? encore appliqué. jaloux ? reconnaissant.

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Perhaps I was not sufficiently prudent. Wast thou [2]discreet [1]enough on that occasion? Was not that princess too proud? We were very unhappy. Were you not too hasty? They were not much satisfied.

Peut-être que assez discret en f. princesse fier ? prompt ? fort satisfait.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—To-morrow I shall be (at home) till (twelve o'clock.) Wilt thou always be restless, brutal, and sour? Will your father be (at home) this evening? Shall we not be more diligent? Will you [3]always [2]then [1]be capricious, obstinate, and particular? Will not your scholars be troublesome?

*Demain chez-moi jusqu'à midi inquiet, bourru, chagrin ? *Monsieur chez-lui soir* m. *donc quinteux, opiniâtre, pointilleux ? écolier incommode ?*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I not have been too severe? Thou wilt have been too distrustful. Will not his sister have been whimsical and capricious? Shall we not have been [2]eager [1]enough? Will you not have been inconsiderate? Will not the judges have been just?

défiant. sœur fantasque empressé indiscret ? juge

---

* 256. It is customary, through respect, in speaking of a person's relations, to prefix to the name Mr., Mrs., or Miss: thus we say, *Monsieur votre père; Monsieur votre frère; Madame votre mère; Mademoiselle votre sœur*, &c.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—I would not be so rash. Would'st thou
téméraire.
be as consistent in thy behaviour as in thy language? Would not
conséquent dans conduite f. *propos* m. pl.
his son be ready in time? Should we be always incorrigible? You would
fils prêt à
not be [2]disinterested [1]enough. Would not those ladies be always virtuous?
désintéressé dame vertueux?

PAST.—(Had it not been for) your instructions, I should have been
Sans conseil m.
proud and haughty. Would'st thou not have been malicious and
dédaigneux hautain. malin
sarcastic? Would that man have been so destitute of common sense?
ricaneur? tellement dépourvu bon sens?
Certainly we should not have been so ridiculous. Would you not have been
si ridicule.
more kind and indulgent? They would not have been so ungenteel
doux plus complaisant? malhonnête.

IMPERATIVE.—Be liberal. Do not be so lavish. Let us be equi-
sing. sing. *prodigue.*
table, humane, and prudent. Let us not be covetous. Be economical
humain avide. pl. *économe*
and temperate. Do not be thoughtless.
sobre. pl. *léger.*

257. As the *third person* singular and plural of the imperative mood belong rather to the subjunctive, they are there exemplified.

258. Before the *subjunctive* can form a complete sense, it must be preceded by another verb. For the sake of brevity, therefore, complete sentences will only be given on the present tense. This remark applies alike to the four conjugations.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.—Is it possible I can be so credulous? They wish
†*que crédule On désire*
thou may'st be more modest. Is it possible she can be so obstinate?
modeste. entêté?
They wish us to be more assiduous. It is not expected you should be
*assidu. On * s'attend*
timid. It is feared they may be guilty
*timide. On * craint ne coupable.*

PRETERIT.—That I should have been so hasty and impatient. That
emporté si
thou should'st have been so (puffed up) with pride. That she should have
bouffi de
been so fickle. That we should have been so (headstrong). That you should
volage têtu.
have been so avaricious. That they should have been so unreasonable.
avare. déraisonnable.

259. Observe, the verb *être* serves as an auxiliary to conjugate the passive verbs through all their tenses, the compound tenses of the pronominal verbs, and those of about fifty neuter verbs. *See* VERBS, *p.* 162.

† See page 76, art. 251.

IMPERFECT.—That I should not be humane and generous. That thou
humain
might'st be more careful. That she might not be so arrogant. That
soigneux.
we might be victorious. That you might not be so stern. That they
sévère.
might not be so cruel.

PLUPERFECT.—That I might have been more studious. That thou
might'st have been more circumspect. That she might have been more
circonspect.
attentive to her duty. That we might have been less addicted to
devoir m. pl. *livré a*
pleasure. That you might have been more assiduous and more
art. m. pl. *assidu plus*
grateful. That they might have been less daring.
reconnaissant. *hardi.*

First Conjugation in ER.

See VERBS, page 34 and following, and 48 and following.

NOTE.—The verb *parler*, to speak, must of course be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

260. OBSERVE, that in the following exercises the French verbs, which are found under the English verbs, are in the infinitive present; it is for the student to put them in the tenses required by the meaning of the English sentences.

261. Adverbs, with few exceptions, must be placed after the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses, when this adverb is only a single word.

EXERCISES ON THE FIRST CONJUGATION IN *ER.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I willingly give that plaything to your sister.
volontiers donner *joujou* m.
Do I prefer pleasure to my duty? Dost thou not irritate thy
préférer art. m. *devoir* m. *irriter*
enemies? He does not propose [2]salutary [1]advice to his friends. We
ennemi? *proposer un* *avis* m.
sincerely love peace and tranquillity. We do not neglect
sincèrement art. *paix* f. art. f. *ne négliger*
(any thing) to [2]please [1]you. Do you not admire the beauty of that
rien *pour plaire* *admirer* f.
landscape? Do not your parents comfort the afflicted? They
paysage m. *consoler* *affligé* m. pl.
(make use of) all means to succeed.
employer art. *moyen* m. pl. *pour réussir.*

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have (given up) my [2]favourite [1]horse to my
céder *favori* *cheval*
cousin. Hast thou not exchanged watches with my sister? Has the
changer *de montre*

tutor given fine engravings to his pupil? We have spoken
précepteur *gravure* f. *pupille* m.
(a long while) of your adventure. Have you not insisted (too much)
long-temps *aventure* f. *insisté* *trop*
upon that point? Have your aunts prepared their [2]ball [1]dresses?
sur m. *tante* *préparer* *de bal* *habit* m.

IMPERFECT.—I unceasingly thought of my misfortunes. Didst thou
sans cesse *penser à* *malheur* m.
dread his presence and firmness? He exhibited in his person all
redouter f. *sa fermeté?* *retracer en* f.
the virtues of his ancestors. Did not that woman accuse her friend of
f. *ancêtre.* *accuser* *amie* f.
levity? We did not protect that bad man. You despised a
légèreté f. *protéger* *méchant* *mépriser*
[2]vain [1]erudition. Did the Romans disdain [3]so [4]weak [1]an [2]enemy?
f. *Romain* *dédaigner* *faible* m.
The bees were there sucking the cups of the flowers.
abeille *y* *sucer* *calice* m. *fleur.*

PLUPERFECT.—I had drained an [2]unwholesome [1]marsh. Had'st
dessécher *mal-sain* *marais* m.
thou not married a man rich, but unluckily without education?
épouser *malheureusement* *sans* f.
Had his father rejected these [2]advantageous [1]offers? We had not
rejeter *avantageux* *offre* f.
long listened to the singing of the birds. Had you already
long-temps *écouter* * *chant* m. *oiseau* m. *déjà*
studied geography and history? Had not his friends procured
étudier art. f. art. *histoire* f. *procurer*
him a troop of cavalry?
lui *compagnie* f. *cavalerie?*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Did I not gladly give peaches and flowers
avec plaisir *pêche* f. *fleur* f
to my neighbours? Thou forgottest an [2]essential [1]circumstance. Did
voisin m. *oublier* *essentiel* *circonstance* f.
not your cousin relate that charming history with (a great deal) of
raconter *charmant* *avec* *beaucoup*
grace? He lightly judged of my intentions. Did we not shew
légèrement *juger* *montrer*
courage, constancy, and firmness? Did you visit the grotto and the
m. f. f. *visiter* *grotte* f.
grove? They did not generously forgive their enemies.
bois m. *généreusement* *pardonner à*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—I had soon wasted my money and exhausted
bientôt *manger* *argent* m. *épuiser*
my resources. Hadst thou (very soon) reinforced thy party? Had not
ressource f. *vîte* *renforcer* *parti* m.
Alexander soon surmounted all obstacles? We had not [2]soon [1]enough
Alexandre *surmonter* *tous* art. m. *tôt* *assez*
shut the shutters, and (let down) the curtains. Had you not quickly
fermer *volet* *baisser* *rideau.* *promptement*
dined? In (the twinkling) of an eye, they had dispersed the mob.
dîner? *Dans* *un clin* * *œil,* *disperser* *populace* f.

262. There is a fourth preterit, called *preterit anterior indefinite*, which is used instead of the preterit anterior, when speaking of a time not entirely elapsed, as *j'ai eu achevé mon ouvrage ce matin, cette semaine*, &c., and not *j'eus achevé*: as it is found in every conjugation, I shall insert it here: *j'ai eu parlé, tu as eu parlé, il a eu parlé, nous avons eu parlé, vous avez eu parlé, ils ont eu parlé*, they had spoken.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall relieve the poor. Wilt thou faith-
soulager *pauvre* m. pl. *fidèle-*
fully keep that secret? Will he consult [2]enlightened [1]judges? He
ment garder m. *consulter* · *éclairé* *juge?*
will support you with all his credit. We shall not prefer pleasure
appuyer *de* m. *préférer* art. m.
to glory, and riches to honor. [1]By [3]such [2]a [4]conduct,
art. f. art. art. *tel* *conduite* f.
will you not afflict your father and mother? Will they astonish
affliger *votre* *étonner*
their hearers?
auditeur m.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—I shall soon have finished this book. By thy
achever m.
submission, wilt thou not have appeased his anger? Will the king have
soumission f. *appaiser* *colère* f.
triumphed over his enemies? [2]We [1]perhaps shall not have rewarded
triompher *de* *récompenser*
enough the merit of this [2]good [1]man. Will you not have flown to
mérite m. *de bien* *voler*
his assistance? Will our servants have brought money?
secours m. *domestique* m. *apporter* *argent?*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—Should I form conjectures without number?
former f. *nombre?*
Thou would'st not avoid [2]so [3]great [1]a [4]danger. Would not his attorney
éviter *procureur*
(clear up) that business? We would (drive away) the importunate.
débrouiller *affaire* f. *chasser* *importun* m. pl.
Would you not discover that [2]atrocious [1]plot? They would not
dévoiler *atroce* *complot* m.
unravel the clue of that intrigue.
démêler *fil* m. f.

PAST.—I should have liked hunting, fishing, and the coun-
aimer art. *chasse* f. art. *pêche* f. *cam-*
try. Would'st thou not have played? Would he not have bowed
pagne f. *jouer?* *saluer*
to the company? Would we [3]gladly [1]have [2]praised his pride
* *compagnie* f. *avec plaisir* *louer* *orgueil* m.
and incivility! You would have awakened (every body.) Would
sa malhonnêteté f. *éveiller* *tout le monde*
those merchants have paid their debts?
marchand *payer* *dette* f.

IMPERATIVE.—In all thy actions, consult the light of reason
Dans f. *consulter* *lumière* art.
Never yield to the violence of thy passions. Let us love justice,
te abandonner f. art.
peace, and virtue. Let us not cease to work. Sacrifice
art. f. art. f. *cesser de travailler.* *Sacrifier*

your own interest to the [2]public [1]good. Do not omit such
* *intérêt* m. pl. *bien* *négliger des*
[2]useful [3]and [1]interesting [1]details.
si utile *si intéressant* m.

263. The second person singular of the imperative of this conjugation, and likewise of some verbs of the second ending in *vrir*, *frir*, *lir*, take *s* after *e* before the word *y* and *en*: as, *portes-en à ton frère*, carry some to thy brother; *offres-en à ta sœur*, offer some to thy sister; *cueilles-en aussi pour toi*, gather some likewise for thyself; *apportes-y tes livres*, bring there thy books.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may not always listen to a [2]severe
écouter *
[1]censor of my defects. That thou should'st find real friends.
défaut m. *trouver* *vrai*
That he would adorn his speeches with the graces of a [2]pure [1]diction.
parer *discours* *de* f.
That she would remain in her boudoir. That we should so hastily
rester m. *légèrement*
condemn the world. That you may pout incessantly. That
condamner *monde* m. *bouder* *sans cesse.*
they may work more willingly.
travailler plus volontiers.

PRETERIT.—That I may have caressed insolence and flattered
caresser art. f. *flatter*
pride. That thou would'st have added nothing to that work.
art. *ajouter* *ouvrage* m.
That he should have carried despair into the soul of his friend.
porter art. *désespoir* m. *dans* *ame*
That we may have blamed [3]so [4]prudent [5]and [6]so [7]wise [1]a [2]conduct.
blâmer *sage* *conduite* f.
That you may have exasperated [3]so [4]petulant [1]a [2]character. That they
exaspérer *caractère* m.
may not have (taken advantage) of the circumstances.
profiter *circonstance.*

IMPERFECT.—That I should not copy his example. That thou might'st
imiter *exemple* m.
(give up) [2]perfidious [1]friends. That he might inhabit a hut
abandonner *perfide* *habiter* *chaumière* f.
instead of a palace. That we should fall at the feet of an [2]ille-
au lieu *palais* m. *tomber* *pied* m. *illé-*
gitimate [1]king. That you would respect the laws of your country.
gitime *respecter* *loi* f *pays* m.
That they would not speak (at random).
à tort et à travers.

PLUPERFECT.—That I should not have burnt that work. That thou
brûler m.
might'st not have contemplated the beauties of the country. That he
contempler *campagne.*
should have perfected his [2]natural [1]qualities. That we might not
perfectionner *naturel* f.

have gained the victory. That you had enchanted the public That
remporter f. *enchanter* m.
they would have struck their enemies with fear.
frapper *de crainte.*

Second Conjugation in IR.

See VERBS, page 52 and following.

NOTE.—The verbs *finir*, to finish, page 54; *ouvrir*, to open, page 130; *sentir*, to feel, page 130; and *tenir*, to hold, page 132, must be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

264. IMPORTANT DIRECTION.—Whenever the student has a French verb ending with IR to translate, the first thing he must do is to look for it among the verbs composing the list given page 162. If the verb looked for is not to be found in the above mentioned list, he must conjugate it on *finir*, to finish, page 54; and if it be found in the list, he will be directed on which verb to conjugate it.

EXERCISES.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.—I choose this picture. I feel all the unpleasantness
choisir *tableau* m. *désagrément* m.
of your situation. Whence comest thou? Does he thus define
D'où *venir* *ainsi définir*
that word? Does his mother (go out) so soon? Do we not (set off)
mot m. *sortir* *tôt* *partir*
for the country? Do you not pity his sorrows? Do you
campagne f. *compâtir à* *mal* m.
not (tell a lie)? They are finishing at this moment. They
mentir *finir* *dans* art. m.
(act contrary) to your orders.
contrevenir *ordre.*

IMPERFECT.—I fortified his soul against the dangers of seduction.
prémunir *contre* art. f.
I served my friends warmly. Did'st not thou amuse him with
servir *avec chaleur.* *entretenir* *de*
fair promises? He complied (at last) with the wishes of his
beau promesse f. *consentir* *enfin* *à* *désir* m.
family. Did we not frequently warn our friends of the bad
famille f. *fréquemment avertir*
state of their affairs? Did we sleep then? Did you not belie
état *dormir alors?* *démentir*
your character? Did not the enemies invade an [2]immense [1]country?
caractère m. *envahir* *pays* m.
Did the [2]wild [1]beasts often (come out) from the bottom of their
sauvage bête f. *souvent* *sortir* *fond* m.
mountains?
montagne?

PRETERIT.—I softened my father by my submission. I foresaw
fléchir *soumission* f. *pressentir*
that [2]terrible [1]catastrophe. Thou did'st not (come again) as thou
revenir *comme* *le*

had'st promised. He did not succeed through thoughtlessness. Did
promis. *réussir par* *étourderie.*
his daughter not (set out again) immediately? Did not Alexander sully
repartir *sur le champ?* *ternir*
his glory by his pride? Did we (go out) of the city before him? We
sortir *ville* f. *avant lui?*
never betrayed that [2]important [1]secret. Did you not agree (to
trahir m. *consentir de vous en*
trust) to me? They served their country with courage. Did the
rapporter *moi?* *pays*
ancient philosophers enjoy great consideration?
philosophe m. *jouir de un* f.

Future.—Shall I not obtain this of you? What will become
obtenir *cela de* *Que* *devenir*
of thee if I forsake thee? Will he not embellish his (country-seat)?
* *tu* *abandonner* *embellir* *maison de campagne?*
He will not sleep quietly. Shall we consent to that [2]ridiculous
tranquillement.
[1]bargain? With time and patience you will compass your
marché m. *Avec* m. f. *venir à bout de*
end. We shall not sully the splendor of our life by an [2]unworthy
dessein m. *éclat* m. *indigne*
[1]action. Will those men enrich their country by their industry?
enrichir *pays* *industrie?*
Will not our friends offer us their assistance?
offrir *secours?*

Conditional.—I would open the door and the window. I should
porte f. *fenetre* f.
still cherish life. Would'st thou not interpose in that affair? Would
chérir art. *intervenir*
my brother (set off again) without taking leave of us? You would
repartir *sans* *prendre* †A. *congé*
not succeed (in injuring him) in the [2]public [1]opinion. Could'st
parvenir *à nuire* †A *lui* *dans* f.
thou soften that [2]flinty [1]heart? Could they foresee their misfor-
attendrir *de rocher* *pressentir* *mal-*
tune? Would men always (grow old) without growing wiser,
heur? art. *vieillir* *sans* *devenir* A.†
if they reflected on the shortness of life?
réfléchir sur *brièveté* f. art.

Imperative.—Shudder with horror and terror. Support thy
Frémir *de h.orreur* *de effroi* m. *Soutenir*
character in good and bad fortune. Do not obtain thy
art. *dans* art. *mauvais* f. *ne parvenir à*
point but by means [2]consistent with [1]delicacy. Let us
fin f. pl. *que par des moyens que la* *avoue* * *délicatesse.*

---

† The student must have before this time observed that, in the conjugation of the verbs, letters A, B, C. &c., have been put before the name of each tense, with a view to use these letters as references in the exercises. Here, for instance, *growing* is in the present participle; and as the French idiom requires the French verb *devenir* in the present of the infinitive, the letter A is put after *devenir* as a warning to the student

feed the poor. Let us gain glory by our perseverance. Let
nourrir m. pl. *obtenir* art. f.
us not divulge our secrets (to every body). Never submit to [3]so
découvrir *à tout le monde.* *fléchir sous*
[4]unjust [1]a [2]yoke. Do not maintain [3]so [4]absurd [1]an [2]opinion. Do
joug m. *soutenir* *absurde*
not (come upon us) again (in that unexpected manner.)
ne survenir plus ainsi à l'improviste.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may never blemish my reputation
flétrir f.
That I may (be beforehand) with [2]such [3]dangerous [1]enemies. (I will
prévenir de si *je ne veux*
not have thee) (go out) this morning. That he may not enjoy his
pas que tu sortir Q. *matin* m. *jouir de*
glory. That he may not obtain his ends. That we may become
f. *parvenir à fin* f. *devenir*
just, honest, and virtuous. That you may punish the guilty. That
honnête vertueux. *coupable* pl.
you may return covered with laurels. That they may establish [2]wise
revenir couvert de laurier m. *établir*
[3]and [4]just [1]laws. That they may agree about the conditions.
convenir de

IMPERFECT.—That I might stun the whole neighbourhood. That
étourdir tout voisinage m.
I might not (bring about) my designs. That thou would'st
venir à bout de projet m.
(tell a wilful lie). That he might not bear his disgrace with
mentir de dessein prémédité. *soutenir* f.
firmness. That we might disobey the laws. That we should
fermeté. *désobéir à*
belong to that great king. That you might renounce your errors
appartenir *revenir de*
and prejudices. That they might weaken the force of their
de vos préjugé. *affaiblir* f.
reasons. That they might hold [2]the [3]most [4]absurd [1]ideas.
raisonnement. *tenir aux*

Third Conjugation in OIR.

See VERBS, page 64 and following.

EXERCISES ON THE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJ. IN *OIR.*

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I perceive the summit of the Alps covered
apercevoir sommet Alpes f.
with [2]perpetual [1]snow. What gratitude dost thou not owe
de éternel neige f. pl. *reconnaissance* f. *devoir*
to her [1]who [3](has discharged) [5](the duty of a mother) [4](to thee)
celle remplir près de toi
[2](in thy infancy)! Does your scholar understand well that rule which
écolier concevoir bien règle f. *
is so simple? We do not owe a large sum. Do you not perceive the
* *devoir gros somme* f.

snare? [5]Ought [2]firm [3]and [4]courageous [1]men to yield to
piége m. *Devoir* *des hommes* * *céder* art
circumstances?
circonstance?

IMPERFECT.—Did I not receive him kindly? Did he see
le *avec amitié?* *apercevoir*
the castle from such a distance? We did not receive our income.
château *si* * *loin?* *percevoir* *revenu* m. pl.
Did you not receive great civilities? Did those tyrants conceive
de *honnêteté* f. *tyran* *concevoir*
all the blackness of their crimes?
noirceur f.

PRETERIT.—I perceived him walking (by moon light).
le *qui se promenait* *au clair de la lune.*
Did the queen conceive a great esteem for that [2]honest [1]man. Did we
estime f. *de bien*
not immediately perceive the snare? You did not receive his letters (in
lettres *à*
time). Did the ministers conceive the depth of his plan.
temps. *ministre* *profondeur* f. m.

FUTURE.—Shall I receive visits to-day? He will not discover
visite *aujourd'hui?*
the spire of his village. We shall conceive [2]well-[3]founded [1]hopes.
clocher m. m. *fondé* *espérance* f.
Will you never conceive [3]so [4]luminous [1]a [2]principle? Shall men
art.
always owe their misfortunes to their faults?
malheur *faute?*

CONDITIONAL.—Should I receive the offers of my enemy? [4]Should [1]a
offre *Devoir*
[3]wise [2]man [6]thus [5](give himself up) to despair? Should we con-
s'abandonner art. *désespoir* m.
ceive [2]such [3]abstract [1]ideas? You would easily perceive [3]so [4]gross [1]a
si *abstrait* *des idées?* *grossier*
[2]trick. Would not my sisters receive their friend with tenderness?
ruse f. *tendresse* f.?

IMPERATIVE.—Conceive the horror of his situation. Do not receive
that mark of confidence with indifference. Let us entertain a
marque f. *confiance* *concevoir* *
horror of vice. Let us never owe (any thing). Receive
de le horreur *pour* art. m. *rien.*
his advice with respect and gratitude. Receive no more of his letters.
avis *lettre* f.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may receive consolations. That he
should not conceive a thought so well explained. That we may always
pensée f. *développé.*
receive false news. That you may not perceive the danger of
nouvelle f. pl. art

books which are contrary to good morals. That they may not
* * *contre* * art. *mœurs* f.
collect [2]unjust [1]taxes.
percevoir injuste f.

IMPERFECT.—That I might conceive [2]such [1]a [3]project. That he might
tel projet m.
perceive the [2]secret [1]designs †of the enemy's general. That we should not
caché dessein *
receive every body with civility. That you could not conceive the
honnêteté.
depth of this book. That they might not perceive the masts
profondeur f. *mât* m.
of the ship.
vaisseau m.

Fourth Conjugation in RE.

See VERBS, page 76 and following.

NOTE.—The verbs *vendre*, to sell, page 78; *joindre*, to join, page 148; *paraître*, to appear, page 152; *plaire*, to please, page 153; and *réduire*, to reduce, page 156, must be thoroughly learned before the following exercises are written.

265. IMPORTANT DIRECTION.—Whenever the student has a French verb ending with RE to translate, the first thing he must do is to look for it among the verbs composing the list given page 162. If the verb looked for is not to be found in the above mentioned list, he must conjugate it on *vendre*, to sell, page 78; and if it is found in the list, he will be directed on which verb to conjugate it.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I know his [2]fiery [3]and [4]impetuous [1]tem-
connaître bouillant caract-
per. I wait his return with impatience. Does he fear
ère m. *attendre retour* *craindre* art
death? Does not virtue please every body? We do not force you
f. *plaire à* *contraindre*
to adopt this opinion. We suppress for the present several [2]interesting
de adopter f. *taire* m. *intéressant*
[1]circumstances. Do you not confound these notions one with
f. *confondre* art. art.
another? You seduce your hearers by your [2]modest [1]exterior. Do
séduire auditeur m. m.
your sons acknowledge their errors? Do not those workmen waste their
reconnaître *ouvrier perdre*
time about trifles?
à des bagatelle?

IMPERFECT.—I did not displease by my conduct. I was pitying
déplaire *plaindre*
those sad victims of the revolution. ‡Did not this dog bite? Did
triste victime f. f. *chien mordre?*

---

† *Translate*, of the general of the enemies. ‡ See verbs, page 8, art. 63.

that man (at last) acknowledge his injustice? We did not appear
enfin f.
convinced. We joined our sighs and tears. Were you painting
convaincu f. *soupir* m. *nos larme* f. *peindre*
an [2]historical [1]subject? Did those orators throw the graces of ex-
d'histoire tableau m. *répandre* art.
pression into their speeches? They led the people into an error.
discours? *induire* m. *en* *

PRETERIT.—I aimed at an [2]honest [1]end. Did his prudence extinguish
tendre à *but* m. f. *éteindre*
the fire of a [2]disordered [1]imagination? Did not your conduct (do away)
dérèglé f. *conduite* f. *détruire*
his prejudices? We led our friend back to his [2]country [1]house.
prévention f. *reconduire* * *de campagne* f.
Did we offer our incense to the pride of a blockhead? Did you feign
vendre encens *sot?* *feindre*
to think as a madman? Did you conduct your children from truth
de en * *fou?* *conduire* *vérité*
to truth? Did [1]those [3]frightful [2]spectres appear again? Did
en *effrayant* m. *apparaître de nouveau?*
not the children (come down) at the first summons?
descendre à *ordre* m. sing.

FUTURE.—Shall I hear the music of the new opera? I shall
entendre *musique* f.
not conceal from you my mind. Will the general constrain
taire * *façon de penser* f. *contraindre*
the officers to join their [2]respective [1]corps? Will not a thought, true,
officier *rejoindre* f.
grand, and well expressed, please at all times? We shall (make
exprimé *dans* art. m.
our appearance) on this great theatre [2]next [1]month. Shall we
paraître *sur* m. art. *prochain* *mois* m.
describe all the horror of this [2]terrible [1]night? Will you not (new-
dépeindre *nuit* f. *re-*
model) a work so full of [2]charming [1]ideas? Will you know
fondre *plein* *reconnaître*
your things again? Will they always reduce our duties to bene-
effet m. * *devoir* m. art. *bien-*
ficence? They will assiduously correspond with their friends.
faisance f. *assidûment* *correspondre*

CONDITIONAL.—Should I, by these means gain the [2]desired
moyen m. *atteindre à* *désiré*
[1]end? I should (carry on) the undertaking with success. Would his
but m. *conduire* *entreprise* f.
mother wait with (so much) patience? Could sincerity displease
tant de art. f. *à*
the man (of sense)? Should we sell our liberty? Should we
sensé *vendre*
build our house upon that plan? Would you oblige young
construire m. *astreindre des*
people to live as you do? Would you reduce your child to
gens pl. *vivre* *comme* *

despair? They should dread [1]the [3](public) [2]censure. Would
art. *désespoir* m. *craindre* *du public* f.
my protectors introduce an unknown person into the world?
introduire *inconnu m.* *

IMPERATIVE.—Depict in thy idyl all the charms of a [2]rural
Peindre *idylle* *douceur* f. *champêtre*
life. Expect not happiness from [2]external [1]objects; it is in
Attendre art. art. *extérieur* m. *il*
thyself. Know the powers of thy mind before thou writest. Let us
force f. *avant de* * *écrire* A.
unite prudence with courage. Let us not descend to
joindre art. f. *à* art. m. *descendre dans des*
[2]useless [1]particulars. Let us not (give offence) by an air of haugh-
particularité. *déplaire* *des* m. pl.
tiness? [2]Seem [1]neither[2] too cheerful nor too grave. Ye sovereigns,
Paraître *ne ni* *gai* *ni* *sérieux.* * *souverain*
make the people happy. Do not despise his friendship. Sweet
rendre pl. *dédaigner* *doux*
illusions, vain phantoms, vanish! (Keep to yourself) such truths
f. *fantôme* m. *disparaître!* *taire* *certain*
as may offend.
qui peuvent offenser.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may fear that cloud of enemies.
nuée f.
That I should please every body, is impossible. That he may not
à *ce*
reply to [2]such [3]absurd [1]criticism. That he may lead his pupil
répondre *un* *si* *critique* f. *conduire* *élève*
step by step to a perfect knowledge of the art of speaking and writing.
pas à *connaissance* *de* A
That we may entice by an [2]enchanting [1]style. That we may confound
séduire *enchanteur* m.
the arts with the sciences. That you may have [2]the [3]same [4]end
but m.
[1](in view.) That they may not depend on any body. That they
tendre à *dépendre de personne.*
may not increase our sufferings.
accroître *peines.*

IMPERFECT.—That I might not melt into tears. That I would
fondre en larme.
acknowledge the truth. That he might (draw a picture of)
reconnaître *peindre* art.
[2]distressed [1]virtue. That she might please by her accomplishments
malheureux f. *elle* *grâce* f.
more than by her beauty That we might conduct him to court
conduire art. *cour* f
That we should affect [2]such [3]low [1]sentiments. That you might
feindre des *si* *bas* m.
hear their justification. That you might know your real friends
entendre *vrai*
That they might (wait for) the opinion of [2]sensible [1]persons. That
attendre art. *sensé* f.
they would not appear so scornful and vain.
f. *dédaigneux* *ni* *si*

Of Pronominal Verbs.

See VERBS, page 88 and following.

NOTE.—In all past participles, except *absous*, *dissous*, and *résous*, which are to be seen hereafter, the feminine is formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine, and the plural by adding *s* to the singular, both masculine and feminine, when it does not already end with *s*. In the following exercises the past participles, if put in French under the English, are always put in the masculine singular; it is for the student to put them in the number and gender required.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I commonly walk (by moonlight).
d'ordinaire se promener au clair de la lune.
Dost thou not (deceive thyself)? He (is never happy) but (when he
se tromper ne se plaire que à
is doing) wrong! Do we not (nurse ourselves) too much? How
faire A. *du mal!* *s'écouter*
do you do? They mean to travel in the spring.
se porter? *se proposer de voyager à* m.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I (have been) tolerably well for some
se porter assez bien depuis
time. Didst thou not (lose thyself) in the wood? (It is said) that he
s'égarer On dit
(killed himself) (out of) despair. Have we (flattered ourselves) without
se tuer de se flatter
foundation? Ladies, have you walked this morning? Did
fondement? Mesdames, se promener
those ladies (recognise themselves) in this portrait?
dame se reconnaître à m.

IMPERFECT.—I (tormented myself) incessantly about the affairs of
se tourmenter sans cesse pour
others. Wast thou not (laying the foundation for) much sorrow by
autrui. *se préparer bien des regrets*
thy foolish conduct? He (made himself) more and more unhappy
se rendre
(every day). We despaired without reason. Did you not
de jour en jour. *se désespérer*
laugh at us? They (ruined themselves) wantonly.
se moquer de *se perdre de gaieté de cœur.*

PLUPERFECT.—I (had trusted myself) to [2](very uncertain) [1]guides.
se livrer à des peu sûr m.
Didst thou not confide too inconsiderately in this man? Had that
se confier légèrement à
officer rushed rashly into this danger? We had con-
officier se précipiter témérairement dans m. *se con-*
demned ourselves. Had you not (been engaged) in trifles? Had
damner nous-mêmes. *s'occuper de bagatelle* f.
those travellers (gone out) of the right way?
voyageurs se détourner droit chemin m.

PRETERIT.—I repented but too late of having taken [2]such [1]a step.
tard A. *fait tel démarche*.
Wast thou not well entertained (yesterday evening?) He (suffered
s'amuser hier au soir? ne se trouver.

for) his imprudence. We met in the street, but did
pas bien de *se rencontrer* *rue*
not speak. Did you say nothing (to each other)? Did not
se parler. *dites-vous* *
those [2]rash [1]children (applaud themselves) for their folly?
téméraire *s'applaudir* *de* *sottise?*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—(As soon as) I discovered that they sought
Dès que *s'apercevoir* *on chercher*
to deceive me, I was on my guard. What didst thou, when
H. *tromper* *se tenir* J. *garde* f. pl. *fis* *quand*
thou (sawest thyself) thus forsaken? When she recollected
se trouver *ainsi abandonné?* *se souvenir*
all the circumstances, she was quite ashamed. When he had
de f. J. *toute* *honteux.*
rejoiced sufficiently, we parted. When you (had amused
se réjouir *assez* *se séparer* J. *s'amuser*
yourself) sufficiently at his expense, did you not leave him quiet?
à *dépens* m. pl. *laisser* J. *tranquille?*
When they had walked enough, they (sat down) at the foot of a tree.
se promener *s'assirent* *à*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I will yield if they convince me. Wilt thou
se rendre *on convainc*
remember the engagement that thou makest? What will not he
se souvenir de *prends?* *Que*
reproach (himself for)? We shall not (forget ourselves) (so far as)
se reprocher à lui-même? *s'oublier* *jusque*
to [2](be wanting) [3]in respect towards [1]him. Will you employ the
manquer A *de* * *lui.* *se servir de*
means I (point out) to you? Will not these flowers fade?
que *indiquer* * f. *se flétrir?*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I have betrayed myself? Wilt thou
se trahir moi-même?
not have (degraded thyself) in his eyes? He will have (been proud) of
s'avilir *à* *s'enorgueillir*
this trifling advantage. We shall have (fatigued ourselves)
faible *avantage* m. *se fatiguer*
(to no purpose). In the end, you will have (been undeceived.) Will
inutilement. *à* *fin* f. *se désabuser.*
your children have (loved each other) (too much)?
s'entr'aimer *trop?*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—Should I (suffer myself) to (be drawn)
se laisser * *entraîner*
into the party of the rebels? Wouldst [2]thou be [3](so easily)
parti m. *de si peu de chose*
[1]frightened? Would not the nation submit to [3]so [4]just [1]a [2]law?
s'effrayer? f. *se soumettre*
We should not rejoice to see the triumph of guilt. Would
se plaire *voir* *triomphe* art. *crime* m.
you (dishonour yourselves) by [2]such [1]an action? Would those
se déshonorer *tel*

lords (avail themselves) of their birth and fortune,
seigneur se prévaloir de naissance f. *de leurs richesses*
(in order to) hurt our feelings?
pour faire violence à sentiment?

PAST.—Should I not (have devoted myself) entirely to the service
se dévouer entièrement
of my country? (Had it not been for) thy carelessness, thou wouldst
pays m. *sans insouciance* f.
certainly have (grown rich). Would this pleasing hope have vanished
s'enrichir doux espoir m *s'évanouir*
so soon? Should we have (degraded ourselves) to [2]such [1]a degree?
se dégrader point m.
You would have (reduced yourselves) to every kind of want.
se réduire toute sorte pl. *privation* f. pl.
They would have (been drowned) if (they had not had assistance).
se noyer on ne les avait secourus.

IMPERATIVE.—O man, remember that thou art mortal. Do not
se souvenir
flatter (thyself that thou wilt succeed easily). Let us take an
te promets un succès facile. *se rendre*
[2]exact [1]account of our actions. Let us not deceive ourselves.
compte *se séduire nous-mêmes.*
(Rest yourself) under the shade of this tree. Do not (expose
Se reposer à ombre *s'exposer*
yourself) so rashly.
* *témérairement.*

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—(I must) rise to-morrow at an ear-
Il faut que se lever de meil-
lier hour. I wish that thou mayst be better. (I wish him to)
leur heure f. *souhaiter se porter mieux. Je veux qu'il*
(conduct himself) better. Is it not essential that we should contain
se conduire essentiel se contenir
ourselves? They wish that you should (accustom yourselves)
* *On désire s'habituer*
early to labor. It is time that they should
de bonne heure art. *travail* m.
(have relaxation) from the fatigue of business.
se délasser f. art. f. pl.

PRETERIT.—Can I have (been deceived) so grossly?
Se peut-il que se tromper grossièrement?
It is astonishing that thou hast determined to stay. It is not said that
étonnant se décider rester. On dit*
he interfered in this business. It will never (be believed) that we have
se mêler de On croira
(conducted ourselves) so ill. It is not suspected that you have
*se comporter mal. On * soupçonne*
(disguised yourselves) so ingeniously. It is not feared that they
*se déguiser adroitement. On * craint*
have behaved ill.
se conduire

IMPERFECT.—They required that I should (go to bed) at ten o'clock.
On exigeait se coucher à heure.

They wish that thou shouldst walk oftener. Did they not
On voudrait *se promener* *On*
wish that he should practise fencing? Was it necessary that
voulait *s'exercer à faire des armes?*
we should (make use) of this method? Did they wish that you should
se servir *moyen* m. *voulait*
complain without reason? Did they not wish them
se plaindre *on* *désire* H. *que* *ils*
(to make more haste)?
se hâter S. *davantage?*

PLUPERFECT.—Would they have wished that I had (revenged
voulu *se venger*
myself)? I could have wished that thou hadst (shewn thyself)
* *désirer* *se montrer*
(more accommodating). I could have wished that this painter had
moins difficile. *voulu* *peintre*
(been less negligent.) Would you have wished that we should have
se négliger moins. *voulu*
(ruined ourselves) in the [2]public [1]opinion, (in order to) satisfy your
se perdre f. *pour* *satisfaire*
resentment? I could have wished perhaps that you had (applied
ressentiment? *désirer* *peut-être* *s'appliquer*
yourselves) more to your studies. We could have wished that they
* *davantage*
had (extricated themselves) more skilfully from the difficulties
se tirer *adroitement* *embarras*
(in which) they (had involved themselves).
où *s'étaient mis.*

Conjugation of the Passive Verbs.

266. There is but one mode of conjugating passive verbs: it is by adding to the verb *être*, through all the moods and tenses, the participle past of the verb active, which then must agree in gender and number with the subject; as,

Je suis aimé, *or* aimée	*I am loved.*
tu étais estimé, *or* estimée	*thou wast esteemed.*
ce roi fut chéri de son peuple	*that king was beloved by his people.*
elle fut toujours chérie	*she was always beloved.*
mon père fut respecté	*my father was respected.*
ma mère fut révérée	*my mother was revered.*
nous serons loués *or* louées	*we shall be praised.*
vous en serez blâmés, *or* blâmées	*you will be blamed for it.*
ils seroient craints et redoutés	*they would be feared and dreaded.*
je voudrais que les portes fussent ouvertes	*I wish the doors were opened.*
tu en avais été averti, *or* avertie	*thou hadst been apprized of it.*
lorsqu'il eut été mordu	*when he had been bitten.*
je soupçonne que la ruse aura été découverte	*I suspect the artifice will have been discovered.*
vous auriez été aperçus, *or* aperçues	*you would have been perceived*

bien qu'elles aient été reconnues — *although they were recognised.*

supposez que les lumières eussent été éteintes — *suppose the lights had been put out.*

267. In the following exercises upon the verbs, the tenses will now be promiscuously intermixed:—

EXERCISE ON THE PASSIVE VERBS.

That young lady is so mild, so polite, and so kind, that she is
jeune demoiselle doux, honnête, bon,
beloved by every body. He performed with (so much) ability, that
aimé de jouer J. *tant de intelligence,*
he was universally applauded. He is known by nobody. How many
J. *applaudi. connu de Que de*
countries, unknown to the ancients, have been discovered by [2]modern
pays, inconnu découvert art.
[1]navigators?
navigateur m.

Of the Neuter Verbs.

See VERBS, page 160 and following.

268. REMARK.—The participle of these neuter verbs, which take *être* for auxiliary, must accordingly agree both in gender and number with their subject.

EXERCISE ON THE NEUTER VERBS.

They came to see us in the greatest haste. When
G. * *voir avec empressement.* *Quand est-ce que*
did they arrive? That estate fell to his lot. He fell
arriver G. *terre* f. *lui est échu en* * *partage. tomber* G.
from his horse, but happily received only a slight contusion on the knee.
* *il* G. *ne que léger* f. *à genou* m.

Of the Impersonal or Unipersonal Verbs.

See VERBS, page 123 and following.

269. Observe that, in impersonal verbs, *il* has no relation to a substantive, as may be seen by the impossibility of substituting a noun in its place.

EXERCISE ON THE UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Does it rain this morning? Did it hail [2]last [1]night? It
pleuvoir matin m. *grêler* J. art. *dernier* f.
does not snow. I thought it had thundered. Does it not
neiger. croyais que tonner I.
lighten? Do you think it freezes? It is a [2]remarkable [1]thing. It
éclairer? croyez que geler? Ce Ce
was a [2]terrible [1]hurricane. It is ten o'clock. It (was not my friend's fault)
J. *ouragan. heure. ne tenir pas à mon ami*
that (it) was not so. It will freeze long. I do not think
la chose S. *ne ainsi. long-temps. crois*
so, it seems, (on the contrary), that it thaws. It (is fit) to act
le; sembler au contraire dégeler. convenir de

so. It (was of great importance) to succeed. Would it be proper
ainsi. *importer* H. *beaucoup de réussir.* *à propos*
to write to your friends? It appears that he has not attended to that
de écrire *s'occuper de*
business. Perhaps it (would be) better (to give up) the undertaking.
vaudrait *abandonner* *entreprise.*
It (was sufficient to) know his opinion.
suffisait de

EXERCISE ON THE VERB *FALLOIR.*

See VERBS, page 136.

270. OBSERVE, that all expressions implying necessity, obligation, or want, may be rendered by *falloir* as, I want a new grammar, *il me faut une grammaire neuve.*

You must speak to him about that affair. It was necessary for him
de f. H. *que* * *il*
to consent to that bargain. We were obliged to (set out) immediately.
* S. *marché* m. J. *partir* S. *sur le champ.*
Children should learn every day something by heart. Shall I suffer
art. N. S. L. Q.
patiently [2]such [1]an [3]insult? He must have been a blockhead not to
O. S. *sot pour*
understand [2]such [3]easy [1]rules. (How much) do you want? He
comprendre des si règle f. *Combien*
does what is requisite. Do that as it (should be). What must he
fait *Faites* F. *Que lui* F.
have for his trouble? You are the man I want. Do not give me
* *peine* f. *que* F.
any more bread; I have already more (than I want). (I need
* *de en déjà qu'il ne m'en faut. Il ne me*
not) ask you whether you will come. I do not think that it is neces-
faut pas A. *si* *crois* *il* Q.
sary to be a conjurer to guess his motives. I could not suspect
* * *sorcier pour deviner motif.* *pouvais soupçonner*
that I ought (to ask) pardon for a fault I have not committed.
S. A. *de faute* f. *que* *commise.*

EXERCISE ON *Y AVOIR*, THERE TO BE.

See VERBS, page 20 and following.

271. N. B. This verb in English is used in the plural, when followed by a substantive plural; in French it remains always in the singular.

There must be a great difference of age between those two persons.
il doit f.
There being (so many) [2]vicious [1]people in this world, is it astonishing
tant de gens m. pl. *étonnant*
that there are so many persons who become the victims of the corruption
Q. *devenir* *perversité* f.
of the age? (It is a thousand to one) that he will not succeed.
siècle m. *Il y a mille à parier contre un* *réussir.*

There would be more happiness if (every one) knew how to moderate
bonheur *chacun* *savait* * * *modérer*
his desires. I did not think that there could be (any thing) to blame
désir. *croyais* S. *rien* *reprendre*
in his conduct. There would not be so many duels (did people)
conduite f. *si* *l'on*
reflect that one of the first obligations of a Christian is to forgive
réfléchir H. f. f. *Chrétien* *de pardonner*
injuries. Could there be a king more happy than this, who
art. *Pourrait-il* *celui*,
has always been the father of his subjects?
sujet?

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, *s'en aller*, to go away, page 112; also page 122.

272. The imperative *va* of *aller*, to go, takes an *s* when followed by *y*; as *vas-y*, go thither: however, it takes no *s* when the *y* is followed by a verb; as *va y donner ordre*, go and order that affair.

273. *Je vas*, I go, and *je m'en vas*, I am going, although authorized, are but seldom used by any writer.

Will you go this evening into the country? I am going to pay
soir *à* *campagne* f. * *faire*
some visits, and if I be [2]early [1](at liberty) I shall certainly
F. *de bonne heure* *libre*
go home. Go there with thy brother. Go and do that
s'en aller chez-moi. * *faire*
errand. Go there, and put (every thing) in order. Let him go
commission f. * *mettre* *tout* *en*
to church on (holidays). By being loaded with scents,
art. *église* f. * *les jour de fête.* *A force de* A. *chargé de odeur* f.
and particularly amber, he (offends the smell). They have woven
surtout *d'ambre,* *sentir mauvais.* *tissu*
silk and cotton together, and (made) a very pretty stuff. I shall
m. *en ont fait* *étoffe* f.
send [2]spring [1]flowers to those ladies. I would go to Rome, if I
printanier f. *dame.*
could. We would (send back) our horses. Why do they go
le pouvais. *Pourquoi*
away so soon? My brother and my sister went yesterday to
ma J.
Windsor. I will not go (any more) (a hunting).
plus *à la chasse.*

EXERCISES ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, page 124 and following.

May the name of that good king be †blessed from generation to gener-
nom m. *bénir* *en*

† See page 87, art 264.

ation! These trees blossomed twice (every year). The arts and
H. *deux fois* *tous les ans.*
sciences †flourished at Athens in the time of Pericles. Horace
art. H. *à Athènes* *Périclès.*
and Virgil †flourished under the reign of Augustus. We discovered
Virgile H. *sous* *règne* *Auguste.* *découvrir*
from the top of the mountain a vast plain full of [2]flowery
haut *plaine* f. *rempli* *fleurissant*
[1]meadows. The empire of the Babylonians was long a flourishing
pré m. *Babyloniens* J. *long-temps* *
one. We did not ‡hate the man, but his vices. Does she really ‡hate
*
that vain pomp and all the parade of grandeur?
pompe f. *appareil* art.

Take that water off the fire; it boils too fast. Do not let
Retirer f. *de dessus* m. *elle bouillir* *fort.* *laisser*
the [4]soup [2](boil away) [1](so much). That sauce (has boiled away)
ébouillir *tant* f.
(too much). Boil that meat again; it has not [2]boiled
trop. *Faites rebouillir* *viande* f. * f.
(long enough). He runs faster than I. He ran about uselessly
assez. *plus vîte* *moi.* J. * *inutilement*
all the morning. We ran at the voice of that honest man, and assisted
matinée f. J. f. J.
him. (The moment) he saw us in danger, he ran to us and delivered us.
Dès que *vit* *en* J. * J.
By [3]so [4]whimsical [1]a [2]conduct, should we not contribute to our destruction?
bizarre *concourir* *perte* f.
He discoursed so long on the immortality of the soul, and the certainty
J. *sur* *certitude* f.
of another life, that he left nothing unsaid. If we (were to act
laisser J. *en arrière.* *agir* H.
thus), we should certainly incur the displeasure of our parents.
ainsi *disgrâce* f.
would not have recourse to [3]so [4]base [1]a [2]method. Will men
bas *moyen* m. art.
always run after shadows?
chimère f.

He (was near) losing his life in that rencounter. He (was near)
faillir J. *perdre* * art. *rencontre* f. *faillir*
falling into the snare which was laid for him. His strength
donner A. *piége* m. *qu'on avait tendu* * *lui.* * art. f. pl.
fails him (every day). Let us have something [2]to [3]eat
défaillent lui *tous les jours.* *Donnez-nous* * * *manger*
[1]directly; we are fainting with fatigue and hunger. I cannot meet
vîte; *défaillons de* *de faim.* *ne puis rencontrer*
him; he shuns me. When (we have no employ), we endea
fuir *on ne sait pas* *s'occuper,* *on cher-*
vor to fly from ourselves. Would he not avoid flatterers, if he
che *se fuir* * *soi-même.* *fuir* art. *flatteur* m.

† See VERBS, page 128. ‡ See VERBS, page 129

knew all their falsehood? He died by a [2](very painful) [1]disease
connaître H. *fausseté* f. *de cruel maladie* f
She died of grief (for the loss of) her son. He (is dying.) She
J. *chagrin* m. *d'avoir perdu* *se mourir.*
was expiring with grief, when the fear of death (at last) wrested
se mourir de *crainte* f. art. *enfin arracher* J.
her secret from her.
m. * *lui.*

(Send for) the physician, and follow exactly his advice. Go and
Envoyez quérir *médecin,* *suivez* *
fetch my cane. Every day he acquired celebrity by works
canne f. *Tous les jours* H. f. *des ouvrage* m.
calculated to fix the attention of an [2]enlightened [1]public. That I
fait pour *éclairé*
would acquire riches at the expense of my honesty! He had acquired
S. *dépens* m. pl. *probité* f.
by his merit great influence over the opinions of his contemporaries.
une f. *sur opinion* sing. *contemporain.*
I have inquired about that man (every where), and have not
de homme-là partout je
(been able) (to hear any thing of him). Who [3]has [4]requested
pu en avoir de nouvelles. *Qui est-ce qui requérir*
[2]it of [1]you? Sesostris, king of Egypt, conquered a great part of Asia.
en * J. art.
The [2]formidable [1]empire which Alexander conquered did not last
Alexandre I. *ne durer pas*
longer than his life. I have heard that [2]important [1]news.
plus long-temps f. *ouïr-dire* sing.
He dressed himself (in haste), and (went out) immediately. I wish
se vêtir *à la hâte* *sortir* J. *sur-le-champ.* *voudrais*
she would dress the children with more care. If his fortune
que *vêtir* S. *de*
[2]permitted [1]him, he would clothe all the poor of his parish. Two
le permettait lui, *paroisse* f.
servants clothed him with his [2]ducal [1]mantle. He only passed
domestique revêtir H. *de manteau* m. *ne que* H.
for a traveller; but lately he has assumed the character of an envoy.
voyageur; *depuis peu* *revêtir un* * *envoyé.*
It begins to be very warm; it is time to (throw off some clothing).
commencer faire chaud; *de se dévêtir.*

I will gather with pleasure some of these flowers and fruits,
quelques-unes *de ces*
since you wish to [2]have [1]some. Do not gather those peaches
puisque seriez bien aise de *en* f.
before they are ripe. That is a country where they neither
avant que ne Q. *mûr.* *Ce pays où on ne*
reap corn nor gather grapes. We shall collect in [2]ancient
recueillir ni blé ni * *vin.* *recueillir*
history [2]important [3]and [1]valuable [1]facts. He received us in [2]the
précieux fait. *accueillir dela la*
[3]most [4]polite [1]manner. Poverty, misery, sickness, per
manière f art. f. art. f. art. *maladie* f. art.

secution, in a word, all the misfortunes in the world, have (fallen upon)
f. *en* *malheur* m. *de* *accueillir*
him. You will give six inches to that cornice; it will project
voulez donner *pouce* *corniche* f. *elle* *saillir*
too much. That balcony projected too much; it darkened the
balcon m. H. *obscurcir* H.
dining-room. When Moses struck the rock, there gushed out
Quand Moïse frapper J. *rocher* m. *il saillir* J.
of it a spring of [2](fresh running) [1]water. The blood gushed from
en *source* f. *vif* f. H.
his vein with impetuosity. We shall assault the enemy to-morrow in
veine f. pl. *demain*
their entrenchments. Were we not overtaken by a horrible storm?
retranchement. J. *assailli* *tempête* f.
At every word they said to him concerning his son, the good
A chaque *que on disait* * *de*
(old man) leaped for joy. Shall you not shudder with fear?
vieillard tressaillir H. *de joie.* *tressaillir* *peur* f.

EXERCISES ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, page 134 and following.

274. IMPORTANT DIRECTION.—Whenever the student has a French verb ending with OIR to translate, the first thing he must do is to look for it among the verbs composing the list given page 162. If the verb looked for is not to be found in the above mentioned list, he must conjugate it on *recevoir*, to receive, page 66; and if it be found in the list, he will be directed on which verb to conjugate it.

I had apartments that I liked; I will endeavor to have them
H. *un logement* sing. *aimer* H. *veux essayer de* *le* sing.
again. Beware of falling. How has he fallen into poverty?
Prenez-garde A. *Comment* *déchoir en pauvreté?*
Since the publication of his last work, he has much fallen in the
Depuis *dernier* *déchoir dans*
esteem of the public. If he do not alter his conduct, he will
changer F. *de* *
decline (every day) in his reputation and credit. He has
déchoir de jour en jour *de* f. *de son* m.
put in the lottery, and he hopes that a capital prize will fall
mis à *loterie* f. * art. *gros* *lot* m. *échoir*
(to his share). That bill of exchange has expired. The first term
lui *lettre* f. *change* *échoir.* *terme* m.
expires (at Midsummer). You have drawn on me a bill of ex-
à la Saint Jean. *tirer* *sur moi*
change; when is it payable? I did not believe that (I must) so
échoir F. *croyais* *il me fallût*
soon (have taken) that journey. He must have sunk under
faire *voyage* m. *a fallu qu'il* *succomber* S
the efforts of (so many) enemies.
tant de

The spring which moves [2]the [1]whole machine is very ingenious,
ressort m. *tout* f.
though very simple. It was passion which moved him to that
quoique *Ce* H. art. f. J.
action. Can you doubt that the soul, though it is spiritual, moves
f. *Pouvez douter* f. * * *spirituel ne* Q.
the body (at pleasure)? That is a man whom nothing moves. We
à sa volonté? *Ce* *émouvoir.*
had scarcely lost [4]sight [3]of [1]land[2] when there arose a
H. *à peine perdu vue* f. *la terre* f. *que il s'émouvoir*
violent tempest. We were moved with fear and pity. When
grande tempête f. J. *émus de crainte* f. *de pitié* f. *Quand*
the famous d'Aguesseau was promoted to the dignity of chancellor, all
célèbre . J. f. *chancelier*
France shewed the greatest joy. That bishop [2]well
art. f. *en témoigner* J. f. *évêque*
[1]deserved, by his talents and by his virtues, that the king should promote
mériter H. S.
him to the dignity of primate. The people think that it rains
primat. *peuple* sing. *croit*
frogs and insects at certain seasons. It will not rain
grenouille f. *insecte* m. *en* *temps* m.
to-day, but I (am fearful) (of its) raining to-morrow.
d'aujourd'hui *craindre* *qu'il ne* Q.

When he arrived at home he (was quite exhausted). The
fut arrivé chez-lui *n'en pouvoir* H. *plus.*
minister had (so many) people at his levee, that I could not
ministre H. *tant de monde* *à* *audience* f. G.
speak to him. Are [2]you [1]afraid that he will not accomplish
* *craignez* *pouvoir* Q. *venir à bout de*
that affair? I know that he is not your friend, but I know likewise
savoir *de* pl. *aussi*
that he is a man of probity. Let them know that their pardon depends
* *bien.* *savoir* *grâce dépendre*
on their submission. I could wish that he knew his lessons a
de *soumission.* *désirer* N. *savoir* Q.
little better. Let us see if this [2](new-fashioned) [1]gown becomes
voir *d'un nouveau goût* *robe* *seoir*
you or not. Be assured that [2]too [3]gaudy [1]colors will not become
non. art. *voyant* f. *seoir*
you. The head-dress which that lady wore became her very ill.
coëffure f. *que* *porter* H. H. *lui*
These colors become you so well, you (would do wrong) to wear any
'C. *avoir* N. *tort* *de en porter*
others Set that child in this arm-chair, and take care lest
Asseoir m. *fauteuil* m. *prenez-garde que*
he fall. I will sit down on the top of that hill, whence
ne Q. *s'asseoir* *sommet* m. *coteau* m.
I shall discover a prospect (no less) magnificent than diversified.
découvrir *scène* f. *aussi* *magnifique* *varié.*
We (were seated) on the banks of the Thames, whence we were
s'asseoir I. *'bord* m. *Tamise* f.

contemplating myriads of vessels, which bring (every year) the
H. *milliers* *vaisseau,* *apporter* *tous les ans*
riches of the two hemispheres.

See the [2]admirable [1]order of the universe: does it not announce a
Voir m.
[2]supreme [1]architect? Has he again seen with pleasure his country and
artisan m. *revoir* *pays*
his friends? (Had he a glimpse of) the dawn of this fine day? To
entrevoir *aurore* *Pour*
finish their affairs, it would be necessary for them to (see one another)
falloir N. *que* * *ils* * *s'entrevoir* S.
I clearly foresaw (from that time) all the obstacles he would have to
bien prévoir J. *dès lors* m.
surmount. Would you have the judge (put off) the execution
surmonter. H. * *que* *surseoir* S.
of the sentence that he had pronounced? I shall not put off the
arrêt *rendu?*
pursuit of that affair. If men do not provide (for it), God
poursuite f. pl. art. *pourvoir* *y*
will provide for it. Would this book (be good for) nothing? You
valoir N.
have not paid for this ground more than it is worth; (are you afraid)
* *terre* f. f. *ne valoir* F. *craignez-vous*
that it is not worth six hundred pounds? Let us take arbitrators.
que Q. *livres sterlings?* *prenons* *arbitre.*
One ounce of gold is equivalent to fifteen ounces of silver. Doubt
once f. *équivaloir*
not that reason and truth will prevail (at last). I can
art. art. * *ne prévaloir* Q. *à la longue.* *pouvoir*
and will tell the truth. If you are willing, he will be willing
je vouloir dire *le* *vouloir* *le*
too. Let us resolve to resist our passions, and we shall be sure
aussi. *veuillons* *combattre*
to conquer them. (Be so good as) to lend me your grammar.
de vaincre *veuillez* * *prêter*

EXERCISES ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

See VERBS, page 141 and following.

Wood which (is burned) (resolves itself) into ashes and
art. *bois* m. *on* *brûle* †*se résoudre* *en cendre* f. *en*
smoke. Have they resolved on peace or war? The fog
fumée f. *on résoudre* * art. f. art. f. *brouillard* m.
(has resolved itself) into rain. Could that judge [2]thus [3]lightly
se résoudre G. *pluie* f. *si légèrement*
[1]absolve the guilty? [2]Strong [1]waters dissolve metals.
absoudre N. *coupable* m. pl. art. *Fort* f. *dissoudre* art.

† See page 91 art. 265.

²Those ²drugs (were dissolved) (before they were put) into that
drogue *on a dissous* *avant que de les mettre* A.
medicine. My sister was sewing all day yesterday. That piece is not
remède m. *coudre* J. * *hier* m.
well sewed; it must (be sewed over again). Unpick that lace,
la *recoudre* *Découdre* *dentelle* f.
and sew it again very carefully. Does he set a great value
avec beaucoup de soin. *mettre* *prix* m.
upon riches? I never admitted those principles. Has he committed
aux *admettre* J. *commettre*
that fault? If he (would take my advice), he would resign his
faute f. *m'en croyait* *se démettre* *de*
charge in favor of his son. He put his arm (out of joint)
f. *en* *se démettre* J. *le bras* m. *
yesterday. I will omit nothing that depends on me to serve
omettre *de ce qui dépendre* L. *de* *pour*
you. God frequently permits the wicked to prosper.
souvent *permettre que* *méchant* m. pl. * *prospérer* Q.
Put this book in its place again. Under whatever form of govern-
Remettre *à* f. * *Sous quelque* *gouverne-*
ment you may live, remember that your first duty is to be
ment m. *que* *vivre,* *se souvenir* *devoir* m. *de*
obedient to the laws. It frequently happens that fathers transmit to
soumis *arriver* art. *transmettre*
their children both their vices and their virtues. He has long
et *long-temps*
meddled with ²public ¹affairs; but his endeavors have not
s'entremettre *de* art. *effort*
been crowned with success.
couronner *de* art. m.

I took great pains; but, at last, I ground all the coffee.
prendre J. *beaucoup* *enfin* *moudre* J. *café* m.
Grind those razors with care. Those knives (are just) ground.
émoudre *rasoir* m. *couteau* m. *viennent d'être*
This grain is not sufficiently ground; it should be (ground again).
assez *il faut le remoudre.*
I wish that you would take courage. What news have you learned?
vouloir Q. f. pl.
Philosophy comprehends logic, ethics, physics,
art. *comprendre* art. *logique* f. art. *morale* f. s. art. *physique* f. s.
and metaphysics. It is (with difficulty) that he (divests himself)
art. *métaphysique* f. s. *Ce* *difficilement* *que* *se déprendre*
of his opinions. He has forgotten all that he knew. I fear
désapprendre *ce que* *savoir* H.
you will undertake a task above your strength. Could
que *ne entreprendre* Q. *tâche* f. *au-dessus de* f. pl.
he have been mistaken so grossly? I reproved him continually
se tromper O. *grossièrement* *reprendre* H. *sans cesse*
for his faults, but (to no purpose). We surprised the enemy, and
défaut, *inuti'ement.* *surprendre* J. pl.
cut them to pieces. In the middle of the road the axletree of our
tailler J. *en* *à* *chemin* *essieu* m.

carriage broke. Bad company corrupts the minds of young people.
carrosse se rompre J. art. f. pl. *corrompre esprit* s. *gens* pl.
Why do you interrupt your brother, when you see him busy?
Pourquoi interrompre occupé ?

[3](For a long while) [1]we [2]followed that method, which was only
long-temps suivre J. f. H. *ne que*
calculated to mislead us. What (is the consequence)? See the errors
propre égarer Que s'ensuivre
that (have sprung) from this proposition, which appeared so true.
se sont ensuivies f. H.
We pursued our course, when some cries, which came from the
suivre H. *chemin, lorsque des cri, * sortis*
midst of the forest excited terror in our souls. The Greeks
fond m. *forêt* f. *porter* J. art. f. *ame. Grec*
vanquished the Persians at Marathon, Salamis, Platea, and Mycale.
Perse à à Salamine, à Platée, à
I have at last convinced him, by [2]such [3]powerful [1]reasons, of the
convaincre des si fort f.
greatness of his fault, that I (have no doubt) but he will
énormité faute f. *ne doute nullement que ne*
repair it. It is during winter that they thrash corn in
réparer Q. *Ce pendant* art. *on battre blé*
[2]cold [1]countries. The enemy was so completely beaten in that
les froid pays m. pl. *battre*
engagement, that he was forced to abandon thirty leagues of the country.
rencontre f. *de lieue* f. * *pays.*
The cannon (beat down) the tower. They were fighting with
canon abattre J. *tour* f. *combattre un*
[2]unexampled [1]fury when a [2]panic [1]terror made them take
sans exemple acharnement m. *panique* f. *faire* J. *leur*
flight, and dispersed them in an instant. Beat these mattresses
art. *fuite* f. J. m. *Rebattre matelas* m.
again. Happy are those who live in solitude! [2]Long [1]live that
* * *vivre* art. *retraite* f. *Long-temps* Q.
good king! He did not long survive a person who was so dear to him.
survivre à f.
Fathers live again in their children. He was in a strange dejection
art. *revivre accablement*
of mind; but the news which he has received (has revived) him.
esprit ; f. pl. f. pl. *ont fait revivre* A.

What will you (have him do)? Do not make (so much)
Que vouloir que il fasse ? tant
noise. Do they never exact? That woman mimicked all the
de bruit. surfaire ? contrefaire H.
persons whom she had seen; this levity rendered her odious. It was
f. *que* f. pl. *légèreté* f. J. f. *Ce* J.
with difficulty he (divested himself) of the false opinions which
peine que se défaire f. *on*
had been given him in his infancy. Could it be possible that we should
* f. pl. *lui* f.
not again make a journey to Paris, Rome, and Naples? He
refaire S. art. * *voyage de de de*

says that you have offended him, and that, if you do not satisfy him
dit *offensé* *satisfaire*
quickly, he will find means to satisfy himself.
promptement, art. *moyen* sing. *de se satisfaire lui-même.*
(Every night) she milked her sheep, which gave her a [2](great
Tous les soirs *traire* H. *brebis* pl. H. *lui abon-*
quantity) of [3]wholesome [1]milk. Have you milked your goats? Are
dant * *et sain* *lait* m. *chèvre* f.
the cows milked? Salt is good to entice pigeons. You
vache art. *Sel* m. *pour attraire* art. m.
will never know the nature of bodies, if you do not abstract their
connaître art. * *abstraire*
[2]necessary [1]qualities from those which are inherent (in them). The
celles *leur.*
least thing (diverts his attention). Will you not extract that
moindre *le distraire* F. *extraire*
charming passage? Have you darned your gown? Should he
m. *rentraire*
not redeem that land? What! would you (have me screen)
retraire *Quoi!* F. *que je soustraie*
those (guilty persons) from the rigor of the laws?
coupable m. pl. *à* *rigueur* f.

Was not Virgil born at Mantua? It is from that [2]poisoned [1]source
naître J. *Mantoue?* *Ce* *empoisonné* f.
that have arisen all the [2]cruel [1]wars that have desolated the universe.
que *naître* f. pl. f. *désoler*
The fable says that, (as soon as) Hercules had (cut off) one of the heads
f. *dit* *aussitôt que* *Hercule* *couper* *tête* f.
of the hydra, [2]others [1](sprang up). While their [2]united
hydre f. *d'autres* *il en renaître* H. *Tandis que* *réuni*
[1]flocks fed on the [2]tender [3]and [4]flowery [1]grass, they
troupeau m. *paître* H. * *fleuri* *herbe* f.
sang under the shade of a tree the sweets of [2]rural [1]life.
chanter H. *à* *ombre* *douceur* f. art. *champêtre* f.
Your horses have not fed to-day: (you must have them fed).
repaître d'aujourd'hui *il faut les faire repaître* A.
He is a man who thirsts [2]after nothing [1]but blood and slaughter.
Ce *né se repaître de* * *que* *de carnage* m.

The thunder which roared from afar announced a
tonnerre m. *bruyait dans* art. *lointain* m. H.
[2]dreadful [1]storm. They heard roar the waves of an [2]agitated
terrible *orage* m. *On* *entendre* H. *bruire* A. *flot* m. *agité*
[1]sea. That street is too noisy for those who love retirement and
mer f. *rue* f. *bruyant* art. *retraite* f.
study. I (have a glimpse of) something that shines through
art. *entrevoir* *quelque chose* *à travers*
those trees. A ray of hope shone upon us in the midst of the
rayon m. *luire* J. * *à* *milieu*
misfortunes which overwhelmed us. (Every thing) is well rubbed in
malheur m. *accabler* H. *Tout* *frotté*
that house: every thing shines, even the floor. Would he not
y reluire, jusque à *plancher* m.

have injured you in that affair? Jesus Christ was circumcised eight
nuire *circoncis*
days after his birth. Will you preserve these peaches with sugar,
naissance f. *confire* *à* art. *sucre* m.
with honey, or with brandy? Did you pickle cucumbers.
à art. *miel* m. *à* art. *eau-de-vie* f. *concombre* m.
purslane, and sea-fennel? If he loses his lawsuit, all his
pourpier m. *perce-pierre* f. *procès* m.
property will not suffice.
bien *suffire.*

Always speak truth, but with discretion. Never contradict
dire art. f.
(any one) in public. You thought you were serving me in speaking
personne en *penser* G. * * A. *en parler*
thus: well (let it be so); you shall not be contradicted. What!
ainsi: eh! bien, soit; *n'en pas dédire.* *Quoi!*
would you forbid him all communication with his friends? That
interdire f.
woman who slandered (every one) soon lost all kind of
H. *de tout le monde,* J. *espèce* f.
respect. You had foretold that event. Let us curse no one;
considération. *ne personne;*
let us remember that our law forbids us to curse even those who
se rappeler *défendre* * *de*
persecute us. Write (every day) the reflections which you make
persécuter *écrire tous les jours*
on the books you read. Did he not read that [2]interesting [1]history with
lire. J.
(a great deal) of pleasure? God is an [2]infinite [1]being, who is circum-
beaucoup *être* m. *ne*
scribed neither by time nor place. Will you not describe
ni art. *ni par* art. *lieu* m. pl.
in that episode the [2]dreadful [1]tempest which assailed your hero? [1]Get
m. *horrible* f. J. *faire*
[3]those [4]soles [5]and [6]whitings [2]fried. If you wish to form your taste,
ces *merlan* *frire* A. *vouloir* *
(read over and over) unceasingly the ancients. He was elected by a
lisez et relisez *sans cesse* J. *à*
great majority of voices. We have laughed heartily, and have
f. *rire* *de bon cœur,* *nous*
resolved to (go on). He did not answer him (any thing:) but he
résolu *de continuer.* *ne répondre* J. *lui* *rien*
smiled at him, as a sign of approbation, in the [2]kindest [1]manner.
sourire J. * *lui, en* * *de* *gracieux* *air* m.

Seated under the shade of palm-trees, they were milking their
Assis *à* art. *palmier*
goats and ewes, and [2]merrily [1]drinking that nectar, which
chèvre f. *leurs brebis* f. *avec joie* m.
(was renewed) every day. Should they not have drunk with ice?
se renouveler H. *boire* *à* art.
This window does not shut well; when you have made some alterations
clore M. *réparation* f.

(to it), it will shut better. He had scarcely closed his eyes, when the
y f. *clore mieux.* *à peine* I. *les* *que*
noise which they made at his door awoke him. Have they not
que on H. *à* *réveiller* J. *on*
enclosed the suburbs within the city? Will you enclose your park
enclore *faubourg* m. *dans* *ville* f. *parc*
with a wall or a hedge? Put the eggs of those silk-worms
de *mur* m. *de* *haie* f. *Mettez* *œuf* m. *vers à soie* m.
in the sun, that they may hatch. Those flowers just blown,
au *soleil* m. *éclore* Q. *nouvellement éclose,*
spread the sweetest fragrance. When did they conclude this treaty?
répandre *doux* *parfum* m. G. *traité* m.
His enemies managed so well, that he was unanimously excluded from
faire J. J. *unanimement*
the company. Did you think me capable of [2]so [4]black [1]an [2]act?
compagnie f *croire* F. *noir* *trait* m.
He possesses some kind of knowledge; but (not so much as he thinks).
quelque espèce *savoir* *il s'en fait trop accroire.*

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

275. PREPOSITIONS, which are so called from being *pre*fixed to the nouns which they govern, serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them. Thus, in this phrase, *le fruit de l'arbre*, the fruit of the tree, *de* expresses the relation between *fruit* and *arbre*. Likewise in this, *utile à l'homme*, useful to man; *à* forms the relation between the noun *homme* and the adjective *utile*. *De* and *à* are *pre*positions, and the word to which they are *pre*fixed is called their *regimen*.

276. There are different kinds of prepositions.

277. Some denote *place*, as:

CHEZ. *Il est* chez-*lui*, he is *at* home.
DANS. *Il se promène* dans *le jardin*, he is walking *in* the garden.
DEVANT. *Il est toujours* devant *mes yeux*, he is always *before* my eyes
DERRIERE. *Il ne regarde jamais* derrière *lui*, he never looks *behind* him.
PARMI. *Que de fous* parmi *les hommes!* how many fools *among* men!
SOUS. *La taupe vit* sous *terre*, the mole lives *under* ground.
SUR. *Il a le chapeau* sur *la tête*, he has his hat *on* his head.
VERS. *L'aimant se tourne* vers *le nord*, the loadstone points towards the north.

EXERCISE ON THESE PREPOSITIONS.

We find [1]ess [2]real [1]happiness in an [2]elevated [1]condition than in a
On *de* *bonheur* f.
[2]middling [1]state. One is never truly peaceful, but at home.
moyen *véritablement tranquille* *que* *soi.*
He walked before me to serve me as a guide. There was a [2]delightful
marcher *pour* *de* H.

[1]grove behind his house. Among (so many) [2]different [1]nations,
bosquet m. *tant de*
(there is not one) that has not a [2]religious [1]worship. Nature
il n'y en a pas une Q. *culte* m. art.
displays her riches with magnificence under the [2]torrid [1]zone.
déployer *torride* f
[3]Eternal [2]snows [1](are to be seen) on the summit of the Alps. Towards
f. *on voit* *sommet* *Alpes.*
the north, nature assumes a [2]gloomy and wild [1]aspect.
art. *prend.* *triste* *sauvage* *aspect* m.

278. Some mark *order*, as:

AVANT. *La nouvelle est arrivée* avant *le courrier*, the news is come *before* the courier.

APRES. *Il est trop vain pour marcher* après *les autres*, he is too proud to walk *after* other people.

ENTRE. *Elle a son enfant* entre *les bras*, she holds her child *in* (for *between*) her arms.

DEPUIS. Depuis *la création jusqu'à nous*, *from* the creation to the present time.

DES. Dès *son enfance*, *from* his infancy; dès *sa source*, *from* its source.

EXERCISE.

We (were up) before (daylight) (in order to) enjoy the [2]mag-
se lever I. art. *jour* *pour* *de* *ma-*
nificent [1]spectacle of the [2]rising [1]sun. After such great faults.
gnifique m. *levant.* *de si* *faute* f.
it only remained for us to repair them (as well as we could). Be-
ne que rester H. * *réparer* *de notre mieux.*
tween those two mountains runs a [3]deep [2]hollow [1]road. [2]Many
est *profond et creux* *chemin* m.
[4]very [5]astonishing [3]events [1](have taken place) [6]within these ten years.
il s'est passé *depuis* *
From my earliest infancy I have had an abhorrence of lying.
tendre * *horreur* art. *mensonge* m

279. Some denote *union*, as:

AVEC. *Il faut savoir* avec *qui on se lie*, we ought to know *with* whom we associate.

DURANT. Durant *la guerre*, *during* the war; durant *l'été*, *during* the summer.

PENDANT. Pendant *l'hiver*, *in* winter; pendant *la paix*, *in* time of peace. This preposition denotes a duration more limited than *durant*.

OUTRE. Outre *des qualités aimables, il faut encore*, &c., *besides* amiable qualities, there ought still, &c.

SUIVANT. *Je me déciderai* suivant *les circonstances*, I shall determine *according* to circumstances.

SELON. *Le sage se conduit* selon *les maximes de la raison*, a wise man acts *according* to the dictates of reason.

EXERCISE.

With wit, politeness, and some (readiness to oblige), one generally
un peu de *prévenance.*

succeeds in the world. We are fit for meditation during winter
réussir *On est propre à* art. f.
(In the course of) that siege the commandant of the city made some
Pendant *siége* m. J.
[2]very [3]successful [1]sallies. Besides the [2]exterior [1]advantages of figure
heureux *sortie* f. art.
and the graces of deportment, she possesses an [2]excellent [1]heart, a
art. *maintien* m. *avoir*
[2]correct [1]judgment, and a [2]sensible [1]soul. Always act according
sain *jugement* *se conduire*
to the maxims which I have given you.
* f. *inculquer* f. pl.

280. Some express *opposition*, as:

CONTRE. *Je plaide* contre *lui*, I plead *against* him.
MALGRE. *Il l'a fait* malgré *moi*, he has done it *in spite of* me.
NONOBSTANT. Nonobstant *ce qu'on lui a dit*, *notwithstanding* what has been said to him.

EXERCISE.

We cannot long act (contrary to) our own character: notwith-
savoir N. *agir* *contre* *
standing all the pains we take to disguise it, it (shews itself), and
que *pour* *se montrer*
betrays us on many occasions. (In vain we dissemble); in spite
trahir *en bien* *nous avons beau faire;*
of ourselves, (we are known) at last.
on nous connaît à la longue.

281. Some express *privation* or *separation*, as:

SANS. *Des troupes* sans *chef*, troops *without* commanders.
EXCEPTE. Excepté *quelques malheureux*, *except* some wretches.
HORS. *Tout est perdu* hors *l'honneur*, all is lost *save* honor.
HORMIS. *Tous sont entrés* hormis *mon frère*, they are all come in *except* my brother.

EXERCISE.

(Had it not been for) your care, I should have been ignorant all my
Sans pl. *un*
life. All the philosophers of antiquity, except a few,
art. *très-petit nombre*,
have held the world to be eternal. All laid down their arms,
croire * * *mettre bas les*
except two regiments, who preferred (making their way) through
se faire A. *jour à travers*
the enemy. Every thing is absurd and ridiculous in that work,
pl.
except a chapter or two.

282. Some denote the *end*, as:

ENVERS. *Il est charitable* envers *les pauvres*, he is charitable *to* the poor

Touchant. *Il a écrit* touchant *cette affaire*, he has written *respecting* that business.

Pour. *Il travaille* pour *le bien public*, he labors *for* the public good.

EXERCISE.

I have written to you concerning that business, in which I take the
à laquelle
most lively interest; and as I know your benevolence towards the
vif *connaître* *bienveillance* f.
unfortunate, I (make not the least doubt) that you (will carefully
malheureux pl. *ne doute nullement* *ne donner* Q. *tous*
attend) (to it), (not so much) for the satisfaction of obliging me, as for
vos soins *y* *moins* A.
the pleasure of justifying innocence and confounding calumny.
justifier A. art. *de confondre* A. art. f.

283. Others mark the *cause* and *means*, as:

Par. *Il l'a fléchi* par *ses prières*, he has softened him *by* his entreaties.

Moyennant. *Il réussira* moyennant *vos avis*, he will succeed *by means* of your counsels.

Attendu. *Il ne peut partir* attendu *les vents contraires*, he cannot sail *on account of* contrary winds.

EXERCISE.

Is there any man that has never been softened by tears or dis-
aucun Q. *fléchir* art. *u dés*-
armed by submission? Through the precautions which we took,
armer art. *que* J.
we avoided the rocks of that [2]dangerous [1]coast. Owing to the bad
J. *écueil* m. *côte* f.
state †(of my father's health), I shall not travel this year.
voyager *année* f.

284. The use of the prepositions *à*, *de*, *en*, is very extensive.

285. A is generally used to express several relations, as *destination, tendency, place, time, situation*, &c., being often a substitute for various other prepositions; ex.:—destination, *to: aller* à *Londres*, to go *to* London.—Tendency, *to, toward: courir* à *sa perte*, to hasten *to* one's ruin.—Aim, *at, for: aspirer* à *la gloire*, to aspire *to* glory.—Résidence, *at, in: être* à *Rome*, to be *at* Rome.—Time, *at:* à *midi*, *at* twelve o'clock.—Concern, *on:* à *ce sujet*, *on* this subject.—Manner, *with: supplier* à *mains jointes*, to entreat earnestly.—Means, *with: peindre* à *l'huile*, to paint *in* or *with* oil; *with: bas à trois fils*, three-thread stockings—that is, *with* three threads.—Situation, *at, with: être* à *son aise*, to be *at* ease.—Purpose, *for: une table* à *manger*, a dining-table.—Suitableness, *for, to: homme* à *réussir*, a man likely *to* succeed.—Desert, *to: crime* à *ne pas pardonner*, a crime not *to* be forgiven, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *à*.

Fathers [1] give good counsels and [3]still [1]better [2]examples to your
encore *meilleur*

† Translate as if it stood thus:—*Of the health of my father*

children. A good minister only aims at the glory of [2]serving [3]his
ne que aspirer à A.
[4]country [1]well. When we were in the country, we devoted the
pays H. *à campagne* f. *consacrer* H.
morning to study, we walked at noon, and at three or four
matinée, f. art. *se promener* H. *midi*
o'clock we went a hunting or fishing. Michael Angelo has
heure H. *à* art. *chasse* f. *à la pêche* f. *Michel-Ange*
painted (a great deal) in fresco. It is a bed with (ivory posts)
beaucoup art. *fresque* f. *Ce lit* m. *colonnes d'ivoire*
and (mahogany feet). That man, with his [2]gloomy [1]looks and
à pied d'acajou. *les sombre regard* m.
[2]surly [1]behaviour, seems fit only to serve as a scarecrow.
au brusque maintien m. *semble propre ne que de * épouvantail.*

286. De is generally used to express *separation, extraction, possession, appartenance, cause, shift, result,* &c., and supplies the place of several prepositions; as, *from: je viens* de *France*, I come *from* France; *d'un bout à l'autre, from* one end to the other.—*Of: le palais* du *roi*, the palace *of* the king; *les facultés* de *l'ame*, the faculties *of* the soul; *un homme* d'*esprit*, a man *of* wit. In a partitive sense—*of: moitié* de, *quart* de, &c., the half of, the fourth of, &c.: it is used for PAR, *by: il est aimé* de *tout le monde*, he is beloved *by* every hody; *for, through,* or *by,* &c.; *mourir* de *faim*, de *soif*, to die *of* hunger, *of* thirst.—*On, upon, with: vivre* de *fruits*, to live *upon* fruit.—*On account of,* or *for: sauter* de *joie*, to leap *for* joy.

EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *de.*

I come from London, where I have spent (a week) very agreeably.
où passé huit jours
From one end of the horizon to the other, the sky was covered with
bout m. m. *ciel* m.
[2]thick [3]black [1]clouds. The marble of Paros is not finer than that
épais et noir nuage m.
which we get from Carrara. Montaigne, Madame de Sévigné, and
qui nous vient Carrare.
La Fontaine, were writers of [2]truly [3]original [1]genius. One half
H. *écrivain un* *moitié* f
of the [2]terrestrial [1]globe, is covered with water, and above a (third part)
terrestre globe m. *plus de tiers* m.
of the rest is uninhabited, either through [2]extreme [1]heat or through
inhabité, ou par un chaleur f.
[2]excessive [1]cold. In that happy retreat, we lived on the milk of
un froid m. *asile* m. H.
our flocks, and the [2]delicious [1]fruits of our orchards.
brebis pl. *de* *verger* m

287. En serves to mark the relations of time, place, situation, &c., and is variously expressed; as, *c'était* en *hiver*, it was *during* winter; *être* en *Angleterre*, to be *in* England; *aller* en *Italie*, to go *into* Italy; *elle est* en *bonne santé*, she is *in* good health; *il vaut mieux être* en *paix*, *qu'*en *guerre*, it is better to be *at* peace than *at* war; *il l'a fait* en *haine de lui*, he did it out of hatred to him, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *en*.

[3]He had [1]for [2](a long while) [4]lived in France; the troubles which
* *depuis* *long-temps* *vivre* H.
agitated that fine kingdom obliged him to retire to Switzerland,
J. *royaume* m. J. *de se retirer* *Suisse*,
whence [3]he [1]soon [2]after (set out) for Italy. We were at peace, and
d'où *se rendre* J. H.
enjoyed all its blessings, when ambition rekindled the
nous en goûter H. art. * *charme* m. art. *rallumer*
flames of war, and forced us to put our frontiers in a state of
feu sing. art. J. *de mettre* *frontière* f. *
defence. The savage is almost continually at war; he cannot remain
presque toujours
at rest. He has acted, on this occasion, like a great man.
repos. *dans* *en* *

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE ADVERB.

288. The *adverb* is a word which accompanies verbs, adjectives, and even other adverbs, to express their manner or circumstances.

289. Remark. There are adjectives which are sometimes used as adverbs; as, *il chante juste*, he sings well; *elle chante faux*, she sings out of tune; *ils ne voient pas clair*, they do not see clear; *cette fleur sent bon*, this flower has a good smell, &c. The adjectives *juste*, *faux*, *clair*, and *bon*, here supply the place of adverbs.

290. Adverbs are of different kinds.

291. The most numerous are those which express manner, and are formed from adjectives by the following method:

292. Rule I. When the adjective ends in the masculine with a vowel, the adverb is formed by adding *ment*; as, *modeste-ment*, modestly; *poli-ment*, politely; *ingénû-ment*, ingenuously, &c.

293. Exceptions. *Impuni* makes *impunément*, and *traître*, *traîtreusement*.

294. The following six take *é* close before *ment*, instead of the *e* mute in the adjective:

aveuglément,	*blindly*	conformément,	*conformably*
commodément,	*commodiously*	énormément,	*enormously*
incommodément,	*incommodiously*	opiniâtrément	*obstinately*

295. Rule II. When the adjective ends with a consonant, in the masculine, the adverb is formed from the feminine termination, by adding *ment*; as, *grand*, *grandement*, greatly; *franc*, *franchement*, frankly; *naïf*, *naïvement*, artlessly, &c.

EXCEPTIONS.

296. 1st, *Gentil*, makes *gentiment*, prettily.

297. 2d, The following eight adverbs,

communément,	*commonly*	importunément,	*importunately*
confusément,	*confusedly*	obscurément,	*obscurely*

diffusément,	*diffusedly*	précisément,	*precisely*
expressément	*expressly*	profondément,	*deeply*

take before *ment* the *é* close, instead of the *e* mute, in the feminine of the adjectives from which they are derived.

298. Remark. The six following adverbs are not derived from adjectives:

comment,	*how*	profusément,	*lavishly*
incessamment,	*presently*	nuitamment,	*by night*
notamment,	*especially*	sciemment,	*knowingly*

299. 3d, Adjectives ending in *nt* form their adverbs by changing *nt* into *mment;* as *consta-nt, consta-mment*, constantly; *éloque-nt, éloque-mment.* Except *lent* and *présent*, the only two of this class that follow the second general rule, making *lentement* and *présentement.*

300. Remark. Most adverbs denoting manner, and a few others, have the three degrees of comparison; as, *profondément. aussi, plus*, or *moins profondément, fort, bien*, or *très-profondément*, and *le plus profondément.*

301. The following degrees of comparison are irregular:

POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.		SUPERLATIVE.	
bien,	*well*	mieux,	*better*	le mieux,	*the best*
mal,	*bad*	pis,	*worse*	le pis,	*the worst*
peu,	*little*	moins	*less*	le moins	*the least*

EXERCISE ON THESE ADVERBS.

Bourdaloue and Massillon have both spoken very eloquently
l'un et l'autre
on [2]evangelical [1]truths; but (the former) has principally (proposed
art. *évangélique* *celui-là* *se pro-*
to himself) to convince the mind; (the latter) has generally had in
poser *de convaincre* *celui-ci* *en*
view to touch the heart. Several of †La Bruyère's characters are
vue de art.
as finely drawn as they are delicately expressed. Buffon is one of
finement tracé * *
the best writers of the [2]last [1]century; he thinks deeply, describes for-
siècle m. *peindre for-*
cibly, and expresses himself (with dignity). Corneille and Racine are
tement, *noblement.*
the two best [3]French [2]tragic [1]poets; the pieces of the former are
tragique f.
[2]strongly [3]but [4]incorrectly [1]written; those of the latter are more regu-
larly beautiful, more purely expressed, and more delicately conceived.
beau, *pensé.*

302. There are likewise various other sorts of adverbs

OF	Affirmation,	as	*Certes*, certainly; *oui*, yes.
	Consent,	as	*Soit*, be it so; *volontiers*, willingly.
	Doubt,	as	*Peut-être*, perhaps.
	Denial,	as	*Non, ne, ne pas, ne point*, no, not.

† Translate, *Of the characters of La Bruyère.*—All such phrases are rendered in French in this manner.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION, &c.

Certainly, either I mistake, or the business passed (in that
ou *se tromper,* *se passer* J.
manner). Do you think that he listens willingly to this proposal?
ainsi. *écouter* *
Have you ever read in Racine the famous scene of Phædra's delirium?
f. *Phèdre* *délire* m.
Yes, I have; and I own it is one of the finest of the [2]French
la *lue;* *avouer que ce*
[1]theatre. Perhaps you will discover, on a second perusal of La
dans *lecture* f.
Fontaine's Fables, beauties which you did not perceive at first
f. *que* *avoir* H. *aperçues* *à la* f.
Will you have some? No. Will you not have any? The
Vouloir F. * *en* *
man who (is willing) to do good is not stopped by any obstacle
vouloir F. * * art. *arrêté* *aucun*
I will pay him what I owe, but not (all at once).
lui *ce que* *lui* *non pas tout à la fois.*

303. OF
- Order, or Rank,
  - *Premièrement*, first; *secondement*, secondly, &c.
  - *D'abord*, at first; *ensuite*, *après*, afterwards, then; *auparavant*, before.
- Place, or Distance,
  - *Où*, where; *ici*, here; *là*, there; *de-ça*, on this side; *de-là*, on that side; *partout*, every where; *près*, *proche*, near, nigh; *loin*, far, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF ORDER, &c.

We ought first to avoid doing evil; afterwards we ought to do
Il faut * *de* art. *
good. [1]Read [3]books [4]of [5]instruction [2]first, and then you may
art. art. *
proceed to those of entertainment. If you will go, settle
passer L. *agrément.* *vouloir s'en aller régler*
first what is to be done. The painter had (brought together)
auparavant *falloir* * * A. *rassembler*
in the same picture several [2]different [1]objects:—here, a troop of Bac-
un *tableau* *Bac-*
chants: there, a troop of young people; here, a sacrifice; there, a
chante: *gens*
disputation of philosophers. Sesostris carried his conquests farther
dispute *Sésostris pousser* *conquête*
than Alexander did afterwards. Call upon your cousin; he
ne faire J. *depuis.* *Passer chez*
lives [2]near [1]here. I cannot see that, if I be not near it. When
loger F. *auprès* * *Quand*
he knew where he was, he began to fear the consequence of
savoir J. H. *commencer* J. *suite*
his imprudence. Contemplate (at a distance) lofty mountains.
de loin art. *haut* f
If you wish to behold prospects ever varied and ever new.
vouloir * *découvrir* *site* m.

304. OF TIME.

Present	*Maintenant*, now; *à présent*, at present; *actuellement*, this moment, &c.
Past	*Hier*, yesterday; *avant-hier*, the day before yesterday; *autrefois*, formerly, &c.
Future,	*Demain*, to-morrow; *après-demain*, the day after to-morrow, &c.
Indeterminate	*Souvent*, often; *d'ordinaire*, generally; *quelquefois*, sometimes; *matin*, early; *tôt*, soon; *tard*, late, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF TIME.

I have finished the work you prescribed me; what do you wish
achever *que* *ordonner* I. *que* *vouloir*
me to do now? Formerly, education was neglected; it is [3]now
que je * Q. *on*
[2](very much) [1]attended to; it is (to be hoped) that [3]new [4]views
beaucoup s'occuper en; falloir F. *espérer* A. *on*
will [2]soon [1](be adopted). They grieved (at it) yesterday; now
adopter. *On s'affliger* H. *en* *aujourd'hui*
they laugh (at it); to-morrow, it will no longer (be thought) of. It is
rire *en;* *on* *plus* *penser* L. *y.*
one of those accidents which it is sometimes impossible to avoid. The
de
dew [3]incommoded [1]me [2](very much); I shall not (in future)
serein m. G. *désormais*
walk so late. [2]Rude [3]and [4]coarse [1]criticism gene-
se promener *Malhonnête* *grossier* *une* f.
rally (does greater injury) to the person who indulges himself in
nuire *plus* *se permettre* * *
it, than to him who is the object (of it).
celle *en.*

305. OF

Quantity, as	*Peu*, little, few; *assez*, enough; *trop*, too much; *beaucoup*, much, very much, many; *tant*, so much, &c.
Comparison, as	*Plus*, more; *moins*, less; *aussi*, so; *autant*, as much, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF QUANTITY, &c.

There are many people who have pretensions; but very few who
gens * * *à* *en*
have such as are well founded. To [2]embellish [3]a [4]subject [1]too much,
Q. * * * * *de fondé* f. pl. *
frequently betrays a want of judgment and taste. One very often
souvent *être* *faute*
experiences disgust in the midst of [2]the most riotous [1]pleasures.
trouver art. *ennui* *à* *des* *bruyant*
She is a [2]giddy [3]and [4]thoughtless [1]woman, who speaks much and
Ce *léger* *inconséquent*
reflects little. She has so much kindness, that it is impossible
réfléchir *de* *de*
not to love her These stuffs are beautiful; consequently they (are
étoffe f. *aussi* *coûtent*

dear). This book has merit; but there are others as good. If he
cher. *en* *de aussi*
has done that, I can do (as much). What I say to you (about it) is
en *autant.* *en*
meant less to give you pain, than to apprize you of the language
* *pour faire* *avertir* *propos* pl.
(that is used). She is six years younger than her brother. Nobody
qu'on tient. *avoir* *de moins*
is more interested than you are [3](in the success) of [1]the [2]affair.
ne * *à ce que réussir* Q. *
You do not offer enough for this garden: give something more. The
offrir *de* *de* *
[1]more [4]ignorant [2]we [3]are, the [5]less we (believe ourselves so).
on est, * *on croit l'être.*

CHAPTER VIII.

OF CONJUNCTIONS.

306. The conjunction is a word which serves to connect words or sentences; as, *Il pleure* et *rit en même temps*, he cries *and* laughs at the same time: the word *et* unites the first sentence, *il pleure*, with the second *il rit*. Likewise in *Pierre* et *Paul rient*, Peter *and* Paul laugh: the word *et* unites these two sentences into one, *Pierre rit* and *Paul rit*.

307. There are different kinds of conjunctions.

308. To unite two words under the same affirmation, or under the same negation, *et* is used for the affirmation and *ni*, neither, nor, for the negation.

309. To denote an alternative or distinction—*ou*, either, or; *soit, que*, whether, or; *tantôt*, sometimes, &c.

310. To restrict an idea—*sinon*, but, except; *quoique, encore que*, though, although; *à moins que*, unless, till.

EXERCISE ON THESE CONJUNCTIONS.

Gold and silver are metals less useful than iron. To listen
art. art. art. *
with joy to a slanderer, and to applaud him, is to cherish the serpent
* *médisant,* * *lui, ce* * *réchauffer*
which stings, that he may sting more effectually. I like neither
piquer, afin que *plus sûrement.* *les*
flatterers nor the wicked. Those who have never suffered, know
flatteur pl. *savoir*
nothing; they know neither good nor evil. You may choose
connaître art. *bien* art. *mal.* *avez à choisir*
either a happy mediocrity or a sphere more elevated, but exposed to
de *de* f.
many dangers. He is an [2]inconsistent [1]man; he is sometimes of one
bien *Ce* *inconséquent* *tantôt*
opinion and sometimes of another. I have (nothing more) to say to
avis *ne* *autre chose*

you, only that I will have it so. I shall not yet proceed to the perusal
sinon que vouloir * * *encore* *lecture* f.
of the authors of the second class, unless you advise me to do so.
ordre m. *ne conseiller* Q. * * *le*

311. To express opposition—*mais*, but; *cependant*, yet, nevertheless; *néanmoins*, for all that, however; *pourtant*, however, though; *toutefois bien que*, although.

312. To express a condition—*si*, if; *sinon que*, except that; *pourvu que*, provided that; *à condition que*, on condition that.

313. To express consent—*à la vérité*, indeed; *à la bonne heure* very well.

314. For explanation—*savoir*, *c'est-à-dire*, viz., that is to say; *comme*, as.

EXERCISE.

The serpent bites; it is only a bite; but from this bite the venom
ce *ne que morsure* f.; *venin*
communicates itself to the whole body: the slanderer speaks; it is but
ne que
a word; but this word resounds every where. (That is) certainly a
parole f. *retentir* *Voilà*
superb picture; nevertheless, there is some incorrectness in the design.
tableau; *incorrection* pl. *dessein.*
Although Homer, according to Horace, slumbers (at times), he (is)
Homère, *sommeiller* Q. *quelquefois* *n'en est*
nevertheless the first of all poets. You will succeed, provided you
pas moins art. *réussir*,
act with vigor. We have within us two faculties that are seldom
agir Q. *en* * *
united, viz: imagination and judgment.
art. f. art. m.

315. To express relation or parity—*comme*, as; *ainsi*, thus, so; *de même*, as, just as; *ainsi que*, as; *autant que*, as much as; *si que*, as, &c.

316. To express augmentation—*d'ailleurs*, besides, moreover; *outre que*, besides that; *de plus*, *au surplus*, besides, furthermore.

317. For diminution—*au moins*, *du moins*, *pour le moins*, at least.

318. To express the cause or the reason of a thing—*car*, for; *comme*, as; *parce que*, because; *puisque*, since; *pour que*, that, in order that, &c.

EXERCISE.

The most beautiful flowers last but a moment; thus [3]human
durer ne que art.
[2]life [1]passes away. The (greatest part) of mankind have, like
* *plupart* f. art. *homme* pl.
plants, [2]hidden [1]qualities that chance discovers. Madame
art. *caché* *propriété* f. art. *hazard fait découvrir.*
de Sévigné's letters are models of elegance, simplicity, and taste;
art. *de* *de*
besides, they are replete with [2]interesting [1]anecdotes. Nothing is
plein *de* f. * *de*
more entertaining than history; besides, nothing is more instructive.
amusant art. * *de*

Circumstances show us to others, and still more to our-
art. *Occasion* *faire connaître* *encore*
selves. I shall always advise you to take the ancients as your
conseiller *de* *pour*
guides; at least, [2]quit [1]but seldom the way which they
écarter *de ne vous que* *de* *route* f. *que*
have traced for you. We must, at least, know the [2]general [1]principles
tracée * *Il faut,*
of a language, before (we take upon ourselves) to teach it.
langue f. *de* *se mêler* A. *de* * *enseigner*
Certain people hate grandeur, because it lowers and hu-
f. *gens* art. f. *elle les rabaisser* *qu'elle*
miliates them, and makes them feel the privation of the
que elle *leur*
advantages which they covet.
bien *aimer.*

319. To draw a conclusion—*or*, now; *donc*, then; *par conséquent*, consequently; *c'est pourquoi*, therefore.

320. To express a circumstance—*quand, lorsque*, when; *pendant que, tandis que*, whilst, while; *tant que*, as long as; *depuis que*, ever since, *avant que*, before; *dès-que, aussitôt que, d'abord que*, as soon as; *à peine*, hardly, scarcely; *après que*, after that; *enfin*, in fine, finally, to conclude, &c.

321. To express a transition—*car*, for; *en effet*, indeed, in effect; *au reste*, besides, otherwise; *à propos*, now I think of it; *après tout*, after all.

EXERCISE.

We ought to love what is amiable: now, virtue is amiable; there-
Il faut * *cequi* art.
fore we ought to love virtue. We ought to practise what the
* art. * *ce que*
Gospel commands us; now, it commands us, not only to forgive
évangile m. *non* *de pardonner*
our enemies, but also to love them. Despréaux was (extremely
à *encore de* *de la plus grande*
particular) in not coming late, when he was invited to dinner; he
exactitude à A. *trop* H.
said that all the faults of those who (are waited for) present themselves
H. *défaut* *se font attendre*
to those who wait for them. The pride which possesses us,
attendre * *posséder* *tout*
visible as it is, escapes our eyes, while it manifests itself to the eyes of
que *à*
the public, and displeases (every one). After(we had) examined
choquer *tous les esprits.* *avoir*
that [2]singular [1]effect, we (inquired into) (its) causes. We had hardly
rechercher J. *en les* H.
done, when he (came in). Pride counterbalances all our imperfections;
finir, que *entrer* J. *contre-peser* *misère*
for, whether it hides them, or whether it discovers them, it glories in
ou *cacher* *si* *se glorifier de*
knowing them. (None but) an Englishman can (be a judge),
connaître A. *Il n'y a que* *Anglais* *qui* Q. *juger* A.

of Shakspeare; for what foreigner is sufficiently versed in the English
quel *anglais*
language to discover the [2]sublime [1]beauties of that author?
langue f. *pour*

322. The conjunction *que* is always placed between two ideas, both necessary to complete the sense; as, *Il est très-important* que *tout le monde soit instruit*, it is of great importance *that* every body should be well instructed. It differs from the relative pronoun *que*, as it can never be converted into *lequel, laquelle.* The conjunction *que* is generally repeated in French before every member of a period, although it is often understood in English.

EXERCISE.

(As long as I live), this image will be before my eyes; and, if
Toute ma vie f. f. *peint* f.
ever the gods permit me to reign, I shall not forget, after [3]so [4]terrible [1]an
faire
[2]example, that a king (is not) worthy to govern (nor) happy in
n'est *de commander* *et n'est*
his power, (but in proportion as) he subjects it to reason. I
puissance f. *qu'autant que* *soumettre* art.
am very glad to see that you do not love flattery, and that one
de
(runs no risk) in speaking to you with sincerity.
ne hazarde *rien à* A.

CHAPTER IX.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

323. Interjections are words which serve to express the sudden emotions of the soul. The only point to be attended to, is not to place them between words which custom has made inseparable. There are interjections for every feeling, viz: Of

Pain	ahi, aïe! ouf! ah!	*Astonishment*	oh! bon Dieu! miséricorde! peste!
Grief	hélas! mon Dieu, &c.	*Warning*	gare! hem! holà, ho!
Fear	ha! hé!	*Checking*	tout beau! holà!
Joy	ah! bon, bon! o!	*Encouraging*	alerte! allons! ça cou-
Aversion	fi! fi donc! oh, oh!	*Applauding*	bravo, vivat! [rage!
Disgust	pouah, pouah!	*Encoring*	bis, bis!
Indignation	foin de!	*Calling*	hola! ho! hem, hem!
Imprecation	peste de, la peste de!	*Derision*	oh! eh! zest! oh, oh, oh!
Disbelief	chansons, tarare!	*Silence*	chut! paix! s
Surprise	ouais!		

PART II.

THE SYNTAX;

OR,

WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION

CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

324. There are some substantives which are never used in the plural; such are—1. The names of metals, considered in their original state: as, *l'or*, gold; *le platine*, platina.—2. The names of virtues and vices; as, *la chasteté*, chastity; *l'ivrognerie*, drunkenness.—3. Some words of a physical or moral nature; as, *l'ouïe*, hearing; *l'odorat*, smelling; *le sang*, blood; *le sommeil*, sleep; *la pauvreté*, poverty.—4. The infinitive of verbs and adjectives used substantively, together with some other words, which cannot be reduced to any particular class.

325. Others, on the contrary, which likewise cannot be reduced to any particular class, are never used in the singular; as, *annales*, annals; *ancêtres*, ancestors; *mouchettes*, snuffers, &c.

OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

Of the formation of their Plural

326. When a noun is compounded of a substantive and an adjective, they both take the sign of the plural; as, *un gentilhomme*, a nobleman; *des gentilshommes*, noblemen.

327. When a noun is compounded of two substantives, united by a preposition, the first only takes the sign of the plural; as, *arc-en-ciel*, a rainbow; *des arcs-en-ciel*, rainbows.

328. When a noun is compounded of a preposition or verb and a substantive, the substantive alone is put in the plural; as, *un entre-sol* (a low room between two floors), *des entre-sols; un garde-fou* (rails on bridges), *des-garde-fous.*

329. Remark. There is a small number of substantives composed of a verb and an adverb; as, *un passe-partout*, a master or general key; or of a verb repeated; as, *passe-passe*, sleight of hand: they never take the sign of the plural.

See page 41, art. 103 and following.

EXERCISE ON SUBSTANTIVE AND COMPOUND NOUNS.

Gold is the most pure, the most precious, the most ductile, and,
art. *parfait*,
after platina, the heaviest of all metals. Chastity is an obligation
art. m. *pesant* art. art. * *
of all times, all ages, and all conditions. Intoxication
art. *de* art. *de* art. *état* m. art. *Ivresse*
which proceeds from beer is of longer duration than that which pro-
venir art. * * *celle*
ceeds from wine. It is the sense of feeling which teaches
art. *Ce* art. *toucher* *apprendre*
to guard against the errors of sight. Sleep is the image of
à se garantir *de* art. art.
death. [2](Early) [1]learn to distinguish truth from
art. *De bonne-heure apprendre* *distinguer* art.
falsehood. That is more bitter than wormwood. Dignity
art. *faux.* *amer* *de* art. *absinthe.* art. *Elévation*
of mind was formerly the (distinguishing mark of)
art. *sentiment* m. pl. H. *ce qui* * *distinguer* H.
noblemen. One of the buttresses of the vault has fallen.
art. *arc-boutant* m. pl. *tomber.*
He is always making (cock-and-bull stories). The Tartars always
* *fait des* *coq-à-l'âne* m. *Tartare*
form the scouts of an army. The fish-carriers did not
être *avant-courier* m. *chasse-marée* m.
arrive in time. This door is only fastened with a latch; and
J. *à* *ne que fermer* *à* * art. *loquet* m. *
all (the persons) in the house have each their key.
ceux *de* *passe-partout* m.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

330. The difficulty attendant on rendering into French the *a* or *an* which precedes a substantive, when it follows the verb *to be*, will easily be removed by examining whether that substantive be restricted by a particular idea: if it be not restricted, the *a* or *an* is not expressed in French; thus, *I am a Frenchman*, *I am a prince*, must be translated by *je suis Français. je suis prince.* But if it be restricted, then the *a* or *an* must be expressed by the word *un* placed before the substantive; as, *I am a Frenchman of an illustrious family*, *I am a very unfortunate prince*, must be translated by *je suis un Français d'une illustre maison*, *je suis un prince très-malheureux.*

331. When the verb *être* is preceded by the demonstrative *ce*, in phrases of this kind, *un* is always required before the substantive; as, *c'est un trésor*, &c.

332. The French do not use the article before substantives expressing the quality of a preceding noun, though in cases of this kind the English

usually employ the article *the*, and still more frequently *a* or *an*; as, *Télémaque, fils d'Ulysse roi d'Itaque*, Telemachus, *the* son of Ulysses king of Ithaca; *le Duc d'York, prince du sang*, the Duke of York, *a* prince of the blood.

EXERCISE ON THE ARTICLE.

I am a Frenchman and a merchant; after having (been at) the most
négociant; A. *parcouru*
famous (trading towns) in the Levant, (my commercial concerns) have
échelle f. *de* m. *les affaires de mon commerce*
brought me here. I am an unhappy Frenchman, who, a [2]striking
conduire * *mémorable*
[1]example of the vicissitudes of fortune, seeks an asylum where I
art. *chercher* *asile* m.
may end my days in peace. He was a man of [2]uncommon [1]probity
puisse finir *Ce* *un rare* f.
and of [2]tried [1]virtue: (as a reward) for the services he
un éprouvé f. *pour le récompenser de* *que*
had rendered to the church and state, the king has made him a
H. m. pl. *église* *à le*
bishop. Neoptolemus had hardly told me that he was a Greek, when
évêque. *Néoptolème eut à peine dit* *que*
I (cried out), "O, enchanting words! after so many years of silence
s'écrier J. *doux* *parole* f. *de*
and [2]unceasing [1]pain! O, my son, what misfortune, what
de sans consolation *malheur* m.
storm, or rather what [2]propitious [1]wind has brought you hither
tempête f. *plutôt* *favorable* *conduire*
to end my woes?" He replied, "I am of the island of Scyros, I
pour *mal?* m. *répondre* J. *île*
am returning thither; (I am said to be) the son of Achilles."
retourner *y* *on dit que je suis* *Achille.*

333. Without entering more minutely into this subject, the following comparative table, in which the same words are exhibited, according to circumstances, both with and without the article, will, it is presumed, be considered as a sufficient illustration of custom.

COMPARATIVE TABLE

WITH THE ARTICLE.	WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.
The writings of Cicero are full of the soundest ideas.	The writings of Cicero are full of [2]sound [1]ideas.
Divest yourself of the prejudices of childhood. *se défaire*	Have no prejudice (with regard to) this question. *sur*
The different kinds of animals that are upon the earth.	There are different kinds of animals upon the earth.
He enters into a detail of the rules of a good grammar.	He enters into a long detail of [2]frivolous [1]rules.
He affects circumlocutions. *chercher des détour.*	He affects long circumlocutions, in order to explain the [2]simplest [1]things.

WITH THE ARTICLE.	WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.
He loads his memory with the verses of Virgil and the phrases of Cicero.	He loads his memory with [1]insipid [1]verses [2]and [3]phrases.
Essays supported by [2]strong [1]expressions. *Discours soutenu*	Essays supported by lively expressions. *vive*
He has collected precepts of morality. *recueillir sur mœurs* pl.	A collection of precepts in morals. * *recueil sur*
Make use of the tokens (we agreed upon). *se servir signe dont nous sommes convenu.*	We are obliged to use some [2]exterior [1]signs in order to make ourselves understood. *nous entendre.*
The choice of studies, proper &c.	He has made a choice of books which are, &c.
Knowledge has always been the object of the esteem, the praise, and the admiration of men. *Connaissance* pl. *éloge* pl.	It is an object of esteem, of praise, and admiration *Ce*
The riches of the mind can (only be acquired) by study. *ne que s'acquérir.*	There is in Peru a prodigious abundance of [2]useless [1]riches. *le Pérou*
The gifts of fortune are uncertain. *fragiles.*	Gifts of fortune. *Bien*
The connexion of proofs makes them please and persuade. *enchaînement preuve qu'elles*	There is in this book an admirable connexion of [2]solid [1]proofs.
It is by meditation upon what we read, that we acquire [2]fresh [1]knowledge. *connaissance* pl.	It is by meditation that we acquire fresh knowledge. *nouveau*
The advantages of memory.	There are different kinds of memory.
The memory of facts is the most showy. *brillant.*	He has only a memory of facts.
The aim of good masters should be to cultivate the mind and reason of their pupils. *devoir* F. *être de*	He has an air of pedantry that shocks you at first sight. *ton* m. *maître abord.*
The taste of mankind is liable to great changes. *homme* pl.	Society of [2]chosen [1]men.
He has no need of the lessons you wish to give him.	He has no need of lessons. *avoir besoin*
France, Spain, England, &c.	Kingdom of France, of Spain, of England, &c.
The isle of Japan.	Island of Candia.
He comes from China.	He comes from Poland.
He arrives from America	He arrives from Italy.
The extent of Persia.	He is gone to Persia.

WITH THE ARTICLE.	WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.
He has returned from the East Indies, from Asia, &c.	He has returned from Spain, from Persia, &c.
He lives in Peru, in Japan, in the Indies, in Jamaica, &c.	He lives in Italy, in France, in London, in Avignon, &c.
	à *à*
The politeness of France, &c.	The fashions of France.
The circumference of England.	The horses of England.
The interest of Spain.	The wines of Spain.
The invention of printing is attributed to Germany.	The empire of Germany is divided into a great number of states.
He comes from [2]French [1]Flanders.	He comes from Flanders.
français Flandre f.	

ON MEASURE, WEIGHT, &c.

334. The English make use of *a* or *an* before nouns of measure, weight, and purchase; as, *wheat is sold for a crown* a *bushel; butter sells for sixpence* a *pound; wine sold yesterday for forty crowns* a *hogshead, 'tis more than a groat* a *bottle.* But the French make use of the article *le, la;* as, *le blé se vend un écu* le *boisseau; le beurre se vend six sous* la *livre; le vin se vendit hier quarante écus* le *muid, c'est plus de quatre sous* la *bouteille.*

335. When speaking of *time, a* or *an* is expressed in French by the preposition *par;* as, *so much a week, tant* par *semaine.*

336. In English *a* is sometimes put between the pronoun which expresses admiration and the substantive that accompanies it; as, *what a beauty!* but in French, the *un* is never expressed in similar cases; as, *quelle beauté!*

337. In English, when the adverbs *more* and *less* are repeated to express a comparison, they must be preceded by the article; as, the more *difficult a thing is,* the more *honorable it is.* But in French, the article is omitted; as, plus *une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable.*

EXERCISE ON MEASURE, WEIGHT, &c.

Corn sells for eight shillings a bushel. Veal and mutart. *blé* m. *se vendre* * *schelling* *boisseau.* art. *Veau* art.
ton cost ten pence a pound. This lace (is sold at) [2]half [1]a [3]guinea
coûter *sou* *livre* f. f. *se vendre* F. *demi* *guinée*
an ell. The best [2]French [1]wines (are sold at) from twelve to fifteen
aune. *de France* *se vendre* F.
shillings a bottle. My father goes to Ireland four or five times a year
bouteille f, *en Irlande* *fois* *an.*
He gives his son seven shillings a day. It (is necessary), if you
falloir
desire (to improve fast) that you should take a lesson three
faire des progrès rapides *preniez* *
times a week. The more I contemplate those precious remains of
reste m.
antiquity, the more I am struck with wonder. What a beautiful
art. *frappé* *de étonnement.*
morning! come, let us go and walk in the fields.
matinée f. * *se promener* A. *champ* m.

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

338. It has been said (page 46) that an adjective *agrees* in gender and number with the substantive which it qualifies: from this rule, however, must be excepted, *nu*, bare, and *demi*, half, when placed *before* a substantive, and *feu*, late, when *before* the article or a pronominal adjective; as *il va nu-pieds*, he goes barefoot; *je suis à vous dans une demi-heure*, I will be with you in half an hour; *feu la reine*, the late queen; *feu ma mère*, my late mother. But the agreement takes place if *nu* and *demi* be placed *after* the substantive, and *feu* between the article or pronominal adjective and the substantive; as, *il a les pieds nus*, his feet are bare; *je suis à vous dans une heure et demie*, I will be with you in an hour and a half; *la feue reine, ma feue mère.*

339. An adjective frequently serves to qualify two or more substantives expressing either persons or things of different genders.

340. If it be used to qualify more than two substantives, it must agree with them, for either these substantives perform the office of subject; as, *la grammaire, la logique, et la rhétorique, méthodiquement enseignées, ne s'oublient guère*, grammar, logic, and rhetoric, when taught with method, are seldom forgotten: or they constitute the regimen; as, *c'est un homme d'une valeur, d'une vertu et d'une fidélité, éprouvées*, he is a man of tried courage, virtue, and fidelity.

341. If it be used to qualify only two substantives, the substantive of persons must be distinguished from the substantive of things; with the first, the rules of agreement are to be observed in all cases; with the second, custom allows, when the substantives form the regimen, to make the adjective agree with the last only; as, *elle avait les yeux et la bouche ouverte.* Nevertheless, modern grammarians prefer the agreement, even in this case.

342. With respect to phrases like the following, *les langues anglaise et française sont fort cultivées*, though they are in opposition to the rules of grammar, yet it is allowable to use them. However, in strict propriety, it seems better to say, *la langue française et l'anglaise sont très-cultivées.*

EXERCISE ON THE ADJECTIVE.

He ran through the streets like a madman, bare-foot and bare-headed.
H. * *rue* f. *tête.*
His [2]legs [1](were) bare. Give me half a guinea, and then you
* art. *jambe* f. *il avait*
(will only owe) me a guinea and a half. I shall be at home in
ne devrez plus que *chez-moi dans*
half an hour. Come before [2]half [1](past one). [2]The [1]late queen
une heure et.
was idolized. The late queen was universally regretted. His impetuosity
H. *adoré.* J.
and courage, long restrained, soon surmounted all obstacles. The
eon *enchaîné,* J. art.

imagination and genius of Ariosto, although irregular in their
art. *l'Arioste, quoique*
course, yet interest, (hurry along), and captivate the reader,
marche, néanmoins attacher, entraîner, lecteur,
who can never be tired of admiring them. There are in Gessner's
se lasser A.
idylls sentiments and a grace altogether affecting. The good taste
art. *idylle tout-à-fait touchant.*
of the Egyptians, (from that time), made them love solidity and
dès-lors J. *leur* art.
[2]unadorned [1]regularity. In those climates, the dry and the rainy
tout nu sec pluvieux
monsoons divide the year.
mousson f. *se diviser année.*

Difference of construction between the English and French Languages.

343. In English, the substantive of *measure* is placed before the substantive or adjective expressing the dimensions; as, *a tower two hundred feet high*, or *in height*. In French, the word which expresses dimension is placed first, if it be an adjective, and the preposition *de* be added to it as a regimen; as, *une tour haute de deux cents pieds*. But if it be a substantive, or an adjective used substantively, it is placed after, with the preposition *de*, either before the noun of measure or of dimension, as, *une tour de deux cents pieds de haut*, or *de hauteur*. This last mode is the most elegant.

344. The English manner of expressing *dimensions* is to use the verb *to be;* as, *the walls of Algiers are twelve feet thick and thirty feet high*. the French, in general, make use of the verb *avoir* when there are two constructions; as, *les murs d'Alger ont douze pieds d'épaisseur, et trente de hauteur;* or *les murs d'Alger ont douze pieds d'épaisseur sur trente de hauteur*. This second mode of expression is most generally adopted.

345. In comparative sentences, to express difference, the English sentence often runs thus: *she is taller than her sister by the whole head*. The French, in this manner: *elle est plus grande que sa sœur de toute la tête*

EXERCISE ON THE DIFFERENCE OF CONSTRUCTION.

This trunk, which is six feet long, is very convenient. You will
coffre m. *commode.*
be stopped in your march by a river three hundred feet broad. This
arrêté f.
observatory, which is twelve hundred feet high, is very proper for
knowing the true position of the stars. It is a terrace a hundred
connaître A. *astre* m. *Ce terrace* f.
and eighty feet broad and twelve hundred feet long. The walls of
large mur m.
our garden are twenty feet high and three broad. It is one of the
jardin Ce

finest stones that (was ever seen): it is twenty feet long and six
on ait jamais vues: *longueur*
thick. This ditch is nine feet six inches deep and six
épaisseur. *fossé* m. *pouce* m. *profondeur* f.
feet broad. My son is taller than yours by two inches.

Regimen of the Adjectives.

346. Several adjectives have a regimen; some require the preposition *de* and others the preposition *à* before a noun or a verb, which is then called the regimen or government of the adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Digne de *récompense,*	Worthy *of* reward.
Utile à *l'homme,*	Useful *to* man.
Digne de *régner,*	Worthy *of* reigning.
Content de *son sort,* de *vivre,* &c.	Satisfied *with* his lot, *with* living.
Beau à *voir, bon* à *manger,*	Fine *to* the sight, good *for* eating.
Apre au *gain, avide* d'*honneur,*	Eager *after* gain, greedy *of* honor.
Propre à *la guerre,*	Fit *for* war.

347. *Récompense* is the government of the adjective *digne*, as it is joined to that adjective by the word *de: l'homme* is the government of the adjective *utile*, because it is joined to that adjective by the word *à*, and so of the rest.

EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF THE ADJECTIVES.

[2]Virtuous [1]men are always worthy of esteem. A [2]weak [1]mind
art. *Vertueux* *toujours* *estime* f. *faible* m.
is liable to many contradictions. A heart free from cares enjoys
sujet *bien des* f. *cœur* m. *libre de soin* m. *jouit*
the greatest [2]possible [1]felicity. Voltaire was always greedy of
de f. *fut* *avide*
praise and insatiable of glory. Rousseau, endowed with a [2]strong
louange f. pl. *doué* *de* *fort*
[3]and [1]fiery [1]imagination, was all his (life time) subject to frequent
bouillant f. *vie* f. *enclin* *à de*
fits of misanthropy, and liable to all the variations (attendant upon it).
accès m. *sujet* f. *qui en sont la suite.*

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE ARTICLE AND THE ADJECTIVES.

THE FAULTS OF INFANCY.

défaut m. art. *enfance.*

The amiable Louisa and her young brother Charles were gentle,
Louise H. *doux,*
humane, and sensible. To the [2]most interesting [1]person, Louisa joined
sensible, *spirituel.* *intéressant figure* f. *Louise* H.
all the modesty, the pleasing ingenuousness, and [2]artless graces of her
f. *heureux* *ingénuité* f. *naif* art. f.
sex; and Charles, the vivacity, the fire, and the manly gracefulness
sexe m f. *feu* m. *mâle agrément* m. pl.

of his. But these advantages, the [2]precious [1]gifts of nature, were
du sien. *avantage* m. * *don* m. art. f. H.
obscured by great defects. They were both inclined
un peu obscurci *de* *défaut* m. *l'un et l'autre* *enclin*
to idleness, and liable to fits of sullenness and ill humor
art. *paresse* f. *sujets* *des accès* *bouderie* f. *de* * *humeur*
when they were contradicted. Faults are diseases of the soul,
lorsque H. *contredit.* art. *Défaut* *des maladies* *ame,*
[2]the [3]cure [1](of which) is the work of time. In (good dispositions),
guérison f. *dont* *ouvrage* art. m. *les ames bien nées*
it is generally the fruit of the developement of reason and
elle *d'ordinaire* m. *développement* m. art. *de*
the desire of pleasing. Though their parents [2]were [3]persuaded [1](of this),
m. A. *Quoique* S. *en*
they employed, to hasten it, an expedient which succeeded. If
employer J. *pour hâter la,* *moyen* m. *leur réussir.* *
[2]they [1]were satisfied with them, contentment and joy were painted
H. *content de* art. *satisfaction* f. art. f. H. *peint*
in their countenances; if dissatisfied, they did not
sur *figure* f. * *en étaient-ils mécontent,* * *les*
scold, but they received them with a [2]sorrowful [1]air, a [2]dejected
gronder H. H. *triste* *regard,* *abattu*
[1]countenance, and every sign of chagrin and trouble.
maintien, *tous* art. *signe* m. pl. art. m. *de* art. *douleur.*
Louisa and Charles were naturally kind and feeling; they could
naturellement bon *sensible;* *ne pouvaient*
not long support the idea of having afflicted [2]such [3]tender
long-temps *résister à* *idée* A. *affligé des* *si* *tendre*
[1]parents. They felt their error, burst into tears, and asked pardon.
H. *faute* f. *fondre* H. *larme,* H. m.
[2]All [3]was [1]immediately [4]forgotten, and satisfaction (again smiled)
H. *aussitôt* *oublié,* art. *contentement* m. *renaître* H.
around. It was by this means that these amiable children [2]soon
autour d'eux. *Ce fut* *moyen* *que* *bientôt*
[1]became models of docility, complaisance, and application.
devenir J. *des modèle* m. *de* *de*

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUNS.

OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS

Of the Place of Personal Pronouns.—See page 61.

348. THERE is no difficulty in placing personal pronouns, when they act as subjects: the person who speaks always names himself last, and the person addressed is generally named first.

EXAMPLES.

Vous et moi, nous irons à la campagne, — You and I will go into the country.

Nous irons ce soir à la promenade, vous, votre frère, et moi, — We will take a walk this evening, you, your brother, and I.

EXERCISE.

My sister and I were walking by the last rays of the [2]setting
nous H. *à* *rayons* m. *couchant*
[1]sun, and we were saying, what a mild splendor does [2]it [3]still [1]spread
disions, *éclat* m. *pas* *ne répand*
over all nature! In the long [2]winter [1]evenings, my father, my
art. *de hiver* *soirée* f.
brothers, and I (used to spend) two hours in the library, and
nous passer H. *bibliothèque* f. *nous*
to read there, (in order to) (unbend our minds) from the [2]serious [1]studies
* *lisions* *y,* *pour* *nous se délasser*
of the day, those [2]amiable [1]poets who interest most the heart, by the charms
le plus
of a [2]lively [1]imagination, and make us love truth, by disguising it under
riant art. *en déguiser*
the mask of an [2]ingenious [1]fiction. You and your friend shall accompany
trait m. pl. f. *accompagner*
me to the museum, where we shall study nature in her three kingdoms.
musée m. *où* *règne* m.

349. Rule. The pronouns *il* and *ils* always represent a substantive masculine—*il*, if it be singular and *ils*, if it be plural; and *elle* and *elles*, on the contrary, represent a substantive feminine—*elle*, if it be singular, and *elles*, if plural.

350. Thus, in speaking of the rose, we should say, *elle a un parfum exquis, aussi est-elle la fleur la plus recherchée*, it has an exquisite fragrance, and is indeed the choicest of flowers—because *rose* is feminine and singular; and. in speaking of several ladies, *elles ont autant de modestie que de beauté, d'esprit, et de grâce*, they have as much modesty as they have beauty, wit, and accomplishments—because *dames* is feminine and plural.

EXERCISE.

(Look at) that magnificent building; it unites grace to beauty,
Regarder *magnifique bâtiment* m. *réunir* art. *grâce* f. art. f.
and elegance to simplicity. Ignorance is jealous, presumptuous,
art. f. art. f. f. *présomptueux*
and vain; it sees difficulties in nothing, (is surprised) at nothing,
ne *de* f. *à rien,* *ne s'étonner* *de*
and stops at nothing. Let us gather these roses; Heavens! what
ne s'arrêter à *cueillir* *Ciel!* *quel*
a sweet fragrance they exhale! Never judge from appearances;
* *parfum* *exhaler!* *sur* art. f.
they are often deceitful: the wise man examines them, and does not
* * *se*
decide upon them till he has had time to fix his judgment.
décider d'après f. *que lorsque* art. m. *de fixer*

351. With respect to pronouns, when used as a regimen, custom has established the following rules:

352. Rule I. The pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, *leur*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *y*, and *en*, are generally placed before verbs, as are *nous*, *vous*, and *lui*, when without a preposition in French, whether they are or not in English.

EXAMPLES.

Il me dit,	he tells me.	*Je lui parle*,	I speak to him.
Je le vois,	I see him.	*J'y songerai*,	I will think of it.
Je les écoute,	I listen to them.	*J'en suis ravi*,	I am delighted at it.

EXERCISE.

(As soon as) he had explained to us the maxims of Socrates, he
Dès que *expliquer* K. * *Socrate*,
said, you see that it is not without reason (he is looked upon) as
J. *ce* *que on le regarde*
truly wise. He was continually saying to me, Yet a little patience,
un vrai *de*
and you will disarm even envy itself. You have, no doubt,
désarmer * art. *être*, *sans doute*,
(some foundation) for reproaching him with his faults; but is there
fondé *à* A. *lui* *de* * art. m.
(any man) on earth that is exempt (from them)? To please
quelqu'un art. *qui* Q. *en* *Pour*
her, you must never flatter her. To abandon one's self to [2]metaphy-
lui, *des métaphy-*
sical [1]abstractions, is to plunge into an [2]unfathomable [1]abyss.
sique *ce* * *se jeter* *sans fond* *abîme* m.

353. Rule II. The pronouns *moi*, *toi*, *soi*, *nous*, *vous*, *lui*, *eux*, *elle* and *elles*, are placed after verbs, when they are preceded by a preposition, in French, whether they are or not in English.

EXAMPLES.

Cela dépend de moi,	That depends on me.
Je pense à toi,	I think of thee.
On s'occupe trop de soi,	We are too attentive to ourselves
Que dites-vous d'eux?	What do you say of them?

EXERCISE.

My father loved me so tenderly, that he thought of none but me,
H. *penser* H. *à* *ne* *que*
(was wholly taken up) with me, and saw none but me in the universe
ne s'occuper H. *que* *de* H.
If you wish to obtain that favor, you must speak to him himself. It
de
depended on you to excel your rivals, but you would not.
H *de* *de l'emporter sur* *le vouloir* G.
[2]Philip, [2]father [1]of [5]Alexander, [1](being advised) to expel from
Philippe *comme on conseillait à* *de chasser*
his dominions a man who (had been speaking) ill of him, I shall take care
état m. *parler* I. *se garder bien*
not to do that, said he; he would go and slander me every where.
* * * *en*, J. * *médire de*

354. Rule III. In imperative phrases, when affirmative, *moi*, *toi*, *nous*, *vous*, *lui*, *leur*, *eux*, *elle*, *elles*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *y*, and *en* are placed after verbs; but, with a negation, *me*, *te*, *se*, *nous*, *vous*, *lui*, *leur*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *y*, and *en* are placed before verbs.

EXAMPLES.

AFFIRMATIVELY.

Dites-moi,	Tell me.
Donnez-m'en *la moitié*,	Give me half of it.
Songez-y *sérieusement*,	Think of it seriously.

NEGATIVELY.

Ne me *dites pas*,	Do not tell me.
Ne m'en *donnez point*,	Do not give me any.
N'y songez pas,	Do not think of it.

355. Remark. If the pronouns *me*, *te*, *moi*, *toi*, intervene between an imperative and an infinitive, *me*, *te* are used when the imperative is without a regimen direct.

EXAMPLES.

Venez me parler,	Come and speak to me.
Va te faire coëffer,	Go and get thy hair dressed.

356. But *moi*, *toi* are used if the imperative have a regimen direct.

EXAMPLES.

Laissez-moi faire,	Let me do it.
Fais-toi coëffer,	Get thy hair dressed.

357. If *moi*, *toi*, when placed after the imperative, be followed by the pronoun *en*, they are changed into *me*, *te*.

EXAMPLES.

Donnez-m'en, Give me some. *Retourne-t'en*, Go back.

358. When there are two imperatives joined together by the conjunctions *et*, *ou*, it is most elegant to place the second pronoun before the verb.

EXAMPLES.

Polissez-le *sans cesse et* le *repolissez*, Polish and repolish it continually
Gardez-les, *ou* les *renvoyez*, Keep them or send them back.

EXERCISE.

Listen to me; do not condemn me without a hearing. Complain;
écouter * * *m'écouter* A. *se plaindre*;
thou hast just cause of complaint: however, do not complain too
un *sujet* *plainte*:
bitterly of the injustice of mankind. Give some. Do not give any.
amèrement art. *homme* pl. *en.* *en.*
Think (of it). Do not think of it. Repeat to them continually, that,
y
without honesty, one can never succeed in the world. Do not repeat to
on
them continually the same things. Acknowledge him as your master,
Reconnaitre *pour*
and obey him. Tread upon that spider, and kill it.
lui. *Marcher* *araignée* f. *écraser*

359. Rule IV. When several pronouns accompany a verb, *me*, *te*, *se*, *nous*, *vous*, must be placed first; *le*, *la*, *les*, before *lui*, *leur*; and *y* before *en*, which is always the last.

EXAMPLES.

Prêtez-moi ce livre; je vous le *rendrai demain; si vous* me le *refusez, je saurai* m'en *passer*,	Lend me that book; I will return it to you to-morrow; if you refuse me, I can make shift without it.
Aurez-vous la force de le leur *dire?*	Will you have resolution enough to mention it to them?
Il n'a pas voulu vous y *mener*,	He would not take you there.
Je vous y en *porterai*,	I will bring you some there.

360. Exception. In an imperative sentence, when affirmative, *le*, *la*, *les*, are always placed first; as, *donnez-le-moi*, give it me; *offrez-la-lui*, offer it to him; *conduisez-les-y*, conduct them thither: and *moi* is placed after *y*; as, *menez-y-moi*, carry me thither: but *nous* will precede *y*; as, *menez-nous-y*, take us thither.

361. Remark. The word *même* is sometimes added to the pronouns *moi*, *toi*, *soi*, *nous*, *vous*, *eux*, *lui*, *elle*, *elles*, to specify the person or thing spoken of.

EXAMPLES.

Ils se sont perdus eux-mêmes,	They have ruined themselves.
Le monde estime bien des choses qui, en elles-mêmes, sont fort méprisables,	The world prizes many things which, in themselves, are worthless.

EXERCISE.

You wish to make a present to your sister. (There is) a beautiful
vouloir * *Voilà*
fan; you should present her with it. (How many) people are there
éventail m. *devoir* N. *offrir lui* * *Que de gens* * *
(destitute of) merit and without occupation, (who would be mere nothings)
sans *ne tenir* N. *à rien*
in society, did not gaming introduce them (into it). I shall speak
art. *si* art. *jeu* m. *introduire* H. *y*.
to them (about it), and give you a [2]faithful [1]account of it. It is cer-
en *je rendre* *exact* *compte* m.
tain that old Géronte has refused his daughter to Valère: but because
art.
he does not give her to him, it does not follow that he will give her to you.
s'ensuivre

OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

362. The relative pronouns are *qui*, *que*, *dont*, *lequel*, &c.—See page 69.

363. Rule I. *Qui*, when a relative, is always of the number, gender, and person of its antecedent.

EXAMPLES.

Moi qui suis son fils,	I who am his son.
Toi qui es si jeune,	Thou who art so young.
L'enfant qui joue,	The child who plays.
Nous qui étudions,	We who study.
Vous qui riez,	You who laugh.
Les livres qui instruisent,	The books which instruct.

364. In the first example, *qui* is singular and of the first person, because the pronoun *moi* is in the singular and of the first person. In the second, it is singular and of the second person, for a similar reason, &c.

EXERCISE.

I, who did not suspect (so much) falsehood, cunning, and
soupçonner H. *tant de* *fausseté* f. *de* *ruse* f. *de*
perfidy, in a man whom I loved, blindly followed his counsels.
f. H. *aveuglément je suivre* J. *conseil* m
Thou, who art candor and innocence itself, trust not too lightly.
art. f. art. f. *même*, *te confie* *légèrement*.
The great empire of the Egyptians, which was, (as it were), detached
m. *Egyptien*, J. *comme*, *détaché*
from all others, was not of long duration. We who know the
art. J. *durée* f. *connaître*
value of time ought to make a good use (of it), instead
prix m. art. *nous devoir* F.* *emploi* m. *en*, *au lieu*
of wasting it in idleness and frivolity. What! is it you, my
perdre A. *dans* art. *oisivetè* f. art. *inutilité* f. *Quoi!* *ce*
daughter, who (would wish) that I (should love) you less? The
vouloir N. *que* S.
greatest men, who were the ornament and glory of Greece, Homer,
G. *ornement* art. f. art. *Grèce* f. *Homère*,
Pythagoras, Plato, even Lycurgus and Solon, went to learn
Pythagore, *Platon*, *même* *Lycurgue* *Solon*, J. * *apprendre*
wisdom in Egypt.
art. *sagesse* f. *en Egypte*.

365. Rule II. *Que*, when a relative, is of the number and gender of its antecedent.

EXAMPLES.

C'est moi que l'on demande,	It is I whom they ask for.
C'est toi qu'on appelle,	It is thou whom they call.
La femme que je vois si bien parée,	The woman whom I see so well dressed.
C'est nous que vous offensez,	It is we whom you offend.
C'est vous que je cherche,	It is you I am seeking.
Les dames que vous voyez,	The ladies whom you see.

EXERCISE.

I, whom temptation surrounded on every side, fell
art. *séduction* f. *environner* H. *de tout part* f. pl. *je tombai*
into the snare. It is thou whom the [2]public [1]voice calls to that
dans *piége* m. *Ce* f. *appeler*
employ. A power which terror and force have founded,
place f. *puissance* f. art. f. art. f. *fondé* f.
cannot be of long duration. It is we whom they persecute with
ne peut *durée* f. *l'on poursuit* *avec une*
[2]unexampled [1]rage. You, whom (every body) respects, hasten to
sans exemple fureur f. *tout le monde respecter*, *se hâter de*
(come forward). (Every thing) in the universe alters and perishes,
paraître. *Tout* *dans* *univers* m. *s'altérer* *périr*;
but the writings which genius has dictated shall be immortal.
écrit m. art. *génie* m. *dicté* m. pl. *immortel*

366. *Dont* sometimes represents *dequi, duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles*, and even *de quoi*.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme dont vous parlez est parti,	The man of whom you are speaking is gone.
La tour dont nous apercevons les créneaux doit être très-élevée,	The tower whose battlements we perceive must be very high.
Ce dont je vous ai parlé l'autre jour n'a pas réussi,	What I was speaking to you of the other day did not succeed.

367. *Qui, que*, and *dont* may equally apply to persons and things; but *qui*, preceded by a preposition, can never apply to things: in this case, *lequel, duquel, auquel*, &c. must be used.

368. *Lequel, laquelle*, &c. apply both to persons and things; but *quoi* applies only to things.

369. The adverb *où* is likewise employed as a relative pronoun, for *dans lequel, auquel, dans laquelle*, &c.

EXAMPLES.

Voilà le but où il tend,	That is the object he has in view.
Ce sont des affaires, où je suis embarrassé,	Those are affairs with which I am perplexed.

370. Remark. *Où* admits the prepositions *de* and *par*.

EXAMPLES.

Voilà une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public,	That is an affair on which the public happiness depends.
Tels sont les lieux par où il a passé,	These are the places through which he passed.

EXERCISE.

Persons of [2]ordinary [1]condition have not the same need of art. *Personne* f. *commun* f. *même besoin* m being cautioned against the dangers to which elevation and A. *précautionné* f. pl. *contre écueil* m. art. f. authority expose those who are destined to govern man- art. *autorité* f. *exposer ceux destiné* m. *gouverner* art. *hom-* kind. The protection on which he relied has been too weak. *me* pl. f. *sur compter* H. *faible.* That after which a true philosopher sighs most ardently, is *Ce après vrai philosophe* m. *soupirer* art. *plus ardemment,* to spread that sentiment of [2]universal [1]benevolence which should *de répandre* m. *universel bienveillance* f. *devrait* unite and (bring together) all men. These are conditions *unir rapprocher* art. *Ce sont de* without which the thing would not have been concluded. Nature, of *sans fait* f. art. f. whose [3]secrets [1]we [2](are ignorant), will be always [3]a [4]source [5]of art. m. *ignorer* f. [6]conjecture [1]to [2]mankind. That of which we complain most f. pl. *pour* art. *homme* pl. *Ce se plaindre*

bitterly is not always what affects us the most. The only
amèrement . *ce qui affecter* *seul*
moments in which his soul [2]still [1]expands to pleasure, are
m. *pendant* *encore s'ouvrir* art.
those which he devotes to study. The mountains from whence
ceux *consacrer* art. *étude* f. f. *où*
[2]gold [1](is extracted) are not in general fruitful. The different
art. *or* *on tire* * *en* *infertile.*
countries through which he has passed have furnished his pencil
pays m. *par* *passé* *fourni* *à* *pinceau* m.
with [2]romantic [3]and [4]picturesque [1]scenes.
de art. *romantique* *pittoresque*

OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

See page 112—The pronouns absolute *qui, que, quoi, quel, lequel.*

371. *Qui* signifies *quel homme,* what man; *quelle personne,* what person.

EXAMPLES.

Qui vous a dit cela?	Who told you that?
J'ignore qui a fait cela,	I don't know who did that.

372. *Que* signifies *quelle chose,* what thing.

EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on?	What do they say?
Je ne sais qu'en penser,	I don't know what to think of it.

373. *Quoi* has the signification of *que.*

EXAMPLES.

A quoi s'occupe-t-on?	What are they engaged in?
Dites-moi en quoi je puis vous servir,	Tell me how I can serve you.

374. Remark. If *que* or *quoi* be followed by an adjective, it requires the preposition *de* before that adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on de nouveau?	What news is there?
Quoi de plus instructif et de plus amusant?	What is more instructive and amusing?

EXERCISE.

Who will not agree that life has few real pleasures and
convenir art. f. *peu de vrai*
many [2]dreadful [1]pains? (Some one) entered secretly; guess
beaucoup d'affreux peine f. *On* *entra secrètement; deviner*
who it was. What have you read in that book that can have excited
* * m. *qui puisse* *porté*
in your soul emotion and enthusiasm? I know not what to
art. f. art. *enthousiasme* m. *savoir* *
think (of it). At what did you find them occupied? There is in
en. *avez* *trouvés* *occupé* m. pl.
that discourse I know not what, which appears to me designing. What
discours m *savoir* *sembler* * *insidieux.*

have you remarked good, beautiful, and sublime in Homer? What more
remarqué *Homère?*
brilliant, and, at the same time, more false than the expressions of a man who has (a great deal) of wit, but wants judgment?
beaucoup *esprit,* *qui manque de jugement?*

375. In interrogations, or after a verb, *quel* is used to ask the name or qualities of a person or thing.

EXAMPLES.

Quel homme est-ce?	What man is it?
Quel temps fait-il?	What weather is it?
Je ne sais quel homme c'est,	I don't know what man it is.
Il sait quel parti prendre,	He knows what steps to pursue.

376. The adverb *où*, it has been already seen, is employed as a relative pronoun; it is likewise used as a kind of absolute pronoun.

377. *Où* represents *en quel endroit*, in what place, or *à quoi*, to what.

EXAMPLES.

Où allez-vous?	Where are you going to?
Où cela nous mènera-t-il?	Where will that take us to?
J'ignore où l'on me conduit,	I don't know whither they are taking me
Il n'a pas prévu où cette conduite le mènerait,	He did not foresee where such a conduct would lead him to.

378. Remark I. When *où* is preceded by the preposition *de*, it marks the place or cause spoken of.

EXAMPLES.

D'où vient-il?	Where does he come from?
D'où sa haîne procède-t-elle?	Whence proceeds his hatred?
Voilà d'où il vient,	It was there he came from.
Le mal me vient d'où j'attendais mon remède,	The evil proceeds from that quarter whence I had expected a remedy.

379. Remark II. *Où*, preceded by the preposition *par*, signifies through what place, or by what means.

EXAMPLES.

Par où avez-vous passé?	Which way did you come?
Par où me tirerai-je d'affaire?	Which way shall I extricate myself?
Voilà par où j'ai passé,	This is the way I came.
Je ne sais par où je me tirerai d'affaire,	I don't know which way I shall extricate myself.

380. By the manner in which these pronouns are employed, it will be seen they are only *interrogative* when at the beginning of a sentence, and consequently the most proper name for them is that of *pronouns absolute*

EXERCISE.

What grace, what delicacy, what harmony, what coloring, what
grâce f. *délicatesse* f. f. *coloris* m.
beautiful lines in Racine! What, [2]then, [1]must have been that
vers m. *donc* *doit*

[2]extraordinary [1]man, to whom seven cities contested the glory of
se sont disputé f.
having given birth? He does not know what model to follow.
avoir A. *donné* art. *jour* m. *savoir* *modèle* m. * *suivre.*
I have told you what man it is. Which of those ladies do you
ce f. *dames* f.
think the most amiable? Choose which [4]of [5]those [6]two [7]pictures
trouver f. *Choisir* m. *tableau* m.
[1]you [2]like [3]best. Where am I? He knows not where
aimer art. *mieux.* *Où* *en* *savoir*
he is. He is gone, I don't know whither. (Whence) does he get
en , *allé, ne savoir* *D'où* * *lui vient*
that pride? (It is) from where he derives his origin. (Which way)
orgueil m. *Voilà* *de* *tirer* *origine.* *Par où*
did you come? (That is) (the road) I came.
êtes-vous arrivé? *Voilà* *par où* *venir* G.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.—Page 113.

381. *Ce, cette, ces*, are often joined to the adverbs of place—*ci*, here, and *là*, there—in order to point out in a more precise manner the thing spoken of; the demonstrative pronoun is then placed before the substantive, and *ci* and *là* after it.

EXAMPLES.

Ce livre-ci,	this book.	*Cet homme-là,*	that man.
Cette fleur-ci,	this flower.	*Ces femmes-là,*	those women.

382. *Celui, celle, ceux, celles*, are followed by the preposition *de*, when placed before a substantive, and by a pronoun relative when placed before a verb.

EXAMPLES.

Les maladies de l'ame sont plus dangereuses que celles du corps,	The disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the body.
L'homme dont je vous ai parlé, est celui que vous voyez,	The man of whom I spoke to you is he whom you see.
De toutes les choses du monde, c'est celle que j'aime le moins,	Of all the things in the world, it is that which I like least.

383. Remark. The pronouns *celui, celle, ceux, celles*, when followed by a pronoun relative, are expressed in English by the personal pronouns *he, she, they*, or by *that which, those which, such as*, &c.

EXERCISE.

The pleasures of the wise resemble in nothing those of a [2]dissipated
ressembler *à* *dissipé*
[1]man. He that suffers himself to (be ruled) by his passions, must
se laisse * *dominer* A. *doit*
renounce happiness. This stuff will become you wonderfully.
renoncer à art. *bonheur* m. *étoffe-ci* f. *siéra* *à merveille.*
That action is worthy of blame. This scene is calculated to
f. *là* *blâme.* f. *ci* *faite pour*
interest all men, but that cannot succeed.
intéresser art. *là ne saurait réussir*

384. *Celui-ci* and *celui-là* adopt the gender and number of the substantives whose place they supply. When opposed to each other, *celui-ci* marks the nearest object, and *celui-là* the remotest.

EXAMPLE.

Celui-ci plaît, mais celui-là captive, This pleases, but that captivates.

385. *Ci* and *là* coalesce with *ce*, and form two other demonstrative pronouns, *ceci* and *cela*—the first of which signifies *cette chose-ci*, this object; the second, *cette chose-là*, that object.

386. They may be used singly; but when they are opposed to each other, *ceci* expresses the nearest object and *cela* the remotest.

EXAMPLE.

Je n'aime point ceci, donnez-moi cela, I don't like this, give me that.

387. Remark. When *cela* is alone, and not opposed to the pronoun *ceci*, it refers, like this last, to an object pointed to.

EXAMPLES.

Que dites-vous de cela ? What do you say of that?
Cela est fort beau, That is very handsome.

EXERCISE.

(Here are) certainly two charming prospects; this has some-
Voilà certainement beau perspective f. *quelque*
thing more cheerful, but many people think that more
chose de riant, bien de art. *personne* f. pl. *trouver*
striking and more majestic. The body perishes, the soul is
imposant majestueux. m. *périr,* f.
immortal; yet all our cares are for that, while we neglect
immortel; cependant soin tandis que négliger
this. What means this? That is true. It is not that. This
veut dire Ce
is low and mean, but that is grand and sublime.
bas rampant,

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

FIRST CLASS.

Of those that are never joined to a Substantive.—Page 114.

388. *Quelqu'un, quelqu'une,* means *un, une,* one.

EXAMPLES.

Nous attendons des hommes, il en viendra quelqu'un, We expect men, some one will come.
Plusieurs femmes m'ont promis de venir, il en viendra quelqu'une, Several women have promised me to come, some one of them will come.

389. *Quelqu'un, quelqu'une,* taken absolutely and substantively, is of both genders, and means *une personne,* a person, some one, any one.

EXAMPLE.

J'attends ici quelqu'un, I wait here for somebody.

390. *Quelques-uns, quelques-unes,* signifies some people, some; *plusieurs dans un plus grand nombre,* several out of a great number.

EXAMPLES.

Quelques-uns assurent,	Some people affirm.
Entre les nouvelles qu'il a debitées, il y en a quelques-unes de vraies,	Among the reports he has circulated, several are true.

391. *Quiconque,* whoever, signifies *quelque personne que ce soit, qui que ce soit,* any person whatever. It takes no plural, and is never used but of persons.

EXAMPLE.

Ce discours s'adresse à quiconque est coupable,	This speech is addressed to whoever is guilty.

392. *Chacun, chacune,* every one, is used either distributively or collectively. It has no plural.

393. Distributively, it means *chaque personne, chaque chose,* each person or thing. It is then used likewise in the feminine, and requires the preposition *de* after it.

EXAMPLES.

Chacun de nous vit à sa mode,	Each of us lives as he pleases.
Voyez séparément chacune de ces médailles,	Look at each of these medals separately.

394. Collectively, it signifies *toute personne,* every person.

EXAMPLES.

Chacun a ses défauts,	Every body has his faults.

EXERCISE ON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

[2]Can [1]any one (be still ignorant) that it is from the earliest
Pourrait-il *ignorer encore* *ce* *dès* *tendre*
infancy we ought to form the mind, the heart, and the taste? Will
enfance f. *on doit* * *former*
not some one of these ladies be of the party? Some people like to read
f. *partie* f. *aimer*
(every thing new). (There are) beautiful pictures; I could wish
toutes les nouveautés. *Voilà de* *superbe tableau* m. *vouloir en*
to buy some. Whoever has studied the principles of an art, knows that
* *acheter* *principes* m. *savoir*
it (is only) (by length of time) and by deep reflection, that he can
ce n'est que *à la longue* *de profond réflexion* f.
succeed in making it his own. All the ladies at the ball were very fine-
réussir *se rendre le* * *propre.* *bal* m. H. *superbe-*
ly dressed, and each differently. Every one should, for
ment paré, *avait une parure différente.* *devrait, pour*
(the sake of) his own happiness, listen only to the voice of reason
* *propre* m. *n'écouter que* * *voix* f. art. *raison* f
and of truth. What is the price of each of these medals?
art. *vérité* f. *prix* m. f. *médaille* f

395. *Autrui* means *les autres personnes,* other people: it only applies to persons, is never accompanied by an adjective, has no plural, and is never used in a sentence without being preceded by a preposition.

EXAMPLE.

La charité se réjouit du bonheur d'autrui,	Charity rejoices in the happiness of others.

396. *Personne*, which is always masculine and singular, means *nul, qui que ce soit*, no one, nobody, whosoever. In this sense, it is preceded or followed by the negative *ne*, which is placed after *personne* when this word stands before the verb, and before the verb when *personne* stands after. The same observation applies to *rien*.

EXAMPLES.

Il ne faut nuire à personne,	We must injure nobody.
Personne n'est assuré de vivre jusqu'au lendemain,	Nobody is certain of living till to-morrow.

397. Remark I. The negative is sometimes understood; as, *y a-t-it quelqu'un ici?* is there any body here? *personne*, nobody. *Personne* stands for *il n'y a personne*, there is nobody here.

398. Remark II. In interrogative phrases without negation, or in those expressing doubt, *personne* signifies *quelqu'un*, any body.

EXAMPLES.

Personne oserait-il nier?	Would any body dare deny?
Je doute que personne soit assez hardi,	I doubt whether any body be bold enough.

399. Remark III. When *personne* is placed in the second member of a comparison, it means *any body*.

EXAMPLE.

Cette place lui convient mieux qu'à personne,	That place suits him better than any body.

400. *Rien*, nothing, which is masculine and singular, is used with or without a negation. When with a negation, it means *nulle chose*, nothing.

EXAMPLE.

Il ne s'attache a rien de solide,	He applies himself to nothing fixed.

401. When used without a negation it means *quelque chose*, something.

EXAMPLE.

Je doute que rien soit plus propre à faire impression que, &c.	I doubt whether any thing be more suited to make an impression than, &c.

402. The negation is sometimes understood—*que vous a coûté cela? rien*, how much did you pay for that? nothing.

403. It always requires the preposition *de* before the adjective or participle that follows it, and then the verb is understood, as is likewise the negation; as, *rien de beau que le vrai*, nothing is noble but truth.

EXERCISE.

To most men, the misfortunes of others are but a
Pour la plupart de art. *mal* m. *ne*
dream. Do not to others what you would not wish (to be done to you).
songe m. *vouloir qu'on vous fit.*

No one knows whether he deserves love or hatred. An egotist
savoir si est aigne de de egoiste
loves nobody, not even his own children; in the whole universe, he
*pas même propre dans * univers,*
sees no one but himself. He is, more than (any body), worthy of the
voit que lui seul. digne
confidence (with which) the king honors him. I doubt whether any
confiance f. *dont honorer que*
one (ever painted) nature, in its amiable simplicity, better than
ait jamais peint art. f. f.
the sentimental Gessner. Has [2]any body [1]called [3]on me this
*sensible * est-il venu chez*
morning? Nobody. There was nothing but what was great
matin m. H. *que * de * grand*
in the designs and works of the Egyptians. I doubt
dans dessein m. art. *ouvrage* m. *Egyptiens.*
whether there is any thing better calculated to exalt the soul than the
que Q. *plus propre*
contemplation of the wonders of nature.
merveille f. art. f.

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

SECOND CLASS.

Of those which are always joined to a Substantive.—P. 116.

404. *Quelque*, some, signifies *un, une, entre plusieurs*, one out of several; it is of both genders, and takes the number of the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

Adressez-vous à quelque autre personne, Apply to somebody else.

405. *Chaque*, each, every, which is of both genders, has no plural.

EXAMPLE.

Chaque pays a ses coutumes, Each country has its customs.

406. *Quelconque, aucun*, any, *quel que ce soit*, whatever it be; *quel qu'il soit*, whoever he be, is of both genders, and is always placed after a substantive; when used with a negative it is always singular.

EXAMPLE.

Il ne veut se soumettre à aucune autorité quelconque, He will submit to no authority whatever.

407 *Certain* signifies *quelque*, certain, some. In this sense it is used alike of persons and things; but it is always placed before the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

J'ai ouï dire a certain homme, à un certain homme, I have heard some man say.

408. *Un, une*, a *or* an, when used indeterminately for *quelque, certain*, some person or some thing, takes the gender of the substantive to which it is joined.

EXAMPLES.

J'ai vu un homme qui courait,	I saw a man who was running.
Je me suis promené dans une grande et belle prairie,	I walked in a large fine meadow.

EXERCISE ON THE SECOND CLASS.

Some [2]enlightened [1]people among the Egyptians preserved the
éclairé esprit m. pl. *Egyptiens conserver* H.
idea of a first being, whose [3]attributes [1]they [2]represented under
idée être, art. *attribut* m. *représenter* H.
various symbols; (this is proved by the following) inscription
différent symbole m. *c'est ce que prouve cette* f.
upon a temple:—"I am all that has been, is, and shall be: [3]no [2]mortal
de m. *ce qui mortel*
[1]ever removed the veil that covers me." Every nation has [2](in its turn)
lever G. *voile* m. f. *à son tour*
[1]shone on the theatre of the world. There is no reason whatever that
brillé m. *raison* f.
can bring him to it. Some figures appear monstrous and deformed,
puisse déterminer f. *monstrueux*
considered separately or too near; but if (they are put) in their proper
f. pl. *séparément de près; on les met* *
light and place, the true point of view restores their beauty
jour à leur m. *vue* m. *leur rendre* * art. f.
and grace. Yesterday I saw a lady [2]remarkably [1]beautiful.
art. f. J. *d'une rare beauté.*

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

THIRD CLASS.

Of those which are sometimes joined to a Substantive and sometimes not.—Page 117.

409. *Nul,* m. *nulle,* f. and *pas un,* m. *pas une,* f., not any, not one, no one, are employed either alone or in conjunction with a substantive. They are accompanied by the negation, have no plural, and may be followed by the preposition *de.*

EXAMPLES.

Nul de tous ceux qui y ont été n'en est revenu,	Not one of those who went there has returned.
Pas un ne croit cette nouvelle,	Not one believes that intelligence.
Je n'en ai nulle connaissance,	I have no knowledge of it.
Il n'y a pas une seule personne qui le croie,	There is not a single person that believes it.

410. *Aucun,* m. *aucune,* f., signifies *nul,* no, not any, none, when accompanied by a negation, and may be followed by the preposition *de.*

EXAMPLES.

Vous n'avez aucun moyen de réussir dans cette affaire,	You have no means of succeeding in that affair.

411. This pronoun is seldom employed in the plural, except before substantives which, in some particular sense, are better employed in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

Il n'a fait aucunes dispositions, He has made no dispositions.

412. Remark. *Aucun*, m. *aucune* f., any, any one, may be employed without a negation in interrogative sentences, or those which express doubt or exclusion.

EXAMPLES.

Aucun homme fut-il jamais plus heureux ? Was ever any man more successful ?

On doute qu'aucune de ces affaires réussisse, They doubt whether any of those affairs will succeed.

Le plus beau morceau d'éloquence qu'il y ait dans aucune langue, The finest piece of eloquence that exists in any language.

EXERCISE ON THE THIRD CLASS.

No one likes (to see himself) as he is. No expression, no truth of
se voir *tel que* f. f.
design and coloring, no strokes of genius in that great work. He is
dessein *de coloris*, *trait* *ouvrage* m.
as learned as any one. Not one of these engravings announces any
aussi savant que *gravure* f. *annoncer un*
great skill. None of his works will descend to posterity. He is so
talent m. *passer* art. f.
ignorant, and at the same time so obstinate, that he will not
en * *même temps* *obstiné*,
(be convinced) by any reasoning. Did any man ever attain
se rendre *à* *raisonnement* m. *jamais parvenir* J.
to such a pitch of glory ! I doubt whether there be, in any science,
ce * *comble* m. *que* Q. f.
a [2]more [3]evident [1]principle.
plus lumineux principe m.

413. *Autre*, other, expresses a difference between two objects, or between one and several ; as, *quelle autre chose souhaitez-vous de moi ?* what else do you wish of me ?

414. Remark. *Autre* is sometimes used to express a person but indeterminate ; as, *j'aime mieux que vous l'appreniez de tout autre que de moi*, I had rather you learn it of any other person than of me.

415. *Un* is sometimes opposed to *autre*, in which case these two words are preceded by the article, supply the place of the substantives to which they relate, adopt their gender and number, and form the pronouns *l'un l'autre, l'une l'autre, les uns les autres, les unes les autres, l'un et l'autre,* and *ni l'un ni l'autre.*

416. *L'un l'autre*, each other, one another, applies both to persons and things : it takes both gender and number, and requires the article before the two words of which it is composed. If there be any preposition, it must be placed before the last. When these two words are used in conjunction, they express a reciprocal relation between several persons or things.

EXAMPLE.

Il faut se secourir l'un l'autre, We ought to assist each other.

417. When used separately, they denote a difference.

EXAMPLE.

Les passions s'entendent les unes avec les autres ; si l'on se laisse aller aux unes, on attire bientôt les autres, Our passions have a relation with each other; if we indulge some, the others will soon follow.

418. Remark. In the latter case *l'un* is used for the person or thing first mentioned, and *l'autre* for the person or thing last spoken of.

419. *L'un et l'autre,* m., *l'une et l'autre,* f., both; these two words mark union. They require the verb to be in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

L'une et l'autre sont bonnes, Both are good.

420. *Ni l'un ni l'autre,* neither; these two words mark separation. The verb ought to be put in the singular; however, many writers put it in the plural in French.

EXAMPLE.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont fait leur devoir, Neither has done his duty.

EXERCISE.

Ask another. Would any other have been so
Demander à * *aurait-il eu* * *assez*
self-conceited as to think that his [2]private [1]opinion could counter-
d'amour-propre * *pour penser particulier* f. *pût ba-*
balance the [2]public [1]sentiment? Reason and faith [2]equally
lancer opinion f. art. *Raison* f. art. *foi* f.
[1]demonstrate that we were created for another life. They speak ill of
démontrer créer G. f. *ma.*
one another. The happiness of the people constitutes that of the prince,
m. *faire* m.
their true interests are connected with each other. Presumption
intérêt m. *lié à* pl. pl. art. *Présomption* f.
and pride [2]easily [1]insinuate themselves into the heart; if we
art. *orgueil se glisser* * m. *l'on y*
allow [2]one the [1]entrance, it is much to (be feared) that we shall
donne à f. * *entrée, bien craindre on* *
[2]soon [1](abandon ourselves) to the other. Both relate the same
bientôt ne se livre rapporter
story, though neither believes it to be true.
fait m. *ne penser que* * *soit*

421. *Même,* same, signifies *qui n'est pas autre,* which is not different. It is of both genders, and takes the plural.

EXAMPLES.

C'est le même homme, It is the same man.
La même personne, The same person.
Ce sont les mêmes raisons, They are the same reasons.
Ce poème est le même que celui dont je vous ai parlé, This poem is the same that I was mentioning to you.

422. *Tel*, m. *telle*, f. *tels*, m. pl. *telles*, f. pl., means *pareil, semblable, de même*, such, like, similar. It takes both genders and both numbers.

EXAMPLES.

Un tel projet ne saurait réussir,	Such a scheme cannot succeed.
Il n'y a pas de tels animaux, de telles coutumes,	There are no such animals, no such customs.

423. When used alone, it either preserves its proper signification, or it expresses a person indeterminately.

EXAMPLES.

Vous ne sauriez me persuader rien de tel,	You cannot persuade me of any such thing.
Tel fait des libéralités, qui ne paie pas ses dettes,	The same man is liberal in giving who does not pay his debts.

424. *Plusieurs*, several, which is plural and of both genders, is used alike of persons and of things. When united to a substantive, or relating to it, it signifies an indeterminate number, without relation to another.

EXAMPLES.

Plusieurs motifs l'ont déterminé,	Several reasons determined him.
Je crois cela pour plusieurs raisons,	I believe that for several reasons.

425. But it is likewise used as a part of a greater number.

EXAMPLE.

Parmi un si grand nombre de gens, il y en eut plusieurs qui s'y opposèrent,	Out of so great a number of persons, several objected to it.

426. When *plusieurs* is employed absolutely as a substantive, it always means *plusieurs personnes*, several persons.

EXAMPLE.

Plusieurs aiment mieux mourir que de perdre leur réputation,	Many would rather die than forfeit their character.

427. *Tout* is used either alone or with a substantive.

428. When employed alone, it signifies *toutes choses*, all things; *toute sorte de choses*, every kind of things.

EXAMPLE.

Tout nous abandonne au moment de la mort; il ne nous reste que nos bonnes œuvres,	Every thing forsakes us at the moment of death; we retain nothing but our good works.

429. When united to a substantive, it is used either collectively or distributively.

430. Considered collectively, *tout* signifies the totality of a thing, and is then followed by the article.

EXAMPLES.

Tout l'univers,	The whole universe.
Tous les corps célestes,	All the celestial bodies.

431. Considered distributively, *tout* signifies *chaque*, each; in this case, it is not accompanied by the article.

EXAMPLE.

Tout bien est désirable, Every good is desirable.

EXERCISE.

Does he always maintain the same principles? Yes, they are absolutely the same. That general is the same that commanded [2]last
soutenir *principe?* *Oui, ce* *absolument* pl. H. art. *dernier*
[1]year. [2]Such [1]a [3]conduct is inexplicable. There are no such
année f. *conduite* f. *de*
customs in this country. I never heard (any thing) similar.
coutumes f. *pays* m. *ai entendu dire* *rien* *de*
The same man sows who often reaps nothing. [1]I [5]this [4]morning
* * *semer* *recueillir* *matin*
[2]received several letters. Among those manuscripts, there are several
G. *lettre* f. *manuscrits,*
much esteemed. Many, by endeavoring to injure others,
qu'on beaucoup estime. *en* *s'efforcer* *de nuire à* art.
injure themselves more than they think. All is in God and
se nuire à *ne penser.* *en*
God is in all. The whole course of his life has been distinguished
cours m. f. *marqué*
by [2]generous [1]actions. Every vice is odious.
des f. m.

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

FOURTH CLASS.

Of those which are followed by QUE.—Page 118.

432. *Qui, que*, whoever, is only said of persons, and signifies *quelque personne que*, whatever person; it requires the verb following to be in the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Qui que ce soit qui ait fait cela, c'est un habile homme,	Whoever has done that is a man of talent.
Qui que je sois,	Whoever I may be.
Qui que ç'ait été,	Whoever it may have been.
Qui que c'eût été,	Whoever it might have been.
Qui que ce puisse être,	Whoever it may be.

433. When *qui que*, followed by *ce soit*, is used with a negative, it signifies *aucune personne*, nobody, no one; as, *je n'y trouve qui que ce soit*, I find nobody there.

434. *Quoi que*, whatever it be, is only used of things, and signifies *quelque chose que*, whatever thing; it requires also the verb following to be in the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Quoi que ce soit qu'il fasse, ou qu'il dise, on se défie de lui,	Whatever he does or says, he is distrusted.
Quoi que vous disiez, je le ferai,	Whatever you may say, I will do it.

435. Remark. When *quoi que*, followed by *ce soit*, is used with a negation, it signifies *aucune chose*, not any thing.

EXAMPLE.

Sans application, on ne peut réussir en quoi que ce soit,	Without application, it is impossible to succeed in any thing whatever.

EXERCISE ON THE FOURTH CLASS.

Whoever has told you so, he is mistaken. ° Passenger, whoever
le, se tromper G. *Passant,*
thou be, contemplate with [2]religious [1]veneration this monument erected
contempler un respect m. m. *élevé*
by gratitude; it is the tomb of a [2]just [3]and [4]benevolent [1]man.
art. *reconnaissance* f. *ce tombeau* m. *bienfaisant*
How can he hope to be beloved who has regard for no one?
Comment espérer de lui ne d'égards
Whatever he may do or say, he (will find it) very difficult to de-
qu'il aura bien de la peine dé-
stroy prejudices so deeply rooted. A mind vain, presump-
truire des préjugé m. *si profondément enraciné. présomp-*
tuous, and inconsistent, will never succeed in any thing whatever.
tueux, sans consistance, réussir
Whatever a [2]frivolous [1]world may think of you, never swerve
frivole monde puisse se détourner
from the path of virtue.
chemin m. art. f.

436. *Quel que*, m. *quelle que*, f. *quels que*, m. pl. *quelles que* f. pl., signifies *de quelque sorte, de quelque espèce que ce soit*, of whatever sort or kind it may be, when relating to things; or, *qui que ce soit*, whoever it may be, when relating to persons. It takes both gender and number according to the person or thing it relates to, and requires the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Quelles que soient vos affaires, venez	Whatever business you may have, come.
Je n'en excepte personne, quel qu'il soit,	I except nobody, whoever he may be.

437. Remark. *Lequel que*, m. *laquelle que*, f. *lesquels que*, m. pl. *lesquelles que*, f. pl., whosoever, whichever, is also used; as, *lequel des trois que vous choisissiez, peu m'importe*, whichever of the three you choose, I care little.

438. *Quelque-que* m. f. s. *quelques-que* m. f. pl., of both genders, when united to a substantive, signifies *quel que soit le, quelle que soit la*, &c., whatever be the, &c. It has both numbers, and requires the subjunctive.

EXAMPLES.

Quelque raison qu'on lui apporte, il n'en croit rien,	Whatever reason is adduced, he believes nothing about it.
Quelques efforts que vous fassiez, vous ne réussirez point,	Whatever attempts you may make, you will never succeed.

439. When united to an adjective, it operates as an adverb, and signifies *à quelque point que*, however great a degree; it then does not take number.

EXAMPLES.

Quelque belle qu'elle puisse être, elle ne doit pas être vaine, However beautiful she may be, she ought not to be vain.

Quelque puissans qu'ils soient, je ne les crains point, However powerful they may be, I am not afraid of them.

440 *Tel que,* such as, serves to mark a parity between objects by comparison.

EXAMPLE.

C'est un homme tel qu'il vous le faut, He is just such a man as you want.

441. *Tout—que* signifies *quoique, encore que,* though, *quelque,* however. On this occasion, *tout* is considered as an adverb, and is employed with adjectives of every kind, and even with some substantives.

EXAMPLES.

Tout artificieux qu'ils sont, je doute que le public soit longtemps leur dupe, Artful as they are, I doubt whether the public will be long their dupe.

Toute femme qu'elle est, Woman as she is.

EXERCISE.

Let [3]the laws [2]be [1](what they may), we must always respect them
* *loi* f. Q. *quel que* *respecter*
Whatever efforts you make, I doubt whether you will succeed. All
m. Q. *que* * *réussir* Q.
men, however opposite they may be, agree on that point. The
art. *opposé* *s'accorder* m.
man who descends into himself only to discover his defects, and
rentrer en *ne que pour y déméler* m.
correct them, likes to see himself as he is. However surprising
se corriger en, *surprenant*
[2]that [3]phenomenon [1]may be, it is not against the order of nature
phénomène m. *contre* *ordre* m. art.
Children as they are, they behaved remarkably well.
se sont conduits *fort*

A GENERAL EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUNS

[1]THE [3]EVENING [2]WALK.

du *soir* *promenade* f.

On a fine [2]summer [1]evening, my brother, my sister, and myself
Dans *de* *soirée* f. *moi*
(were walking) (by the side) of a wood (not far distant)
nous nous promenions *le long* *bois* m. *qui n'est pas bien éloigné*
from the castle which we inhabit. We (were contemplating) with
château m. *habiter.* *contempler* H.
rapture the [2]majestic [1]scenery which nature exhibits at the
transport *majestueux* *scène* f. art. *déployer*
approach of night, when we perceived at the foot of an ancient
approche f. art. *nuit* f. *quand* *apercevoir* J. *à* *pied* m. *ancien*
oak a boy of a [2]most [3]interesting [1]countenance. His beauty,
chêne m. *enfant* art. *intéressant* art. *figure* f. f.

his air of ingenuousness and candor, his gracefulness struck us, and
m. . *ingénuité* *de* *grâce* pl. *frapper* J.
we approached him. What! alone here, my boy? said we;
nous approcher J. *en.* *seul* *ici,* *enfant lui dîmes*
whence art thou? Whence comest thou? What art thou doing here
d'où *fais*
alone? I am not alone, answered he, (smiling); I am not alone;
répondre J. *d'un air riant;*
but I was fatigued, and I (have seated myself) under the shade of this
H. *fatigué* *s'asseoir* G. *à* *ombre* f.
tree, while my mother is busy in gathering simples to
arbre m. *tandis que* *occupé à cueillir des* *pour*
give some relief to the pains which [2]her [3]aged [4]father
apporter *soulagement* m. *douleur* f. *vieux*
[1]suffers. Ah! (how many) troubles [2]my [3]good [4]mamma [1]has!
souffrir. *que* *de peine* f. *maman*
How many troubles! Did you know them, there is not one of you
si *connaître* H.
that would not be touched with pity, and who could refuse the tribute
qui * S. *pitié,* *lui* S. *un tribut*
of your tears. We said to him, lovely child, thy ingenuousness,
* *larme* f. J. * *aimable* *ta*
candor, innocence, (every thing), interests us in thy misfortunes and
f. *ton* f. *tout,* *intéresser* *à* *malheur*
those of thy mother. Relate them to us; whatever they be, fear not
à *Raconter* *
to afflict us. (Wo be) to whoever cannot feel for the
de affliger *Malheur* *ne sait pas s'attendrir sur*
misfortunes of others! [2]He [1]immediately related the history of his mother,
mal m. *aussitôt* J.
with an expression, an artlessness, a grace, altogether affecting. Our
f. *naïveté* f. f. *tout-à-fait touchant* f. sing.
hearts felt the liveliest emotions; tears (trickled down our cheeks),
éprouver J. *vif* f. *nos* *couler* J.
and we gave him what little money we had about us. (In the
lui *le peu de argent que* H. *sur* *Ce-*
mean time), the mother returned. (As soon as) he saw her, he
pendant *revenir* J. *Dès-que* *apercevoir* J.
exclaimed, (make haste), mamma; make haste: see what these good
s'écrier J. *accourir* sing. sing. sing. *ce que*
little folks have given me; I have related to them thy misfortunes;
gens f.
they have been affected (by them), and their sensibility (has not been
m. *touché* m. pl. *en* f. *ne s'est pas*
satisfied) with shedding tears. See, mamma, see what they have
borné f. *à* * *des* sing. sing.
given me. The mother was moved; she thanked us, and
J. *attendri* f. *remercier* J. *nous*
said: [2]generous, [3]feeling [1]souls, the good action which you (have
J *et sensible* *ame* f. f.
just been doing) will not be lost. He who sees (every thing) and
venez de faire *perdu* f.
judges (every thing) will not let it go unrewarded.
juger *laisser* * *sans récompense.*

CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB.

Agreement of the Verb with the Subject.

442. The subject is that of which something is affirmed, and may always be known by the answer to this question, *qui est-ce qui ?* who or what is it? as, *Pierre vit*, Peter lives; *l'oiseau vole*, the bird flies. If it be asked, *qui est-ce qui vit ?* who is it that lives?—*qui est-ce qui vole ?* what is it that flies?—the answers *Pierre* and *l'oiseau* shew that *Pierre* and *l'oiseau* are the subjects of the verbs *vit* and *vole*.

443. Rule. The verb must be of the same number and person as its subject.

EXAMPLES.

Je ris	I laugh.	*Nous parlons,*	We speak.
Tu joues,	Thou playest.	*Vous plaisantez,*	You jest.
Il aime,	He loves.	*Ils sont fous,*	They are mad.

La vertu est aimable, Virtue is amiable.

444. *Ris* is in the singular number and the first person, because *je*, its subject, is in the singular and the first person. *Joues* is in the singular and the second person, because *tu* is in the singular and the second person, &c.

EXERCISE.

The most free of all men is he who can be free, even in slave-
libre art. *celui* *même* art. *escla-*
ry. Are we not often blind to our defects? All men
vage m. *s'aveugler sur* *défaut ?* art.
(are inclined) to idleness, but the savages of [2]hot [1]countries are
tendre art. *sauvage* art. *chaud* *pays*
the laziest of all men. Do you think of imposing long on the
* *en imposer* A. *long-temps* *à*
credulity of the public? Thou canst not deny that he is a great man.
f. m. *pouvoir* *nier* *ne* Q.

445. Remark I. When a verb has two subjects, both singular, it is put in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

Mon père et ma mère m'aiment tendrement,	My father and mother love me tenderly.

EXERCISE.

His uprightness and honesty make him courted by every body.
droiture f. his *honnêteté* *faire* *rechercher* *de*
Strength of body and of mind meet not always
art. f. art. *celle* art. *se rencontrer*
together. A good heart and a noble soul are [2]precious [1]gifts of nature.
ensemble. m. *beau* f. *don* m. art. f.

446. Remark II. When a verb relates to subjects of different persons, it agrees with the first, in preference to the other two, and with the second, in preference to the third. The person addressed is named *first* and the person addressing *last*. On this occasion, the pronoun plural *nous* is generally placed before the verb, if the first person has been mentioned before, or the pronoun plural *vous*, if no first person has been mentioned.

EXAMPLES.

Vous, votre frère, et moi, nous lisons ensemble la brochure nouvelle,	You, your brother, and I, read together the new pamphlet.
Vous et votre ami, vous viendrez avec moi,	You and your friend will come with me.

EXERCISE.

You, your friend, and I, have each a [2]different [1]opinion. In our
chacun f.
childhood, you and I (were pleased) with playing together. Neither
enfance f. *se plaire* H. A. *ni*
I nor (any one else) has been able to understand (any thing) in that
ni d'autres *ne pouvoir* G. * *comprendre* *rien* *à*
sentence. (Take good care), you and your brother, not to
phrase f. *se garder bien* P. * *de*
(give way) to the impetuosity of your character.
s'abandonner *caractère* m.

447. Remark III. When a verb has the relative pronoun *qui* for its subject, it is put in the same number and person as the noun or pronoun to which *qui* relates.

EXAMPLES.

Est-ce moi qui ai dit cette nouvelle?	Is it I who told this news?
Est-ce nous qui l'avons voulu?	Is it we who desired it?
Ceux qui aiment sincèrement la vertu sont heureux,	Those who sincerely love virtue are happy.

EXERCISE.

He that complains most of mankind, is not always he that
Celui *se plaindre le plus* art. *homme* pl.
(has most reason) to complain (of them). You that wish to enrich
est le plus fondé *en.* *vouloir* * *enrichir*
your mind with thoughts vigorously conceived and nobly expressed,
esprit *de* f. *fortement conçu* . *noblement exprimé*
read the works of Homer and Plato.
ouvrage *Homère*

OF THE REGIMEN OF VERBS.

448. A verb is active when it will admit after it *quelqu'un* or *quelque chose*, and the word which is put after the verb is called the regimen of that verb. Observe that this regimen may be known by asking the question, *qu'est-ce que?* It is called *direct*—that is, governed directly by the verb, without any preposition being necessary between the verb and its object, and may be either a noun or a pronoun.

449. Rule. When the regimen of the active verb is a noun, it is always placed after the verb; when it is a pronoun, it is generally placed before it.

EXAMPLE.

Ma mère aime tous ses enfans, My mother loves all her children.

Je vous aime, and not as in English, *J'aime vous*, I love you;
Il m'aime, and not *Il aime moi*, he loves me.

EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF VERBS.

He has discovered to all other nations his ²ambitious ¹design of
montrer art. *peuple* m. *dessein* m.
enslaving them, and has left us no means of
mettre dans l'esclavage A. *ne laisser aucun moyen*
defending our liberty but by endeavoring to overturn his new kingdom.
A. *que en tâcher de renverser royaume* m.
Homer represents Nestor as he that restrained the ungovernable
Homère celui modérer H. *bouillant*
wrath of Achilles, the pride of Agamemnon, the haughtiness of Ajax,
courroux m. *fierté*
and the ²impetuous ¹courage of Diomed. He dared not (lift up) his
m. *Diomède.* *oser* H. *lever* *
eyes, lest they should meet those of his friend, whose
art. *de peur de* * * *rencontrer* A. art.
²very ¹silence condemned him. He caresses them, because he loves them.
même m. H.

450. Besides this regimen *direct*, some active verbs may have a second, which is called *indirect*, and is marked by the words *à* or *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Il a fait un présent à sa sœur, He has made a present to his sister.
Il accuse son ami d'imprudence, He accuses his friend of imprudence.

EXERCISE.

In submitting to the yoke of Asia, Greece would have thought
En subir * *joug* m. art. art. *croire*
²virtue ¹subjected to voluptuousness, the mind to the body, and
art. *assujettir* A. art. *volupté* f.
courage to a ²senseless ¹force, which consisted only in numbers.
art. *insensé* f. H. *ne que* art. *multitude* f. s.
Three hundred Lacedemonians hastened to Thermopylæ to
Lacédémoniens courir J. art. *Thermopiles* pl. *un*
²certain ¹death, content, in dying, to have sacrificed to their country an
assuré f. *en de immoler pays* m.
²infinite ¹number of barbarians, and to have left to their countrymen the
barbare de laisser compatriote
example of an ²unheard of ¹bravery. You knew the importance
inouï * *hardiesse* f. *savoir* H. f.
which your parents attached to the success of that affair: why
que H. *réussite* f. f. *pourquoi*
have you not hastened to announce it to them?
s'empresser G. *de* f.

451. The second regimen is known by the answer to these questions: *à qui?* to whom? *à quoi?* to what? *de qui?* of whom? *de quoi?* of what?

EXAMPLES.

A qui a-t-il fait un présent?	To whom did he make a present?
A sa sœur,	To his sister.
De quoi accuse-t-il son ami?	Of what does he accuse his friend?
D'imprudence,	Of imprudence.

452. Passive verbs require *de* or *par* before the noun or pronoun that follows them.

EXAMPLES.

La souris est mangée par le chat,	The mouse is eaten by the cat.
Un enfant sage est aimé de tout le monde,	A good child is loved by every body.

453. Remark. The French never use the word *par* before *Dieu*, God; they say, *les méchans seront punis de Dieu*, which, in order to avoid making use of *by*, may be thus Englished: God will punish the wicked.

EXERCISE.

The city of Troy was taken, plundered, and destroyed by the [2]confederate [1]Greeks, eleven hundred and forty-eight years before the [2]Christian [1]era: this event has been celebrated by the two greatest poets of Greece and Italy. You will only be beloved, esteemed, and courted by men (in proportion as) you join the qualities of the heart to those of the mind. †God punished the Jews every time when, deaf to the voice of the prophets, they fell into idolatry and impiety.

Troie *pris, saccagé, détruit* *con-fédéré* *avant* *ère* f. and art. *de* art. *rechercher* *que autant que* *joindre* L. *punir* J. *peuple Juif toutes les fois que* *sourd* f. *prophète*, sing. *tomber* J. *dans* art.

454. Some few neuter verbs have no regimen; as, *dormir*, to sleep; but many of them have a government.

455. Rule. Some neuter verbs require *à* and others *de* before their *regimen.*

EXAMPLES.

Tout genre d'excès nuit à la santé,	Every kind of excess is hurtful to health.
Il médit de tout le monde,	He slanders every body.

EXERCISE.

This sentiment has pleased the king and all the nation. In his retirement, he (has the full enjoyment) of the faculties of his soul. To

à *à* *Dans* *retraite* f. *jouir* *de tout* f.

† Translate as if it stood thus:—*The people Jewish were punished by God every*, &c

slander (any one) is to assassinate him in [2]cold [1]blood. The honest
*médire de quelqu'un c'est * de sang.*
man seldom (permits himself) (to jest), because he knows
rarement se permettre des plaisanteries parce que savoir
the most innocent jests may sometimes hurt the reputation.
que f. pl. ** pouvoir* F. *quelquefois nuire à* f.
It is only in retirement that one truly enjoys one's self. His
Ce ne que art. *on véritablement jouir de soi.*
work has pleased (every one) because it unites to [2]real [1]utility
ouvrage m. *à tout le monde joindre un* f.
the charms of style and the beauties of sentiment.
agrément m. art. m. sing. art. pl.

456. Reflected verbs have for their regimen the personal pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, *nous*, and *vous*, and this regimen is sometimes direct and sometimes indirect.

OF THE NATURE AND USE OF MOODS AND TENSES.

Of the Indicative.

457. The indicative is that mood which simply declares and affirms a thing. It contains eight tenses, viz:—the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *preterit definite*, the *preterit indefinite*, the *preterit anterior*, the *pluperfect*, the *future simple*, and the *future anterior*.

458. The *present* marks that a thing is either existing or doing at the moment one mentions the circumstance.

EXAMPLES.

J'aime, I love. *Ils jouent*, They play.

459. The *imperfect* is used to express a thing done at a time past, but as present with regard to another thing done at a time likewise past.

EXAMPLE.

J'entrais au moment où vous sortiez, I came in at the moment you were going out.

460. It is also used to express something past, but habitual, without fixing the time of its duration.

EXAMPLE.

César était un habile général, Cæsar was an able general.

461. The *preterit definite* marks that a thing took place at a time mentioned and completely past.

EXAMPLE.

J'écrivis hier à Rome, I wrote yesterday to Rome.

462 The *preterit indefinite* expresses a thing as having taken place at a time which is neither precise nor determinate.

EXAMPLE.

Il m'a fait un vrai plaisir en venant me voir,	He has given me real pleasure by coming to see me.

463. Or at a time which is not absolutely past.

EXAMPLE.

J'ai vu cette semaine beaucoup de monde,	I have seen many people this week.

EXERCISE ON THE INDICATIVE.

My sister is in her chamber, where she (is occupied) in reading
où *s'occuper* F. *à.* A.
[2]ancient [1]history, [2]the study [1](of which) pleases her extremely.
art. *dont* *lui infiniment.*
Benefits bestowed are (so many) trophies erected
art. *Bienfait que on répandre* F. *des* *trophée que on s'ériger* F.
in the hearts of those whose [2]felicity [1](has been promoted) (by them).
art. *on* *faire* F. *
The great Corneille was busy in his study tracing the plan of one
occupé *cabinet à* A. m.
of his tragedies, when a servant, terrified, came to tell him that
domestique m. *tout effrayé* J. * *lui*
[3]his [4]house [2]was on [1]fire: "Go and find my wife," re-
prendre I. *à* * art. * *trouver* A. *ré-*
plied he; "I do not understand household concerns."
pondre J. *entendre rien à* art. *affaire* pl. *du ménage* m.
Some [2]Hungarian [1]noblemen revolted from the Emperor Sigismund;
Des *Hongrois* *seigneur se revolter contre* *Sigismond;*
this prince heard it, and marched boldly against them:
apprendre *fièrement au-devant de*
"Which among you," said he (to them), "will lay [2]hands [3]upon
d'entre *mettre* art. f. sing.
his king [1]first? If there be one [2]bold [1]enough, let him advance."
art. *en* *un hardi*
This noble firmness struck the rebels (with awe), who returned
en imposer à *séditieux* * *rentrer*
immediately to their duty. I have travelled through almost all
aussitôt *dans le* * *devoir.* *voyager* *dans*
Europe, and I have visited the most [2]celebrated [1]places in Asia,
art. f. *célèbre* *lieu* *de* art. *Asie,*
and Africa; if, on the one hand, I admired the masterpieces
de art. *Afrique;* *côté* m. G. *chefs-d'œuvre*
of art, of every kind, which the protection of [2]enlightened [1]govern-
art. *en tout genre,* art.
ments has produced, on the other, I shed tears (on seeing) the
faire naître, G. *sur*
ravages of ignorance and barbarism.
art. *de* art. *barbarie* f.

464. The *preterit anterior* expresses that a thing had taken place immediately before a time which is passed, and this tense is either definite or indefinite. There is the same difference between its two forms as between the two preterits, definite and indefinite.—*See page* 93, *art.* 54.

EXAMPLES.

J'eus dîné hier à midi,	I had dined yesterday at twelve
Quand j'eus dîné hier, midi sonna,	When I had dined vesterday, it struck twelve.
J'ai eu déjeûné ce matin à dix heures,	I had done breakfast this morning at ten o'clock.

465. The *pluperfect* is that past tense which expresses a thing as having taken place at any period antecedent to the time when another thing happened, or it expresses a thing habitually done before another.

EXAMPLES.

J'avais soupé quand il entra,	I had supped when he came in.
Lorsque j'étais à la campagne, dès que j'avais déjeûné, j'allais à la chasse,	When I was in the country, as soon as I had breakfasted, I used to go a hunting.

466. The *future absolute* is that tense which expresses that an action or event will take place at a time which does not yet exist.

EXAMPLE.

J'irai demain à la campagne,	I shall go to-morrow into the country.

467. The *future anterior* is the tense which expresses that at a time when a thing will take place, another thing will have already taken place.

EXAMPLE.

Quand j'aurai fini, je sortirai,	When I have done, I shall go out.

EXERCISE ON THE PRETERIT ANTERIOR, &c.

I had done yesterday at noon. I (went out) (as soon as) I had dined.
finir midi. sortir J. *dès que*
As soon as Cæsar had crossed the Rubicon, he had no longer to deliberate;
passer plus
he (was obliged) to conquer or to die. I had finished the task that
devoir H. * *vaincre* * *tâche* f.
you had imposed upon me when you came in. Those who had con-
imposer f. * *con-*
tributed most to his elevation to the throne of his ancestors, were those
tribuer le plus sur
who labored with the most eagerness to precipitate him (from it).
travailler de acharnement en.
I shall shortly go into the country, where I intend to (collect
ne point tarder à à campagne, se proposer de h.erbo-
plants), (in order to) (make myself perfect) in the knowledge of
riser, pour se perfectionner
botany. When I have done reading the [2]divine [1]writings
art. *botanique* f. *achever* M. *de* A. *écrit* m.
of Homer and Virgil, and my mind has imbibed their
Homère de que se pénétrer M. *de*
beauties, I shall read the other [2]epic [1]poets.

Of the Conditional.

468. The *conditional* is the mood which affirms on conditions; it has two tenses, the *present* and the *past*.

469. The *present of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would take place on certain conditions.

EXAMPLE.

Je ferais votre affaire avant peu, si elle dépendait uniquement de moi, I would settle your business before long, if it only depended upon me.

470. The *past of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would have taken place at a time which no longer exists, dependant on certain conditions.

EXAMPLE.

J'aurais, ou *j'eusse fait votre affaire, si vous m'en aviez, ou m'en eussiez parlé,* I would have settled your business, if you had mentioned it to me.

EXERCISE ON THE CONDITIONAL.

What would not be the felicity of man, if he always sought his
Quel * f. art. *chercher* H.
happiness in himself? I shall be glad to see you harmonious, happy,
un,
and comfortable. A dupe to my imagination, I should have (been
tranquille. * *de*
bewildered), (but for) you, in my search after truth. Enquire
s'égarer sans * art. *recherche* f. art. *s'informer*
whether he would have consented to those conditions, in case
si consentir dans art. *que*
he had thought himself able to fulfil them.
se croire T. *capable de remplir*

Of the Imperative.

471. The *imperative* is that mood which commands, exhorts, entreats, or reproves. It is a present with respect to the injunction and a future with respect to the thing enjoined.

472. In many verbs a compound of the imperative may be used to express an injunction to have a thing done previously to another; as, *ayez dîné avant que je revienne*, have dined before I return.

EXERCISE ON THE IMPERATIVE.

Be not fond of praise; but seek virtue, which pro-
passionné pour art. *louange* f. art. *at-*
cures it. Let us remember that unless virtue guide us, our
tirer *se souvenir* *à moins que* art. *ne*
choice must be wrong. Let us not be deceived by the first
devoir F. *mauvais.* *se laisser prendre à*
appearances of things; but let us take time to fix our judgment.
art. *se donner* art. *de*
Arbiters of the destinies of men, do good, if you wish to be happy;
Arbitre *destinée* art. art. *bien* *vouloir* *

do good, if you wish that your memory should be honored; do good, if
Q.
you wish that heaven should open to you its [2]eternal [1]gates. Never
art. Q. *porte* f.
forget that the [2]truly [3]free [1]man is he who, superior to all fears
véritablement *dégagé de* f. sing
and all desires, is subject only to God and to reason.
de m. sing. *soumis ne que* art. f.

Of the Subjunctive.

473. The *subjunctive* is that mood which expresses a subordination to what precedes. With this dependence it forms a sense, and none without. *Je voudrais qu'il lût*, forms a sense, but *qu'il lût*, alone and unconnected, does not.

474. This mood contains four tenses: the *present*—which sometimes expresses a *future*—the *imperfect*, the *preterit*, and the *pluperfect*.

475. The *present* and the *future* of the subjunctive can only be distinguished by the sense. In this phrase, *Il faut que je vous sois bien attaché pour venir vous voir par le temps qu'il fait*, I must have a great esteem for you to come and see you in such weather as this, *je sois* expresses a present time; but in this, *Je ne crois pas que vous obteniez cela de lui*, I do not think you will obtain that of him, *vous obteniez* expresses a future, and stands for *vous obtiendrez*.

476. The *imperfect*, the *preterit*, and the *pluperfect* of the subjunctive express also a past or future, according to circumstances. In this phrase, *Soupçonniez-vous qu'il ne le fît pas?* Did you suspect he would not do it, *fît* expresses a past; but in this, *Je désirerais qu'il vît du monde*, I wish him to see company, *vît* marks a future.

EXERCISE ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

[2]Men [1]must [2]be (very much) blinded by their passions, not to
art. *il faut que* *bien* *aveuglé* *pour*
acknowledge that they ought (to love one another) as parts of a
convenir *devoir* F. *s'entr'aimer* art.
whole, and as [2](the members of our body) [1](would do) if (every one)
tout, *chacun*
had a [2]particular [1]vitality. You asked him to come with us, but I
sa *vie.* *prier* G. *de*
doubt whether he will have that complaisance. I could not persuade
que Q. H.
myself that he was so vain as to aspire to that place. Though every
S *assez* * *pour* f.
body says so, I do not believe that he is gone to Rome. (Is it possible)
Q. *le,* Q. *se pouvoir* F.
that he should let slip [2]so [3]good [1]an [4]opportunity of acquiring
laisser R. *échapper* *beau* *occasion* f. A. *un*
[2]immortal [1]glory? I could have wished that he had availed himself of his
profiter T.
abode in the country to perfect himself in the study of philosophy
séjour à campagne pour se perfectionner art. f

Of the Infinitive.

477. The *infinitive* is that mood which affirms indeterminately, without either number or person.

478. It denotes of itself neither *present*, *past*, nor *future*, except when it follows other verbs. The *present* always expresses a present, relative to the preceding verb; as, *je le vois, je le vis, je le verrai venir*, I see, I saw, I shall see him come. The *past* always expresses a past, relative to the verb that precedes it; as, *je crois, je croyais l'avoir vu venir*, I think, I thought that I had seen him coming. To express a *future*, the infinitive must be preceded by the infinitive of the verb *devoir*; as, *je croyais devoir y aller*, I thought I was to go there.

479. Remark. The infinitive also expresses a future after the verbs *permettre*, *espérer*, *compter*, *s'attendre*, and *menacer*; as, *il promet de venir (qu'il viendra)*, he promises to come (that he will come); *il menace de s'y rendre (qu'il s'y rendra)*, he threatens to go (that he will go) there.

EXERCISE ON THE INFINITIVE

We only shut our eyes to truth, because we fear to [2]see
ne * art. art. *que parce que de*
[1]ourselves as we are. We were yet far from the castle, when
nous tel que H. *encore*
one of our friends came to join us. I did not think I was to set
J. * H. * *devoir* A. *
out so soon. He promises every day that he will amend, but I do
de * * *se corriger* A.
not rely upon his promises. They talk of a [2]secret [1]expedition; he
compter *promesse* f. *On*
hopes to be (in it). He relies upon seeing you (very soon) to
* *en.* *compter* * A *au premier jour pour*
terminate amicably his affair with you. You expected to take a
à l'amiable *s'attendre* H. *faire*
journey this year, but your father has changed his mind. He threat-
voyage m. *de* * *avis.*
ens to punish us severely, if we (fall again) into the same error.
de *sévèrement* *retomber* *faute.*

OF THE PARTICIPLE.

480. The *participle* is a part of the verb which partakes of the properties both of a verb and an adjective: of a verb, as it has its signification and regimen—of an adjective, as it expresses the quality of a person or thing.

481. There are two participles, the *participle present* and the *participle past.*

Of the Participle Present.

482. The *participle present* always terminates in *ant*; as, *aimant, finissant, recevant, rendant.*

483. Rule. The participle present remains unchanged, and takes neither gender nor number when it expresses an action; as, *une montagne*, or *des montagnes dominant sur des plaines immenses*, a mountain, or

mountains commanding immense plains; *un homme, des hommes, une femme, des femmes lisant, parlant, marchant*, a man, men, a woman, women reading, speaking, walking. But when, like an adjective, it expresses simply a quality, it takes both the gender and number of its substantive; as, *un homme obligeant*, an obliging man; *une femme obligeante*, an obliging woman; *des tableaux parlans*, speaking portraits; *la religion dominante*, the established religion; *à la nuit tombante*, at night fall.

484. What grammarians call *gerund* is nothing but the participle present, to which the word *en* is prefixed; *on se forme l'esprit en lisant de bons livres*, we form our minds by reading good books.

EXERCISE ON THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

That mountain being very high, and thus commanding a vast
élevé, ainsi dominer sur grande
extent of country, was very well calculated for our observations. This
étendue pays, H. * *propre à*
woman is of good disposition, obliging every one whenever she
caractère m. *tout le monde quand*
(has it in her power). They go cringing before the great, that they
en a le pouvoir. ramper devant pl. *afin de* *
may be insolent to their equals. The state of pure nature is that of
* A. *avec égal.*
the savage living in the desert, but living in his family, knowing his
famille f. *connaître*
children, loving them, (making use) of speech, and (making himself
user art. *parole, se faire*
understood). An [2]agreeable [1]langor imperceptibly (laying hold)
entendre. langueur f. *insensiblement s'emparer*
of my senses, suspended the activity of my soul, and I (fell asleep)
sens, suspendre J. *s'endormir* J.
Time is a real blunderer, placing, replacing, ordering, disordering,
art. *vrai brouillon, mettre, remettre, ranger, déranger,*
impressing, erasing, approaching, removing, and making all things, good
imprimer, effacer, approcher, éloigner, rendre f.
and bad; and almost always (impossible to be known again).
presque méconnaissable.

Of the Participle Past.

485. The participle past has various terminations; as, *aimé, fini, reçu, ouvert, dissous*, &c.

486. This participle sometimes agrees with its subject and sometimes with its regimen.

Agreement of the Participle Past with its Subject.

487. Rule I. The participle past, when accompanied by the auxiliary verb *être*, agrees with its subject in gender and number.

EXAMPLES.

Mon frère est tombé,	My brother is fallen.
Mes frères sont tombés,	My brothers are fallen.
Ma sœur est tombée,	My sister is fallen.
Mes sœurs sont tombées,	My sisters are fallen

La nuit sera bientôt passée,	The night will soon be over.
Les spectacles sont fréquentés,	The theatres are frequented.
Cette fleur est fort recherchée,	This flower is much sought after.
Ils sont fort estimés,	They are very much esteemed.

EXERCISE ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

Fire-arms were not known to the ancients. Ishmael, the son of
art. *arme-à-feu* f. H. *connu de* *Ismaël,* *
Abraham, is known among the Arabs as (the man) from whence they
parmi *Arabe* *celui*
sprung, and circumcision has remained (among them) as the
être sorti G. art. f. *être demeuré* *leur*
mark of their origin. Heaven is that [2]permanent [1]city (into which)
f. art. *cité* f. *où*
the just are to be received after this life. In [2]Abraham's [1]time,
pl. *devoir* * *après* *De* art.
the threatenings of the true God was dreaded by Pharaoh, king of Egypt;
menace f. H. *redouté de Pharaon,*
but in the time of Moses, all nations were corrupted, and the world,
Moïse, art. f. H. *perverti,*
which God has made to manifest his power, was become a temple of
pour *pouvoir,* H. *devenu*
idols. That [2]dreadful [1]crisis which threatened the state with [2]instant
terrible crise f. H. *de prochain*
[1]destruction, was happily soon over. She is come to bring us all
f. J. *heureusement* *passé.* *
kinds of refreshments. The sciences have always been
sorte f. sing. *rafraîchissement.* f.
protected by [2]enlightened [1]governments.
protégé art. *éclairé*

488. Rule II. The participle past, when it follows the verb *avoir*, never agrees with *its subject.*

Mon frère a écrit,	My brother has written.
Mes frères ont écrit,	My brothers have written.
Ma sœur a écrit,	My sister has written.
Mes sœurs ont écrit,	My sisters have written.
Les Amazones ont acquis de la célébrité,	The Amazons have acquired celebrity.
J'ai contraint les soldats à marcher,	I have forced the soldiers to march.

489. Remark. The participle of the verb *être*, and of all the neuter verbs which are conjugated with the auxiliary verb *avoir*, never vary; as, *il* or *elle a été*, he or she has been; *ils* or *elles ont été*, they have been; *il* or *elle a dormi*, he or she has slept; *ils* or *elles ont nui*, they have annoyed.

EXERCISE.

The Romans successively triumphed over the [2]most warlike [1]na-
Romains successivement G. *de* *belliqueux*
tions. Lampridius relates that Adrian erected to Jesus Christ some
raconter *Adrien élever* I. *de*
temples, which (were still to be seen) in his time. Happy those
art. *on encore voir* H. *de* *

princes who have never (made use) of their power but to do
art. *user* *pouvoir* *que pour*
good! We have spent the whole day in tormenting ourselves.
art. *bien!* *journée* f. *à* A. *nous.*
One has seldom seen a great stock of good sense in a man of ima-
On *rarement* *fonds* m. *sens* *a*
gination. The errors of Descartes (proved very useful) to Newton.
beaucoup servir G.

Agreement of the Participle Past with its Regimen.

490. Rule I. The participle past always agrees with *its regimen direct*, when that regimen is placed before the participle, whether the auxiliary verb that accompanies it be *avoir* or *être*.

EXAMPLES.

Les écoliers que j'ai eus, ont fait de grands progrès,	The pupils whom I have had, have made rapid progress.
Lucrèce s'est tuée,	Lucretia has killed herself.
Jai renvoyé les livres que vous m'aviez prêtés,	I have sent back the books which you had lent me.
Que de soins je me suis donnés!	What pains I have taken!
Quelle affaire avez-vous entreprise?	What business have you undertaken?
Quand la race de Caïn se fut multipliée,	When the race of Cain had multiplied.
Ces yeux que n'ont émus ni soupirs ni terreur,	Those eyes which neither sighs nor terror have moved.
Le Dieu Mercure est un de ceux que les anciens ont le plus multipliés,	The god Mercury is one of those whom the ancients have multiplied the most.

491. Remark. The regimen which precedes the participle is either one of these pronouns—*que*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *nous*, and *vous*—or a noun sometimes joined to the pronoun *quel*, sometimes preceded by the word of quantity, *combien* or *que*—signifying *combien*, how much—as may be seen in the examples already given.

EXERCISE ON THE AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH ITS REGIMEN.

All the letters which I have received, confirm that [2]important [1]news.
f. *confirmer* sing.
The [2]agitated [1]life which I have led till now, makes me sigh
agité f. *mener jusqu'à présent,* *soupirer*
for retirement. The difficulties which the academies (have pro-
après art. *retraite* f. f. *se*
posed to one another) do not seem easy to (be resolved). The
faire G. *paraître aisé* *résoudre.*
sciences which you have studied will prove infinitely useful (to you).
f. *être*
The death which Lucretia (gave herself) has (made her immortal). The
f. *se donner* G. *immortaliser* G.
cities which those nations have (built for themselves) are but a
ville f. *peuple* *se bâtir* G. *ne que*

collection of huts. The persons whom you have instructed appear to
amas m. *chaumière.* f.
me possessed of reason and taste. Nothing can equal the ardor of
plein *de* *égaler*
the troops which I have seen (setting off). The chimeras which she
f. A. *chimère* f.
has got in her head (are beyond) all belief. What measures
se mettre * art. *passer* *croyance* f. *démarche* f.
have I not taken! What fortunes has not this revolution ruined!
faire! f. *renverser!*
What tears has she not shed! what sighs has she not heaved! The
Que de f. *verser!* m. *pousser!*
Amazons (made themselves) famous by their courage. The city of
f. *se rendre* G. *célèbre* f.
London (has made itself), by its commerce, the metropolis of the uni-
m. *métropole* f.
verse. I have thought her agitated by the furies. This day is one
croire
of those which they have consecrated to tears. The language in
m. *consacrer* art. *langue* f. *
which Cicero and Virgil have written will live in their works. I
Cicéron *Virgile* *par* *ouvrage.*
could have wished to avoid entering into those details, but I thought
vouloir * *éviter d'entrer* A. m. *croire* G.
them necessary. The tribunes demanded of Clodius the execution
tribun m. J. *à*
of the promises which the consul Valerius had given them.
f. *faire leur.*

492. RULE II. The participle past *never* agrees with its regimen, either when that participle is without regimen *direct* or when, having a regimen direct, that regimen is placed *after* it.

EXAMPLES.

La lettre dont je vous ai parlé,	The letter which I have mentioned to you.
La perte et les profits auxquels il a participé,	The loss and profits which he has shared.
Les académies se sont fait des objections,	The academies have proposed objections to one another.
Vous avez instruit ces personnes à dessiner,	You have taught these persons to draw.
Lucrèce s'est donné la mort,	Lucretia has put a period to her existence.

EXERCISE.

The persons whose [5]visit [1]you [3]had [4]announced to [2]me, are not
f. art. f. *
come. Men built themselves cities. The Amazons acquired
art. *se bâtir* G. * G.
great celebrity. I have forced the soldiers to march. That
beaucoup de *contraindre*
woman (has bestowed on herself) fine gowns. [3]Letters [4]and
se donner G. *de* art.

[5]writing [1]were [2]invented to represent speech. She has
art. *écriture* on *a* *pour peindre* art. *parole.*
cut two (of her) fingers. Titus has made his wife mistress of his
se couper * *doigt* m. *rendre*
riches. I have given myself (a great deal) of trouble. Commerce
bien. *bien* art. *peine* f. art. m.
has made this city flourishing. They have made an appointment.
rendre f. *florissant.* *se donner* * *rendezvous.*

493. Rule III. The participle past takes neither gender nor number when the participle and the auxiliary verb to which it is joined are used impersonally, nor when that participle is followed by a verb which governs the pronoun or pronouns preceding it.

EXAMPLES.

Les chaleurs excessives qu'il a fait cet été, ont beaucoup nui à la récolte,	The excessive heats which we have had this summer have done great injury to the corn.
Quelle fâcheuse aventure vous est-il arrivé ?	What unpleasant adventure have you met with ?
La maison que j'ai fait bâtir,	The house which I have ordered to be built.
Imitez les vertus que vous avez entendu louer,	Imitate the virtues which you have heard praised.
Les mathématiques que vous n'avez pas voulu que j'étudiasse,	The mathematics which you would not permit me to study.
Elle s'est laissé séduire,	She has suffered herself to be seduced.

494. Remark. To make a right application of the second part of this rule, we ought to examine whether we can put the regimen immediately after the participle. As we cannot say, *J'ai fait la maison, vous avez entendu les vertus, vous n'avez pas voulu les mathématiques*, it follows that the regimen belongs to the second verb. Sometimes, however, the regimen may relate either to the participle or to the following verb, according to the meaning of the speaker. Thus, *Je l'ai* vu *peindre*, means, I saw her picture drawn ; but *Je l'ai* vue *peindre*, signifies, I saw her painting.

495. Sometimes it happens likewise that, in sentences which seem to resemble each other, the regimen in one belongs to the participle and in the other to the verb which follows it. For instance, this question—*Avez vous entendu chanter la nouvelle actrice ?* Have you heard the new actress sing ?—should be thus answered, *Oui, je l'ai* entendue, *chanter ;* Yes, I have : but this question—*Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle ariette ?* Have you heard the new song ?—must be answered, *Oui, je l'ai* entendu *chanter ;* Yes, I have.

EXERCISE.

The great changes which (have taken place) in the administration
changement *y avoir* G.
have astonished many people. The heavy rains which (we
bien des personnes. *grand pluie* f. *it*
have had) in the spring have been the cause of many diseases. The
faire G. *maladie* f.

scarcity which there was [2]last [1]winter has afforded the opportunity
disette f. G. art. *dernier* *donner* *occasion*
of doing much good. What news (has reached you?) (How many)
A. *bien.* *vous est-ilvenu?* *Que de*
imprudent steps (were taken) on that occasion! How many large
faux *démarche* f. *il s'est fait en* *gros*
ships have been built in England within these fifty years! The
il *se construire* G. *depuis* *
figures which you have learned to draw are of great beauty. (We
apprendre *dessiner* *un* *Il*
ought) never to swerve from the good path which we have begun
falloir F. * *s'éloigner* *route* f. *on*
to follow. The measures which you advised me to adopt have
mesure f. *conseiller* G. *de prendre*
not succeeded. The rule which I have begun to explain seems to
réussir. *règle* f. *expliquer* *sembler*
me very easy to (be understood). You see that I have not been mistaken
saisir A. *se tromper* G.
respecting the affairs which I had foreseen you would have in hand.
prévoir que * *

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE ADVERBS.

Situation of the Adverbs.

496. Rule I. In the simple tenses, the adverb is generally placed after the verb, and, in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the participle.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme le plus éclairé est ordinairement *celui qui pense* le plus modestement *de lui-même,*	The man who is most learned is generally he who thinks most modestly of himself.
Avez-vous jamais *vu un pédant plus absurbe et plus vain?*	Have you ever seen a pedant more absurd and more vain?

497 Compound adverbs, and those which have or might have a regimen like the adjectives from which they are derived, are always placed after the verb.

EXAMPLES.

C'est à la mode.	That is fashionable.
Il a agi conséquemment,	He has acted consistently.

498. Adverbs which denote time in an indeterminate manner are likewise placed after the verb.

EXAMPLES.

Il eût fallu se lever plus matin,	It would have been necessary to rise earlier.
On a vu cela autrefois,	That has been seen formerly

499. Exceptions. 1st.—Adverbs of order, rank, and those which express a determinate time, are placed either before or after the verb.

EXAMPLES.

Nous devons premièrement *faire notre devoir;* secondement, *chercher les plaisirs permis,*	We ought, first, to do our duty; secondly, enjoy lawful pleasures.
Aujourd'hui *il fait beau; il pleuvra peut-être* demain,	To-day it is fine; it will rain perhaps to-morrow.

500. 2d.—These adverbs—*comment, où, d'où, par où, combien, pourquoi, quand,* used with or without interrogation—are always placed before the verb which they modify.

EXAMPLES.

Comment vous portez-vous?	How do you do?
Où allez-vous?	Where are you going?
Il ne sait comment s'y prendre,	He does not know how to set about it.

501. Rule II. The adverb is always placed before the adjective which it modifies.

EXAMPLE.

C'est une femme fort *belle,* très-*sensible, et* infiniment *sage,*	She is a woman very beautiful, of great sensibility, and infinitely prudent.

502. Rule III. Adverbs of quantity and comparison, and the three adverbs of time—*souvent, toujours, jamais*—are placed before the other adverbs.

EXAMPLES.

Si poliment, fort poliment,	So politely, very politely
Très-heureusement,	Very happily.
Le plus adroitement,	The most skilfully.
Ils ne seront jamais étroitement unus,	They never will be intimately united
Ils sont toujours ensemble, [*arrive,*	They are always together.
C'est souvent à l'improviste qu'il	He often comes unexpectedly.

503. *Souvent* may, however, be preceded by an adverb of quantity or comparison; as, *si souvent, assez souvent, fort souvent, plus souvent, moins souvent, trop souvent.*

504. Remark. When adverbs of quantity and comparison meet together in a sentence, the following is the order which custom has established:

Si peu	Bien peu	†Beaucoup trop	Tant mieux
Trop peu	Bien plus	Beaucoup plus	Tant pis
Très-peu	Bien davantage	Beaucoup moins	&c.

505. When *bien* stands before another adverb, it means *very, much,* &c., as in the preceding and following examples.

Bien assez,	Quite enough.	*Frapper bien fort,*	To strike very hard
Bien moins,	Much less.	*Bien tard,*	Very late.

506. But when it is placed after the adverb, it signifies *well;* as,

Assez bien,	Pretty well.	*Fort bien,*	Very well.
Moins bien,	Not so well.	*Aussi bien,*	As well.

† *Beaucoup* is not, as the English *much,* susceptible of being modified by any adverb preceding; thus, *très-beaucoup, trop beaucoup,* &c. would be barbarism

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE CONJUNCTIONS.

507. The conjunction *que* serves to complete a comparison; it is elliptically used to express a restriction when placed after *ne*, and it generally gives grace, energy, and precision to sentences.

EXAMPLES.

QUE,	expressing *comparison*,	*L'Asie est plus grande* que *l'Europe*,	Asia is larger than Europe.
	for *rien* que	*On* ne *parle* que *de la nouvelle victoire*,	They talk of *nothing but* the new victory.
	— *je souhaite* que	Qu'*il vive*, pour *je souhaite* qu'*il vive*.	May he live, for *I wish that* he may live.
	— *à moins* que — *avant* que — *sans* que	*Cela* ne *finira pas* qu'*il* ne *vienne*.	There will be no end to it, *unless* he come.
	— *dès* que — *aussitôt* que — *si*, or *quand*	Qu'*il fasse le moindre excès, il est malade*,	*If* he commits the least excess, he is ill.
	— *soit* que	Qu'*il perde, ou* qu'*il gagne son procès, c'est un homme ruiné*,	*Whether* he gains or loses his lawsuit, he is a ruined man.
	— *jusqu'à ce* que	*Attendez* qu'*il vienne*,	Wait *till* he comes.
	— *pourquoi ?*	Que *ne se corrige-t-il ?*	*Why* does he not reform ?
	— *comme*	*Méchant* qu'*il est*,	Wicked *as* he is.
	— *combien*	Que *Dieu est grand !*	*How* great is the Almighty !
		Que *je hais les méchans !*	*How much* I hate the wicked !

EXERCISE ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

We have every thing to fear from his wisdom, even more than from
encore
his power. What men style greatness, glory, power, profound
Ce que art. *appeler* *profond*
policy, is in the eyes of God only misery, weakness, and vanity.
politique f. *à*
May they understand, at last, that without [2]internal [1]peace, there
comprendre, *avec soi-même* art.
is no happiness. May she be as happy as she deserves to be !
point de *de le*
Never write before you have [2]thoroughly [1]examined the subject
que Q. *sous toutes ses faces*
which you propose to treat. Let him but hear the least noise, his
se proposer de traiter.

[2]terrified [1]imagination presents to him nothing but monsters. Do
effrayé f. * *ne que*
not sift this question till I (can be your guide). Do not go
approfondir *ne vous mettre* Q. *sur la voie.*
out till your brother comes in. Why does he not (take advantage) of
ne rentrer Q. *profiter*
his youth, (in order to) acquire the knowledge he wants?
pour *connaissance* pl. *dont* *avoir besoin.*

508. Another frequent use of the conjunction *que* is to save the repetition of *comme, parceque, puisque, quand, quoi que, si,* &c., when to phrases beginning with these words, others are added under the same regimen, by means of the conjunction *et;* as,

Si l'on aimait son pays, et qu'on en désirât sincèrement la gloire, on se conduirait de manière, &c. — If we loved our country, and sincerely wished its glory, we should act so as &c.

EXERCISE.

Full as he was of his prejudices, he would not acknowledge
Rempli H. *préjugé,* J. *convenir de*
(any thing). Full [2]of [3]self-love [1](as he is), expect nothing good
rien. *Pétri*
(from him). [1]How [6]beautiful [5]is [2]that [4]cultivated [3]nature! How, by
en *par*
the care of man, it is brilliantly and richly adorned! Had
f. *pompeusement orné!* *si* * *de*
profound philosophers presided at the formation of languages, and
I. *à* art. *langue,* *que*
had they carefully examined the elements of speech, not only in
avec soin T. m. art. *discours, non*
their relations (to one another), but also in themselves, it is not
entr'eux *encore en* m.
(to be doubted), that languages would present principles more
douteux art. *ne* *offrir* S.
simple, and, at the same time, more luminous.

Government of Conjunctions.

509. The conjunctions which unite sentences to one another are followed either by the *infinitive*, the *indicative*, or the *subjunctive.*

510. Those which are followed by an infinitive are,

511. 1st.—Such as are distinguished from prepositions only by being followed by a verb; as,

Il faut se reposer après avoir travaillé, — One ought to rest after having labored.

512. 2d.—Those which have the preposition *de* after them; as,

Il travaille afin de vous surpasser, — He works that he may surpass you.

EXERCISE ON THE GOVERNMENT OF CONJUNCTIONS.

They were going to spend (a few) days in town, only that
ne * *passer* *quelques* *à* art. *que pour*

they might return with more pleasure to their charming solitude
* * *se retrouver* A. *dans*
Many persons work only (in order to) acquire consideration and riches,
ne que afin de
but the [2]honest, [3]humane [1]man spends (so much) time in
de bien sensible ne employer tant de à
study, only to be useful to his fellow-creatures. I reveal to you
art. *que pour semblables.* *dévoiler*
the plot which your enemies have concerted in secret,
trame f. *ourdir* art. *ténèbres* f. pl.
in order to warn you against their artifices.
prémunir

513. Conjunctions that govern the indicative

bien attendu que,	autant que,	puisque,	peut-être que,
a condition que,	non plus que,	lorsque,	comme,
à la charge que,	outre que,	pendant que,	comme si,
de même que,	parce que,	tandis que,	quand,
ainsi que,	attendu que,	durant que,	pourquoi,
aussi bien que,	vu que,	tant que,	comment, &c.

514. They are followed by the indicative, because the principal sentence, which they unite with that which is incidental, expresses the affirmation in a direct, positive, and independent manner.

515. The use of the six following conjunctions,

si non que,	de sorte que,	tellement que,
si ce n'est que,	en sorte que,	de manière que,

varies according to the meaning expressed by the principal sentence.

EXAMPLE OF THE INDICATIVE.	EXAMPLE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.
Je ne lui ai répondu autre chose si non que j'avais exécuté ses ordres,	*Je ne veux autre chose,* si non que *vous travailliez avec plus d'ardeur,*
I made him no other answer *but that* I had executed his orders.	I desire nothing else *but that* you would study with greater ardor.

516 The indicative is required in the first sentence by the verb *j'ai répondu* expressing a positive affirmation, and the subjunctive in the second, because *je veux* expresses but a desire.

EXERCISE.

When you have a more [2]extensive [1]knowledge of geometry and
L. art. *de*
algebra, I shall give you (a few) lessons in astronomy and
art. *algèbre* f. *quelques de de*
optics. Form your mind, heart, and taste while you are still
optique. *votre votre encore*
young. Do not keep truth a prisoner, though you should (draw
retenir art. * *captive, quand devoir* N. *s'at-*
upon you) a cloud of enemies. I will give you this fine picture upon
tirer nuée f. *tableau* m. *à*
condition that you keep it as a testimony of my friendship.
conserver L. *témoignage* m.

517. The conjunctions which govern the subjunctive are,

soit que,	jusqu'à ce que,	supposé que,	afin que,
sans que,	encore que,	au cas que,	de peur que,
pour que,	à moins que,	avant que,	de crainte que,
quoique,	pourvu que,	non pas que,	&c. &c.

518. They require the subjunctive, as they always imply doubt, desire, ignorance.

EXERCISE.

You know too well the value of time, to [2]make [1]it
connaître *prix* m. art. *pour que* *être* Q. *il*
necessary to tell you to (make a good use of) it. Study only great
de *de* *bien employer* art.
models, lest those which are but middling should spoil your
de peur que * *médiocre ne* *gâter* Q.
taste before it be entirely formed. I (make not the least doubt) that
ne douter F. *nullement*
your method will succeed, provided it be well known. Several
f. *ne* Q. f.
phenomena of nature are easy (to be explained), supposing the
art. *à expliquer,*
principle of [2]universal [1]gravitation to be true.
art. f. *

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE NINE PARTS OF SPEECH

THE GOOD MOTHER

What a fine morning! said the amiable Charlotte to her brother
matinée f. J.
George. Come, let us go into the garden, and enjoy the [2]magnificent
sing. * A. *de*
[1]sight of [2]rich [3]and [4]abundant [1]nature. We will gather there
spectacle m. *une* *fertile* *cueillir* *y*
the [2]freshest [3]and [4]sweetest [1]flowers. We will make a nosegay, which
frais *odorant* f. *bouquet* m.
we will offer to mamma. You know she loves flowers. This
maman. sing. *savoir que* art.
attention will give her pleasure. Ah! brother, it will obtain us a
faire *lui* *mon* f. *valoir*
smile, a caress, perhaps even a kiss. Ah! sister, replied
sourire m. f. *baiser* m. *ma* *répondre* J.
George, your proposal delights me; let us run, let us fly, that
sing. *projet* *enchanter* *courir*, *voler*, *afin de*
we may offer her (when she rises) this tribute of our gratitude and
* * A. *lui* *à son lever* *hommage* *de*
our love. Full of this idea, Charlotte and George hastened
Plein *se hâter* J. *de se rendre*
into the garden. Charlotte gathered violets, jessamine, and (young
J. *des bou-*
rose-buds), which (had but just begun) to open their [2]purple
tons de rose, *ne commencer* H. *que* * *entr'ouvrir* *de pourpre*
[1]cups, while George prepared [2]green [1]sprigs of myrtle and thyme
calice, H. *verdoyant jet* m. *myrte* *thym.*

intended to support the flowers. [1]Never [5]had [2]these [3]amiable [4]children
destiné *soutenir* H.
[6]worked with (so much) zeal and ardor. Satisfaction and pleasure
travailler *tant de zèle* art. f. art.
beamed in all their features, sparkled in their eyes, and added still
être peint H. *trait* m. *pétiller* H.
to their beauty.

While they (were employing themselves) (in this manner), their
s'occuper H. *ainsi*
mother, who had seen them in the garden, came to join them.
J. *joindre*
(As soon as) they perceived her, they flew to her, and said: Ah!
Dès que J. J. *elle, lui* J.
mamma, how [3]glad [1]we [2]are to see you! how (impatient we were)
que aise *de* *que il tardait à notre impatience*
(for) this pleasure! In the pleasing expectation (of it) we were preparing
d'avoir *ce doux attente* f. *
this nosegay for you. What satisfaction should we have had in
f. *ne* *pas* *à*
presenting it to you! Look at these rose-buds, these violets, this jessamine,
offrir *Voir* *
this myrtle, and this thyme. Well, we designed them for you.
Eh! bien, *destiner* H.

These flowers, coming from us, would have been dear to you. When
cher *En*
you wore them, you would have said, My children were thinking of
* *porter* C. *s'occuper*
me while I slept. I am always as present to their minds as to their
dormir H. sing.
hearts. They love me, and it is by giving me every day new proofs
sing. *ce en* *de* *preuve* f.
of their affection that they acknowledge the care I have taken
reconnaître * *soin* m. pl. *que*
of them in their childhood, and all the marks of tenderness I
que
(am unceasingly) giving them.
ne cesser F. *de* A. *leur.*

My dear children, replied the mother, embracing them, how
répondre J. *en embrasser* *quel*
charming you render all my days! your gratitude, your tenderness,
charme *répandre sur*
your attention to me, make me forget my former misfortunes, and
pl. *pour* *oublier* *ancien* *malheur* m.
yield my heart again to the soft impressions of pleasure. May
rouvrir * f. art. *Pouvoir* Q.

Heaven continue to bless my labor! May it be your guide and
art. *continuer de* *soin* pl. *Pouvoir*
your support in the career which (will soon be opened) to you!
soutien *carrière* f. *aller* F. *s'ouvrir* *devant*
may it complete its kindness by preserving you from the dangers
mettre le comble à *bienfait* pl. *en garantir* *de*
to which you (cannot fail) to be soon exposed! Alas! I shudder
ne pas tarder L. * *frémir*

(at them) beforehand, my dear children; the moment is come when you
en d'avance *où*
must enter the world. Your persons, your birth, and your
devoir dans *figure* sing. *naissance,*
fortune call you there, and ensure you a [2]distinguished [1]rank (in it).
appeler y assurer m. *y*
I cannot always be your guide. Young and inexperienced, you will
L. *sans expérience, aller* F.
(find yourselves) surrounded by every kind of temptation.
se trouver A. *entouré* *sorte* f. *séduction.*
(Every thing), even vice, (presents itself) there under an [2]agreeable
Tout jusque à art. m. *s'offrir* F. *y sous* *
[1]form, and almost always in the shape of pleasure, which has (so many)
pl. *sous image* art. *tant de*
attractions for youth. They will try to mislead you, to
attrait f. art. *jeunesse* f. *chercher égarer*
corrupt you; they (will make use of) artifice, raillery, and even
employer art. art. *même*
ridicule, and, if necessary, they will assume even the mask
il est *prendre jusque à* *masque* m.
of virtue. If you (abandon yourselves) to first impressions, you
art. *se laisser* F. *aller*
are lost. The poison of example (will insinuate itself) into your
art. *se glisser* L.
hearts, will corrupt the innocence and purity (of them), and will substitute
altérer *en,*
[2]violent [1]passions for the mild affections which have hitherto formed
déchirant f. *à doux* *faire*
your happiness.

Do not imagine, my dear children, that in placing before your eyes a
croire *en mettre sous*
picture of the dangers of the world, my intention is to prohibit
le tableau m. Q. *de interdire*
you every kind of pleasure. (God forbid)! Pleasure is necessary
espèce f. *à Dieu ne plaise!* art.
to man; without it, our existence would be dreadful; (and therefore)
art. *lui,* *affreux;* *aussi*
Providence, ever attentive to our wants, has multiplied the
art. f. *besoin,* *-t-elle*
sources of it, both in and out of ourselves. But, in tasting the
en nous *nous.* *en goûter*
pleasures of the world, never (abandon yourselves) (to them). Take
se livrer F. *y* *Avoir*
care that they do not govern you; know how to quit them the
dominer *savoir* * * *de*
moment they have acquired (too much) sway over you. It is the
que *prendre* L. *trop de empire* *Ce*
only way to enjoy with delight that [2]exquisite [1]pleasure which we
moyen de *volupté de* *délicieux*
can only find in ourselves, and which has its source in an [2]upright [3]and
en *dans* *droit*
[4]pure [1]conscience. Ah! why can I not give you all my experience?
f. *que*

Why can you not, like me, read the depths of the heart? With
dans *abîme* sing. pl.
what astonishment would you often see chagrin, agitation, and
art. m. art.
trouble, disguised under the appearance of joy and tranquillity;
art. m. *déguisé sous* *apparence* pl. art. *du calme;*
hatred and envy concealed under the air of confidence and
art. f. art. f. *caché* art. *confiance* f. *de*
friendship; indifference and selfishness affecting the most lively
la f. art. *égoïsme* *vif*
interest; [2]the most dreadful and perfidious [1]plots contrived deliber-
trame f. *ourdi* *de sang*
ately in the dark; in a word, [2]the most odious [1]vices endea-
froid et *ténèbres* f. pl. *en* art. *s'ef-*
voring to show themselves under the features of [2](their opposite)
forcer de *traits* *qui leur sont opposé*
[1]virtues! In the world, there is but one (moving principle);
art. *ne que* *seul mobile* m.
that is [2]self- [1]interest. (To that, every) action refers,
ce art. *personnel* *C'est à lui que toutes* art. pl. *se rapporter*
every thing tends to that as to its end. I know very well, my dear
lui *fin* f. *savoir*
children, that your hearts will not be infected by this vice. The senti-
de
ments of [2]universal [1]benevolence with which I (have always)
bienveilbance * *ne point cesser* G. *de*
inspired you, and of which I have seen you give (so many) proofs,
A. *tant de preuve,*
(remove already every fear I might have) upon that subject: but will you
me rassurent d'avance *sur* *point* m.
not yield to other vices not less dangerous? Cruel idea! terrible
de *non* f. *affreux*
uncertainty! If this misfortune were to happen, ah! my dear children,
f. * * *arriver*, H.
instead of being the joy and consolation of my life, you would be the
art. f.
torment, the shame, and the disgrace (of it). You would poison
honte f. *opprobre* *en.* *empoisonner*
my days, and you would plunge a dagger into the [2]very [1]bosom which
porter * art. *mort* f. *méme sein* m.
gave you life. But whither is my tenderness for you hurrying me?
art. *où* *emporter* F.
No, my children; no, I have nothing to fear; you love me (too much) to
Non, *trop* *pour*
wish to afflict me so cruelly; and I shall have the pleasure (as long as)
vouloir * *tant que*
I live of seeing you walk in the ways of honor and virtue.
L. A. *marcher* *sentier* art. pr. art.

PART III.

IDIOMS:

OR,

WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES

CHAPTER I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

519. THE substantive performs *three* functions in language, that of the subject, the regimen, and the apostrophe.

520. The substantive is the *subject* whenever it is that of which something is affirmed. When we say *l'oiseau vole*, the bird flies; *le lion ne vole pas*, the lion does not fly; the substantives *oiseau* and *lion* are subjects; because it is affirmed of the first that it flies, and of the second that it does not fly.

521. It is to the substantive as the subject that every thing relates in a sentence. In the following, *un homme juste et ferme n'est ébranlé, ni par les clameurs d'une populace injuste, ni par les menaces d'un fier tyran; quand même le monde brisé s'écroulerait, il en serait frappé, mais non pas ému*, the adjectives *juste* and *ferme* modify the subject *homme*, and all the rest modify *un homme juste et ferme.*

EXERCISE ON THE SUBSTANTIVE.

1. A *king* who is inaccessible to men is inaccessible to truth also, and passes his life in a ferocious, inhuman grandeur: as he is continually afraid of being deceived, he always unavoidably is, and deserves to be so; besides, he is at the mercy of slanderers and tale-bearers—a base, malicious tribe, who feed on venom, and invent mischief, rather than cease to injure.

2. The *good* which a man does, is never lost; if men forget it, God remembers and rewards it.

(1.) *Is inaccessible also*, l'est aussi—*ferocious*, sauvage—*inhuman*, et farouche—*as he is afraid*, craignant—*is*, l'est—*to be so*, de l'être—*besides*, de plus—*tale-bearers*, rapporteur—*tribe*, nation—*feed upon*, se nourrir de—*mischief*, mal—*to injure*, de nuire.
(2.) *Good*, bien—*a man*, on—*remember*, s'en souvenir.

522. The substantive is the *regimen*, when governed either

by another substantive, by an adjective, by a verb, or by a preposition; as,

La loi de *Dieu*,	The law *of* God.
Utile à *l'homme*,	Useful *to* man.
Aimer son prochain,	To *love* one's neighbor.
Chez son père,	*At* his father's.

523. In French, a substantive cannot be governed by another substantive but by the help of a preposition; such as *de*—as, *la difficulté de l'entreprise*, the difficulty of the undertaking; or *à* or *pour*—as, *l'abandon à ses passions*, the giving way to one's passions; *le goût pour le plaisir*, the love of pleasure.

224. General Rule. When two substantives are found together—the one *governing*, the other *governed*—the former is generally placed first.

EXAMPLE.

La beauté *des sentimens*, la violence *des passions*, la grandeur *des événemens* et les succès miraculeux *des grandes épées des héros, tout cela m'entraîne comme une petite fille.*—Sévigné.	The beauty of sentiments, the violence of passions, the grandeur of events, and the prodigious successes of the huge swords of heroes, all these transport me like a little girl.

525. Remark. This order is not followed—1. When, in English, two substantives are joined by an *s* and an apostrophe placed after the first—thus, *'s;* as, the *king's palace*—that is, *the palace of the king*—le palais du roi. 2. When the two substantives form a compound word; as, *silk-stockings*—that is, *stockings of silk*—bas de soie.

EXERCISE.

1. *The silence* of the night, *the calmness* of the sea, *the trembling light* of the moon diffused over the surface of the water, and *the dim azure* of the sky bespangled with glittering stars, served to heighten the beauty of the scene.

2. Nothing was heard but *the warbling* of birds, or *the soft breath* of the zephyrs sporting in *the branches* of the trees, or *the murmurs* of a lucid rill falling from the rocks, or *the songs* of the young swains who attended Apollo.

3. A smiling boy was, at the same time, caressing a lap-dog, which is his *mother's favorite*, because it pleases the child.

4. There are several *gold and silver mines* in this beautiful country; but the inhabitants, simple, and happy in their simplicity, do not even deign to* reckon gold and silver among their riches.

(1.) *Trembling* tremblant—*diffused*, répandu—*dim*, sombre—*bespangled*, parsemé—*with*, de—*heighten*, rehausser—*scene*, spectacle.

(2.) *Nothing but*, on ne plus que—*breath*, haleine—*sporting* (*which sported*), qui se jouer H—*branches*, rameaux—*lucid rill*, eau claire—*falling*, (which fell)—*swains* bergers—*attended*, suivre H.

(3.) *Smiling boy*, enfant d'un air riant—*was caressing*, caresser—*lap-dog*, bichon—*pleases*, amuser.

* In the following exercises, when an asterisk [*] is put after an English word, it shows that that word is not to be expressed in French.

526. The substantive is an *apostrophe* whenever it is the object addressed; as, *Rois, peuples, terre, mer, et vous, cieux écoutez-moi!*—Kings, nations, earth, sea and you heaven, listen to me! In this sentence, the substantives *rois, peuples, terre, mer,* and *cieux,* form an apostrophe.

527. N. B.—It is only in highly oratorical language that the address is thus directed to inanimate or absent objects.

EXAMPLE OF A BEAUTIFUL APOSTROPHE.

O, Hippias! Hippias! I shall never see thee again! O, my dear Hippias! it is I, cruel and void of compassion, who taught thee to despise death. Cruel gods! ye prolonged my life only that I might see the death of Hippias! O, my dear child, whom I had brought up with so much care, I shall see thee no more. O, dear shade, summon me to the banks of the Styx; the light grows hateful to me; it is thou only, my dear Hippias, whom I wish to see again. Hippias, Hippias! O, my dear Hippias! I live but to pay the last duty to thy ashes.—*Fénélon.*

Never, ne plus—*void of compassion*, moi impitoyable—*taught*, apprendre—*prolonged*, prolonger—*only that I might*, pour me faire—*brought up*, nourrir G.—*with so much care*, et qui me coûter G. tant de soins—*shade*, ombre—*summon*, appeler—*to*, sur—*banks*, rive—*grows hateful*, être odieux—*I live but to*, ne vivre encore que pour—*pay*, rendre—*ashes*, cendre.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

528. General Principle.—The article is to be used before all substantives common, taken in a determinate sense, *unless there be another word performing the same office;* but it is not to be used before those that are taken in an indeterminate sense

Cases in which the Article is to be used.

529. Rule I.—The article necessarily accompanies all substantives common, which denote a whole species of things or determinate things.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme *se repaît trop souvent de chimères,*	Man too often feeds on chimeras.
Les hommes à imagination *sont toujours malheureux,*	Men of fanciful dispositions are always unhappy.
L'homme *dont vous parlez est très-instruit,*	The man you speak of is very learned.

530. In the first example, the word *homme* is taken in its fullest sense; it denotes a collective universality. In the second, *les hommes à imagination* denotes a whole particular class. In the third, *l'homme* denotes but one individual, being restricted by the incidental proposition *dont vous parlez.*

531. Remark.—In English, the article is not used before substantives taken in a general sense; as, *Men of genius, women of sound understanding.*

EXERCISE ON THE ARTICLE.

1. The moment *elegance*, the most visible image of fine *taste*, appears, it is universally admired: *men* differ respecting the other constituent parts of *beauty*, but they all unite without hesitation in acknowledging the power of *elegance.*

2. *Men of superior genius*, while they* see the rest of mankind painfully* struggling to comprehend obvious truths, glance themselves* through* the most remote consequences, like lightning through a track that cannot be measured.

3. *The man who lives* under an habitual sense of the divine presence, preserves a perpetual cheerfulness of temper, and enjoys every moment the satisfaction of thinking himself* in company with the dearest and best of friends.

(1.) *The moment*, du moment que—*fine*, délicat—*appears*, se montrer—*is*, elle est—*respecting*, sur—*constituent*, (which constitute)—*hesitation*, hésiter—*in*, pour.

(2.) *While*, tandis que—*struggling*, se tourmenter—*obvious*, qui s'offrent d'elle-mêmes—*glance*, ils pénètrent en un instant—*lightning*, foudre, f.—*through*, traverse—*track*, espace—*that*, qu'on—*be measured*, mesurer.

(3.) *Under*, dans—*sense*, conviction—*preserves*, conserver—*perpetual*, constant—*cheerfulness*, gaieté—*temper*, caractère—*enjoys*, jouir de—*of thinking*, se croire—*in*, dans la—*with*, de.

532. Rule II.—The article is put before substantives employed in the sense of an extract, or denoting only a part of a species; but it is omitted if they be preceded by an adjective or a word of quantity.

EXAMPLES.

Du pain *et* de l'eau *me feraient plaisir*,	Some bread and water would please me.
Je vis hier des savans *qui ne pensent pas comme vous*,	I yesterday saw some learned men, who do not think as you do.
Voilà de beaux tableaux,	There are beautiful pictures.
J'achetai hier beaucoup de livres,	I bought yesterday many books.
Que de livres *j'achetai hier !*	How many books I bought yesterday !

533. Remark.—Among the words of quantity must be reckoned *plus*, *moins*, *pas*, *point*, and *jamais*.

EXAMPLES.

Il n'y eut jamais plus de lumières,	There never was more learning.
Il y a moins d'habitans à Paris qu'à Londres,	There are fewer inhabitants in Paris than in London.
Je ne manque pas d'amis,	I do not want for friends.

534. EXCEPTIONS.—*Bien* is the only word of quantity which is followed by the article.

EXAMPLES.

Il a bien de l'esprit,	He has a great deal of wit.
Elle a bien de la grâce,	She is very graceful.

535. REMARK.—The sense of extract is marked in English by the word *some* or *any*, either expressed or understood, which answers to *quelques*, a particular adjective, and consequently to *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*, which are elegantly used instead of *quelque*, *quelques*, &c.

536. These expressions—*des petits-maîtres*, *des petits-pâtés*, &c.—are not exceptions to this rule; because, in cases of this kind, the substantives are so united with the adjectives as to form but one and the same word. We should likewise say, *le propre* des *belles actions*, *les sentimens* des *anciens philosophes*, &c.; because, in expressions of this kind, the substantives are taken in a general sense.

EXERCISE.

1. We could not cast our eyes on either shore without seeing *opulent* cities, *country houses* agreeably situated, *lands* yearly covered with a golden harvest, *meadows* abounding in flocks and herds, *husbandmen* bending under the weight of the fruits, and *shepherds* who made the echoes around them repeat the sweet sounds of their pipes and flutes.

2. Provence and Languedoc produce *oranges*, *lemons*, *figs*, *olives*, *almonds*, *chestnuts*, *peaches*, *apricots*, and *grapes*, of an uncommon sweetness.

3. The man who has never seen this pure light is as* blind* as* one* who is born blind: he dies without having seen any thing; at most, he perceives nothing but *glimmering and false lights*, *vain shadows* and *phantoms* that have no reality.

4. Among the Romans, those who were convicted of having used *illicit* or *unworthy means* to obtain an employ, were excluded from it for ever.

5. Those who govern are like the celestial bodies, which have *great splendor* and *no rest*.

6. *What beauty*, *sweetness*, *modesty*, and, at the same time, *what nobleness* and *greatness* of soul!

7. Themistocles, in order to ruin Aristides, made use of *many* artifices, which would have covered him with infamy in the eyes of posterity, had not the eminent services which he rendered his country blotted out that stain.

(1) *Could*, pouvoir, H.—*our*, les—*either*, les deux—*seeing*, apercevoir, A.—*yearly*, tous les ans—*covered with*, qui se couvrent de—*abounding in*, remplis de—*flocks and herds*, troupeau—*bending*, qui étaient accablés—*weight*, poids—*shepherds*, bergers—*pipes*, chalumeau—*the echoes*, aux échos—*around them*, d'alentour.

(3.) *Who is born blind*, aveugle né—*without having*, n'avoir jamais, C.—*any thing*, rien—*at most*, tout au plus—*perceives nothing but*, apercevoir ne que—*glimmering*, sombre—*lights*, lueur—*no reality*, rien de réel.

(4.) *Used*, employer—*illicit or unworthy means*, moyen illicite ou voie indigne, pl. *were*, H.—*from it*, en.

(5.) *Great*, beaucoup de—*splendor*, éclat—*no rest* (that have no rest), repos.

(6.) *What*, que de.———(7.) *Ruin*, perdre—*made use of many*, employer J. bien—*artifices*, manœuvres—*with*, de—*infamy*, opprobre—*in*, à—*had*, si—*rendered*, G. à—*blotted out*, effacer, T.—*stain* tache.

8. The consequences *of great passions* are blindness of mind and depravity of heart.

9. *Noblemen* should never forget that their high birth imposes great duties on* them.

(9.) *Noblemen*, gentilhomme—*should*, devoir, F.

537. Rule III.—The article is put before proper names of countries, regions, rivers, winds, and mountains.

EXAMPLES.

La France a les Pyrénées et la Méditerranée au sud, la Suisse et la Savoie à l'est, les Pays-Bas au nord, et l'océan à l'ouest,	France is bounded on the south by the Pyrenees and the Mediterranean, on the east by Switzerland and Savoy, on the north by the Netherlands, and on the west by the ocean.
La Tamise, le Rhône, l'aquilon, les Alpes, le Cantal,	The Thames, the Rhone, the north wind, the Alps, the Cantal.

538. Remark.—By apposition we find the words *le mont Parnasse, le mont Valérien*, &c., *le fleuve Don*, &c. But we should say, *la montagne de Tarare*, &c., *la rivière de Seine*, &c., though never *le fleuve du Rhône*, but simply *le Rhône*.

EXERCISE.

1. *Europe* is bounded on the north by the Frozen Ocean; on the south by the Mediterranean Sea, which separates it from *Africa;* on the east by the continent of *Asia;* on the west by the Atlantic Ocean. It contains the following states:—on the north, *Norway, Sweden, Denmark*, and *Russia;* in the middle, *Poland, Prussia, Germany, the United Provinces, the Netherlands, France, Switzerland, Bohemia, Hungary, the British Isles;* on the south, *Spain, Portugal, Italy, Turkey in Europe.*

2. The principal rivers in Europe are, the *Wolga*, the *Don* or *Tanaïs*, and the *Boristhenes* or *Nieper*, in Muscovy; the *Danube*, the *Rhine*, and the *Elbe*, in Germany; the *Vistula* or *Wezel*, in Poland; the *Loire*, the *Seine*, the *Rhone*, and the *Garonne*, in France; the *Ebro*, the *Tagus*, and the *Douro*, in Spain; the *Po*, in Italy; the *Thames* and the *Severn*, in England; and the *Shannon*, in Ireland.

3. The principal mountains in Europe are, the *Daarne Fields*, between Norway and Sweden; *Mount Crapel*, between Poland and Hungary; he *Pyrenean Mountains*, between France and Spain; the *Alps*, which divide France and Germany from Italy.

4. The bleak *north wind* never blows here, and the heat of summer is tempered by the cooling *zephyrs* which arrive to refresh the air towards the middle of the day.

(1.) *Bounded*, borné—*on*, à—*frozen ocean*, mer glaciale, f.—*south*, sud *or* midi—*Mediterranean sea*, Méditerranée, f.—*east*, est *or* orient—*west*, ouest *or* occident—*British isles*, iles Britanniques—*Turkey in*, Turquie de.

(2.) *Muscovy*, Moscovie—*Rhine*, Rhin, m.—*Vistula*, Vistule, f.—*Loire*, f.—*Seine*, f.—*Rhône*, m.—*Garonne*, f.—*Ebro*, Ebre—*Tagus*, Tage, m.—*Thames*, Tamise, f.—*Severn*, Saverne, f.

(3.) *Pyrenean Mountains*, Pyrénées.

4.) *Bleak*, rigoureux—*north wind*, aquilon—*heat*, ardeur—*cooling*, rafraîchissant—*arrive*, venir—*to refresh*, adoucir

539. Exceptions.—The article is not used before the names of countries,

540. 1, When those countries have the names of their capitals; as, *Naples est un pays délicieux*, Naples is a delightful country.

541. 2, When these are governed by the preposition *en;* as, *il est en France*, he is in France; *il est en Espagne*, he is in Spain.

542. 3, When those names are governed by some preceding noun, and have the sense of an adjective; as, *vins de France*, French wines; *noblesse d'Angleterre*, the English nobility.

543. 4, When speaking of those countries as of places we come from; as, *je viens de France*, I come from France; *j'arrive d'Italie*, I am just arrived from Italy. However, when speaking of the four parts of the world, the present practice favors the use of the article; as, *je viens de l'Amérique*, *j'arrive de l'Asie.*

EXERCISE.

1. *Naples* may be called a paradise, from its beauty and fertility. [2](From this country) [1](some suppose) Virgil took the model of the Elysian Fields.

2. I have been a* prisoner *in Egypt*, as a* Phœnician: under that name I have long suffered, and under that name I have been set at liberty.

3. He has received French and Spanish wines, Italian silks, Provence oil, and English wool.

4. We set sail *from Holland* for the Cape of Good Hope.

5. I was but just arrived *from Russia* when I had the misfortune to lose my father.

6. I had set off *from America* when my brother arrived there.

(1) *From*, à cause de—*from this country*, que c'est là où—*some suppose*, quelques personnes penser.
(2) *Prisoner*, captif—*under that name*, c'est sous ce nom que.
(4.) *Set sail*, partir—*for*, pour se rendre.
(5.) *I was but just*, ne faire que de.
(6.) *Set off*, partir—*there*, y.

544. The article is also used before the names of countries, either distant or little known; as, *la Chine*, China; *le Japon*, Japan; *le Mexique*, Mexico; and before those which have been formed from common nouns; as, *le Hâvre*, *le Perche*, *la Flèche*, &c.

545. Remark.—In English the article is generally omitted before the names of countries.

Cases in which the Article is not used.

546. Rule I.—The article is omitted before nouns common when, in using them, nothing is said as to the extent of their signification.

EXAMPLES.

Le sage n'a ni amour, *ni* haîne,	The wise man has neither love nor hatred.
Ils ont renversé religion, morale, gouvernement, sciences, beaux-arts, *en un mot, tout ce qui fait la gloire et la force d'un Etat,*	They have overturned religion, morality government, sciences, fine arts, in a word, every thing which constitutes the glory and strength of a state.

547. Hence the article is not employed before nouns,

548. 1, When they are in the form of a title or an address.

EXAMPLES.

Préface,	Preface.	*Il demeure*	He lives in
Livre premier,	Book the first.	*Rue Piccadilly,*	Piccadilly,
Chapitre dix,	Chapter the tenth.	*Quartier St. James,*	St. James's.

549. 2, When they are governed by the preposition *en.*

EXAMPLES.

Regarder en pitié, To look with pity. *Vivre en roi,* To live as a king.

550. 3, When they are joined to the verbs *avoir* or *faire,* with which they form only one idea.

EXAMPLES.

Avoir peur,	To be afraid.	*Faire pitié,*	To excite pity.

551. 4, When they are used as an apostrophe or interjection.

EXAMPLE.

Courage, soldats, tenez ferme, Courage, soldiers, stand firm.

552. 5, When they serve to qualify a noun or pronoun.

EXAMPLES.

Il est quelquefois plus qu'homme,	He is sometimes more than man.
Son Altesse Royale le Duc d'York, prince du sang, &c.	His Royal Highness the Duke of York, prince of the blood.

553. 6, The article is not put before the substantive beginning an incidental sentence, which is opposed to what has been said.

EXAMPLE.

Tous les peuples de la terre ont une idée plus ou moins développée d'un Etre-Suprême ; preuve *évidente que le péché originel n'a pas tout-à-fait obscurci l'entendement,*	All the nations of the earth have an idea more or less clear of a Supreme Being; an evident proof that original sin has not totally obscured the understanding.

554. 7, When they are governed by the words *genre, espèce, sorte,* or terms of this kind.

EXAMPLES.

Sorte de fruit,	A sort of fruit.
Genre d'ouvrage,	A kind of work.
Monceau d'argent,	A heap of money.
Bande de voleurs,	A band of robbers.
Pile de livres,	A pile of books.
Meute de chiens,	A pack of dogs.

EXERCISE.

1. The highways are bordered with *laurels*, *pomegranates*, *jessamines*, and *other trees*, which* are* always green, and always in bloom. The mountains are covered with *flocks*, which yield a fine wool, in great request among all the known nations (of the world).*

2. The fleets of Solomon, under the conduct of the Phœnicians, made frequent voyages to the land of Ophir and Tharsis (of the kingdom of Sophala, in Ethiopia), whence they returned at the end of three years, laden with *gold*, *silver*, *ivory*, *precious stones*, and other kinds of *merchandise*.

3. [2](*Costly furniture*) [1](is not allowed there), nor *magnificent attire*, nor *sumptuous feasts*, nor *gilded palaces*.

4. We contemplated with pleasure the extensive fields covered with yellow ears of corn, the* *rich gifts* of bounteous Ceres.

5. He was *in a kind of ecstacy* when he perceived us.

6. In the most corrupt age, he lived and died *a wise man*.*

7. Are you surprised that the worthiest men are *but men*, and betray remains of the weakness of humanity, amid the innumerable snares and difficulties which* are* inseparable from royalty?

8. *He excited our pity* when we saw him after his disgrace.

9. Hear then, *O nations* full of valor! and you, *O chiefs*, so wise and so united! hear what I have* to* offer to you.

10. Out of this cavern issued, from time to time, a black thick smoke, which made *a sort of night* at mid-day.

(1.) *Highways*, chemin—*with*, de—*pomegranates*, grenadier—*in bloom*, fleuri—*yield*, fournir—*wool*, laine, pl.—*in great request*, recherché—*among*, de.
(2.) *End*, bout—*laden*, chargé.
(3.) *Is not allowed there*, on n'y souffre ni—*furniture*, meuble—*costly*, précieux—*attire*, ornement—*feasts*, repas.
(4.) *Extensive*, vaste—*fields*, campagne—*ears*, épi—*bounteous*, fécond, f.
(5.) *In a kind of*, comme en.
(6.) *Age*, siècle.
(7.) *That*, de ce que—*worthy*, estimable—*but*, encore—*betray*, montrer—*remains*, reste—*difficulties*, embarras.
(8.) *He excited our pity*, il nous fit pitié.
(9.) *Hear*, écouter.
(10.) *Out of*, de—*issued*, sortir—*thick*, et épais—*mid-day*, milieu du jour.

555. Rule II.—The article is not used either before nouns preceded by the pronominal adjectives *mon*, *ton*, *son*, *notre*, *votre*, *leur*, *ce*, *nul*, *aucun*, *chaque*, *tout* (used for *chaque*), *certain*, *plusieurs*, *tel*, or before those which are preceded by a cardinal number without any relation whatever.

EXAMPLES.

Nos mœurs *mettent le prix à nos richesses*,	Our manners fix the value of our riches.
Toute nation *a ses lois*,	Each nation has its laws.
Cent ignorans *doivent-ils l'emporter sur un homme instruit?*	Are a hundred blockheads to be preferred to one learned man?

EXERCISE.

1. *That good father* was happy in his children and his children were happy in him.

2 *Those imitative sounds* are common to all languages, and form, as it were, their* real basis.

3. *Every man* has his foibles, his moments of ill* humor, even his irregularities.

4. *Each plant* has virtues peculiar to it, the knowledge of which could not but be infinitely useful.

5. *In all his instructions*, he is careful to remember that grammar, logic, and rhetoric are three sisters that ought never to be disjoined.

(2.) *Common*, fondu—*to*, dans—*and form, as it were*, et ils en sont comme la—*real*, fondamentale.
(4.) *Peculiar*, qui sont propres—*to it*, lui—*could*, N.—*not but*, ne que.
(5.) *He is careful to remember*, il ne point perdre de vue—*ought*, on devoit—*to be disjoined*, séparer.

556. Rule III.—Proper names of deities, men, animals, towns, and particular places, do not take the article.

EXAMPLES.

Dieu *a créé le ciel et la terre*,	God has made heaven and earth.
Jupiter *était le premier des dieux*,	Jupiter was the first of the gods.
Bucéphale *était le cheval d'Alexandre*,	Bucephalus was Alexander's horse.
Rome *est une ville d'une grande beauté*,	Rome is a city of great beauty.

557. Exceptions.—Proper names, however, take the article when used in a limited sense.

EXAMPLES.

Le *Dieu des Chrétiens*,	*The* God of Christians.
Le *Dieu de paix*,	*The* God of peace.
Le *Jupiter d'Homère*,	Homer's Jupiter.
Le *Bucéphale d'Alexandre*,	Alexander's Bucephalus,
L'*Ancienne Rome*,	Ancient Rome.
La *Rome moderne*,	Modern Rome.

558. N. B.—In imitation of the Italians, the French use the article before the names of several painters and poets of that nation, by an elliptical mode of expression, the words *peintre*, *poète*, or *seigneur* being understood.

EXERCISE.

1. *Jupiter*, son of *Saturn* and *Cybele* or *Ops*, after having expelled his father from the throne, divided the paternal* inheritance with his two brothers, *Neptune* and *Pluto*.

2. On a dispute, at a feast of the gods, between *Juno*, *Pallas*, and *Venus*, for the pre-eminence of beauty, *Jupiter*, not being able to bring them to an agreement, referred the decision to *Paris*, a shepherd of Mount Ida, with directions that a golden apple should be given to the fairest. *Paris* assigned to *Venus* the golden* prize.

3. *God* said, let there* be light; and there* was light.

(1.) *Expelled*, chasser—*divided*, en partager J.—*inheritance*, héritage.
(2.) *On*, dans—*at a feast*, qu'il y eut à un festin—*being able*, pouvoir—*to bring to an agreement*, accorder—*referred*, renvoyer—*directions*, ordre—*that a golden*, &c. *to give a golden apple to*—*assigned*, adjuger

4. *The Apollo di Belvidere* and *the Venus di Medicis* are valuable remains of antiquity.

5. *May* and *September* are the two finest months of the year in the south of France.

6. *The God of Abraham, Isaac,* and *Jacob* was the only true God.

(4) *Di Belvidere* de Belvéder—*di*, de—*valuable*, précieux.
(6.) *Only*, seul.

CHAPTER III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

Of the Adjective with the Article.

559. Rule I.—Adjectives used substantively are, like substantives common, accompanied by the article, if the occasion require it.

EXAMPLE.

Les fous *inventent les modes, et* les sages *s'y conforment,*	Fools invent fashions, and wise men conform to them.

EXERCISE.

1. Were the *learned* of antiquity to come to life again, they would be much astonished at the extent of our knowledge.

2. *The ignorant* have, in a* large stock of presumption, what they want in real knowledge, and that is the reason they are admired by *fools*.

(1.) *Were the*, si les—*to come again*, revenir H.—*life*, monde—*at*, de—*knowledge*, connaissance, pl.
(2.) *Large stock*, forte dose—*they want*, il leur manquer—*knowledge*, science—*the reason*, ce qui fait que—*they are*, &c., the fools admire them.

560. Rule II.—When a noun is accompanied by two adjectives, expressing *opposite* qualities, the article must be repeated before each adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Les vieux *et* les nouveaux *soldats sont remplis d'ardeur,*	The old and the newly-raised soldiers are full of ardor.
Il faut fréquenter la bonne *compagnie et fuir* la mauvaise,	We ought to frequent good and shun bad company.

561. Remark.—But if those qualities be nearly similar, the article is not repeated; as, *Le sage et pieux Fénélon* If merely different, it is perhaps better to repeat it; as, *Le sensible et l'ingénieux Fénélon.*

562. N. B.—In French, the substantive must be joined to the first adjective, when governed by different words.

EXERCISE.

1. The *ancient* and *modern* writers are not agreed upon that point.

2. The wise man preserves the same tranquillity of mind in *good* or *bad* fortune.

3. The man who is jealous of his reputation frequents *good* and shuns *bad* company.

4. *Grand* and *vigorous* thoughts are always the offspring of genius.

(1.) *Writers*, auteur—*are agreed*, s'accorder.
(2.) *The wise man*, le sage.
(3.) *Vigorous*, fort—*offspring*, fruit.

563. Rule III.—The article is used before the adjective which is joined to a proper name, either to express its quality, or to distinguish the person spoken of from those who might bear the same name.

EXAMPLES.

Le sublime Bossuet,	*Le vertueux Fénélon*,	*Le tendre Racine*,
The sublime Bossuet,	The virtuous Fenelon.	The tender Racine.
Louis le Gros,	*Louis le Juste*,	*Louis le Grand*,
Louis the Fat.	Louis the Just.	Louis the Great.

564. Remark.—If the adjective which is joined to a proper name precede that name, it expresses a quality which may be common to many; if it follow, it expresses a distinguishing quality. Thus, *Le savant Varron*, and *Varron le savant*, do not convey the same meaning: in the first example, *Varron* merely obtains the quality of *savant;* in the second, *Varron* is distinguished for his learning from all of the same name.

EXERCISE.

1. The *great Corneille* astonishes by beauties of the first order and by faults of the worst taste. If the *tender Racine* does not often rise so high, at least, he is always equal, and possesses the art of always interesting the heart.

2. The more we read the fables of the *good* and *artless La Fontaine*, the more we are convinced they are a book for all ages, and the manual of the man of taste.

3. It was only under the reign of *Louis the Just* (XIII.), that good taste began to show itself in France; but it was under that of *Louis the Great* that it was carried to perfection.

(1.) *By*, par des—*order*, ordre—*is always equal*, se soutenir—*possesses*, avoir.
(2.) *The more we*, plus on—*artless*, simple—*are convinced*, on se convainc—*they are*, que c'est—*a*, le—*for*, de—*manual*, manuel.
(3.) *Only*, ne que—*carried*, porter à.

565. Rule IV.—When a superlative relative precedes a substantive, the article serves for both; if it follow, the article must be repeated before each.

EXAMPLES.

Les plus habiles *gens font quelquefois* les plus grandes *fautes;* or
Les *gens* les plus habiles *font quelquefois* les *fautes* les plus grandes,
The ablest men sometimes commit the grossest blunders.

EXERCISE.

1. It has been said of the Telemachus of the virtuous Fénélon, that it is *the most useful* present the muses have made to mankind; for, could the happiness of man be produced by a poem, it would be by that.

2. *The smoothest waters* often conceal *the most dangerous* gulfs.

(1.) *It has been said*, on a dit—*present*, don que—*have made*, R.—*could*, (if the, &c could H.)—*be produced by*, naître de—*would be*, naître, N.
(2.) *Smoothest*, tranquille.

The Place of Adjectives.

566. Rule I.—Pronominal and numerical adjectives precede their substantives as do generally the following sixteen: *beau, bon, brave, cher, chétif, grand, gros, jeune, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre, petit, saint, vieux,* and *vrai,* when taken in their literal sense.

EXAMPLES.

Mon père,	My father.	*Plusieurs officiers,*	Several officers.
Quel homme,	What man.	*Grand homme,*	Great man.
Vieille femme,	Old woman,	*Six arbres,*	Six trees.
Dix guinées,	Ten guineas.	*Chétive mine,*	Mean look.

567 Exception 1, The pronoun *quelconque.*

EXAMPLE.

D'une manière quelconque, In whatever manner.

568. 2, Adjectives of number, joined to proper names, pronouns, and substantives, as quotations.

EXAMPLES.

George Trois,	George Third.	*Chapitre dix,*	Chapter tenth.
Lui dixième,	He the Tenth.	*Page trente,*	Page the thirtieth.

569. 3, The above sixteen adjectives, when connected by a conjunction with another adjective, which is to be placed after the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

C'est une femme grande et bien faite, She is a tall, well-made woman.

570. Remark.—In English, two or even several adjectives may qualify a substantive, without a conjunction: but in French, this is generally required; as, *c'est un homme aimable et poli,* he is an amiable, well-behaved man; except when custom allows the substantives to be placed *between* two adjectives; as, *c'est un grand homme sec,* he is a tall, thin man.

EXERCISE ON THE PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

1. There have been ages when a *great man* was a sort of prodigy, produced by a mistake of nature.

2. In almost all nations, the *great geniuses* that have adorned them were contemporaries.

(1.) *Ages*, des siècles—*when*, où—*produced*, enfanter.
(2.) *In*, chez—*nations*, peuple—*adorned*, illustrer, G.

3. *Young people*, says Horace, are supple to the enticements of vice, lavish, presumptuous, and equally impetuous and light in their passions; *old people*, on the contrary, are covetous, dilatory, timid, ever alarmed about the future, always complaining, hard to please, panegyrists of times past, censors of the present, and great givers of advice.

4. *What man* was ever satisfied with his condition and dissatisfied with his abilities?

5. *Thirty chambers*, which have a communication one with another, and each of them an iron door, with six huge bolts, are the places where he shuts himself up.

(3.) *People*, gens—*supple*, souple—*lavish*, prodigue—*impetuous*, vif—*old*, f. pl. (the following adjectives in the pl.)—*covetous*, avare—*dilatory*, temporiseur—*about*, sur—*complaining*, plaintif—*hard*, difficile—*please*, contenter—*times*, sing.
(4.) *Dissatisfied*, mécontent—*abilities*, esprit.
(5.) *Have a communication*, communiquer—*each of them*, dont chacun avoir—*huge*, gros—*bolts*, verrou—*places*, lieu, sing.—*shuts himself*, se renfermer.

571. RULE II.—Adjectives formed from the participle present of verbs, are generally placed after the substantive: *ouvrage divertissant*, entertaining work; and from the participle past, always: *figure arrondie*, round figure; those expressing form: *table ovale*, oval table; color: *maison blanche*, white house; taste: *herbe amère*, bitter herb; sound: *orgue harmonieux*, harmonious organ; action: *procureur actif*, active attorney; effect: *coutume abusive*, custom founded in abuse; arrangement: *ordre grammatical*, grammatical order; species: *qualité occulte*, occult quality; nation: *générosité anglaise*, English generosity; those ending in *-esque*, *-il*, *-ule*, *-ic*, *-ique*, *-in*:

Style Burlesque,	Burlesque style.	*Bien public*,	Public welfare.
Jargon puéril,	Childish jargon.	*Ris sardonique*,	Sardonic grin.
Femme crédule,	Credulous woman,	*Voix enfantine*,	Childish voice.

But in this, custom is the best guide

EXERCISE.

1. An *affected* simplicity is a *refined* imposture.

2. The *smiling* images of Theocritus, Virgil, and Gessner, excite in the soul a soft sensibility.

3. In that *antique* palace are to be seen neither *wreathed* columns, nor *gilded* wainscots, nor *valuable* basso-relievoes, nor ceilings curiously *painted*, nor *grotesque* figures of animals, which never had existence but in the imagination of a child or a madman.

4. If *human* life is exposed to many troubles, it is also susceptible of many pleasures.

5. A *ridiculous* man is seldom so by halves.

(1.) *Refined*, délicat.
(2.) *Smiling*, riant—*excite*, porter—*soft*, doux.
(3.) *Are to be seen*, on ne voit—*wreathed*, torse—*wainscots*, lambris—*basso-relievoes*, bas relief—*ceilings*, plafond—*curiously*, artistement—*had existence*, exister.
(4.) *Many*, bien de—*troubles*, peine.
(5.) *So*, le—*by halves*, à demi.

6. *Spanish* manners have, at first sight, something harsh and uncivilized,
7. *French* urbanity has become a proverb among *foreign* nations.

(6.) *Spanish*, espagnol—*manners*, mœurs—*at first sight*, au premier abord—*uncivilized*, sauvage.
(7.) *Become*, passer en—*among*, chez.

572. Rule III.—Although it may seem that adjectives expressing moral qualities are placed indifferently before or after the substantive, yet taste and a correct ear will assign them their proper situation.

573. In conversation, or in a broken, loose style, it may be indifferent to say, *femme aimable* or *aimable femme; talens sublimes* or *sublimes talens*, &c.; but in the dignified style, the place of the adjective may, in a variety of instances, affect the beauty of a sentence.

EXERCISE.

1. An *amiable* woman gives to every thing she says an *inexpressible* grace; the more we hear, the more we wish to hear her.
2. The *majestic* eloquence of Bossuet is like a river which carries away every thing in its rapid course.
3. The *sublime* compositions of Rubens have made [2]an [4]English [3]traveller [1]say, that this *famous* painter was born in Flanders, through a mistake of nature.

(1.) *Give to*, répandre sur—*we*, on. [cours.
(2.) *River*, fleuve—*carries away*, entraîner—*its rapid course*, la rapidité de son
(3.) *Say*, dire à—*famous*, célèbre—*through*, par—*mistake*, méprise.

Regimen of Adjectives.

574. Rule.—A noun may be governed by two adjectives, provided these do not require different regimens; as, *Cet homme est* utile *et* cher à sa famille, that man is useful and dear to his family. But it would be incorrect to say, *Cet homme est* utile *et* chéri de sa famille, that man is useful and beloved by his family; because the adjective *utile* does not govern the preposition *de*.

EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

1. A young man, whose actions are all regulated by honor, and whose only aim is perfection in every thing, is *beloved* and *courted* by every body.
2. Cardinal Richelieu was all his life time *feared* and *hated* by the great whom he had humbled.
3. A young lady, mild, polite, and delicate, who sees in the advantages of birth, riches, wit, and beauty nothing but incitements to virtue, is very certain of being *beloved* and *esteemed* by every body.

(1.) *Actions are regulated by honor*, l'honneur dirige les actions—*whose only aim is*, qui ne se propose que—*courted*, recherché.
(2.) *Young lady*, demoiselle—*delicate*, décent—*nothing but*, ne que—*incitements* encouragement—*certain*, assuré.

Adjectives of Number.

575. *Unième* is used only after *vingt*, *trente*, *quarante*, *cinquante*, *soixante*, *quatre-vingts*, *cent*, and *mille*. *C'est la vingt-et-unième fois*, it is the twenty-first time. See page 58.

576. *Cent*, in the plural, takes *s*, except when followed by another noun of number; as,

Ils étaient deux cents,	They were two hundred.
Trois cents *hommes*,	Three hundred men.
Ils étaient deux cent dix,	They were two hundred and ten.

577. *Vingt*, in *quatre-vingts* and *six-vingts*, also takes *s*, when followed by a substantive; as,

Quatre-vingts hommes,	Eighty men.
Six-vingts abricots,	Six score apricots.

578. But it takes no *s* when followed by another term expressing number, *quatre-vingt-un arbres*, *quatre-vingt-dix hommes*.

579. The ordinal numbers, collective and distributive, always take the sign of the plural: *les premières douzaines*, the first dozens; *les quatre cinquièmes*, the four-fifths.

580. For dates, the French write *mil;* as, *mil sept cent-quatre-vingt-dix-neuf*, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, &c. See page 60.

581. REMARK.—*Cent* and *mille* are used indefinitely; as,

Il lui fit cent *caresses*,	He showed him *a hundred* marks of kindness.
Faites-lui mille *amitiés de ma part*,	Present him for me *a thousand* compliments.

EXERCISE ON THE ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

1. It was the *thirty-first* year after so glorious a peace when the war broke out again, with a fury of which history offers few examples.

2. There were only *three hundred*, and in spite of their inferiority in* numbers,* they attacked the enemy, beat, and dispersed them.

3. He has sold his country house for *two thousand five hundred and fifty* pounds.

4. Choose out of your nursery *eighty* fruit-trees and *ninety* dwarf-trees; divide them into dozens, and put in the first two dozens of each sort those whose fruits are most esteemed.

5. When Louis the Fourteenth made his entry into Strasburg the Swiss deputies having come to pay their respects to him, Le Tellier, archbishop of Reims, who saw among them the bishop of Basle, said to one

(1.) *Year*, année– *when*, que—*broke out again*, se rallumer.
(2.) *Only*, ne que—*in spite of*, malgré.———(3.) *Pounds*, livres sterling.
(4.) *Out of*, dans—*nursery*, pépinière—*fruit-trees*, pied d'arbre fruitier—*dwarf-trees*, arbre nain.
(5.) *Swiss.* (of the Swiss)—*pay*, présénter—*respect*, hommage—*one near him* son

near him, "That bishop is apparently some miserable character." "How!" replied the other, "he has a *hundred thousand* livres a year." "Oh, oh!" said the archbishop, "he is then a respectable man;" and showed him a thousand civilities.

voisin—*that bishop*, &c, c'est un misérable apparemment que cet évêque—*a year* de rente—*showed*, faire—*civilities*, caresse.

582. The French say, *le onze*, *du onze*, *au onze*, *sur les onze heures*, *sur les une heure*, pronouncing the words *onze* and *une* as if they were written with an *h* aspirated.

583. The cardinal numbers are used for the ordinal.

584. 1.—In reckoning time—that is, the *hour* of the day, the *day* of the month, the *year* of an era; as, *il est trois heures*, it is three o'clock; *le vingt de Mars*, the twentieth of March; *l'an mil sept cent dix*, &c. See pages 60.

585. 2.—In speaking of the order of sovereigns; as, *Louis seize*, *George trois*; except the first two of the series; as, *Henri premier*, *George second*. *Quint* for *cinq* is only said of the *Empereur Charles-quint* and the *Pape Sixte-quint*.

EXERCISE.

1. They made in the parish and in the neighboring places a collection which produced a *hundred and twenty-one* guineas.

2. William, surnamed the Conqueror, king of England and duke of Normandy, was one of the greatest generals of the *eleventh* century; he was born at Falaise, and was the natural son of Robert, duke of Normandy, and of Arlotte, a furrier's daughter.

3. Make haste; it will soon be *ten* o'clock. We shall have a good deal of difficulty to arrive in time.

4. The winter was so severe in *one thousand seven hundred and nine* that there was but one olive-tree that resisted it,* in a plain where there had been more than ten thousand.

5. It was the *twenty-first* of January, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-three, that the unhappy Louis *the sixteenth* was led to the scaffold.

(1.) *They*, on—*neighboring places*, voisinage, sing.—*collection*, quête.
(2.) *William*, Guillaume—*furrier*, fourreur. [*in*, à
(3.) *Make haste*, se dépêcher—*will be*, F.—*a good deal of difficulty* bien de la peine-
(4.) *Severe*, rude—*but*, ne que—*had been*, H.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUNS.

OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Office of Personal Pronouns.

586. The personal pronouns have the three characteristics of the substantive—that is, subject, regimen, and apostrophe; but with this difference, that some always form the subject; two only are used as an apostrophe: some always form the regimen, and lastly, others are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen.

587. *Je*, *tu*, *il*, and *ils*, are always the subject; these four pronouns cannot be separated from the verb which they govern but by personal pronouns acting as a regimen or by the negative *ne*.

EXAMPLES.

Je ne lui en veux rien dire,	I will say nothing to him about it.
Tu en apprendras des nouvelles,	Thou wilt hear news of it.
Il nous raconta son histoire,	He told us his history.
Ils sont survenus à l'improviste,	They are come unexpectedly

588. The *two* acting as an apostrophe are *toi*, thou, and *vous*, you, whether they stand alone or are preceded by the interjection *ô;* as, *toi*, *ô toi: vous*, *ô vous.*

EXERCISE ON PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. The better to bear the irksomeness of captivity and solitude, *I* sought for books; for *I* was overwhelmed with melancholy, for want of some knowledge to cherish and support my mind.

2. Since *thou* art more obdurate and unjust than thy father, mayest *thou* suffer evils more lasting and more cruel than his!

3. What! say *they;* do not men die fast enough without destroying each other? Life is so short, and yet it seems that it appears too long *to them.* Are *they* sent into the world to tear each other in pieces, and to make themselves wretched?

4. O *thou*, my son, my dear son, ease my heart: restore me what is dearer to me than my life! Restore to me my lost son, and restore thyself to thyself.

5. O *ye*, who hear me with so much attention, believe not that I despise men! No, no; I am sensible how glorious it is to toil to make them virtuous and happy; but this toil is full of anxieties and dangers.

(1.) *To bear*, supporter—*irksomeness*, ennui—*overwhelmed with*, accablé de—*for want*, faute—*to cherish*, qui pût nourrir—*support*, soutenir.

(2.) *Obdurate*, dur—*mayest*, pouvoir, Q.—*lasting*, long.

(3.) *Die fast enough*, être assez mortel—*destroying each other*, se donner encore une mort précipitée—*sent into*, sur—*world*, terre—*tear in pieces*, se déchirer—*make themselves*, se rendre.

(4.) *Ease*, soulager—*restore*, rendre—*lost* (whom I have lost), perdre.

(5.) *I am sensible*, savoir—*glorious*, grand—*to toil*, de travailler à—*toil* travail—*anxieties*, inquiétude, sing.

589. *Me*, *te*, *se*, *leur*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *y*, and *en* are always used as a regimen: *direct*, when acted upon by the verb—*indirect*, when referable to the prepositions *à* or *de*. (See page 155.) They always *precede* the *verb*, except in the imperative when affirmative, and can never be separated from *it* by any other word, except *tout*, *rien*, and *jamais*, which may intervene before an infinitive.

EXAMPLES.

C'est leur tout *refuser*,	It is refusing them every thing.
C'est ne me rien *permettre*,	It is allowing me nothing.
Il a juré de ne lui jamais *pardonner*,	He has sworn he would never pardon him.

590. *Me*, *te*, *se*, form a regimen, sometimes *direct* and sometimes *indirect: direct*, when they represent *moi*, *toi*, *soi; indirect*, when they supply the place of *à moi*, *à toi*, *à soi*. See pages 61 and 62.

EXAMPLES.

Vous me soupçonnez mal à propos,	You suspect me unjustly.
Je t'en remercie,	I thank thee for it.
Il se perd de gaieté de cœur,	He ruins himself out of wantonness.
Vous me donnez un sage conseil,	You give me prudent advice.
Je te donne cela,	I give thee that.
Il se donne bien du mouvement,	He is an active, stirring man.

591. *Leur* is always indirect, as it stands for *à eux*, or *à elles*.

EXAMPLE.

Je leur représentai le tort qu'ils, ou *qu'elles se fesaient*,	I represented to them the injury they did themselves.

EXERCISE.

1. He has been speaking *to them* with such energy as has astonished *them*.

2. Women ought to be very circumspect; for a mere appearance is sometimes more prejudicial *to them* than a real fault.

3. He comes up to me with a smiling countenance, and, pressing my hand, says, "My friend, I expect you to-morrow at my house."

4. He said *to me*, "Wilt thou torment thyself incessantly for advantages, the enjoyment of which could not render *thee* more happy? Cast thy eyes around thee: see how every thing smiles *at thee*, and seems to invite *thee* to prefer a retired and tranquil life to the tumultuous pleasures of a vain world."

5. The ambitious man* agitates, torments, and destroys *himself* to obtain the places or the honors to which he aspires; and when he has obtained *them*, he is still dissatisfied.

(1.) *Such energy as*, une force qui.
(2.) *More*, simple—*more prejudicial*, faire plus de tort.
(3.) *Comes up with*, aborder de—*pressing*, serrer—*my hand*, la main—*says*, il me dit—*at my house*, chez moi.
(4.) *Incessantly*, sans cesse—*advantages*, des biens—*could*, savoir N.—*cast*, porter—*thy*, les—*smiles*, sourire.
(1.) *Destroys*, consumer—*to*, pour.

592. *Le, la, les*, are always direct regimen; as,

Je le *vois*, *je* la *vois*,	for *je vois* lui, *je vois* elle.
Je les *vois*,	for *je vois* eux, *je vois* elles.

593. But *y* and *en* are always indirect regimen; as,

Je n'y entends rien,	for *je n'entends rien* à cela.
Ces fruits sont bons, en *voulez-vous?*	for *voulez-vous* d'iceux?
Avez-vous reçu de l'argent?—oui, *j'*en *ai reçu*,	for *un peu*, *une certaine somme*, or *quantité* d'argent.

594. Though seeming to perform the function of regimen *direct* in this last and other phrases of the same kind, it is obvious that there is in the word *en* an ellipsis, which may be readily supplied. See pages 65 and 66.

EXERCISE.

1. I have known *him* since his childhood, and I always loved *him* on account of the goodness of his character.

2. This woman is always occupied in doing good works: you see *her* constantly consoling the unhappy, relieving the poor, reconciling enemies, and promoting the happiness of every one around *her*.

3. The more you live with men, the more you will be convinced that it is necessary to know *them* well before you* form a connexion with them.

4. Enjoy the pleasures of the world, I consent *to it;* but never give yourself up *to them*.

5. I shall never consent to that foolish scheme; do not mention it any* more.

6. Have you received some copies of the new work? Yes, I have, (received *some*).

(1) *Have known*, connaître F.—*loved*, G.—*on account*, à cause—*the goodness of his*, (his good).

(2.) *In*, à—*works*, œuvres, f.—*constantly*, sans cesse—*consoling*, A.—*relieving*, assister—*promoting*, faire—*every one around her*, tout ce qui l'environne.

(3.) *Live*, L.—*be convinced*, se convaincre—*before*, avant de—*form a connexion*, vous [lier A.

(4.) *Enjoy*, jouir de—*give yourself up*, se livrer.

(5.) *Scheme*, entreprise—*mention*, parler de.

(6.) *Copies*, exemplaires.

595. The pronouns which are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen, are *nous, vous, moi, toi, lui, elle, eux, elles*.

596. *Nous* and *vous* are the subject in *nous aimons, vous aimez;* the regimen direct in *ils nous aiment, ils vous aiment;* and indirect in *ils nous parlent, ils vous parlent*.

597. In general, *moi, toi*, are only the subject by apposition or reduplication, whether they precede or follow the verb; as,

Moi, dont il déchire la réputation, je ne lui ai jamais rendu que de bons offices,	I, whose reputation he is aspersing, always did him acts of kindness.
Toi, qui fais tant le brave, tu oserais, &c.,	Wouldst thou, who pretendest to be so brave, dare, &c.
Je prétends, moi,	I do maintain, I.
Tu dis donc, toi	Thou sayest then, thou.

598. Remark.—Sometimes the personal pronouns *je* and *tu* are not expressed, but understood; as,

Moi, trahir le meilleur de mes amis! I, betray my best friend!
Faire une lâcheté, toi! Thou, be guilty of such baseness!

that is, *je voudrais moi*, &c.! *tu pourrais toi*, &c.!

599. They are likewise the subject when they are placed in a kind of apposition expressed by *ce* and *il* in impersonal verbs; as, *qui fut bien aise? ce fut moi; ce ne peut être que toi; que vous reste-t-il?—moi.*

600. After a conjunction, they are either the subject or regimen, according to the nature of the phrase; as, *nous y étions mon père et moi; il ne craint ni toi ni moi.*

601. In phrases which are not imperative, *toi* and *moi* can only be the object by apposition before or after the verb; as, *voudriez-vous me perdre, moi, votre allié*, &c. *toi, je te soupçonnerais de perfidie!*

602. After a preposition, they alone can be employed; as, *vous servirez-vous de moi? selon moi vous avez raison; il est fâché contre toi.*

603. What has just been remarked of *toi* and *moi* is applicable to *lui*, but with this difference, that *lui* can only be the object after *ne—que*, signifying *only*, or in distributive phrases; as,

N'aimez que lui, je ne le trouve pas mauvais; mais ne me haïssez pas, That you should like only him, I do not disapprove, but do not hate me.

604. So, *protégez-nous, lui, à cause de*, &c. *et moi, parce que*, &c. we may likewise say by apposition, *aimez-le, lui qui*, &c.

605. *Eux* is employed in the same manner as *lui*, but differs from it in this, that it cannot be the regimen indirect, except after a preposition; as, *parliez-vous d'eux? est-ce à eux que vous parlez?*

606. Remark.—*Lui* and *eux* may be the subject in distributive phrases without being in apposition; as,

Mes frères et mon cousin m'ont secouru; eux m'ont relevé, et lui m'a pansé, My brothers and cousin assisted me they took me up, and he dressed my wounds.

607. The natural office of *elle* and *elles* is to form the subject; however, they are susceptible of all the other uses just mentioned, except that they cannot be the regimen indirect, unless preceded by a preposition; as, *c'est à elles que je parle*

EXERCISE.

1. In the education of youth, we should propose to ourselves to cultivate, to polish their* understanding, and thus to enable them to fill with dignity the different stations assigned them; but, above all, we ought to instruct them in that religious worship which God requires *of them*.

2. What! *you* would suffer *yourself* to be overwhelmed by adversity!

3. *I!* stoop to the man who has imbrued his hands in the blood of his king!

4. *Thou!* take that undertaking upon thyself? Canst* thou think of it?

5. Your two brothers and mine take charge of the enterprise; *they* find the money, and *he* will manage the work.

6. It is *I* who have engaged him to undertake this journey.

7. It is *thou* who hast brought this misfortune on thyself.

8. When you are at Rome, write *to me* as often as you can, and give *me* an account of every thing that can interest me.

9. He told it *to thee thyself*.

10. Fortune, like a traveller, shifts from inn to inn; if she lodges to-day *with me*, to-morrow, perhaps, she will lodge *with thee*.

11. Whom dost thou think we were talking of?—it was *of thee*.

12. Descartes deserves immortal praise, because it is *he* who has made reason triumph over authority in philosophy.

13. He is dissatisfied *with himself*.

14. She is never satisfied *with herself*.

15. The indiscreet often betray *themselves*.

16. Saumaise, speaking of the English authors, said that he had learned more from *them* than from any other.

17. To love a person, is to render him, on every occasion, all the services in our power, and to afford him, in society, every comfort that depends *upon us*.

(1.) *Youth*, jeunes gens—*should*, devoir F.—*to cultivate*, (to them)—*to polish*, (to them) orner—*understanding*, l'esprit—*enable*, disposer—*stations*, place—(which are) *assigned* (to) *them*—*worship*, culte—*requires*, demander.
(2.) *Suffer yourself*, se laisser N.—*to be overwhelmed*, abattre.
(3.) *Stoop to*, s'abaisser devant Q.—*imbrued*, souiller—*in*, de.
(4.) *Take upon thyself*, se charger N.—*of it*, y.
(5.) *Take charge*, se charger—*find*, fournir—*money*, fonds, pl.—*manage*, conduire F.
(6.) *Undertake*, faire—*journey*, voyage.
(7.) *Hast brought on thyself*, s'attirer G.
(8.) *Are*, L.—*san*, L.—*give*, faire—*an account*, le détail.
(9.) *Told*, dire G.
(10.) *Shifts from inn to inn*, changer d'auberge—*with*, chez—*she will lodge*, elle être L.
(11.) *Were talking*, parler S.
(12.) *Triumph over*, triompher de.
(13.) *Is dissatisfied with*, se déplaire.
(14.) *Satisfied with*, content de.
(15.) *Betray*, se trahir.
(17.) *In our power*, dont on être capable—*afford*, procurer à—*comfort*, agrément—*depends upon*, dépendre de.

On the Pronoun SOI.

608. *Soi* is generally accompanied by a preposition, and is used in phrases where there is an indeterminate pronoun, either expressed or understood: *on doit rarement parler de soi; il est essentiel de prendre garde à soi.* In this case, it is the regimen indirect, but it may be employed without a preposition.

609. 1.—With the verb *être ;* as, *En cherchant à tromper les autres, c'est souvent* soi *que l'on trompe,* or *on est souvent trompé soi-même,* in attempting to deceive others, we frequently deceive ourselves. In this situation it is the subject.

610. 2.—After *ne que,* or by apposition ; as,

N'aimer que soi, c'est n'être bon à rien,	To love only ourselves is being good for very little.
Penser ainsi, c'est s'aveugler soi-même,	To think in this manner, is to blind one's-self.

611. It is in these examples the regimen ; but when *de soi* and *en soi* are used in a definitive sense in speaking of things, they mean *de sa nature* and *dans sa nature.*

EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUN *SOI.*

1. To excuse in *one's-self* the follies which one cannot excuse in others is to prefer being a fool *one's-self* to seeing others so.
2. To be too much dissatisfied with *ourselves* is a weakness ; but to be too much satisfied *(with ourselves)* is *(a)* folly.
3. We ought to despise no one : how often have we needed the assistance of one more insignificant than *ourselves ?*
4. If we did not attend so much to *ourselves,* there would be less egotism in the world.
5. Vice is odious in *itself.*
6. The loadstone attracts iron (to *itself).*

(1) *Follies,* sottises—*others* autrui—*to prefer,* aimer mieux—*fool,* sot—*to seeing,* que de voir—*so,* tel.
(3.) *We ought,* il falloir F.—*how often,* combien de fois—*we,* on—*needed the assistance,* n'avoir pas besoin—*insignificant,* petit.
(4) *We,* on—*attend to,* s'occuper de—*egotism,* égoïsme.
(6.) *Loadstone,* aimant.

Cases where the Pronouns ELLE, ELLES, EUX, LUI, LEUR *may apply to things.*

612. The personal pronouns *elle* and *elles,* when the regimen, generally apply to persons only. Thus, in speaking of a woman, we must say, *Je m'approchai d'elle, je m'assis près d'elle ;* but, in speaking of a table, *Je m'en approchai, je m'assis auprès.*

613. However, with the prepositions *avec, après, à, de, dour, en,* &c. they may be applied to things. Thus, it is correct to say—of a river,

Cette rivière est si rapide, quand elle déborde, qu'elle entraine avec elle tout ce qu'elle rencontre ; elle ne laisse après elle que du sable et des cailloux,	That river is so rapid when it overflows that it carries away every thing it meets with in its course ; it leaves nothing behind but sand and pebbles.

614. —Of an enemy's army,

Nous marchâmes à elle,	We marched up to it.

615. —Of things, reasons, truth, &c.; as,

Ces choses sont bonnes d'elles-mêmes,	These things are good in themselves.
J'aime la vérité au point que je sacrifierais tout pour elle,	I love truth to that degree, that I would sacrifice every thing for it.
Ces raisons sont solides en elles-mêmes,	Those reasons are solid in themselves.

616. After the verb *être*, they are applied only to persons, and likewise when they are followed by the relatives *qui* and *que;* as, *C'est à elle, c'est d'elles que je parle, c'est elle-même qui vient.*

617. The same may be said of the pronoun *eux*, which is also generally applied to persons only, yet custom allows us to say,

Ce chien et ces oiseaux font tout mon plaisir ; je n'aime qu'eux ; eux seuls sont mon amusement ; je ne songe qu'à eux,	This dog and these birds are my only pleasure ; I love nothing but them ; they alone are my diversion ; I think of nothing else.

618. *Lui* and *leur* are generally applied to persons, but are sometimes used in speaking of animals, plants, and even inanimate objects ; as,

Ces chevaux sont rendus, faites-leur donner un peu de vin,	Those horses are exhausted ; give them a little wine.
Ces orangers vont périr, si on ne leur donne de l'eau,	Those orange-trees will die unless they have a little water.
Ces murs sont mal faits, on ne leur a pas donné assez de talus,	Those walls are not skilfully built ; they are not sufficiently sloped upward.

619. Upon these previous observations, then, may be founded the following

620. Rule.—The pronouns *elle*, *elles*, *eux*, *lui*, and *leur*, ought never to be applied to things, except when custom does not allow them to be replaced by the pronouns *y* and *en*.

EXERCISE.

1. Virtue is the first of blessings ; it is *from it* alone we are to expect happiness.

2. The labyrinth had been built upon the lake Mæris, and they had given *it* a prospect proportioned to its grandeur.

3. Mountains are frequented on account of the air one breathes on them : how many people are indebted *to them* for the recovery of their health ?

4. War brings in its train numberless evils.

5. It is a delicate affair which must not be too deeply investigated, it must be lightly passed over.

(1.) *Blessings*, bien—*are*, devoir
(2.) *Had been built*, on bâtir l.—*prospect*, vue. [*recovery*, rétablissement.
(3.) *On account*, à cause—*breathes*, respirer—*on them*, y—*are indebted for*, devoir—
(4.) *Brings*, entraîner—*in its train*, avec elle—*numberless*, bien de.
(5.) *Affair*, matière—*must*, il faut—*be deeply investigated*, approfondir A.—*be passed*, glisser—*over* dessus.

6. I have had my house repaired, and have given *it* quite* a new appearance.

7. Those trees are too much loaded; strip *them* of part of their fruit.

8. This book cost me a great deal, but I am indebted *to it* for my knowledge.

9. Self-love is captious; we, however, take *it* for our* guide; *to it* are all our actions directed, and *from it* we take counsel.

10. These arguments, although very solid *in themselves*, yet made no impression upon him, so powerful a chain is habit.

11. These reasons convinced me, and *by them* I formed my decision.

12. I leave you the care of that bird; do not forget to give *it* water.

(6.) *Have had*, faire G.—*appearance*, air.
(7.) *Strip*, ôter—*of part*, une partie.
(8.) *A great deal*, cher—*knowledge*, instruction.
(9.) *We*, (it is *it* that we)—*to it*, (it is *to it* that we direct all, &c.)—*direct*, rapporter *from it*, (and it is *from it* that, &c.)
(10.) *No*, ne aucun—*so strong*, &c., (so much habit is a, &c.)—*habit*, habitude.
(11.) *And by*, d'après (and it is from them that)—*formed my decision*, se décider.

Difficulty respecting the Pronoun LE *explained.*

621. *Le, la, les*, are sometimes pronouns and sometimes articles. The article is always followed by a noun—*le roi, la reine, les hommes*—whereas the pronoun is always joined to a verb, *je le connais, je la respecte, je les estime.*

622. The pronoun *le* may supply the place of a substantive or an adjective, or even of a member of a sentence.

623. There is no difficulty when it relates to a whole member of a sentence; it is then always put in the masculine singular; as,

On doit s'accommoder à l'humeur des autres autant qu'on le peut, We ought to accommodate ourselves to the temper of others as much as we can.

EXERCISE.

1. The laws of nature and decency oblige us equally to defend the honor and interest of our parents when we can do *it* without injustice.

2. We ought not to condemn, after their death, those who have not been *condemned* during their life.

(1.) *Decency*, bienséance.——(2.) *We ought*, falloir—*condemned*, le.

624. Nor is there any difficulty when *le* supplies the place of a substantive; it then always takes the gender and number of that substantive; as, *Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant?—Oui, je la suis.* Madame, are you the mother of that child?—Yes, I am. *Mesdames, êtez-vous les parentes dont Monsieur m'a parlé?—Oui, nous les sommes.*

625. REMARK.—Though the word relating to the following questions is not expressed in English, yet it must always be so in French; this word is *le*, which takes either gender or number, according to its relation

EXERCISE.

1. Is that your idea?—Can you doubt that it is?
2. Are you Mrs. Such-a-one?—Yes, I am.
3. Are those your servants?—Yes, they are.

(1.) *Idea*, pensée—*that it is*, ce être Q.
(2.) *Mrs.*, Madame—*such-a-one*, un tel.
(3.) *Those*, ce là—*they*, ce.

626. It only remains therefore to lay down the following

627. Rule.—The pronoun *le* takes neither gender nor number when occupying the place of an adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Madame, êtes-vous enrhumée?—Oui, je le suis.
Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de ce discours?—Oui, nous le sommes.
Fut-il jamais une femme plus malheureuse que je le suis?

628. Remark.—This rule is observed when the substantives are used adjectively; as,

Madame, êtes-vous mère?—Oui, je le suis.
Mesdames, êtes-vous parentes?—Oui, nous le sommes.
Elle est fille, et le sera toute sa vie.

629. But not if the adjectives be used substantively; as,

Madame, êtes-vous la malade?—Oui, je la suis.

630. Therefore this question—*Etes-vous fille de M. le duc?*—is to be answered, *Oui, je le suis;* but this—*Etes-vous la fille de M. le duc?—Oui, je la suis.*

EXERCISE.

1. Ladies, are you glad to have seen the new piece?—Yes, we are.
2. I, a* slave! I, born to command! Alas! it is but too true that I am *so*.
3. She was jealous of her authority, and she ought to be *so*.
4. Was there ever a girl more unhappy, and treated with more ridicule than I am.
5. You have found me amiable: why have I ceased to appear *so* to you?
6. Have we ever been so quiet as we are?
7. Madam, are you married?—Yes, I am.
8. Madam, are you the bride?—Yes, I am.

(1.) *Ladies*, Mesdames.
(2.) *Slave*, esclave—*but*, ne que.
(3.) *Ought*, devoir II.
(4.) *With more ridicule*, plus ridiculement.

631. The same rule is likewise observed with the article placed before *plus* or *moins* and an adjective. It takes neither gender nor number when there is no comparison; as,

La lune ne nous éclaire pas autant que le soleil, même quand elle est le plus brillante,	The moon does not give us so much light as the sun, even when it shines brightest.

632. But it takes them when there is comparison, as,

De toutes les planètes, la lune est la plus brillante pour nous,	Of all the planets, the moon is the most brilliant to us.

EXERCISE.

1. This father could not bring himself to condemn his children, even when they were most guilty.

2. This woman has the art of shedding tears, even when she is least afflicted.

3. Out* of so many criminals, only the most guilty should be punished.

4. Although that woman displays more fortitude than the others, she is not, on that account, the least distressed.

(1.) *Could*, H.—*bring himself*, se résoudre.
(2.) *Shedding*, répandre de—*even when*, dans le temps même que.
(3.) *Only the most*, &c. (one must punish only the most guilty)—*only*, ne que.
(4.) *Displays*, montrer—*fortitude*, fermeté—*on that account*, pour cela—*distressed*, affligé.

Repetition of the Personal Pronouns.

633. RULE I.—Pronouns expressing the first and second persons, when the subject, must be repeated before all the verbs, if those verbs are in different tenses; it is always even better to repeat them when the verbs are in the same tense.

EXAMPLES.

Je soutiens et je soutiendrai toujours,	I maintain, and (I) will always maintain.
Vous dites, et vous avez toujours dit,	You say, and (you) have always said.
Accablé de douleur, je m'écriai et je dis,	Overwhelmed with sorrow, I exclaimed and (I) said.
Nous nous promenions sur le haut du rocher, et nous voyions sous nos pieds, &c.	We were walking upon the summit of the rock, when we saw under our feet, &c.

634. In all cases these pronouns must be repeated, though the tenses of the verbs do not change if the first of these is followed by a regimen; as,

Vous aimerez le Seigneur votre Dieu, et vous observerez sa loi,	You shall love the Lord your God, and (you shall) observe his law.

EXERCISE ON THE REPETITION OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUN.

1. My dear child, *I* love you, and *I* shall never cease to love you: but it is that very love that I have for you which obliges me to correct you for your faults, and to punish you when you deserve it.

2. *I* heard and admired these words, which comforted me a little; but my mind was not sufficiently at liberty to make him a reply.

3. *Thou* art young, and doubtless *thou* aimest at the glory of surpassing thy comrades.

4. God has said, *you* shall love your enemies, bless those that curse you, do good to those that persecute you, and pray for those who slander you. What a difference between this morality and that of philosophers!

(1.) *Correct for*, reprendre de.
(2.) *Heard*, écouter H.—*words*, discours, sing.—*my mind*, &c. (I had not the mind, &c.)—*sufficiently at liberty*, assez libre—*to make a reply*, répondre à.
(3.) *Aimest at*, aspirer à—*surpassing*, l'emporter sur.
(4.) *Slander*, calomnier—*between*, de—*and that*, à celle.

635. Rule II.—The pronouns of the third person, when they form the subject, are hardly ever repeated before verbs, except when those verbs are in different tenses.

EXAMPLES.

La bonne grâce ne gâte rien ; elle ajoute à la beauté, relève la modestie, et y donne du lustre,	A graceful manner spoils nothing: it adds to beauty, heightens modesty, and gives it lustre.
Il n'a jamais rien valu, et ne vaudra jamais rien,	He never was good for any thing, and never will be.
Il est arrivé ce matin, et il repartira ce soir,	He arrived this morning, and (he) will set off again this evening.

636. However, perspicuity requires the repetition of the pronoun when the second verb is preceded by a long incidental phrase; as, *Il fond sur son ennemi, et après l'avoir saisi d'une main victorieuse, il le renverse, comme le cruel aquilon abat les tendres moissons qui dorent la campagne.*

EXERCISE.

1. *He* took the strongest cities, conquered the most considerable provinces, and overturned the most powerful empires.

2. *He* takes a hatchet, completely cuts down the mast, which was already broken, throws it into the sea, jumps upon it amidst the furious billows, calls me by my name, and encourages me to follow him.

3. *He* marshals the soldiers, marches at their head, advances in good order towards the enemy, attacks and breaks them, and, after having entirely routed them, (he) cuts them to pieces.

(1.) *Overturned*, renverser J. [*lows*, onde.
(2.) *Completely cuts down*, achever de couper—*jumps upon it*, s'élancer dessus—*bil-*
(3.) *Marshals*, ranger en bataille—*breaks*, renverser—*entirely routed*, achever de mettre en désordre—*cuts*, tailler.

637. Rule III.—Any personal pronoun, when the *subject*, must be repeated before verbs when passing from an affirmation to a negative, and *vice versâ*, or when the verbs are joined by any conjunction except *et* and *ni*.

EXAMPLES.

Il veut et ne veut pas,	He will and he will not.
Il donne d'excellens principes, parce qu'il sait que les progrès, ultérieurs en dépendent,	He lays down excellent principles, because he knows that upon them depends all further progress.
Il donne et reçoit,	He gives and receives.
Il ne donne ni ne reçoit,	He neither gives nor receives.

EXERCISE.

1. It is inconceivable how whimsical she is; from one moment to another, *she* will and she will not.

2. The Jews are forbidden to work on the sabbath; *they* are, as it were,* locked in slumber; *they* light no fire and carry no water.

(1.) (She is of a whimsical cast inconceivable) *whimsical cast*, bizarrerie, f.
(2.) (It is forbidden to) *forbidden*, défendre—*sabbath*, jour du sabbat—*locked*, enchaîné—*slumber*, repos—*light*, allumer.

3. For nearly a week *she* has neither eaten nor drunk.
4. The soldier was not repressed by authority, but stopped from satiety and shame.

(3.) *For*, depuis—*nearly*, près de—*a week*, huit jours—*has eaten....drunk*, F.
(4.) *Repressed*, réprimer—*stopped*, s'arrêter J.—*from*, par.

638. Rule IV.—Pronouns, when they form the regimen, must be repeated before any verb.

EXAMPLES.

L'idée de ses malheurs le poursuit, le tourmente et l'accable,	The idea of his misfortunes pursues (him), torments (him), and overwhelms him.
Il nous ennuie et nous obsède sans cesse,	He wearies (us) and besets us unceasingly.

639. Exception.—It is not repeated before such compound verbs as express the repetition of the same action, when the verbs are in the same tense; as,

Je vous le dis et redis, il le fait et refait sans cesse.

EXERCISE.

1. It is taste that selects the expressions—that combines, arranges, and varies *them*—so as to produce the greatest effect.
2. Horace answered his stupid critics not so much to instruct *them*, as to expose their ignorance, and let *them* see that they did not even know what poetry was.
3. Man embellishes nature itself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it.

(1.) *So as to*, de manière à ce qu'elles Q.
(2.) *Stupid*, sot—*not so much to*, moins pour—*as to*, pour—*show their*, (show to them)—*let see*, faire entendre—*was*, c'était que.

Relation of the Pronouns of the Third Person to a Noun as expressed before.

640. Rule.—The pronouns of the third person—*il*, *ils*, *elle*, *elles*, *le*, *la*, *les*—must always relate to a noun, whether subject or regimen, taken only in a definite sense, before expressed in the same tense; but they must not be applied to a subject and regimen at the same time.

EXAMPLES.

La rose *est la reine des fleurs, aussi est*-elle *l'emblème de la beauté,*	The rose is the queen of flowers; therefore it is the emblem of beauty.
J'*aime* l'ananas; il *est exquis,*	I like the pine-apple; it is delicious.

641. But the two following sentences would be equivocal:

Racine *a imité* Euripide, *en tout ce qu'*il *a de plus beau dans sa Phèdre,*	Racine has imitated Euripides in all that he has most beautiful in his Phedra

Le légat publia une sentence d'interdit ; il *dura trois mois,* — The legate published a sentence of interdiction; it lasted three months

642. As in the first of these two sentences *il* may relate either to *Racine* or to *Euripides*, and from the construction of the second sentence, *il* cannot, as it should, relate to *interdit*. Again, it is not altogether correct to say,

Nulle paix *pour l'impie ; il* la *cherche,* elle *fuit,* — *No peace* for the wicked; he seeks it, it flies.

643. Because, from the construction, the pronouns *la* and *elle* seem to be used for *nulle paix*, whereas the meaning requires that they should supply the place of the substantive *paix*, in the affirmative.

EXERCISE.

1. Poetry embraces all sorts of subjects; *it* takes in every thing that is most brilliant in history; *it* enters the fields of philosophy; *it* soars to the skies; *it* plunges into the abyss; *it* penetrates to the dead; *it* makes the universe its domain; and if this world be not sufficient, *it* creates new ones, which *it* embellishes with enchanting abodes, which *it* peoples with a thousand various inhabitants.

2. Egypt aimed at greatness; and wished to* strike the eye at a distance, always pleasing *it* by the justness of proportion.

3. Egypt, satisfied with its own territory, where every thing was in abundance, thought not of conquests; *it* extended itself in another manner, by sending colonies to every part of the globe, and with *them* civilization and laws.

4. The Messiah is expected by the Hebrews; *he* comes and calls the Gentiles, as it had been announced by the prophecies; the people that acknowledge *him* as come are incorporated with the people that expected *him*, without a single moment of interruption.

(1.) *Subjects*, matière—*takes in*, se charger de—*that is*, y avoir de—(in) *the fields*, *soars to*, s'élancer dans—*plunges*, s'enfoncer—*to*, chez—(its domain of the universe) —*be sufficient*, suffire—*ones*, monde—*enchanting*, enchanter—*abodes*, demeure—*various*, divers.

(2.) *Greatness*, grand—*wished*, vouloir—*eye*, pl.—*at a distance*, dans l'éloignement —(in) *pleasing*, contenter.

(3.) *Was in abundance*, abonder—*thought of*, songer à—*in*, de—*by*, en—*to*, par— *every part of the globe*, toute la terre.

(4.) *Gentiles*, Gentil—(the prophecies had announced it)—*acknowledges*, reconnaitre—*with*, à—*without*, sans qu'il y ait—*single*, seul.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

Explanation of some Difficulties attendant on the use of the Possessive Pronouns.

644. The possessive pronouns *son, sa, ses, leur, leurs* relate either to persons, to things personified, or simply to things or to pronouns. If they relate to persons, or things

personified, their place can never be supplied by others ; but if they relate to things, the following rules must be observed :

645. The possessive pronouns are always employed,

646. 1.—When the object to which they relate is either named, or designated by a personal pronoun in the same member of a phrase.

EXAMPLES.

L'Amérique étend son *commerce par toute la terre,*	America extends her commerce over the whole globe.
Elle *envoie* ses *flottes dans toutes les mers,*	She sends her fleets into every part of the ocean.

647. 2.—Before a noun, when qualified even by a single adjective, unless the noun form the regimen.

EXAMPLE.

Ses *ressources* immenses *sont inépuisables,*	Her immense resources are inexhaustible.

648. 3.—After every preposition.

EXAMPLE.

C'est par sa *position, jointe à la sagesse* de son *gouvernement, qu'elle réunit* dans son *sein de si grands avantages,*	It is by her situation, joined to the wisdom of her government, that she unites such vast advantages within herself.

649. 4.—Before all words which can govern the preposition *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Son *congrès est le* sanctuaire de *la plus sage politique,*	Her congress is the seat of the wisest policy.
Son *président n'a* de *pouvoir que pour faire le bien,*	Her president possesses power only to do good.

650. On all other occasions, the article, with the pronoun *en*, placed immediately before the verb, must be substituted.

EXAMPLE.

*Tout enfin contribue à m'*en *faire aimer* le *séjour ; j'*en admire *surtout* l'*exacte police, en même temps que* les *lois m'*en *paraissent extrêmement sages,*	In short, every thing conspires to make me love that residence : I particularly admire the strictness of her police, at the same time when her laws appear to me extremely wise.

EXERCISE ON POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. A new custom was a phenomenon in Egypt: for which reason, there never was a people that preserved so long *its* customs, *its* laws, and even *its* ceremonies.

2. Solomon abandons himself to the love of women : *his* understanding declines, *his* heart weakens, and *his* piety degenerates into idolatry.

3. That superb temple was upon the summit of a hill: *its* columns were of Parian marble, and *its* gates of gold.

1.) *Phenomenon*, prodige—*for which reason*, aussi—*a*, de—*preserved* S. *Understanding*, esprit—*declines*, baisser—*weakens*, s'affaiblir. *Summit*, haut—*hill*, colline—*Parian*, de Paros.

4. Laocoon is one of the finest statues in France: not only the whole, but all *its* features, even the least, are admirable.

5. The Thames is a magnificent river: *its* channel is so wide and so deep below London-bridge, that several thousands of vessels lie at their ease in it.

6. This fine country is justly admired by foreigners: *its* climate is delightful, *its* soil fruitful, *its* laws wise, and *its* government just and moderate.

7. The trees of that orchard have sun enough, yet *its* fruits are but indifferent.

8. The Seine has *its* source in Burgundy, *its* mouth is at Havre-de-Grace.

9. The pyramids of Egypt astonish, both by the enormity of *their* bulk and the justness of *their* proportions.

10. Egypt alone could erect monuments for posterity: *its* obelisks are to this day, as well for *their* beauty as for *their* height, the principal ornament of Rome.

11. History and geography throw mutual light on each other: a* perfect knowledge *of them* ought to enter into the plan of a good education.

(4.) *In*, qu'il y ait en—*the whole*, l'ensemble—*even*, jusqu'à. [le—*in it*, y.
(5.) *Magnificent*, superbe—*channel*, lit—*below*, au dessous de—*lie at*, être à—*their*,
(6.) *Justly*, avec raison—*soil*, sol.
(7.) *Have sun enough*, être bien exposé—*but indifferent*, assez mauvais.
(8.) *Mouth*, embouchure—*Havre*, le Hâvre.
(9.) *Both*, également et—*bulk*, masse—*and*, et par.
(10.) *Egypt alone could*, il n'appartenait qu'à l'Egypte de—*erect*, élever—*to this day*, encore aujourd'hui—*as well for*, autant par—*height*, hauteur.
(11.) *Throw mutual light*, &c., s'éclairer l'une par l'autre—*of them*, (their).

651. Again, when there exists any doubt whether the possessive pronoun ought to be used or not before a noun that is the regimen, the following is the

652. RULE.—This article, not the possessive pronoun, must be put before a noun forming the regimen, when a pronoun which is either subject or regimen sufficiently supplies the place of that possessive, or when there is no sort of ambiguity.

EXAMPLES.

J'ai mal à la *tête*,	I have the head-ache. [leg.
Il faudra lui *couper* la *jambe*,	It will be necessary to take off his
Ce cheval a pris le *mors aux dents*,	That horse has run away.

EXERCISE.

1. During the whole winter he has had bad eyes.

2. I had a fall yesterday, and hurt *my* back and head.

3. It would be better for a man to lose *his* life than forfeit* his honor by a criminal action.

4. In this bloody battle he received a wound by a shot in *his* right arm and another in *his* left leg: by dint of care, *his* arm was saved, but it was necessary to amputate *his* leg.

(1.) *Has had bad*, avoir mal à.
(2.) *Had a fall*, se laisser tomber—*hurt*, se faire mal à—*back*, reins, pl.
(3.) *Would be better*, valoir mieux N.
(4.) *A wound by a shot*, un coup de feu—*in*, à—*by dint*, à force—*his arm*, &c. (they saved the arm to him)—*was necessary*, falloir J.—*to amputate*, to him.

653. But should either the personal pronouns or circumstances not remove all ambiguity, then the possessive pronoun must be joined to the noun; as,

Je *vois que* ma *jambe s'enfle*,	I see that my leg is swelling.
Il *lui donna* sa *main à baiser*,	He gave him his hand to kiss.
Elle *a donné hardiment* son *bras au chirurgien*,	She courageously presented her arm to the surgeon.

654. *Ma*, not *la*, because I may also see the leg of another person swelling, &c.

EXERCISE.

1. In this interview they made each other presents: she gave him *her* portrait and he gave her *his* finest diamond.

2. A young surgeon preparing to bleed the great Condé, this prince said to him, smiling, "Do you not tremble to bleed me?" "I, my lord? no, certainly: it is not I, it is you who ought to tremble." The prince, charmed with the reply, immediately gave him *his* arm.

(1.) *Interview*, entrevue—*made each other*, se faire mutuellement.
(2.) *Preparing*, se disposer—*bleed*, saigner—*smiling*, d'un air riant—*it is not I*, (it is not to me)—*it is you*, (it is to you)—*who ought to*, de—*reply*, repartie.

655. Remark I.—Although verbs which are conjugated with two pronouns of the same person generally remove every kind of amphibology, yet custom authorizes some familiar expressions, in which the possessive pronoun seems to be redundant; as,

Il se *tient ferme sur* ses *pieds*,	He stands firm upon his feet.
Je *l'ai vu*, de mes propres yeux,	I have seen it with my own eyes.

656. II.—When speaking of an habitual complaint, the possessive pronoun is properly used; as,

Sa *migraine l'a repris*,	His head-ache is returned.

657. The possessive pronouns are subject to the same rules as the article; they must therefore be repeated before all substantives which are either subject or regimen, and before all adjectives which express different qualities, although this is seldom observed in English; as,

Son *père*, sa *mère*, *et* ses *frères sont de retour*,	His father, mother, and brothers are come back.
Je lui ai montré mes *plus beaux et* mes *plus vilains habits*,	I have shewn him my finest and my ugliest dresses.

EXERCISE.

1. Whatever he may do, he always finds himself safe

2. Can you still doubt the truth of what I tell you? Would you ask a stronger proof than that I give you, it is that I heard it—yes, heard it with *my* own ears.

(1.) *Finds himself*, se retrouver—*safe*, sur ses jambes
(2.) *Can*, N.—*doubt*, douter de—*ask*, exiger.

3. *My* gout does not allow me a moment's repose.

4. It is in vain that I exhort you to work and study: *your* idleness, that cruel disease under* which you labor, renders useless all the exhortations of friendship.

5. If you wish to be beloved, fail not to perform the promises you have just made.

6. In the retreat that I have chosen for myself, *my* study and my garden are my greatest delight.

7. He brought me into his laboratory, and showed me *his* large and small vessels.

(3.) *Allow*, laisser.
(4.) *It is in vain that I*, je ai beau—*exhort*, A.—*you labor*, vous travaille.
(5.) *Fail not*, ne pas manquer—*perform*, remplir—*have just made*, venir de faire.
(6.) *For myself*, (to me)—*study*, cabinet—*are*, faire—*greatest*, plus cher.
(7.) *Brought*, mener—*laboratory*, laboratoire—*vessels*, vaisseau.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

658. *Qui*, when it is the subject, may very properly relate both to persons and things.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme qui *joue perd son temps,*	The man who games loses his time.
Le livre, qui *plaît le plus, n'est pas toujours le plus utile,*	The book which pleases most is not always the most useful.

659. But when it is the regimen, it can only be used of persons or of things personified, whether the regimen be direct or indirect.

EXAMPLES.

Quand on est délicat et sage dans ses goûts, on ne s'attache pas, sans savoir qui *l'on aime,*	He who is wise, and discriminates in his choice, does not form an attachment without knowing the person he loves.
L'homme à qui *appartient ce beau jardin est très-riche,*	The man to whom this fine garden belongs is very rich.
La femme de qui *vous parlez,*	The woman of whom you are speaking.

660. Remark.—When the regimen indirect is expressed by the preposition *de*, then *dont* should be preferred to *de qui*. It is better to say, *La femme* dont *vous parlez;* however, when the verb expresses a kind of transfer or conveyance, *de qui* must be used; as,

Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle,	The person from whom I had that intelligence.

661. Rule I.—*Qui* must not be separated from its antecedent when that antecedent is a noun.

EXAMPLE

Un jeune homme qui *est docile aux conseils qu'on lui donne, et* qui *aime à en recevoir, aura infailliblement du mérite,*	A young man who is obedient to the advice that is given him, and who loves to receive it, will infallibly have merit.

662. Remark.—In some phrases, *qui* may be separated from the substantive by several words—that is, when the sense obliges us to refer it to that substantive; as,

Il a fallu, avant toute chose, vous faire lire dans l'écriture sainte, *l'histoire* du peuple de Dieu, *qui* fait le fondement de la religion.

663. This sentence is very correct; because, as *du peuple* determines the kind of history, and *de Dieu* the kind of people, the mind necessarily goes back to the substantive *histoire*, to which it refers.

664. *Qui* may likewise be separated from its antecedent, when this antecedent is a pronoun used as the regimen direct; as,

Il la *trouva* qui *pleurait à chaudes larmes*,	He found her crying bitterly.
Je le *vois* qui *joue*,	I see him playing.

665. Because, in this case, the true place of the pronoun is before the verb, and it is the same as saying, *Il trouva* elle qui *pleurait*, &c. *je vois* lui qui *joue*. Also in these kinds of sentences, which are real gallicisms:

Ceux-là *ne sont pas les plus malheureux*, qui *se plaignent le plus*,	Those are not the most unhappy who complain the most.

EXERCISE.

1. A young man *who* loves vanity of dress, like a woman, is unworthy of wisdom and glory; glory is only due to a heart *that* knows how* to* suffer pain and trample upon pleasure.

2. Thyself, O my son, my dear son, thou* thyself *that* now enjoyest a youth so cheerful and so full of pleasure, remember that this delightful age is but a flower, *which* will be withered almost as soon as blown.

3. Men pass away like flowers, *which* open in* the morning, and at night are withered and trampled under foot.

4. You must have a man *that* loves nothing but truth and you, *that* will speak the truth in spite of you, *that* will force all your entrenchments; and this necessary character is the very man whom you have sent into exile.

5. We perceived him waiting for us, quietly seated under the shade of a tree.

(1.) *Vanity of dress*, à se parer vainement—*trample upon*, fouler aux pieds.
(2.) *Cheerful*, vif—*full of*, féconde en—*remember*, se souvenir—*delightful*, bel—*withered*, sécher—*blown*, éclore.
(3.) *Open*, s'épanouir—*and*, (which)—*at night*, le soir—*withered*, flétrir—*under*, à—*foot*, les pieds.
(4.) *You must have*, il vous faut—*nothing but*, ne que—*will speak*, Q.—*will force*, Q.—*entrenchments*, retranchement—*character*, homme—*man*, même—*sent into exile*, exiler.
(5.) *Waiting for*, (who waited) attendre—*under*, à.

666. Rule II.—The relative *qui* must always have a reference to a noun taken in a determinate sense

EXAMPLES.

L'homme est un animal raisonable, qui, &c.
Il me reçut avec une politesse, qui, &c.

667. But we cannot say,

L'homme est animal raisonable, qui, &c.
Il me reçut avec politesse, qui, &c.

668. Remark.—Though in many phrases the determinate nature of the nouns is not expressed, yet it is clearly understood. Thus, all these phrases are correct:

Il n'a point de livre, qui *ne soit de son choix*,	He has not *a book* that is not of his own selecting.
Y a-t-il ville dans le royaume qui *soit plus favorisée?*	Is there *a city* in the kingdom that is more favored?
Il se conduit en homme qui *connaît le monde*,	He behaves himself like a man who knows the world.
Il est accablé de maux qui *ne lui laissent pas un instant de repos*,	He is overwhelmed with *misfortunes* that do not allow him a moment's rest.
C'est une sorte de fruit, qui *ne mûrit pas en Europe*,	It is a sort of *fruit* that does not ripen in Europe.

669. From the translation of all the above examples it is evident that *livre*, *ville*, *maux*, are really determinate, the meaning being, *il n'a pas*, un livre qui, &c.; *y a-t-il* une ville qui, &c.

EXERCISE.

1. He received us with such *goodness*, *civility*, and *grace*, as charmed us, and made us forget all we had suffered.

2. There is no *city* in the world *where* there are more riches and a greater population.

3. Is there a *man* who can say, "I shall live till to-morrow?"

4. He has no *friend* but would make for him every kind of sacrifice.

5. He is surrounded by *enemies*, *who* are continually observing him, and would be very glad to detect him in a fault.

6. In his retreat, he lives like a *philosopher*, *who* knows men and mistrusts them.

7. The pine-apple is *a sort of fruit that* in Europe ripens only in hot-houses.

8. That man is *a sort of pedant who* takes words for ideas, and facts confusedly heaped together for knowledge.

(1.) *Such as*, un...qui—*civility*, politesse.——(2.) *There are*, Q.
(3.) *Can*, Q.——(4.) *But*, qui ne—*would make*, S.
(6.) *Like a*, en—*philosopher*, sage—*mistrusts*, se défier de.
(7.) *Pine-apple*, ananas—*hot-houses*, serre chaude.
(8.) *Heaped together*, entasser—*knowledge*, savoir.

670. *Que* relates both to persons and things. It is always the regimen direct, and cannot subsist without an antecedent expressed, which it generally follows. L'homme que *je vois*, la pêche que *je mange*. We say *generally*, because in some instances it may be separated from the antecedent by several words—that is, when the mind necessarily goes back to that antecedent, as in this sentence of Fléchier's:

Qu'est-ce qu'une armée?—c'est un *corps* animé d'une infinité de passions différentes, *qu'*un homme habile fait mouvoir pour la défense de la patrie

671. Remark.—There are instances where *que* is apparently used as regimen indirect for *à qui* or *dont;* as, *C'est à vous* que *je parle; c'est de lui* que *je parle; de la façon* que *j'ai dit la chose.* But in this case, *que* is a conjunction.

EXERCISE.

1. The *God whom* the Hebrews and Christians have always served, has nothing in common with the deities full of imperfection, and even of vice, worshipped by the rest of the world.

2. The Epic poem is not the panegyric of a *hero who* is proposed as a* pattern, but the recital of great and illustrious *actions, which* are exhibited for imitation.

3. The *good which* we hope for* presents itself to us, and disappears like an empty *dream, which* vanishes when we awake: to teach us that the very *things which* we think we* hold fast in* our* hands,* may slip away in an instant.

4. Plato says that, in writing, we ought to hide ourselves, to disappear, to make the world forget us, that we may present nothing but the *truths* we wish to impress.

(1.) (That the rest of the world worshipped).
(2.) *Is proposed*, on propose—*es*, pour—*pattern*, modèle—*is exhibited*, on donne—*imitation*, exemple.
(3.) *Good*, bien—*disappears*, s'envoler—*empty*, vain—*vanishes*, &c., le réveil fait évanouir—*hold fast*, tenir F. le mieux—*slip away*, nous échappent.
(4.) *We*, on—*to make the world forget*, se faire oublier—*that we may present but*, pour ne produire que—*wish*, vouloir—*impress*, persuader.

672. *Lequel* m., *laquelle* f., *lesquels* m. pl., *lesquelles* f. pl., and *dont*, relate both to persons and things. But *lequel*, &c. ought never to be used, either as a subject or object, except to avoid ambiguity; for whenever the sense is evident, *qui* or *que* must be used.

673. *Lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*, with the preposition *de*, is either followed or preceded by a noun, which it unites to the principal sentence. If it be followed, *dont* is preferable to *duquel* m., *de laquelle* f., *desquels* m. pl., *desquelles* f. pl., both for persons and things. Thus:

La Tamise dont *le lit*, and not *de laquelle*
Le prince dont *la protection*, and not *duquel.*

674. If *lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*, be preceded by the noun, we can only make use of *duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles*, when speaking of things; as, *La Tamise, dans le lit* de laquelle: and it is always better to use it when speaking of persons; as, *Le prince à la protection* duquel: *de qui* would not be so well.

675. *Lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*, with the preposition *à*, when speaking of things, requires *auquel* m., *à laquelle* f., *auxquels* m. pl., *auxquelles* f. pl.; as, *Les places* auxquelles *il aspire:* but we ought to prefer *à qui* when

speaking of persons; as, *Les rois* à qui *on doit obéir. Auxquels* would not do so well.

676. So the relative *qui*, preceded by a preposition, never relates to things, but to persons only.

EXERCISE.

1. The grand principle *on which* the whole turns is, that all* the world is but one republic, *of which* God is the common father, and in *which* every nation forms, as it were, one great family.

2. Homer, *whose* genius is grand and sublime like nature, is the greatest poet, and perhaps the most profound moralist of antiquity.

3. The celebrated Zenobia, *whose* noble firmness you have admired, preferred dying with the title of queen, rather than accept the advantageous offers which Aurelian made her.

4. The Alps, on the summit *of which* the astonished eye discovers perpetual snow and ice, present at sunset the most striking and most magnificent spectacle.

5. A king, *to whose* care we owe a good law, has done more for his own glory than if he had conquered the universe.

6. The ambitious man* sees nothing but pleasure in the possession of the offices *to which he* aspires with so much eagerness, instead of seeing the trouble that is inseparable from them.

7. Kings, *whom* religion makes it our duty to obey, are, upon earth, the true representation of the providence of God.

(1.) *Turns*, rouler—*every*, chaque—*as it were*, comme.
(3.) *Preferred*, aimer mieux—*than*, que de.
(4.) *Perpetual*, éternel—*snow*, *ice*, pl.—*sunset*, soleil couchant—*striking*, imposant.
(5.) *Care*, solicitude. [image.
(7.) *Whom*, (to whom)—*makes it our duty to*, nous fait un devoir de—*representation*

677. *Quoi* only relates to things. It is placed after the word to which it relates, but is always preceded by a preposition, and is generally followed by the subject of the phrase with which it is connected; as,

La chose à quoi *on pense; voilà les conditions* sans quoi *la chose ne peut se faire.*

678. To this mode of expression are to be preferred *lequel*, *duquel*, *auquel*, as being much better; for *quoi* is never used with any degree of propriety but when it relates to a vague and indefinite subject, such as *ce* or *rien;* as,

C'est de quoi *je m'occupe sans cesse.*
Il n'y a rien à quoi *je sois plus disposé.*

679. *Où*, *d'où*, *par où*, relate only to things. They are never used but when the nouns to which they refer express some kind of motion or rest, at least metaphorically; as,

Voilà le but où il tend,	That is the end he aims at
C'est une chose d'où *dépend le bonheur public,*	It is a thing upon which the public happiness depends.
Les lieux par où *il a passé,*	The places through which he has passed

EXERCISE.

1. *What* a young man, who begins the world, ought principally to attend *to*, is not to give it a high opinion of his understanding, but to gain numerous friends by the qualities of his heart.

2. A youth passed in idleness, effeminacy, and pleasure, lays up for* us nothing but sorrow and disgust in old age; this, however, is *what* we little think of when we are young.

3. There is nothing *by which* we are more affected than the loss of fortune, although, being frail and perishable in its nature, it cannot contribute to our happiness.

4. A grove, *in which* I defy the burning heat of the dog-star, a retired valley, *where* I can meditate in peace, a high hill, *whence* my eye extends over immense plains, are the places *where* I spend the happiest moments of my life.

(1.) *To what*, ce à quoi—*begins*, entrer dans—*to attend*, s'attacher—*it*, y—*opinion*, idée—*understanding*, esprit—*to gain*, se faire—*numerous*, beaucoup de.
(2.) *Idleness*, inutilité—*effeminacy*, mollesse—*pleasure*, volupté—*lays up*, préparer—*of*, à—*we*, on.
(3.) *By*, à—*we*, on—*affected*, sensible—*frail*, frêle—*by*, de—*cannot*, Q.—*our*, the.
(4.) *Grove*, bosquet—*defy*, braver—*burning heats*, ardeur—*dog-star*, canicule—*spend*, passer.

ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

680. *Qui* relates only to persons presenting but a vague, indeterminate idea; as,

Qui *sera assez hardi pour l'attaquer?*	Who will be bold enough to attack him.

681. It is likewise used in the feminine and in the plural, as,

Qui *est cette* personne-*là?*	Who is that person?
Qui *sont ces femmes-là?*	Who are those women?

682. *Que* and *quoi* relate to things only; as,

Que *pouvait la valeur en ce combat funeste?*	What could valor do in that fatal combat?
A quoi *pensez-vous?*	What are you thinking of?

683. *Que* is sometimes used for *à quoi*, *de quoi*; as,

Que *sert la science sans la vertu?*	What avails learning without virtue?
Que *sert à l'avare d'avoir des trésors?*	What use is it to the miser to possess treasures?

that is, *à quoi sert*, &c. *de quoi sert*, &c.

684. *Quoi*, when relating to a whole sentence, is the only authorized expression that can be used; as,

La vie passe comme un songe; c'est cependant *à quoi* on ne pense guères

685. REMARK.—*Que* and *quoi* require the preposition *de* before the adjective or substantive that follows them; as

Que dit-on de nouveau? quoi de plus agréable!
Que d'inconséquences dans sa conduite!

686. *Quel* m., *quelle* f., *quels* m. pl., *quelles* f. pl., relate both to persons and things; as,

Quel homme peut se promettre un bonheur constant?
Quelle grâce! quelle beauté! mais quelle modestie!

687. *Où*, *d'où*, *par où*, relate but to things.

EXERCISE ON ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

1. *Who* could ever persuade himself, did not daily experience convince us of it, that, out of a hundred persons, there are ninety who sacrifice to the enjoyment of the present all the best-founded hopes of the future?

2. *Who* would not love virtue for its own sake could he see it in all its beauty?

3. He who does not know how to apply himself in his youth, does not know *what* to do when arrived at maturity.

4. He was a wise legislator who, having given to his countrymen laws calculated to make them good and happy, made them swear not to violate any of those laws during his absence: after *which*, he went away, exiled himself from his country, and died poor in a foreign land.

5. *What* people of antiquity ever had better laws than the Egyptians? *What* other nation ever undertook to erect monuments calculated to triumph over both time and barbarism?

6. *What more instructive and entertaining* than to read celebrated authors in their own language? *What beauty*, *what delicacy*, and *grace*, which cannot be transcribed into a translation are discovered in them!

7. When Ménage had published his book on the Origin of the French Language, Christina, queen of Sweden, said:—"Ménage is [3](the most troublesome) [1]man [2](in the world): he cannot let [2]one word [1]go without its passport; he must know *whence* it comes, *where* it has passed *through*, and *whither* it is going."

(1.) *Did*, si—*out of*, sur—*future*, avenir.
(2.) *Its own sake*, elle même—*could he*, si on pouvoir H. [dans l'âge mûr.
(3.) *How*, (to what)—*what*, (to what)—*to do*, s'occuper—*when arrived at maturity*,
(4.) *He*, ce—*calculated*, propre—*not to*, (that they would not)—*went away*, partir.
(5.) *Calculated to*, fait pour—*both*, également—*over*, de.
(6.) *Language*, langue—*delicacy*, finesse—*which cannot*, qu'on ne peut—*be transcribed*, faire passer—*translation*, traduction—*are*, &c. n'y découvre-t-on pas.
(7.) *When*, après que—*Christina*, Christine—*troublesome*, incommode—*in the*, du—*cannot*, ne saurait—*go*, passer—*must*, vouloir.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

688. *Ce*, joined to the verb *être*, always governs this verb in the singular, except when it is followed by the third person plural.

C'est moi, c'est toi, c'est lui, c'est nous, c'est vous.

689. But in different cases we must say,

Ce sont *eux*, *ce* sont *elles*,	Sont-*ce les Anglais*, qui *ont fait cela?*
Ce furent *vos ancêtres* qui,	Est-*ce les Anglais* que *vous aimez?*
Fut-*ce nos propres fils* qui,	Fut-*ce nos propres fils* que.

690. Ce, when relating to a person or thing mentioned before, supplies the place of *il* or *elle*

691. *Ce* must always be used when the verb *être* is followed by a substantive, accompanied by the indefinite article or the numerical adjective *un*.

EXAMPLES.

Lisez Homère et Virgile: ce sont les *plus grands* poètes *de l'antiquité*,	Read Homer and Virgil: they are the best poets of antiquity.
La douceur, l'affabilité, et une certaine urbanité, distinguent l'homme qui vit dans le grand monde; ce sont là les marques *auxquelles on le reconnaît*,	Gentleness, affability, and a certain urbanity, distinguish the man who frequents polite company; these are marks by which he may be known.
Avez-vous lu Platon? c'est un *des plus beaux génies de l'antiquité*,	Have you read Plato? he is one of the greatest geniuses of antiquity.

692. But when the verb *être* is followed by an adjective, or by a substantive taken adjectively, *il* or *elle* must be used.

EXAMPLES.

Lisez Démosthène et Cicéron; ils sont très-éloquens,	Read Demosthenes and Cicero; they are very eloquent.
J'ai vu l'hôpital de Greenwich; il est magnifique et digne *d'une grande nation*,	I have seen Greenwich Hospital: it is superb, and worthy of a great nation.
*Compteriez-vous sur Valère? ignorez-vous qu'*il est homme *à ne jamais revenir de ses premières idées?*	Would you rely upon Valère? do you not know that he is a man who will never abandon his first opinions?

EXERCISE ON DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. It is *we* who have drawn that misfortune upon* ourselves* through our thoughtlessness and imprudence.

2. *It was* the Egyptians that first observed the course of the stars, regulated the year, and invented arithmetic.

3. Peruse attentively Plato and Cicero: *they are* the two *philosophers* of antiquity who have given us the most sound and luminous ideas upon morality.

4. If you are intended for the pulpit, read over and over again Bourdaloue and Massillon: *they are* both very *eloquent*; but the aim of the former is to convince, and that of the latter to persuade.

(1.) *Have drawn*, s'attirer—*thoughtlessness*, légèreté.
(2.) *First*, les premiers—*stars*, astres.
(3.) *Peruse*, lire—*sound*, sain—*morality*, morale.
(4.) *Are intended for*, se destiner à—*pulpit*, chaire—*read over and over again*, lire et relire sans cesse—*aim*, but.

693. *Ce*, followed by a relative pronoun, relates to things only. It is always masculine singular, as it only denotes a vague object, which is not sufficiently specified to know its gender and number.

EXAMPLE.

Ce qui flatte *est plus dangereux que* ce qui offense,	What flatters is more dangerous than what offends.

694. *Ce*, joined to the relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *dont*, and *quoi*, has in some i stances a construction peculiar to itself. Both *ce* and the relative pronoun that follows it form, with the verb which they precede, the subject of another phrase, of which the verb is always *être*. Now, *être* may be followed by another verb, an adjective, or a noun.

695. When *être*, then, is followed by another verb, the demonstrative *ce* must be repeated; as,

Ce que *j'aime le plus*, c'est d'*être* seul, What I like most, is to be alone.

696. When followed by an adjective, the demonstrative is not repeated; as,

Ce dont *vous venez de me parler* est *horrible*, What you have been mentioning to me is horrid.

697. When it is followed by a substantive, the demonstrative may either be repeated or not, at pleasure, except in the case of a plural or a personal pronoun. Thus, we may say,

Ce *que je dis*, est *la vérité*, or, c'est *la vérité*, What I say is the truth,

698. Though the former is best. But we must say,

Ce qui *m'indigne*, ce sont *les injustices, qu'on ne cesse de faire*, What provokes me, are the injuries which are continually committed.
Ce qui *m'arrache au sentiment qui m'accable*, c'est vous, What alleviates the grief that oppresses me, is you.

699. Most of these rules contribute to the elegance of the language.

EXERCISE.

1. *What* is astonishing *is* not always *what* is pleasing.

2. *What* the miser thinks least of, is to enjoy his riches.

3. *What* pleases us in the writings of the ancients *is* to see that they have taken nature as a model, and that they have painted her with a noble simplicity.

4. *What* that good king has done for the happiness of his people deserves to be handed down to the latest posterity.

5. *What* constitutes poetry *is not* the exact number and regular cadence of syllables; but *it is* the sentiment which animates every thing, the lively fictions, bold figures, and* beauty and variety of the imagery: *it is* the enthusiasm, fire, impetuosity, force—a something in the words and thoughts which nature alone can impart.

6. *What* we justly admire in Shakspeare *are* those characters always natural and always well* sustained.

7. *What* keeps me attached to life *is you*, my son, whose tender age has still need of my care and advice.

(1) *Is astonishing*, étonner—*is pleasing*, plaire.
(2) *What*, (that to which)—*miser*, avare
(3) *As a*, pour.
(4.) *Deserves*, être digne—*to be handed down*, être transmis—*latest*, la plus reculée
(5.) *Constitutes*, faire—*exact*, fixe—*lively*, vif—*imagery*, image, pl.—*a something*, un je ne sais quoi—*words*, paroles—*impart*, donner.
(6.) *We*, on—*justly*, avec justice—*natural*, dans la nature—*sustained*, soutenu.
(7.) *Keeps attached*, attacher—*care*, pl.—*advice*, pl.

700. There are two ways of employing *celui* m., *celle* f., *ceux* m. pl., *celles* f. pl. In the first, they are followed by a noun, or pronoun preceded by the preposition *de*.

EXAMPLES.

Celui de vous qui, &c.	Whichever of you that, &c.
Cette montre ressemble à celle de votre frère,	That watch is like that of your brother.

701. In the second, they are followed by *qui*, *que*, or *dont ;* as,

Celui qui *ne pense qu'à lui seul dispense les autres d'y penser*,	He who thinks of nobody but himself excuses others from thinking of him.
Votre nouvelle est plus sûre que celle qu'on débitait hier,	Your intelligence is more authentic than that which was circulated yesterday.

702. In these two cases, they are applied both to persons and things.

703. In the latter of these instances, *celui*, &c. are sometimes omitted, and this turn gives strength and elegance to the expression ; as,

Qui veut trop se faire craindre, se fait rarement aimer,	He who wishes to make himself too much feared, seldom makes himself beloved.

704. *Ceci* and *cela* apply only to things : however, in the familiar style, custom authorizes us to say, in speaking of one person individually, or of many collectively, *Cela est heureux! cela croupit dans la fange ; cela est gueux et fier*, &c.

EXERCISE.

1. *Whichever of you* shall be found to excel the others, both in mind and body, shall be acknowledged king of the island.

2. There are admirable pictures : *these* are after the manner of Rubens and *those* after the manner of Van-Huysum.

3. Why are the statues of the most celebrated modern sculptors, notwithstanding the perfection to which the arts have been carried, so much inferior *to those* of the ancients ?

4. *He* whose soul, glowing, as it were, with divine fire, shall represent to himself the whole of nature, and shall breathe into objects that spirit of life which animates them, those affecting traits which delight and ravish us, will be a man of real genius.

5. *He that* judges of others by himself is liable to many mistakes.

6. *He that* is easily offended discovers his weak side, and affords his enemies an opportunity of taking advantage of it.

7. *He who* loves none but himself deserves not to be loved by others.

(1.) *Be found to excel the others*, on jugera vainqueur—*both in*, et pour—*and*, et pour

(2) *There are*, voilà de—*pictures*, tableau—*are after*, être dans—*manner*, genre.

(3.) *Are*, (to be placed before *so much inferior*)—*have been carried*, on a porté—*inferior*, au-dessous.

(4 *Glowing with*, enflammé de—*as it were*, pour ainsi dire—*the whole of*, tout—*shall breathe into*, repandre sur—*affecting*, touchant—*delight*, séduire—*real*, vrai.

(5) *By*, d'après—*liable*, exposé—*mistakes*, méprises.

(6) *Is offended*, s'offenser—*weak side*, faible—*affords*, fournir à—*of taking advantage*, profiter.

CHAPTER V.

PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

705. Though *on* may generally be considered as a masculine pronoun, as in the phrase *on n'est pas toujours maître de ses passions*, there are, however, occasions in which it is evidently feminine; as, *on n'est pas toujours jeune et jolie:* it may likewise be followed by a plural; as, *on se battit en désespérés; est-on des traîtres?*

706. This pronoun must be repeated before all the verbs of a sentence, and refer to one and the same subject. Thus, the sentence

On croit être aimé et on ne nous aime pas

is incorrect: it should be,

On croit être aimé et l'on ne l'est pas.

707. *Quiconque* is generally masculine: however, it is feminine when speaking of or to females; as, *quiconque de vous, Mesdames*, &c.: though, perhaps, *celle de vous*, &c., is preferable.

EXERCISE ON PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

1. Do you sincerely think, said Emily to Lucilla, that when women are sensible and pretty, *they* are ignorant of* it? No, *they* know it very well: but if *they* are watchful over their character, *they* are not proud of these advantages.

2. *We* are not slaves, to receive such treatment.

3. Do you know what *they* do here? *They* eat, *they* drink, *they* dance, *they* play, *they* walk—in a word, *they* kill time in the gayest manner possible.

4. *Whoever* of you is bold enough to slander me, I will make him repent it.

5. *Whoever* of you is attentive and discreet shall receive a reward that will flatter her.

(1.) *Sincerely*, de bonne foi—*Emily*, Emilie—*women*, on—*they*, on—*know*, savoir—*watchful over*, jaloux de—*character*, reputation—*are proud*, s'enorgueillir.
(2.) *We*, on—*slaves*, des esclaves—*to receive*, pour essuyer de.
(3.) *They*, on—*in the gayest manner*, le plus gaiment—*possible*, (that they can).
(4.) *Is*, L—*to slander*, pour médire de—*it*, (of it).
(5.) *Is*, L—*that will*, fait pour.

708. *Chacun* m., *chacune* f, though always singular, may be followed sometimes by *son, sa, ses*, and sometimes by *leur, leurs*, which, in many instances, is embarrassing.

709. There is no difficulty in those phrases where *chacun* is not contrasted with a plural number: for then *son, sa, ses*, must be used; as,

Donnez a chacun sa part, Give to each his share.
Que chacun songe à ses affaires, Let every one mind his own business.

710. Rule.—In phrases where *chacun* is contrasted with a plural to which it refers, *son*, *sa*, *ses*, must be employed when *chacun* is placed after the regimen; but *leur*, *leurs*, must be used when *chacun* is placed before the regimen.

EXAMPLES OF *SON, SA, SES.*

Remettez ces médailles chacune en sa place,	Return those medals each into its proper place.
Les hommes devraient s'aimer chacun pour son propre intérêt,	Men ought to love one another, each for his own interest.

EXAMPLE OF *LEUR, LEURS.*

Les hommes devraient avoir, chacun pour leur propre intérêt, de l'amour les uns pour les autres,	Men ought, for their own interest, to have an affection for each other.

711. Remark.—In phrases where *chacun* is contrasted with a plural there are two senses, the *collective* and the *distributive*. When *chacun* is placed after the regimen, the collective sense expressed by the plural is finished; and the distributive *chacun* acts separately the part of each individual: but when *chacun* precedes the regimen, the collective sense remaining incomplete, must be carried on to the end; and then the pronoun which follows *chacun* is put in the plural; as,

La reine dit elle-même aux députés, qu'il était temps qu'ils s'en retournassent chacun chez eux.

EXERCISE.

1. Go into my library, and put the books which have been sent back to me *each* into *its* place.

2. They have all brought offerings to the temple, *every one* according to *his* means and devotion.

3. Thierry charged Uncelanus to carry his orders to the mutineers, and to make them retire, *each* under *his* colors.

4. *Each* of them has brought *his* offering, and fulfilled his religious duty.

5. Had Ronsard and Balzac, *each* in his manner of writing, a sufficient degree of merit to form *after them* any very great man in verse and in prose?

6. After a day so usefully spent, we went back *each* to *our* own home.

7. Minds that possess any correctness examine things with attention, in order to give a fair judgment of them; and they place *each* of* them in the rank *it* ought to occupy.

(2) *Offering*, offrande
(3.) *To carry*, aller porter—*mutineers*, mutin—*colors*, drapeau, sing.
(4.) (They have brought each their, &c)—*fulfilled*, remplir.
(5) *Manner of writing*, genre—*a sufficient degree*, assez—*merit*, bon—*any*, un.
(6.) *Day*, journee—*went back*, retourner—*to* chez—*our own home*, nous.
(7) *Possess any*, avoir de—*correctness*, justesse—*give a fair judgment*, juger avec connaissance—*place*, mettre—*to occupy*, avoir.

712. *Personne*, used as a pronoun, is always masculine; of course, the adjective relating to it must be of that gender; as,

Personne n'est aussi heureux qu'elle, Nobody is so happy as she.

713. *L'un et l'autre* require the verb they govern to be in the plural. See page 147.

714. *Ni l'un ni l'autre* likewise *generally* govern the verb in the plural, when both may at the same time receive the action expressed by the verb: however, the two following modes

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'*ont* fait *leur* devoir, or
Ni l'un ni l'autre n'*a* fait *son* devoir,

are authorized: but whenever this action applies only to a single object, the verb must be in the singular; as,

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'est mon père; ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera nommé à cette ambassade.

715. But when *ni l'un ni l'autre* elegantly stand after the verb, the verb is always in the plural; as,

Ils ne sont morts ni l'un ni l'autre.

EXERCISE.

1. Nobody is so severe, so virtuous in public, as some women who practise the least restraint in private.

2. Nobody could be happier than she; but as a consequence of that levity which you know she has, she has lost all the advantages that she had received from nature and education.

3. Racine and Fénélon will be always the delight of feeling minds: both possessed in the highest degree the art of exciting in us at pleasure the most tender and the most lively emotions.

4. Balzac and Voiture enjoyed in their time great celebrity; but neither has been read since by good taste: the native and simple graces are preferred to the bombast of the former and the affectation of the latter.

(1.) *So*, aussi—*some*, certain—*practise the least restraint*, être le moins retenu.
(2.) *Could*, H—*that*, un—*levity*, légèreté—*know she has*, lui connaître.
(3.) *Always*, dans tous les temps—*both*, l'un et l'autre—*in the*, au—*pleasure*, gré.
(4.) *Enjoyed*, G.—*neither*, ni l'un ni l'autre—*has been read*, (they read them no more)—*native*, du naturel—*simple*, de la simplicité—*are preferred*, depuis que le bon goût a fait préférer les, &c.—*bombast*, bouffissure.

716. *Tout* and *rien*, when the regimen direct, are placed after the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses; as, *Il avoue tout; il n'avoue rien; il a tout avoué; il n'a rien avoué.*

717. But when they form the regimen indirect, they are always placed after the verb, both in simple and in compound tenses; as, *Il rit de tout; il ne se mêle de rien; il a pensé à tout; il n'a pensé à rien.*

718. *Tout* is sometimes used as an adverb; as,

Il lui dit tout froidement, He has told him quite coolly.

719. Sometimes also it represents *quoique*, *encore que*, *entièrement*, *quelque*, in which case the following rule must be observed:

720. RULE.—*Tout* before an adjective, or a substantive which is used adjectively, never takes either gender or number, except when immediately followed by an adjective feminine beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated; as,

Les enfans, tout *aimables qu'ils sont*,	Children, amiable as they are.
Ils sont tout *interdits*,	They are quite disconcerted.
La vertu tout *austère qu'elle paraît*,	Virtue, austere as it may appear.
Ces images tout *amusantes qu'elles sont*,	These images, entertaining as they may be.
C'est une tête toute *vide*,	It is quite a vacant head.
Ces dames, toutes *spirituelles qu'elles sont*,	These ladies, witty as they may be.
Ces fleurs sont tout aussi *fraîches que celles que vous avez*,	These flowers are quite as fresh as those which you have.
Ces dames sont, tout ainsi que *vous*, tout comme *vous*, *belles*, *jeunes et spirituelles*,	These ladies, as well as you, are handsome, young, and ingenious.

721. In this latter sense, *tout* is little more than a mere expletive.

EXERCISE.

1. Children, *amiable* as they are, have nevertheless many faults, which it is of importance to correct.

2. The philosophers of antiquity, *although* very* *enlightened*, have given us but very confused ideas of the Deity, and very vague notions about the principal duties of the law of nature.

3. Those flowers, *inodorous* as they are, are not the less esteemed.

4. Virtue, *austere* as it is, makes us enjoy real pleasures.

5. Fables, *although* very* entertaining, yet truly interest us only when they convey instruction to us, under the disguise of an ingenious allegory.

6. Although that absurd pedant is an incessant scribbler, yet his head is *altogether empty*.

7. Far be from us those maxims of flattery, that kings are born with talents, and that their favored souls come out of God's hands *completely wise* and *learned*.

8. Those fountains glide *quite* gently through a mead enamelled with flowers.

9. These peaches are *quite* as good as those of the south of France.

(1.) *Have nevertheless*, ne laisser pas d'avoir—*faults*, défaut—*of importance*, essentiel.
(2.) *Enlightened*, eclairés qu'ils etaient—*of nature*, naturel.
(3.) *Inodorous*, inodore—*not*, n'en.
(4.) *Enjoy*, goûter de.
(5.) *Entertaining*, amusantes qu'elles sont—*truly*, véritablement—*only*, ne que—*convey*, offrir—*disguise*, voile.
(6.) *Incessant*, infatigable—*scribbler*, écrivailleur—*his head is*, (he has not less the head)—*not*, n'en—*altogether*, tout.
(7.) *Far be*, loin—*of*, de la—*are born*, naissent—*with talents*, habile—*favored*, privilegié—*come out*, sortir—*learned*, savant.
(8.) *Glide*, couler—*gently*, doucement—*through a mead*, sur un gazon.

722. *Quelque--que*, sing. m. and f., *quelques—que*, pl. m. and f., joined to a substantive, either alone or accompanied by an adjective, take the sign of the plural.

EXAMPLES.

Quelques *richesses que vous ayez*,	Whatever riches you may possess.
Quelques *bonnes œuvres que vous fassiez*,	Whatever good actions you may do.
Quelques *peines affreuses que vous éprouviez*,	However dreadful pains you may suffer.

723. But when joined to an adjective separated from its substantive, it does not take the sign of the plural.

EXAMPLES.

Tous les hommes, quelque *opposés qu'ils soient*,	All men, however opposite they may be.
Ces actions, quelque *belles qu'on les trouve*,	Those actions, however brilliant they may be found.

724. *Quelque—que*, sing. m. and f., *quelques—que*, pl. m. and f., *quel que*, m. s., *quelle que*, f. s., *quels que*, m. pl., and *quelles que*, f. pl., joined to a substantive (see page 74), have the same meaning, although they are not used indifferently for each other. If the pronoun stands before the substantive, we must make use of *quelque—que;* as,

Quelques richesses que vous ayez;

725. But if the verb intervene, then we make use of *quel que* in two separate words; as,

Quelles que soient les richesses que vous ayez.

EXERCISE.

1. *Whatever talents* you may possess, *whatever advantages* you may have received from nature and education, with* *whatever perfections* you may be endowed, expect only the suffrage of a small number of men.

2. *However great services* you may have rendered mankind, rather look for their ingratitude than their acknowledgements.

3. *However useful, however well written* the works which you have published, yet think not that you will immediately reap the fruits of your labors: it is but by slow degrees that light introduces itself among men. The course of time is swift; but it seems to lag when it brings reason and truth along with it.

4. *Whatever may be the obstacles* which ignorance, prejudice, and envy oppose to the true principles of an art, yet we ought never to be deterred from propagating them: the sun does not cease to shine because its light hurts the eyes of night-birds.

5. *Whatever be your birth, whatever your riches* and dignities, remember that you are frustrating the views of Providence, if you do not make use of them for the good of mankind.

(1.) *Possess*, avoir—*have received*, tenir—*be endowed*, posséder—*expect*, ne s'attendre à—*but*, que.

(2.) *Mankind*, homme, pl.—*rather look for*, compter plutôt—*acknowledgements*, reconnaissance, sing.

(3.) *Immediately*, de suite—*reap*, recueillir—*by slow degrees*, avec lenteur—*among*, chez—*swift*, rapide—*to lag*, se traîner—*along with it*, à sa suite.

(4.) *We* on—*to be deterred*, se rebuter—*propagating*, répandre—*shine*, éclairer—*its*, la—*hurts*, blesser—*night-birds*, oiseau de nuit.

(5.) *Are frustrating*, frustrer.

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE VERB.

Agreement of the Verb with its Subject.

726. It has been observed that the verb which has two subjects, both singular, is put in the plural; but to this rule there are the following

727. Exceptions.—1, A verb with two subjects in the singular is not put in the plural when the two subjects are only joined together by the conjunctions *ou*, *comme*, *aussi-bien que*, *autant que*, &c.

EXAMPLES.

La séduction ou *la terreur l'a entraîné dans le parti des rebelles*,	Either persuasion or terror *has* drawn him into the party of the rebels.
Le roi, aussi-bien que *son ministère*, veut *le bien public*,	The king, *as well* as his ministry, *wishes* for the public good.
Son honnêteté, autant que *son esprit*, *le* fait *rechercher*,	His honesty, *as much as* his wit, *makes* him be courted.
L'envie, comme *l'ambition*, est *une passion aveugle*,	Envy, *like* ambition, *is* a blind passion.

728. 2.—The verb is likewise put in the singular, though preceded by plurals, either when there is an expression which collects all the substantives into one—such as, *tout*, *ce*, *rien*, &c.—or when the conjunction *mais* is placed before the last substantive, and this is in the singular.

EXAMPLES.

Biens, *dignités*, *honneurs*, tout disparaît *à la mort*,	Riches, dignities, honors, *every thing*, *vanishes* at death.
Jeux, *conversations*, *spectacles*, rien *ne la* distrait,	Games, conversations, shows, *nothing diverts* her.
Perfidies, *noirceurs*, *incendies*, *massacres*, ce *n'est là qu'une faible image*, &c.	Perfidies, enormities, conflagrations, massacres, *all this is* but a feeble representation, &c.
Non-seulement toutes ses richesses et tous ses honneurs, mais toute sa vertu s'évanouit,	Not only all his riches and honors, *but all his virtue vanishes.*

EXERCISE ON THE VERB.

1. Either fear *or* inability prevented them from moving. [bosom.
2. The fear of death, *or* rather the love of life, began to revive in his
3. Alcibiades, *as well as* Plato, was among the disciples of Socrates.
4. Lycurgus, *like* Solon, was a wise legislator.

(1.) *Inability*, impuissance—*moving*, remuer.
(2.) *Began to revive*, se réveiller—*in*, au fond de—*bosom*, cœur.
(3.) *Among*, au nombre de.
(4.) *Lycurgus*, Lycurgue.

5. Euripides, *as much as* Sophocles, contributed to the glory of the Athenians.

6. Riches, dignities, honors, glory, pleasure, every thing loses its charms from the moment we possess it, because none of those things can fill the heart of man.

7. The gentle zephyrs which preserved in that place, notwithstanding the scorching heat of the sun, a delightful coolness: streams gliding with a sweet murmur through meadows interspersed with amaranths and violets: a thousand springing flowers, which enamelled carpets ever green: a wood of those tufted trees that bear golden apples, and the blossom of which, renewed every season, yields the sweetest of all perfumes: the warbling of birds: the continual prospect of a fruitful country: in a word, nothing of what till then had made him happy, could assuage the feelings of his grief.

(6.) *We*, on—*none*, rien—*those things*, tout cela.
(7.) *Preserved*, entretenir—*scorching heat*, ardeur—*interspersed with*, parsemer de—*springing*, naissant—*carpets*, tapis—*tufted*, touffu—*golden*, (of gold)—*renewed*, (which renews) se renouveler—(in) *every season*—*yields*, répandre—*prospect*, spectacle—*made*, rendre—*assuage*, l'arracher à—*feeling*, sentiment.

Of the Collective Partitive.

729. The collectives general have nothing to distinguish them from substantives common, with regard to the laws of agreement; but the collectives partitive apparently deviate from those laws in some instances.

730. Rule.—The verb which relates to a collective partitive is put in the plural when that partitive is followed by the preposition *de* and a plural; but it is put in the singular, either when the partitive is followed by a regimen singular, or when it expresses a determinate quantity, or lastly, when it presents an idea independent of the plural which follows it.

EXAMPLES OF THE PLURAL.

La plupart des hommes sont *bien prompts dans leurs jugemens*,	The greatest part of men are very hasty in their judgments.
Bien des philosophes *se* sont *trompés*,	Many philosophers have been mistaken.

EXAMPLES OF THE SINGULAR.

Une infinité de peuple est *accourue* (regimen singular),	An immense number of people flocked together.
La moitié des soldats a *péri* (determinate quantity),	One half of the soldiers has perished.
Le plus grand nombre des troupes a *péri* (idea independent of plural),	The greater number of the troops has perished.

731. Thus the substantives partitive *la plupart*, *une infinité*, *une foule*, *un nombre*, *la plus grande partie*, *une sorte*, &c.. and words signifying quantity—such as *peu*, *beaucoup*, *assez*, *moins*, *plus*, *trop*, *tant*, *combien*, and *que* used for *combien*, followed by a noun joined to them by the preposition

de—have not the least influence on the verb, and consequently, it is not with them that the verb agrees, but with the noun which follows them.

732. REMARK.—The words *infinité* and *la plupart*, used by themselves, require the verb in the plural; as, *Une infinité pensent, la plupart sont d'avis.*

EXERCISE ON THE COLLECTIVE PARTITIVE.

1. *Many persons* experience that human life is every where a state in which much is to be endured and little to be enjoyed.

2. *Many poets* think that poetry is the art of uniting pleasure with truth, by calling imagination to the help of reason.

3. *Few persons* reflect that time, like money, may be lost by unseasonable avarice.

4. *So many years* of familiarity were chains of iron which linked me to those men who beset me every hour.

5. *How many wise* men* have thought that, to seclude one's self from the world was to pull out the teeth of devouring animals, to take away from the wicked the use of his poniard, from calumny its poisons, and from envy its serpents!

6. *A company of young Phœnicians*, of uncommon beauty, clad in fine linen, whiter than snow, danced a* long while the dances of their own* country, then those of Egypt, and lastly those of Greece.

7. *A troop of nymphs*, crowned with flowers, whose lovely tresses flowed over their shoulders, and waved with the wind, swam in sheals behind her car.

8. At the time of the invasion of Spain by the Moors, an *innumerable multitude of people* retired into the Asturias, and there proclaimed Pelagius king.

9. *A third-part of the enemy* were left dead on the field of battle; the rest surrendered at discretion.

10. *The innumerable crowd of carriages* which are to be seen in London during the winter astonishes foreigners.

---

(1) *Much is*, &c. (one has a great deal of pains and little of real enjoyments).
(3) *Unseasonable*. hors de propos.
(4) *Familiarity*, habitude—*linked*, lier—*beset*, obséder. [*take away from*, ôter à.
(5.) *How many*. que de—*to seclude one's self*, se retirer—*pull out of*, arracher à—*to*
(6.) *Company*. troupe—*clad in*, et vêtu de—*linen*, lin.
(7.) *Lovely*, beau—*tresses*, cheveu—*flowed*, pendre—*waved*, flotter—*with*, au gré de —*swam*. nager H —*sheals*, foule—*car*, char
(8) *Moors*. Maure—*retired*, se retirer—*Asturias*, Asturies—*Pelagius*, Pélage.
(9) *A third-part*, un tiers—*enemy*, pl.—*surrendered*, se rendre.
(10.) *Crowd*, quantite—*which are*, &c. (which one sees).

Place of the Subject with regard to the Verb.

733. It has been seen that the subject of a verb is either a noun or a pronoun, and that this subject must always be expressed in French. It remains to speak of the place of this subject with respect to the verb.

734. RULE.—The subject, whether a noun or pronoun, is generally placed before the verb.

EXAMPLES.

L'ambition effrénée *de quelques hommes*, a, *dans tous les temps*, été *la vraie cause des révolutions des états*,	The boundless ambition of a few men has, in all ages, been the real cause of the revolutions of empires.
Quand nous nageons *dans l'abondance*, *il est bien rare que* nous *nous* occupions *des maux d'autrui*,	When we roll in plenty, we seldom think of the miseries of others.

EXERCISE.

1. *Youth* is full of presumption; *it* expects every thing from itself: although frail, *it* thinks itself all-sufficient, and that *it* has nothing to fear.

2. *Commerce* is like certain springs: if *you* attempt to* divert their course, *you* dry them up.

3. *It* is enough that falsehood is falsehood, to be unworthy of a man who speaks in the presence of God, and who is to sacrifice every thing to truth.

4. The *ambition* and *avarice* of man are the sources of his unhappiness.

5. *They* punished in Crete three vices which have remained unpunished in all other nations:—ingratitude, dissimulation, and avarice.

6. Like the Numidian lion, goaded by cruel hunger, and rushing upon a flock of feeble sheep, *he* tears, *he* slays, *he* wallows in blood.

(1.) *Full of presumption*, présomptueux—*expects*, se promettre—*itself all-sufficient*, pouvoir tout—*that it has*, avoir.
(2.) *Springs*, source—*attempt*, vouloir—*dry up*, faire tarir.
(3.) *It is enough*, suffire—*falsehood*, mensonge—*is*, Q.—*in*, en—*is to sacrifice*, doit.
(5.) *Punished*, H.—*have remained*, être—*in*, chez.
(6.) *Like the*, semblable à un—*Numidian*, de Numidie—*goaded by*, &c., (that cruel hunger goads) dévorer—*rushing*, (which rushes upon) entrer dans—*tears*, dechirer—*slays*, égorger—*wallows*, nager.

735. Exceptions.—1, In interrogative phrases, the question is made either with a pronoun or a noun, as subject of the verb: if with a pronoun, it is always placed after the verb; as,

Que dit-on? irai-je à la campagne? de qui parle-t-on?

736. If with a noun, the noun is sometimes placed before and sometimes after the verb; it stands before when the pronoun personal which answers to it asks the question; as,

Cette nouvelle est-elle sûre? les hommes se rendent-ils toujours à la raison?

737. It stands after when a pronoun absolute or an interrogative adverb, placed at the beginning of the phrase, allow the suppression of the personal pronoun; as,

Que dit votre ami? à quoi s'occupe votre frère? où demeure votre cousin?

738. Remark.—In interrogative sentences, when the verb which precedes *il*, *elle*, *on*, ends with a vowel, the letter *-t-* is put between that verb and the pronoun; as,

Arrive-t-il? viendra-t-elle? aime-t-on les vauriens?

739. When *je* stands after a verb which ends with *e* mute, that *e* mute is changed into *é* acute; as, *Aimé-je? puissé-je?* But when the transposition of *je* after the verb becomes

harsh, euphony then requires another turn; so, instead of *cours-je? dors-je?* which would be intolerable, we must say, *est-ce que je cours? est-ce que je dors?*

EXERCISE.

1. *Have you* forgotten all that Providence has done for you? how *have you* escaped the shafts of your enemies? how *have you* been preserved from the dangers which surrounded you on all sides? *could you be* so blind as not to acknowledge and adore the all-powerful hand that has miraculously saved you?

2. What *will posterity say* of you if, instead of devoting to the happiness of mankind the great talents which you have received from nature, you make use of them only to deceive and corrupt them?

3. Do not *the misfortunes* which we experience often contribute to our* prosperity?

4. Why are *the works of nature* so perfect? Because each work is a whole, and because she labors upon an eternal plan, from which she never deviates. Why, on the contrary, are *the productions* of man so imperfect? It is because the human mind, being unable to create any thing, and incapable of embracing the universe at a single glance, can* produce only after having been enriched by experience and meditation.

(1.) *Escaped*, échapper à—*shafts*, trait—*preserved*, garantir—*on all sides*, de toutes parts—*so as*, assez pour—*saved*, conserver.
(2.) *Devoting*, consacrer—*mankind*, homme pl.—*deceive*, égarer.
(3.) *Experience*, éprouver—*contribute to*, tourner en.
(4.) *Because*, c'est que—*and because*, et que—*being unable*, ne pouvoir—*incapable*, (not being able)—*at*, de—*glance*, vue—*enriched*, fécondé.

740. 2.—The subject is put after the verb in incidental sentences which express that we are quoting somebody's words; as,

Je meurs innocent, a dit Louis XVI.	I die innocent, said Louis XVI.
Je le veux bien, dit-il,	I am very willing, said he.

741. 3.—The subject is put after the verb if the sentence begins with an impersonal verb, or either of these words, *tel, ainsi*, &c.; as,

Tel était l'acharnement du soldat, que, &c.	Such was the fury of the soldier that, &c.
Ainsi finit cette sanglante tragédie,	Thus ended that bloody tragedy.

EXERCISE.

1. True glory, *said he*, is founded in humanity: whoever prefers his own glory to the feelings of humanity, is a monster of pride, and not a man.

2. There have happened for these* ten years *so many events* exceeding all probability, that posterity will find it difficult to credit them.

3. *Such was that incorruptible Phocion* who answered the deputies of Alexander, who were telling him that this powerful monarch loved him as the only honest man: Well, then, let him allow me to be and to appear so.

(1.) *Is founded*, ne se trouver pas hors de—*feelings*, sentiment.
(2.) *There have happened for*, il s'est passé depuis—*exceeding*, hors de—*probability*, vraisemblance—*will find very difficult*, avoir bien de la peine—*to credit*, ajouter foi à
(3.) *Loved*, chérir—*honest man*, homme de bien—*well*, ho!—*to be so*, d'être tel—*appear so*, le paraître.

4. *Thus* ended, by the humiliation of Athens, *that dreadful war* of twenty-seven years, to* which ambition gave rise, which hatred made atrocious, and which was as fatal to the Greeks as their ancient confederation had proved advantageous to them.

(4.) *Ended*, se terminer—*gave rise*, faire naître—*made*, rendre—*had proved*, être I.

742. 4.—The subject is put after the verb when the subjunctive is used to express a wish, or to take the place of *quand même*, whenever, and a conditional; as,

Puissent tous les peuples se convaincre de cette vérité,	May all nations be convinced of this truth.
Dussé-je y périr, j'irai,	Should I perish there, I will go.

743. 5.—The subject is put after the verb when that subject is followed by several words which are dependent upon it, and form an incidental sentence which, by its length, might obscure the relation of the verb to the subject; perspicuity then requires that the subject should be displaced.

744. Sometimes, however, this transposition of the subject is only the effect of taste, to avoid an inharmonious cadence; or it is used by an orator who wishes to arouse the attention of his hearers by a bold and unexpected turn.

EXERCISE.

1. The gods grant that you may never experience such misfortunes!

2. May you, O wise old man! in a repose diversified by pleasing occupations, enjoy the past, lay hold of the present, and charm your latter days with the hope of eternal felicity!

3. What is not in the power of the gods! were you at the lowest depths, the power of Jupiter could draw you from thence; were you in Olympus, beholding the stars under your feet, Jupiter could plunge you to the bottom of the abyss, or precipitate you into the flames of gloomy Tartarus.

4. There, through meadows enamelled with flowers, glide a thousand various rivulets, distributing every where their pure (and) limpid waters.

5. Already, for the honor of France, there* had come into administration a man more distinguished for his understanding and virtues than for his dignities.

(1.) *Grant*, faire—*experience*, éprouver de.

(2.) *Old man*. vieillard—*lay hold of*, saisir—*with*, de.

(3.) *Is not in the power of*, ne peuvent—*were*, S—*lowest depths*, fond de l'abîme—*power*, puissance—*could*, pouvoir N.—*Olympus*, Olympe—*stars*, astre—*gloomy*, noir—*Tartarus*, Tartare.

(4.) *Through*, au milieu de—*with*, de—*glide*, serpenter—*rivulets*, ruisseau—*distributing*, (which distribute)—*their*, une.

(5.) *Had come*, être entré—*administration*, (of affairs)—*for*, par—*understanding*, esprit.

Government of the Verbs.

745. When the regimen of a verb is a noun, it is generally placed *after* the verb; but to this rule there is one exception, besides those which will hereafter be mentioned.

746. Exception.—In an interrogative sentence, the regimen is placed before the verb when this regimen is joined to an absolute pronoun.

EXAMPLES.

Quel objet voyez-vous ?	What object do you see
A quelle science vous appliquez-vous ?	To what science do you apply yourself ?
De quelle affaire vous occupez-vous ?	About what business are you employed ?

747. Remark.—In French, a verb can never have two regimens direct: therefore, when a verb has *two* regimens, *both nouns*, one of them must necessarily be preceded by a preposition.

EXAMPLES.

Donnez ce livre à votre frère,	Give that book to your brother.
On a accusé Cicéron d'imprudence et de faiblesse,	Cicero has been accused of imprudence and weakness.

748. Though the natural order of the ideas seems to require that the regimen direct be placed before the indirect, the perspicuity of the sentence does not allow it in all cases.

749. Rule.—When a verb has two regimens, the shorter is generally placed first; but if they be of equal length, the regimen direct will precede the indirect.

EXAMPLES.

Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer le vice *des dehors de la vertu,*	Hypocrites make it their study to deck vice with the exterior of virtue.
Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer des dehors de la vertu *les vices les plus honteux et les plus décriés,*	Hypocrites make it their study to deck with the exterior of virtue the most shameful and most odious vices.
L'ambition sacrifie le présent *à l'avenir, mais la volupté sacrifie* l'avenir *au présent,*	Ambition sacrifices the present to the future, but pleasure sacrifices the future to the present.

EXERCISE ON THE GOVERNMENT OF THE VERBS.

1. Illustrious examples teach us that God has hurled *from their thrones princes who contemned his laws:* he reduced *to the condition of a beast the haughty Nebuchadnezzar, who wanted to usurp divine honors.*

2. Wretched is* the man who feeds *his mind with chimeras.*

3. Our interest should prompt us to prefer *virtue to vice, wisdom to pleasure, and modesty to vanity.*

(1.) *Illustrious*, fameux—*teach*, apprendre—*hurled*, renverser—*haughty* superbe—Nebuchadnezzar, Nabuchodonosor—*wanted to*, vouloir H.

(2.) *Feeds*, repaître—*with*, de.

(3.) *Should*, devoir F.—*prompt*, porter—*pleasure*, volupté.

750. Rule.—A noun may be governed at once by two verbs, provided those verbs do not require different regimens.

EXAMPLES.

On doit aimer et respecter les rois, We ought to love and respect kings.
Ce général attaqua et prit la ville, That general attacked and took the city

751. But we must not say,

Cet officier attaqua et se rendit maître de la ville, That officer attacked and made himself master of the city.

752. A different turn should be given to the sentence, by placing the noun after the first verb and adding *en* before the second; as,

Cet officier attaqua la ville, *et s'*en *rendit maître,* That officer attacked the city, and made himself master of it.

EXERCISE.

1. Luxury is like a torrent, which *carries away* and *overthrows* every thing it meets.

2. Nothing can* resist the operation of time: it at length *undermines*, *alters*, or *destroys* every thing.

3. Among the Spartans, public education had two objects: the first, to harden their bodies by fatigue; the second, to *excite* and *nourish* in their minds the love of their country and an enthusiasm for what is great.

(1.) *Carries away*, entraîner—*overthrows*, renverser—*every thing*, tout ce que.
(2.) *Operation*, action—*at length*, à la longue—*undermines*, miner.
(3.) *Among the Spartans*, à Sparte—*to*, de—*harden*, endurcir—*by*, à—*their*, les—*for what is great*, les grandes choses.

On the use, proper or accidental, of Moods and Tenses.

INDICATIVE.

753. The *present* is used to express an existing state; as,

Je suis ici, I am here.

754. An invariable state; as,

Dieu est de toute éternité, God is from all eternity.

755. A future near at hand; as,

Il est demain fête, To-morrow is a holiday.

756. Or even a preterit, when, to give a sort of animated picture, we relate a thing past as passing. Thus, we find in Racine,

J'ai vu votre malheureux fils traîné par ses chevaux, I have seen your unhappy son dragged along by his horses.

757. But suddenly passing from the preterit to the present, the speaker adds,

Il veut les rappeler, et sa voix les effraie, He calls out to stop them, but his voice frightens them.

758. In English, the verb *to be* is frequently used with the participle present; as,

I am reading, I am translating, I shall be writing.

759. This construction is not adopted in French; and, whenever found, it is to be translated in French simply by the verb, put in the tense expressed by the verb *to be*. Thus, *I am reading*, must be expressed by *je lis; I shall be writing*, must be rendered *j'écrirai*, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE PROPER USE OF MOODS, &c.

1. *He is* in his chamber, where he *is relaxing* his mind from the fatigue of business by some instructive and agreeable reading.

2. Truth, eternal by its nature, *is* immutable as God himself.

3. I never *let** a day *pass* without devoting an hour or two to reading the ancients.

4. It is this week that the new piece *comes* out.

5. The armies were in sight: nothing was heard on all sides but dreadful cries: the engagement began. Immediately a cloud of arrows *darkens* the air and *covers* the combatants: nothing *is* heard but doleful cries of the dying, or the clattering of the arms of those who *fall* in the conflict; the earth *groans* beneath a heap of dead bodies, and rivers of blood *stream* every where; there *is* nothing in this confused mass of men enraged against one another but slaughter, despair, revenge, and brutal fury.

(1.) *Is relaxing*, délasser—*reading*, lecture.
(2.) *By*, de—*immutable*, immuable.
(3.) *Devoting*, consacrer—*reading*, la lecture de.
(4.) *Come out*, on donne.
(5.) *Sight*, présence—*nothing was*, &c. on ne que H.—*the engagement began*, on en vint aux mains—*cloud*, nuée—*arrows*, trait—*darkens*, obscurcir—*nothing is*, &c. on n'entend plus que—*doleful*, plaintif—*clattering*, bruit—*conflict*, mêlée—*groans*, gémir—*beneath*, sous—*heap*, monceau—*rivers*, ruisseau—*stream*, couler—*there is nothing in*, &c. ce ne être dans—*mass*, amas—*enraged*, acharné—*but*, que—*slaughter*, massacre.

760. The *imperfect* is used—1, To denote the recurrence of an action at a time which is past; as,

Quand j'étais à Paris, j'allais souvent aux Champs Elysées,	When I was at Paris, I often went to the *Champs Elysées.*

761. 2, For a past which has some duration, especially in narrations; as,

Rome était d'abord gouvernée par des rois,	Rome was at first governed by kings.

EXERCISE ON THE USE OF THE IMPERFECT.

1. When I *was* at Paris, I *went* every morning to take a walk in the *Champs Elysées* or the *Bois de Boulogne:* afterwards, I *came* home, where I employed myself till dinner either in reading or writing; and in the evening, I generally *went* for amusement to the French Theatre or the Opera.

2. When I *was* in the prime of life, like the light butterfly, I *fluttered* from object to object, without being able to settle to any thing: eager for

---

(1.) *Take a walk*, se promener—*in*, à—*came home*, rentrer chez soi—*employed*, s'occuper—*in reading*, (say *to read*)—*for amusement*, me délasser—*French Theatre*, Comédie Française.
(2.) *Prime of life*, fleur de l'âge—*butterfly*, papillon—*fluttered*, voler—*being able*

pleasure, I *seized* every thing that *had* its appearance: alas! how far *was* I then from foreseeing that I should deplore with so much bitterness the loss of that precious time.

3. For a short time after Abraham, the knowledge of the true God still *appeared* in Palestine and Egypt. Melchisedec, king of Salem, *was* the priest of the Most High God. Abimelech, king of Gerar, and his successor of the same name, *feared* God, *swore* by his name, and *reverenced* his power. But in Moses' time, the nations *adored* even beasts and reptiles Every thing *was* God but God himself.

---

pouvoir—*settle*, me fixer—*eager for*, avide de—*had its appearance*, m'en présentait l'image—*how*, que—*with so much bitterness*, (so bitterly).

(3.) *Swore*, jurer—*reverenced*, admirer—*the nations*, on—*even*, jusqu'à—*but*, excepté

762. In French, the *preterit definite* and the *preterit indefinite* are not used indifferently.

763. The preterit *definite* is used when speaking of a time which is entirely past, and of which nothing remains; as,

Je fis un voyage à Bath le mois dernier,	I took a journey to Bath last month.
J'écrivis hier à Rome,	I wrote yesterday to Rome.

764. To authorize the use of this tense, there must be the interval of at least one day. It is the most used in the historic style, and for that reason called *parfait historique.*

765. The preterit *indefinite* is used either for a past indeterminate or for a past of which something still remains; as,

J'ai voyagé en Italie,	I have travelled in Italy.
J'ai déjeûné ce matin à Londres, et dîné à Richmond,	I breakfasted this morning in London and dined at Richmond.

EXERCISE ON THE PROPER USE OF THE PRETERIT.

Amenophis *conceived* the design of making his son a conqueror. He *set about* it after the manner of the Egyptians—that is, with great ideas. All the children who were born on* the same day as Sesostris, *were brought* to court by order of the king: he *had* them educated as his own children, and with the same care as Sesostris. When he *was* grown up, he made him serve his apprenticeship in a war against the Arabs: this young prince *learned* there to bear hunger and thirst, and *subdued* that nation, till then invincible. He afterwards *attacked* Lybia, and *conquered* it. After these successes, he *formed* the project of subduing the whole world. In consequence of* this,* he entered Ethiopia, which he *made* tributary. He *continued* his victories in Asia. Jerusalem *was* the first to feel the force of his arms: the rash Rehoboam *could* not resist him, and Sesostris *carried* away the riches of Solomon. He *penetrated* into the Indies, farther than Hercules and Bacchus, and farther than Alexander did afterward. The Scythians *obeyed* him as far as the Tanais; Armenia and Cappadocia *were* subject to him. In a word, he *extended* his empire from the Ganges to the Danube.

Making, faire de—*set about it*, s'y prendre—*after*, à—*ideas*, pensée—*brought*, amener—*had educated*, faire élever—*grown up*, grand—*made serve*, fit faire—*apprenticeship*, apprentissage—*in*, par—*entered*, entrer dans—*made*, rendre—*as far as*, jusqu'à—*Cappadocia*, Cappadoce.

766. The preterit indefinite is sometimes used instead of a future just approaching; as,

Avez-vous bientôt fini?	Have you soon done?
Oui, j'ai fini dans le moment,	Yes, I shall have done in a moment.

EXERCISE.

1. Enflamed with the desire of knowing mankind, I *have travelled*, not only among the most polished nations, but even among the most barbarous. I *have observed* them in the different degrees of civilization, from the state of simple nature to the most perfect state of society, and wherever I went, the result *was* the same: that is to say, I *have* every where *seen* beings occupied in drying up the different sources of happiness that nature had placed within their reach.

2. I *have travelled* this year in Italy, where I *had* an* opportunity of seeing several masterpieces of antiquity, and where I *made* a valuable collection of scarce medals. I there *admired* the perfection to which they *have brought* architecture, painting, and music; but what *pleased* me most there, was the beauty of the climate of Naples.

(1.) *With*, de—*mankind*, homme, pl.—*among*, chez—*polished nations*, peuple policé—*barbarous*, nation sauvage—*from*, depuis—*simple*, pur—*to*, jusqu'à—*wherever I went*, dans tous les pays—*the result was the same*, (I had the same result)—*in drying up*, à tarir—*within their reach*, à leur portée.

(2.) *Opportunity*, occasion—*masterpieces*, chefs d'œuvre—*scarce*, rare—*pleased me most*, faire le plus de plaisir—*was*, est.

767. The two preterits anterior differ in the same manner as the two preceding preterits; but they are always accompanied by a conjunction, or an adverb of time; as,

Je suis sorti dès que j'ai eu dîné,	I went out as soon as I had dined.
J'eus fini hier à midi,	I had done yesterday at noon.

768. The *pluperfect* denotes that a thing took place before another which had itself already taken place; as,

J'avais soupé quand il entra,	I had supped when he came in.

EXERCISE. [causes.

1. As soon as I *had examined* this phenomenon, I tried to find out its

2. As soon as we *had crossed* the river, we found ourselves in a wood where there was not a single foot-path traced.

3. As soon as the great Sesostris *had satisfied* his ambition by the conquest of so many empires, he returned into Egypt, where he devoted the whole of the day to administering strict justice to his people, and in the evening he recreated himself by holding conferences with the learned, or by conversing with the most upright people of his kingdom.

4. I *had* only *received*, like most of the grandees, an education in which I *had imbibed* nothing but sentiments of pride and insensibility; that is, they *had done* every thing in their power to stifle in me the happy and benevolent dispositions which I *had received* from nature.

(1) *As soon as*, dès que—*tried to find out*, en rechercher.

(2.) *Crossed*, traverser—*found ourselves*, se trouver engagé—*foot-path*, sentier de.

(3) *The whole of the day*, jour entier—*administering*, rendre A.—*strict*, exact—*recreated*, délasser—*by holding conferences*, à s'entretenir—*upright*, honnête—*people*, gens.

(4.) *Grandee*, grand—*imbibed*, puiser—*they*, on—*in their power*, ce qu'on pouvoir I—*stifle*, étouffer—*benevolent*, bienfaisant.

769. As the use of these different preterits is attended with some difficulty, the following analysis is added, in order more clearly to explain the manner in which they are used.

770. We read in Marmontel the following extract:

Célicour, à l'âge de quinze ans, avait été *dans le monde ce qu'on appelle un petit prodige.*	Célicour, at the age of fifteen, *had been* in the world what is called a little prodigy.

771. The author employs the pluperfect, as he speaks of a period of time anterior to all those which he is going to mention.

Il fesait *des vers les plus galans du monde ; il n'y* avait *pas dans le voisinage une jolie femme qu'il n'eût célébrée :* c'était *dommage de laisser tant de talens enfouis dans une petite ville ; Paris* devait *en être le théâtre,*	He *composed* the most agreeable love-sonnets imaginable ; there *was* not a pretty woman in the neighborhood that he had not celebrated : it *was* a pity to let so many talents be buried in a little town : Paris *was* the theatre on which they ought to be exhibited.

772. Here the author makes use of the imperfect, because he speaks of the habitual employment of Célicour.

*Et l'*on fit *si bien, que son père se* résolut *de l'y envoyer,*	And they *contrived* matters so that his father *determined* to send him there.

773. Now, the author passes to the preterit definite, because he is no longer speaking of what Célicour used to do, but what he did at a time past, and of which nothing remains

Ce père était *un honnête homme, qui* aimait *l'esprit sans en avoir, et qui* admirait, *sans savoir pourquoi, tout ce qui* venait *de la capitale. Il* avait *même des rélations littéraires, et du nombre de ses correspondans* était *un connaisseur nommé M. de Fintac,*	This father *was* a good sort of man, who *was* fond of wit, without having any, and *admired*, without knowing why, every thing that *came* from the metropolis. Nay, he even had some literary connexions, and among his correspondents was a connaisseur of the name of Fintac.

774. Here, again, the author resumes the form of the imperfect, as he is now speaking of the habitual state of Célicour's father in his little town, and because, in this passage, he merely relates what that father was doing, at a time past, which has no kind of relation to the present.

Ce fut *principalement à lui que Célicour* fut *recommandé,*	It *was* particularly to him that Célicour *was* recommended.

775. The form of the preterit definite is now resumed, because this is an action passed, at a time of which nothing is left, &c.

EXERCISE.

1. God, who *had created* his angels in holiness, *would* have their happiness depend upon themselves: they *could* insure their felicity, by giving themselves willingly to their Creator; but they *delighted* in themselves, and not in God: immediately those spirits of light *became* spirits of darkness.

2. There is a letter which Philocles *has written* to a friend of his, about his project of making himself king of Carpathus. I *perused* that letter, and it *seemed* to me to be the hand of Philocles. They *had* perfectly *imitated* his writing. This letter *threw* me into a strange surprise. I *read* it again and again, and *could* not persuade myself that it *was* written* by Philocles, when I recalled to my mind the affecting marks which he *had given* me of his disinterestedness and integrity.

3. Those who *had shewn* the greatest zeal for the state and my person *did not think* themselves obliged to undeceive me after so terrible an example. I myself *was afraid* lest truth should break through the cloud, and reach me in spite of all my flatterers. I *felt* within myself that it would have raised in me bitter remorse. My effeminacy, and the dominion which a treacherous minister *had gained* over me, *threw* me into a kind of despair of ever recovering my* liberty.

(1.) *Have their happiness depend*, (that their happiness) dépendre S.—*could*, pouvoir—*delighted in*, se plaire en—*of light*, lumineux—*darkness*, ténèbres.
(2.) *There is*, voilà—*about*, sur—*Carpathus*, Carpathie—*to be*, de—*they*, on—*again and again*, sans cesse—*by*, de—*when I recalled to*, repasser dans J.—*integrity*, bonne foi.
(3.) *Did not think themselves obliged to*, se croire dispensé de—*was afraid lest*, craindre que—*break through*, percer S.—*reach*, parvenir jusqu'à—*in spite of*, malgré—*raised in*, causer à—*effeminacy*, mollesse—*dominion*, ascendant—*treacherous*, perfide—*gained*, prendre—*threw*, plonger—*recovering*, rentrer en.

776. There is this difference between the two future tenses, that the period of time expressed by the future absolute may or may not be determined; as,

J'irai à la campagne, *or* j'irai demain à la campagne,

while, in the future anterior, the time is necessarily determined; as,

J'aurai fini, quand vous arriverez.

EXERCISE.

1. Remember that youth is but a flower, which *will wither* almost as soon as it* opens. Thou *wilt see thyself* gradually changed. Smiling graces, sweet pleasures, strength, health, and joy, *will vanish* like a pleasing dream; nothing but the sad remembrance will be left thee.

2. I *shall* next year *take* a journey into Greece, and I am preparing myself for it by reading the travels of the young Anacharsis.

3. When you *have read* the celebrated discourse of Bossuet on Universal History, and *studied* in it the causes of the rise and fall of states, you *will be* less astonished at the revolutions, more or less sudden, that modern empires have experienced, which appeared to you in the most flourishing state.

(1.) *Will wither*, (will be almost as soon withered) sécher—*opens*, éclose—*gradually*, insensiblement—*lively*, riant—*pleasing*, beau—*nothing will be left*, il n'en reste I.
(2.) *Take*, faire—*for it*, y—*reading*, lecture de—*the travels*, celui.
(3.) *Have read*, M.—*and*, que vous M.—*in it*, y—*rise*, grandeur—*fall*, chute—*sudden*, subite—(that have experienced the modern empires, which. &c.) *appeared*, H.

CONDITIONAL.

777. The conditional is used—1, To express a wish; as,

Que je serais, or *que j'aurais été content de réussir dans cette affaire !*	How glad I should be, or should have been, to succeed in that affair !

778. 2, With *si*, if, whether, expressing a doubt; as,

Demandez-lui s'il serait venu avec nous supposé qu'il n'eût pas eu affaire,	Ask him whether he would have come with us, had he not been busy.

779. 3, Before or after the imperfect, or pluperfect of the indicative, preceded by *si;* as,

Nous nous épargnerions bien des peines, si nous savions modérer nos désirs,	We should spare ourselves much pain, did we know how to moderate our desires.
Vous auriez été plus heureux, si vous aviez suivi mes conseils,	You would have been more happy if you had followed my advice.

780. 4, With *quand*, used instead of *si*, *quoique*, or *quand même;* the verb preceded by *quand* is generally in one of the conditionals; as,

Quand l'avare posséderait tout l'or du monde, il ne serait pas encore content,	Were the miser to possess all the gold in the world, still he would not be satisfied.

781. 5, Lastly, for various tenses of the indicative; as,

Croiriez-vous votre fils ingrat ?	Could you think your son ungrateful ?

which means *croyez-vous*, &c.

L'auriez-vous soupçonné d'un tel vice ?	Could you have suspected him of such a vice ?

which means *l'avez-vous*, &c.

Quelle raison pourrait m'empêcher d'aller vous voir ?	What cause could prevent me from coming to see you ?

which means *quelle cause pourra*, &c.

EXERCISE ON THE CONDITIONAL.

1. If it *were* even possible for men always to act conformably to equity, as it is the multitude that must judge their conduct, the wicked would always blame and contradict them from malignity, and the good sometimes from mistake.

2. What false steps I *should have made*, but for you, at my entrance into the world !

3. But for your counsels, I *should have failed* in this undertaking.

(1.) *If even*, quand même—*were*, N.—*for men*, (that men)—*to act*, S —*judge*, juger de—*would blame*, M.—*contradict*, croiser M.

(2.) *What*, que de— *steps*, démarche—*but for*, sans.

(3.) *But for*, sans —*failed*, échouer.

4. How satisfied I *should have been* if you had sooner informed me of your happiness!

5. If we gave to infancy none but just and clear notions, *there would* not be by far so many false wits in the world.

6. *Had* Alexander *conquered* the whole world, his ambition *would not have been* satisfied; he *would* still *have found* himself straitened in it.

7. *Could you believe* him vain enough to aspire to that high degree of honor?

8. *Could you* ever *have thought* him capable of deserting the good cause, to go and side with rebels?

9. *Would you renounce* being useful to the present generation because envy fastens on you?

(4.) *How*, que.
(5.) *We*, on—*there would not be by far so many*, il y aurait bien moins de.
(6.) (When Alexander would have conquered)—*straitened*, trop à l'étroit. [de.
(8.) *Deserting*, abandonner—*to go and side with*, pour se ranger sous les drapeaux
(9.) *Renounce*, renoncer à—*fastens*, s'attacher—*on you*, à vos pas.

Remark on the use of the Conditional and Future.

782. Foreigners are very apt to use the future or the conditional after *si*, when meaning *supposé que*. They say,

J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il fera *beau*,	I shall go into the country to-morrow if the weather be fine.
Vous auriez vu le roi, si *vous* seriez *venu*,	You would have seen the king if you had come.

783. The impropriety of this construction will be obviated by attending to the following

784. Rule.—When a verb is preceded by *si*, meaning *supposé que*, the present is used instead of the future absolute; the preterit indefinite instead of the future anterior; the imperfect instead of the conditional present; and the pluperfect instead of the conditional past.

EXAMPLES.

J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il fait *beau*,	I shall go to-morrow into the country, if it be fine weather.
Il aura eu l'avantage, s'il a suivi *vos conseils*,	He will have had the advantage, if he has followed your advice.
Je serais content, si je *vous* voyais *appliqué*,	I should be pleased if I saw you apply to study.
J'aurais été content, si je *vous* avais vu *appliqué*,	I should have been pleased if I had seen you attentive to your studies.

785. Remark.—This rule does not hold good, either when *si* is placed between two verbs, the first of which implies doubt, uncertainty; as,

Je ne sais s'il viendra,

786. Or, with the second conditional past; as,

Vous m'eussiez trouvé, si vous fussiez venu ce matin.

EXERCISE.

1. A young man who is just entering the career of letters *will conciliate* the good will of the public, *if he consider* his first successes only as an encouragement to do better.

2. That absurd criticism *will have amused* only fools or malicious people,* if attention *has been paid* to the spirit that pervades the whole, and the manner in which it is written.

3. Life *would possess* many more sweets and charms, *if men*, instead of tearing one another to pieces, *formed* but one society of brethren.

4. The Athenians *would have found* in the young Alcibiades the only man capable of insuring their superiority in Greece, *had not* that vain, thoughtless people *forced* him, by an unjust, or, at least, imprudent sentence, to banish himself from his country.

5. I know not *whether* reason *will* soon *triumph* over prejudice and ignorance, but I am certain it will be the case sooner or later.

6. Rome *would have never attained* that high degree of splendor and glory which astonishes us, *had it* not *extended* its conquests as much by its policy as by its arms.

(1.) *Is just entering*, débuter dans—*career*, carrière—*conciliate*, s'attirer—*good will*, bienveillance—*consider*, regarder.
(2.) *Fools*, sot—*malicious*, méchant—*paid*, faire—*pervades the whole*, régner d'un bout à l'autre—*in which*, dont.
(3.) *Possess*, avoir—*tearing one another to pieces*, s'entredéchirer.
(4.) *Superiority*, prépondérance—*thoughtless*, léger—*sentence*, condamnation.
(5.) *Know*, savoir—*it will be the case*, cela être.
(6.) *Attained*, parvenir à—*policy*, politique.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

787. There are conjunctions which govern the indicative (page 172), and others which govern the subjunctive (page 173). We call *principal proposition* the phrase which is followed by the conjunction, and *incidental* or *subordinate proposition* that which is placed after the conjunction. In this sentence,

Je crois que vous aimez à jouer,

je crois is the principal proposition, and *vous aimez à jouer* is the subordinate proposition: *que* is the conjunction which unites the two phrases.

788. General Rule.—The verb of the *subordinate* proposition must be put in the *indicative* when the verb of the *principal* proposition expresses affirmation, in a direct, positive, and independent manner; but it is put in the *subjunctive* when that of the *principal* proposition expresses doubt, wish, or uncertainty.

Je sais qu'il est surpris,	I know he is surprised.
Je crois qu'il viendra,	I believe he will come.
Je doute qu'il soit surpris,	I doubt his being surprised
Je doute qu'il vienne,	I doubt his coming.
Je souhaite qu'il réussisse,	I wish he may succeed.
Je tremble qu'il ne succombe	I tremble lest he should fail

EXERCISE ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The glory which has been ascribed to the Egyptians of being the most grateful of all men, *shows* that *they were* likewise the most sociable
2. In Egypt, when it *was proved* that the conduct of a dead man* *had been* bad, they condemned his memory, and he was denied burial.
3. I *am sure* that by moderation, mildness, and politeness, you *will disarm* even* envy itself.
4. The new philosophers *say* that color *is* a sensation of the soul.
5. I *believe you* are as honest and disinterested as you seem to be
6. I *doubt* whether the Romans *would* ever *have triumphed* over the Gauls if the different chiefs of this warlike people had not been disunited.
7. I *could wish* that the love which we ought to have for one another, *were* the principle of all our actions, as it is the basis of all virtues.
8. *Fear*, lest it *should be said* that you feed upon chimeras, and that you take the shadow for the reality.
9. The new philosophers *will have* color *to be* a sensation of the soul.
10. I *will have* you *to be* as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

(1.) *Which has*, &c. qu'on—*ascribed*, donner—*grateful*, reconnaissant.—*men*, peu-
(2.) *Was denied*, priver de—*burial*, sépulture. [ple, sing.
(3.) *By*, avec—*politeness*, honnêteté.
(5.) *Seem to be*, le paraître.
(6.) *Whether*, que.
(8.) *It*, on ne—*feed upon*, se repaître de.
(9.) *Will have*, vouloir—*color to be*, (that color be).

789. *Do*, *did*, *will*, *would*, *should*, *can*, *could*, *may*, and *might*, are sometimes, with respect to the French language, simply signs of tenses, at others they are real verbs.

790. There can be no difficulty about *do* and *did*; these are mere expletives, denoting interrogation, negation, or merely emphasis, when they are joined to a verb.

I do love,	J'aime.
I did love,	J'aimais, *or* j'aimai.
Do I love?	Aimé-je ?
Did I love?	Aimais-je, *or* aimai-je ?
I do not love,	Je n'aime pas.
I did not love,	Je n'aimais pas, *or* je n'aimai pas.

91. In all these cases they are not expressed in French. But when they are followed by a noun or a pronoun, then they are real verbs, and mean *faire*, to do.

Do me that favor,	Faites-moi ce plaisir.
He did it,	Il le fit.

792. In short, they are expressed by *faire* to do, whenever they are followed by any thing else except by the verb with which they are necessarily connected; as,

He did more than could have been expected,	Il fit plus qu'on n'eût pu espérer

793. *Should* is only a sign of the conditional when it expresses a thing which may happen upon some condition

I should like a country life if my affairs would permit me to indulge my inclination,	J'aimerais la vie champêtre, si mes affaires me permettaient de suivre mon goût.

794. But when it implies duty or obligation, it is a verb, and must be expressed by the verb *devoir* to owe; as,

We should never swerve from the path of virtue,	Nous ne devrions jamais nous écarter du sentier de la vertu.

795. *Can*, *could*, *may*, and *might*, are not so difficult as they appear at first sight; because, in almost every instance, there is no impropriety in rendering them by the verb *pouvoir*. In general, *can* and *could* imply a power, a possibility, a capability, &c., and *may* and *might* a permission, a probability, &c.

796. *Do*, *did*, *shall*, *will*, &c. in English, are sometimes used elliptically in the answers to interrogative sentences. The French answer with the repetition of the verb, accompanied with a pronoun expressive of the idea of the interrogative sentence; as,

Will you do your exercise to-day? Yes, I will.	Ferez-vous votre thême au jourd'hui ?—Oui, je le ferai.

Relations between the Tenses of the Indicative.

797. RULE.—When the first verb is in the imperfect, the preterit, or the pluperfect, and the second denotes a temporary action, this second verb is put in the imperfect, if we mean to express a present.

EXAMPLE.

Je croyais, j'ai cru, j'avais cru que vous étudiiez les mathématiques,	I thought, I have thought, I had thought that you were studying mathematics.

798. The second verb is put in the pluperfect, if we mean to express a past.

EXAMPLE.

Il m'assura qu'il n'avait jamais tant ri,	He assured me that he had never laughed so much.

799. The second verb is put in the present of the conditional, if we mean to express a future absolute.

EXAMPLE.

On m'a dit que votre frère viendrait à Londres l'hiver prochain,	I was told your brother would come to town next winter.

800. But, although the first verb may be in some of these tenses, yet the second is put in the present when this second verb expresses a thing which is true at all times.

EXAMPLE.

Je vous disais, je vous ai dit, je vous avais dit, que la santé fait la félicité du corps, et le savoir celle de l'ame,	I told you, I have told you, I had told you, that health constitutes the happiness of the body, and knowledge that of the soul.

801. REMARK.—In phrases where the imperfect is preceded by *que* it denotes sometimes a past, sometimes a present, with respect to the preceding verb. It denotes a past when the verb which is joined to it by the conjunction *que* is in the present or future

EXAMPLE.

Vous savez, or *vous saurez que le peuple Romain* était *aussi avide qu'ambitieux*,	You know, *or* you must know that the Romans were a people as covetous as they were ambitious.

802. But it denotes a present when the verb which precedes it is in the imperfect, one of the preterits, or the pluperfect.

EXAMPLE.

On disait, on a dit, on avait dit que Phocion était *le plus grand et le plus honnête homme de son temps*,	It was said, it has been said, it had been said, that Phocion was the greatest and most upright man of his age.
Dès qu'on eut appris à Athènes qu' Alcibiade était *à Lacédémone, on se repentit de la précipitation avec laquelle on l'avait condamné*,	As soon as it was known at Athens that Alcibiades was at Lacedemon, the Athenians repented of the precipitation with which they had condemned him.

803. Nevertheless, the imperfect denotes the past, in this last instance, when it signifies an action which was past before that which is expressed by the first verb.

EXAMPLE.

En lisant l'histoire des temps héroïques, vous devez avoir remarqué que ces hommes dont on a fait des demi-dieux, étaient *des chefs féroces et barbares, dignes à peine du nom d'homme*,	In reading the history of heroic times, you must have remarked that those men who have been made demi-gods were ferocious and barbarous chiefs, scarcely deserving the name of men.

EXERCISE.

1. I *thought* you *were not ignorant* that, to teach others the principles of an art or science, it is necessary to have experience and skill.

2. I *have been told* that your sweetest occupation *was* to form your taste, your heart, and your understanding.

3. Darius, in his flight, being* reduced to the necessity of drinking water muddy and infected by dead bodies, *affirmed* that he never *had drunk* with so much pleasure.

(1.) *Were ignorant*, ignorer—*teach*, instruire dans—*it is necessary*, avoir besoin—*skill*, habileté
(2.) *I have*, &c. on m'a dit.
(3.) *Flight*, déroute—*muddy*, bourbeux—*affirmed*, assurer.

4. Care *has been taken* to inculcate in me, from infancy, that *I should succeed* in the world only in proportion as I should join to the desire of pleasing, a great deal of gentleness and civility.

5. Ovid *has said* that study *softens* the manners and *corrects* every thing that is found in us rude and barbarous.

6. You *know* that those pretended heroes whom pagan antiquity has made gods, *were* only barbarous and ferocious kings, who overran the earth, not so much to conquer as to ravage it, and who left every where traces of their fury and of their vices.

7. It *has been said of* Pericles that his eloquence was like a thunderbolt, which nothing could resist.

8. As soon as Aristides *had said* that the proposal of Themistocles *was* unjust, the whole people *exclaimed* that they must not think of it any longer.

9. Had you read the history of the early ages, *you would know* that Egypt *was* the most enlightened country in the universe, and the original spot* whence knowledge *spread* into Greece and the neighboring countries.

(4.) *Care has*, &c. (active voice) on avoir—*in me*, me—*in proportion*, autant—*civility*, honnêteté.
(5.) *Corrects*, effacer—*is found*, se trouver de.
(6.) *Overran*, parcourir—*not so much*, moins.
(7.) *It*, on—*thunderbolt*, foudre—(to), *which*.
(8.) *Exclaimed*, s'écrier—*they must*, falloir H.—*of it*, y—*any longer*, plus.
(9.) *Ages*, temps—*the original spot* whence*, celui d'où—*neighboring*, circonvoisin—*countries*, lieu.

Relations between the Tenses of the Subjunctive and those of the Indicative.

804. Rule I.—When the verb of the principal proposition is in the present or future, that of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, to express a present or future, but in the preterit to express a past. We say,

Il faut que celui qui parle se mette *à la portée de celui qui l'écoute*, — He that speaks should accommodate himself to the understanding of him that listens.

Il voudra que votre frère soit *de la partie*, — He will wish your brother to be one of the party.

805. But we must say,

Pour s'être élevé à ce point de grandeur, il faut que Rome ait eu *une suite non interrompue de grands hommes*, — To have risen to that pitch of grandeur, Rome must have had an uninterrupted succession of great men.

806. Exception.—Though the first verb be in the present or future, yet the second may be put in the imperfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, when some conditional expression is introduced into the sentence.

Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne fût *très-mortifié, s'il savait tout ce qu'on pense de lui*, — There is no man, whatever merit he may have, that would not feel very much mortified were he to know all that is thought of him.

Où trouvera-t-on un homme qui ne fît la même faute, s'il était exposé aux mêmes tentations ?	Where will you find the man who would not have committed the same error, had he been exposed to the same temptations ?
Je doute que votre frère eût réussi *sans votre assistance,*	I doubt whether your brother would have succeeded, had it not been for your assistance.

EXERCISE.

1. He who wishes to teach an art, must *know it* thoroughly ; he must *give* none but clear, precise, and well-digested notions of it : he must *instil* them, one by one, into the minds of his pupils ; and, above all, he must not overburden their memory with useless or unimportant rules.

2. He *must yield* to the force of truth when they *shall have suffered* it to appear in its real light.

3. There is no work, however perfect people may suppose it, that would not be liable to criticism, if it were examined with severity and in every point of view.

4. I doubt whether his piece would have had the approbation of *connaisseurs* if he had not determined to make in it the changes you judged necessary.

(1.) *It must*, (that he who, &c. know it)—*he must* (not repeated), que—*instil*, faire entrer—*by*, à—*overburden*, surcharger—*unimportant*, insignifiant.

(2.) (It must L. that he)—*yield*, se rendre—*suffered*, permettre—*it to appear*, (that it appear)—*real light*, vrai jour

(3.) *Would be liable*, prêter S.—*with severity*, à la rigueur—*in*, sous—*point of view*, face.

(4.) *Approbation*, suffrage—*had determined*, se décider—*in it*, y—*judged*, G.

807. Rule II.—When the first verb is in the imperfect, either of the preterits, the pluperfect, or either of the conditionals, the second is put in the imperfect of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a present or future, but it is put in the pluperfect if we wish to express a past.

Je voulais, j'ai voulu, j'eus voulu, je voudrais, *or*
J'eusse voulu que *vous finissiez* cette affaire.
Je ne savais pas, je n'ai pas su, &c. que *vous eussiez étudié* les mathématiques.

808. Remark.—With the preterit indefinite the second verb is put in the present if it expresses an action which is or may be done at all times ; as,

Dieu a entouré les yeux de tuniques fort minces, transparantes au dehors, afin qu'on puisse *voir à travers,*	God has surrounded the eyes with very thin tunics, transparent on the outside, that we may see through them.

809. And in the preterit if we mean to express a past ; as,

*Il a fallu qu'*il ait sollicité *ses juges,*	He must have been obliged to solicit his judges,

EXERCISE.

1. Mr. de Turenne never *would* buy any thing on credit from tradesmen for fear, he used to say, they *should lose* a great part of their demand, if he happened to be killed. All the workmen who were employed about his house had orders to bring in their bills before he set out for the campaign, and they were regularly paid.

2. It *would be better* for a man who truly loves himself *to lose* his life than to forfeit his honor by some base and shameful action.

3. Lycurgus, in one of his laws, *had forbidden* to light home* those who came from a feast in the evening, that the fear of not being able to reach their houses might *prevent* them from getting intoxicated.

4. People *used* the bark of trees, or skins, to write upon* before paper *was* known.

5. Go and* ask that old man, "For whom are you planting?" he will answer you, "For the immortal gods, who *have ordered* both that I *should profit* by the labor of those who have preceded me, and that those who should come after me *should profit* by mine."

(1.) *Would*, vouloir H.—*buy on credit*, prendre à crédit—*of*, chez—*happened*, venir—*were employed*, travailler—*about*, pour—*bills*, mémoire—*he*, on—*set out for*, se mettre en.

(2.) *To lose*, (that he *would lose*)—*forfeit*, ternir.

(3.) *In*, par—*to light*, que on éclairer S.—*that*, afin que—*reach their houses*, se rendre chez eux—*getting intoxicated*, s'enivrer.

(4.) *People*, on—*bark*, écorce—*skins*, peau—*known*, en usage.

(5.) *Have ordered*, vouloir—*both*, et—*by*, de.

810. In interrogative and negative sentences, the second verb is generally put in the subjunctive; as,

Quel est l'insensé qui *tienne* pour sûr qu'il vivra demain?
Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les choses *pussent* tourner si mal.

811. The verb is likewise in the subjunctive after the superlative relative, and frequently after an impersonal verb; as,

Le meilleur cortége qu'un prince *puisse* avoir, c'est le cœur de ses sujets.

812. The subjunctive is elegantly used in elliptical phrases, where the principal proposition is omitted; as

Qu'il vive! (je souhaite qu'il),	May he live!
Qu'il se soit oublié jusqu'à ce point! (je suis surpris qu'il),	That he should have so far forgotten himself!
Qui m'aime, me suive! (je veux que celui qui),	Whoever loves me, let him follow me!
Heureux l'homme qui peut, ne fût-ce que dans sa vieillesse, jouir de toute la force de sa raison! (quand ce ne serait que),	Happy the man that can, were it only in his old age, enjoy the whole strength of his reason!

EXERCISE.

1. *Is there any one* who does not *feel* that nothing is more degrading in a writer than the pains he takes to express ordinary and common things in a singular and pompous style.

(1.) *Is degrading in*, dégrader—*in*, de

2. *Do you think* that, in forming the republic of bees, God *has not had* in view to teach kings to govern with gentleness and subjects to obey with love?

3. You *will never be* at peace, either with yourself or with others, unless you seriously endeavor to restrain your natural impetuosity.

(2.) *Had in view*, vouloir.
(3.) *Be at peace*, avoir la paix—*either*, ni—*or*, ni—*endeavor*, s'appliquer.

813. Remark.—The relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *quel*, *dont*, and *où*, govern the subjunctive in similar circumstances.

EXERCISE.

1. *Who is the writer* that does not sometimes *experience* moments of sterility and languor?

2. *There is not in* the heart of man a good impulse that God does not *produce*.

3. *Choose* a retreat where you *may be* quiet, a post whence you *may defend* yourself.

4. The most flattering reward that a man *can* reap from his labors, is the esteem of an enlightened public.

5. May he live, reign, and long constitute the happiness of a nation which he loves, and by which he is adored!

6. That he should thus degrade himself, is what posterity will find very difficult to believe.

7. A man just and firm is not shaken, either by the clamors of an inconsiderate mob, or by the threats of an imperious tyrant: though* the whole world *were* to fall into ruins, he would be struck by it, but not moved.

(2.) *Impulse*, mouvement.
(3.) *May*, pouvoir.
(5.) *May he*, (repeated before every verb)—*constitute*, faire—*which he loves*, chérir.
(6.) *Find difficult*, avoir de la peine—*believe*, se persuader.
(7.) *Is shaken*, ébranler—*inconsiderate*, insensé—*mob*, populace—*imperious*, fier—*were*, devoir—*to fall into ruins*, s'écrouler.

Further Observations upon the Conditional and Subjunctive.

814. We have said the English auxiliaries *should*, *would*, *could*, *may*, and *might*, are not always to be considered as essentially and necessarily appertaining to the conditional and subjunctive. Indeed, it seldom happens that the French tenses are the same as the English; at least, in subordinate, though they may be in the principal propositions. For instance,

I wish you would come to-night

cannot be translated by

Je souhaite que *vous viendriez* ce soir;

because "when the verb of the principal proposition is in the present, the verb of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a future" Therefore we must say,

Je souhaite que *vous veniez*.

815. Or, "if the first verb is in either of the conditionals, the second must be in the imperfect of the subjunctive." For which reason we must also say,

Je voudrais que *vous vinssiez.* (*See Rule II.*, page 245.)

816. Now, in the first example, *que vous veniez* is marked in the conjunction of the verb by, *that you* may *come*, and in the second—*que vous vinssiez*—by, *that you* might *come*, neither of which is in the examples given. Again,

Il n'y a personne qui le croie,

cannot be translated by, *there is nobody who* may believe it, although *may* is the sign of the subjunctive in the meaning; but the meaning is,

There is nobody that *believes* it; *or, simply,* nobody believes it.

Relations between the Tenses of the different Moods.

817. Remark.—Our intention is not to give the relations which all the tenses bear to each other, but simply to mention some of the principal.

Relations of the Indicative.

818. To the imperfect are subjoined three tenses:

Standard.—*Je lisais* { *quand vous écriviez,* / *quand vous avez écrit,* / *quand vous écrivîtes.*

819. The preterit anterior requires the preterit definite; as, *quand j'eus fini, vous entrâtes.*

820. To the pluperfect are subjoined the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the preterit anterior, and the imperfect.

Standards.—*J'avais lu* { *quand vous entrâtes,* / *quand vous êtes entré,* / *quand vous fûtes entré,* / *quand vous entriez*

821. To the preterit anterior indefinite is subjoined the preterit indefinite; as, *quand j'ai eu dîné, vous êtes entré.*

822. In conjunction with *si*, for *supposé que*, the future absolute requires the present, and the future anterior the preterit indefinite.

Standard.— { *Vous partirez, si je veux.* / *Il sera parti, si vous l'avez voulu.*

Relations to the Conditional and of the Conditional.

823. In conjunction with *si*, for *supposé que*, the conditional present is accompanied by the imperfect, and the first conditional past by the pluperfect or by the second conditional past-

STANDARDS.— *Vous partiriez, si je le voulais.*
Vous seriez parti { *si je l'avais voulu,* / *si je l'eusse voulu.*

824. The tenses of the conditional present, and of the two conditionals past, are likewise accompanied by themselves.

STANDARDS.— *Quand l'avare posséderait tout l'or du monde, il ne serait pas encore content.*
Quand Alexandre aurait conquis tout l'univers, il n'aurait pas été content.
Vous fussiez parti, si je l'eusse voulu.

825. It has been observed that when two words are joined by the conjunction *que*, the second verb is put sometimes in the indicative and sometimes in the subjunctive. (See page 170 and following.)

Relations of the Present *and* Future Absolute, *of the Indicative to the Tenses of their own Mood, and of the Conditional.*

826. These two tenses may be accompanied by all the tenses of the indicative and conditional.

STANDARD.— { *On dit,* / *On dira,* } *que,*
vous partez aujourd'hui,
vous partirez demain,
vous serez parti, quand, &c.
vous partiez hier,
vous partîtes hier,
vous êtes parti ce matin,
vous fûtes parti hier, quand, &c.
vous étiez parti hier, quand, &c.
vous partiriez aujourd'hui, si, &c.
vous seriez parti hier, si, &c.
vous fussiez parti plus tôt, si, &c.

827. REMARK.—The same relation subsists when the sentence is negative; except that for the present absolute of the indicative, the present of the subjunctive is substituted. Instead of *on ne dit pas que vous partez aujourd'hui;* the genius of the French language requires that we should say, *on ne dit pas que vous partiez aujourd'hui.*

828. The imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, and the pluperfect, are accompanied either by the imperfect or by the pluperfect.

STANDARDS.— { *On disait, / On dit hier, / On a dit, / On avait dit,* } *que,* { *vous partiez aujourd'hui, / vous étiez parti.* }

829. The future anterior requires the preterit indefinite; as, *on aura dit que vous avez menti.*

830. The conditional present may be accompanied by the present, the imperfect, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, the future of the indicative, as well as by the three conditionals.

STANDARDS.—*On croirait,* { *qu'il se trompe, / qu'il se trompait, / qu'il s'est trompé, / qu'il s'était trompé, / qu'il se trompera, / qu'il se tromperait, si,* &c. / *qu'il se serait trompé, si,* &c. / *qu'il se fût trompé, si,* &c. }

831. The first conditional past may be accompanied by the imperfect, the pluperfect, as well as the two other conditionals.

STANDARDS.—*On aurait cru,* { *qu'il tombait, / qu'il était tombé, / qu'il serait tombé, / qu'il fût tombé.* }

832. The second conditional past may be accompanied by the same tenses.

Principal Relations with the Subjunctive.

834. To the present, the future absolute, and the future anterior of the indicative, is generally subjoined the present of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— { *Il veut / Il voudra / Il aura voulu* } *que vous partiez.*

834 To the imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, and the preterit anterior, may be subjoined the imperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— { *Je voulais, / Je voulus, / J'ai voulu / J'avais voulu, / J'eus voulu,* } *que vous partissiez.*

835. To the future anterior, the preterit of the subjunctive; as, *Il aura voulu qu'il soit parti.*

836. The conditional present is accompanied either by the imperfect, or by the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— { *Je voudrais que,* { *vous partissiez,* / *vous fussiez parti.*

837. To the first and second conditionals past is subjoined the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— { *J'aurais voulu,* / *J'eusse voulu,* } *que vous fussiez parti.*

OF THE INFINITIVE.

838. The preposition *to* before an infinitive is, according to circumstances, rendered either by *pour*, by *à*, or by *de;* sometimes it is not even expressed at all.

839. When *to* means *in order to*, it is expressed in French by *pour;* as,

He came to speak to me,	Il vint pour me parler.

840. As for the other two cases, there is hardly any fixed rule to distinguish whether *à* or *de*, is to be used; the regimen which the preceding French verb requires after it is the only guide. Thus,

He likes to play, will be expressed by *il aime à jouer; he told me to go*, by *il me dit d'aller;* and *he preferred dying*, by *il aima mieux mourir.*

841. The participle present is used in English both as a substantive and an adjective, and frequently instead of the present of the infinitive.

His ruling *passion is hunting,*	Sa passion *dominante* est *la chasse.*
He is gone a walking,	Il est allé se promener.
Prevent him from doing mischief,	Empêchez-le de faire le mal.
There is a pleasure in silencing great talkers,	Il y a plaisir à fermer la bouche aux grands parleurs.

842. It likewise takes almost every other preposition. In the first of the above examples, it is translated by the substantive; in the second, by the verbal adjective; and in the others by the present of the infinitive.

843. Sometimes the participle present must be expressed by the relative *qui*, with the verb in the indicative, especially when a different mode might create any ambiguity in the sense; as,

I met them riding post,	Je les ai rencontrés qui couraient la poste.

844. Sometimes it must be expressed by the conjunction *que*, with the verb in the indicative or in the subjunctive, as

circumstances may require: this is when the participle present is preceded by a possessive pronoun; as,

The fear of his coming vexed us, La crainte qu'il ne vint nous tourmen-
I doubt his being faithful, Je doute qu'il soit fidèle, &c. [tait.

845. It may be proper to observe that, in French, the preposition *en* alone is followed by the participle present. All other prepositions require the present of the infinitive.

846. Foreigners are apt to mistake the use of the participle present, because they do not consider that, as it expresses an incidental proposition, it must evidently relate to the word which it restrains and modifies.

847. Rule.—The participle present always forming a phrase incidental and subordinate to another, must necessarily relate to the subject of the principal phrase, when it is not preceded by another noun, as in this sentence:

Je ne puis vous accompagner à la campagne, ayant des affaires qui exigent ma présence, I cannot accompany you into the country, having some business that requires my presence here.

848. The participle present *ayant* relates to the subject *je*, since the subordinate proposition, formed by *ayant*, could have no kind of relation to the principal proposition, if it could not be resolved into this:—*Parce que j'ai des affaires qui*, &c. But in this sentence,

Combien voyons-nous de gens qui, connaissant le prix du temps, le perdent mal-à-propos! How many people do we see who knowing the value of time, spend it improperly!

connaissant relates to the substantive *gens*, because this is the word which it restrains and modifies, and because the relative *qui*, placed between that substantive as the regimen and the participle present, obviates every kind of ambiguity.

849. Remarks.—1. Two participles ought never to be used together without being united by a conjunction; as,

C'est un homme aimant et craignant Dieu, He is a man loving and fearing God.

850. The relative *en* ought never to be put either before a participle present or before a gerund. We cannot say,

Je vous ai remis mon fils entre les mains, *en* voulant faire quelque chose de bon,

because the sense would be ambiguous: for the meaning is not,

As I wish to do something good—*or*, as I wish to do well—I have put my son into your hands,

but,

I have put my son into your hands, as I wish to make something *of* him.

We should say, *Voulant* en *faire*, &c.

851. Likewise this sentence would be improper:

Le prince tempère la rigueur du pouvoir, *en en* partageant les foncitons,

on account of the repetition of the word *en*, used in two different senses, viz: as a preposition and a relative. Another turn must then be adopted; as,

C'est *en* partageant les fonctions du pouvoir, qu'un prince *en* tempère la rigueur.

CHAPTER VII.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

852. The office of prepositions is to bring the two terms between which they are placed into a state of relation, and that relation is generally expressed by their own signification; as,

Avec, sur, pendant, dans, &c.

853. But *à*, *de*, and *en* express it, either by their primitive and proper meaning, or figuratively and by extension; so that in this last case, they are merely prepositions serving to unite the two terms; whence it happens that they often express either the same relations that others do, or opposite relations. For instance, in these two sentences:

Approchez-vous du feu,	Come near the fire.
Eloignez-vous du feu,	Go from the fire.

854. *De* merely establishes a relation between the two terms, without expressing in the first the relation of approximation, or in the second the relation of distance. In order, therefore, to form a just idea of *these three* prepositions, it is of importance to consider only their primitive and proper signification.

855. *En* and *dans* have nearly the same meaning; but they differ in this, that the former is used in a more vague, the latter in a more determinate sense; as,

J'étais *en* Angleterre, *dans* la province de Middlesex.

856. From what has just been said, it follows, then, that *en*, on account of its indeterminate nature, ought not to be followed by the article, except in a small number of phrases sanctioned by usage; such are,

En la présence de Dieu; *en la* grand' chambre du parlement; *en l'*absence d'un tel; *en l'*année mil huit cent dix-sept, &c.

with respect to the expressions

En l'honneur, en l'âge, *it is better to say, à l'*honneur, *à l'*âge.

857. *Avant* is a preposition in this phrase:

Avant le jour, Before day-light,

but it is an adverb in this:

N'allez pas si avant, Do not go so forward.

858. Some other prepositions are likewise occasionally adverbs.

859. *Autour* and *alentour* must not be confounded; *autour* is a preposition and *alentour* an adverb; thus,

Tous les grands étaient autour du trône, All the grandees stood round the throne.

Le roi était sur son trône, et les grands étaient alentour, The king was upon the throne, and the grandees stood round.

860. *Avant* and *auparavant* are not used indifferently.

861. *Avant* is followed by a regimen; as,

Avant Pâques, Before Easter.

Avant ce temps, Before that time.

862. *Auparavant* is followed by no regimen; as,

Si vous partez, venez me voir auparavant, If you set off, come and see me first.

863. *Prêt à* and *près de* are not the same expressions. *Prêt* is an adjective:

Je suis prêt à faire ce que vous voudrez, I am ready to do what you please.

864. But *près* is a preposition:

Mon ouvrage est près d'être fini, My work is nearly finished.

865. *Au travers* and *à travers* differ in this: the first is followed by the preposition *de*, the second is not; as,

Il se fit jour au travers des ennemis, / *Il se fit jour à travers les ennemis,* } He fought his way through the enemy.

866. *Avant* denotes priority of time and order; as,

Il est arrivé *avant* moi, *l'article se met avant le* nom.

867. *Devant* is used for *en présence, vis-à-vis;*

Il a paru *devant* le juge; il loge *devant* l'église.

868. Remark.—*Devant* is likewise a preposition marking order, and is the opposite of *après;* as,

Il a le pas devant *moi,* He has precedence of me.

Si vous êtes pressé courez devant, If you are in a hurry, run *before.*

The use of the Article with Prepositions.

869. Some prepositions require the article before their regimen; others do not; and others again sometimes admit, sometimes reject it.

870. Rule I.—The following prepositions generally require the article before the noun which they govern:

avant,	depuis,	envers,	nonobstant.	selon,
après,	devant,	excepté,	parmi,	suivant,
chez,	derrière,	hors,	pendant,	touchant,
dans,	durant,	hormis,	pour,	vers.

avant l'aurore, chez le prince, envers les pauvres,
après la promenade, dans la maison, devant l'église, &c.

871. There are, however, exceptions; as,

avant terme, avant dîner, pour lit une paillasse,
avant midi, après dîner, depuis minuit, &c.

872. Rule II.—A noun governed by the preposition *en* is not, in general, preceded by the article; as,

En ville, en campagne, en extase, en songe, en pièces, &c.

873. Remark.—*L'armée est entrée en campagne*, means the army had taken the field; but *Mr. N. est allé à la campagne*, means, Mr. N. is gone into the country.

874. Rule III.—These eleven prepositions—*à*, *de*, *avec*, *contre*, *entre*, *malgré*, *outre*, *par*, *pour*, *sur*, *sans*—sometimes admit, sometimes reject the article before their regimen.

875. The article is used in these phrases:

Jouer *sur le* velours,
St. Paul veut de la subordination *entre la* femme et *le* mari.
Sans les passions, où serait le mérite?

876. It is suppressed in,

Etre *sur pied;* un peu de façons ne gâte rien *entre mari* et femme.
Vivre *sans passions*, c'est vivre *sans plaisirs* et *sans peines*

Repetition of the Prepositions.

877. Rule I.—The prepositions *de*, *à*, and *en*, must be repeated before all the nouns which they govern; as,

Voyons qui l'emportera de *vous*, de *lui*, *ou* de *moi*,	Let us see which of us will excel, you, he, or I.
Elle a de *l'honnêteté*, de *la douceur*, des *grâces*, *et* de *l'esprit*,	She has politeness, sweetness, grace, and abilities.
La loi, *que Dieu a gravée au fond de mon cœur*, *m'instruit de tout ce que je dois* à *l'auteur de mon être*, au *prochain*, à *moi-même*,	The law which God has deeply engraven on my heart, instructs me in every thing I owe *to* the author of my being, *to* my neighbor, and *to* myself.
En *Asie*, en *Europe*, en *Afrique*, *et jusqu'*en *Amérique*, *on trouve le même préjugé*,	*In* Asia, *in* Europe, *in* Africa, and even *in* America, we find the same prejudice.

878. Rule II.—The other prepositions, especially those consisting of two syllables, are generally repeated before

nouns which have meanings totally different; but seldom before nouns which are nearly synonymous:

Rien n'est moins selon *Dieu et* selon *le monde*,	Nothing is less *according* to God and *according* to the world.
Cette action est contre *l'honneur et* contre *toute espèce de principes*,	That action is *contrary* to honor and to every kind of principle.

879. But we ought to say,

Il perd sa jeunesse dans *la mollesse et la volupté*,	He wastes his youth in effeminacy and pleasure.
Notre loi ne condamne personne sans *l'avoir entendu et examiné*,	Our laws condemn nobody without having heard and examined him.

Of the Government of Prepositions

880. Some prepositions govern nouns without the help of another preposition; as,

Devant la maison,	Before the house.
Hormis son frère,	Except his brother.
Sans son épée,	Without his sword, &c.

881. Others require the help of the preposition *de;* as,

Près de la maison,	Near the house,
A l'insu de son frère,	Unknown to his brother.
Au-dessus du pont,	Above the bridge, &c.

882. These four—*jusque*, *par rapport*, *quant*, and *sauf*—are followed by the preposition *à;* as,

Jusqu'au mois prochain,	Till the next month.
Quant à moi,	As for me, &c.

883. Practice alone can teach these different regimens.

884. Rule.—A noun may be governed by two prepositions, provided they do not require different regimens; thus, we may say with propriety,

Celui qui écrit selon les circonstances, pour *et* contre *un parti, est un homme bien méprisable*,	He who writes according to circumstances, both for and against a party, is a very contemptible man.

885. But it would be wrong to say,

Celui qui écrit *en faveur* et *contre* un parti, &c.

because *en faveur* requires the preposition *de*.

886. Rule.—Prepositions which, with their regimen, express a circumstance, are generally placed as nearly as possible to the word to which that circumstance relates; as,

On voit des personnes qui, avec beaucoup d'esprit, *commettent de très-grandes fautes*,	We see persons who, with a great deal of wit, commit very great faults.

J'ai envoyé à la poste *les lettres que vous avez écrites,*	I have sent to the post office the letters which you have written.
Croyez-vous pouvoir ramener par la douceur *ces esprits égarés?*	Do you think you can reclaim by gentleness those mistaken people?

887. If we attempt to alter the place of these prepositions, we shall find that the sentences will become ambiguous.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE ADVERB?

Of the Negative NE.

888. NEGATION is expressed in French by *ne*, either alone or accompanied by *pas* or *point*. On this point the Academy has examined the four following questions:

1. Where is the place of the negatives?
2. When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and *vice versâ?*
3. When *may* both be omitted?
4. When *ought* both to be omitted?

889. As this subject is of very material importance, we shall treat it upon the plan of the Academy, and agreeably to their views.

890. FIRST QUESTION.—Where is the place of the negatives?

891. *Ne* is always prefixed to the verb; but the place of *pas* and *point* is variable.

892. When the verb is in the infinitive, these are placed indifferently before or after it; for we say,

Pour ne point voir, *or*, pour ne voir point.

893. In the other moods, except the imperative, the tenses are either simple or compound. In the simple tenses, *pas* or *point* is placed after the verb:

Il ne parle pas; ne parle-t-il pas?

894. In the compound tenses, it is placed between the auxiliary and the participle:

Il n'a pas parlé; n'a-t-il pas parlé?

895. In the imperative, it is placed after the verb:

Ne badinez pas. Ne vous en allez pas.

896. SECOND QUESTION.—When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and *vice versâ?*

897. *Point* is a stronger negative than *pas;* besides, it denotes something permanent: *Il ne lit point*, means, he *never* reads.

898. *Pas* denotes something accidental: *Il ne lit pas*, means, he does not read *now*, or he is not reading.

899. *Point de* denotes an absolute negation. Thus, *Il n'a point d'esprit*, is to say, he has no wit at all.

900. *Pas de* allows the liberty of a reserve. So, *Il n'a pas d'esprit*, is to say, he has nothing of what can be called wit.

901. Hence, the Academy concludes that *pas* is more proper,

902. 1.—Before *plus*, *moins*, *si*, *autant*, and other words denoting comparison; as,

Milton n'est pas moins sublime qu'Homère,	Milton is not less sublime than Homer.

903. 2.—Before nouns of number; as,

Il n'y a pas dix ans,	It is not ten years ago.

904. *Point* is elegantly used,

905. 1.—At the end of a sentence; as,

On s'amusait à ses dépens, et il ne s'en apercevait point,	They were amusing themselves at his expense, and he did not perceive it.

906. 2.—In elliptical sentences; as,

Je croyais avoir affaire à un honnête homme; mais point,	I thought I had to deal with an honest man; but no.

907. In answer to interrogative sentences; as,

Irez-vous ce soir au parc?—Point,	Shall you go this evening to the park? —No.

908. The Academy also observes, that when *pas* or *point* is introduced into interrogative sentences, it is with meanings somewhat different. We make use of *point* when we have any doubt on our minds; as,

N'avez-vous point été là?	Have you not been there?

909. But we use *pas* when we are persuaded. Thus,

N'avez-vous pas été là?	But you have been there, have you not?

910. Third Question.—When *may* both *pas* and *point* be omitted?

911. They may be suppressed,

912. 1.—After the words *cesser*, *oser*, and *pouvoir;* but this omission is only for the sake of elegance; as,

Je ne cesse de m'en occuper,	I am incessantly attentive to it.
Je n'ose vous en parler,	I dare not speak to you about it.
Je ne puis y penser sans frémir,	I cannot think of it without shuddering

913. We likewise say, but only in familiar conversation,

Ne bougez,	Do not stir.

914. 2.—In expressions of this kind:

Y a-t-il un homme dont elle ne médise ?	Is there a man that she does not slander ?
Avez-vous un ami qui ne soit des miens ?	Have you a friend that is not likewise mine ?

915. Fourth Question.—When *ought* both *pas* and *point* to be omitted ?

916. They are omitted,

917. 1.—When the extent which we mean to give to the negative is sufficiently expressed, either by the words which restrict it, by words which exclude all restriction, or lastly, by such as denote the smaller parts of a whole, and which are without the article.

918. To exemplify the first part of this remark, we say,

Je ne sors guère,	I go out but seldom.
Je ne sortirai de trois jours,	I shall not go out for three days.

919. To exemplify the second, we say,

Je n'y vais jamais,	I never go there.
Je n'y pense plus,	I think no more of it.
Nul ne sait s'il est digne d'amour, ou de haîne,	Nobody knows whether he be deserving of love or hatred.
N'employez aucun de ces stratagèmes,	Use none of these stratagems.
Il ne plaît à personne,	He pleases nobody.
Rien n'est plus charmant,	Nothing is more charming.
Je n'y pense nullement,	I do not think of it at all.

920. To exemplify the third, we say,

Il n'y voit goutte,	He cannot see at all.
Je n'en ai cueilli brin,	I did not gather a sprig.
Il ne dit mot,	He speaks not a word.

921. But if to *mot* we join an adjective of number, *pas* must be added; as,

Il ne dit pas un mot qui n'intéresse,	He speaks not a word but what is interesting.
Dans ce discours, il n'y a pas trois mots à reprendre,	In that speech, there are not three words that are exceptionable.

922. *Pas* is likewise used with the preposition *de;* as,

Il ne fait pas de démarche inutile,	He does not take any useless step

923. Remark.—If, after the sentences we have just mentioned, either the conjunction *que* or the relative pronouns

qui or *dont* should introduce a negative sentence, then in this last, *pas* and *point* are omitted; as,

Je ne fais jamais d'excès, que je n'en sois incommodé,	I never commit any excess without being ill after it.
Je ne vois personne qui ne vous loue,	I see nobody but what commends you.

924. 2.—When two negatives are joined by *ni;* as,

Je ne l'aime ni ne l'estime,	I neither love nor esteem him.

925. And when the conjunction *ni* is repeated, either in the subject, as,

Ni l'or ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux,	Neither gold nor greatness can make us happy,

926. Or, in the attribute; as,

Il n'est ni prudent ni sage,	He is neither prudent nor wise,

927. Or, in the regimen; as,

Il n'a ni dettes ni procès,	He has neither debts nor law-suits.

928. Remark.—*Pas* is preserved when *ni* is not repeated, and when this last serves only to unite two members of a negative sentence; as,

Je n'aime pas ce vain étalage d'érudition, prodiguée sans choix et sans goût, ni ce luxe de mots qui ne disent rien,	I do not like that vain display of erudition, lavished without choice and without taste, nor that pomp of words which have no meaning.

929. 3.—With the verb which follows *que*, used instead of *pourquoi*, and with *à moins que*, or *si*, used instead of it; as,

Que n'êtes-vous aussi posé que votre frère?	Why are you not as sedate as your brother?
Je ne sortirai pas, à moins que vous ne veniez me prendre,	I shall not go out, unless you come to fetch me.
Je n'irai pas chez lui, s'il ne m'y engage,	I shall not go to his house, if he does not invite me

930. 4.—With *ne—que*, used instead of *seulement;* as,

Une jeunesse, qui se livre à ses passions, ne transmet à la vieillesse qu'un corps usé,	Youth which abandons itself to its passions, transmits to old age nothing but a worn-out body.

931. When before the conjunction *que*, the word *rien* is understood; as,

Il ne fait que rire,	He does nothing but laugh.

932. Or when that conjunction may be changed into *sinon* or *si ce n'est;* as,

Il ne tient qu'à vous de réussir,	The success wholly depends upon you.
Trop de maîtres à la fois ne servent qu'à embrouiller l'esprit,	Too many masters at once only serve to perplex the mind.

933. 5.—With a verb in the preterit, preceded by the

conjunction *depuis que* or by the verb *il y a*, denoting a certain duration of time; as,

Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que je ne vous ai vu?	How have you been since I saw you?
Il y a trois mois que je ne vous ai vu,	I have not seen you for these three months.

934. But they are not omitted when the verb is in the present; as,

Comment vit-il depuis que nous ne le voyons point?	How does he live, now we do not see him?
Il y a six mois que nous ne le voyons point,	We have not seen him these six months.

935. 6.—In phrases where the conjunction *que* is preceded by the adverbs of comparison *plus*, *moins*, *mieux*, &c., or some other equivalent term; as,

On méprise ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils ne pensent,	We despise those who speak differently from what they think.
Il écrit mieux qu'il ne parle,	He writes better than he speaks.
C'est pire qu'on ne le disait,	It is worse than was said.
C'est autre chose que je ne croyais,	It is different from what I thought.
Peu s'en faut qu'on ne m'ait trompé,	I have been very near being deceived.

936. 7.—In sentences united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *douter*, *désespérer*, *nier*, and *disconvenir*, forming a negative member of a sentence; as,

Je ne doute pas qu'il ne vienne,	I doubt not that he will come.
Ne désespérez pas que ce moyen ne vous réussisse,	Do not despair of the success of these means.
Je ne nie pas, or *je ne disconviens pas que cela ne soit,*	I do not deny that it is so.

937. The Academy says, that after the last two verbs, *ne* may be omitted; as,

Je ne nie pas, *or* je ne disconviens pas que cela soit.

938. 8.—With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *empêcher* and *prendre garde*, meaning to take care; as,

J'empêcherai bien que vous ne soyez du nombre,	I shall prevent your being of the number.
Prenez garde qu'on ne vous séduise,	Take care that they do not corrupt you.

939. Remark.—The Academy observes, that in the above acceptation, *prendre garde* is followed by a subjunctive; but when it means to *reflect*, the indicative is used with *pas* or *point*; as,

Prenez garde que vous ne m'entendez pas,	Mind, you do not understand what I mean.

940. 9.—With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the

verb *craindre*, and those of the same meaning, when we do not wish the thing expressed by the second verb; as,

Il craint que son frère ne l'abandonne, He is afraid his brother should forsake him.
Je crains que mon ami ne meure, I fear my friend will die.

941. But *pas* is not omitted when we wish the thing expressed by the second verb; as,

Je crains que mon père n'arrive pas, I am afraid my father will not come.

942. 10.—With the verb which follows *de peur que*, *de crainte que*, in similar circumstances with *craindre*. Thus, when we say,

De crainte qu'il ne perde son procès,

we wish that he may gain it; and when we say,

De crainte qu'il ne soit pas puni,

we wish that he may be punished.

943. Remark.—In these phrases,

Je crains que mon ami ne meure, I am afraid my friend will die,
Vous empêchez qu'on ne chante, You prevent them from singing,

the expression *ne* is not a negation; it is the *ne* or *quin* of the Latins, introduced into the French language, as may be seen by the English translation.

944. 11.—After *savoir*, whenever it has the meaning of *pouvoir;* as,

Je ne saurais en venir à bout, I cannot accomplish it.

945. When it means *être incertain*, it is the best to omit *pas* and *point;* as,

Je ne sais où le prendre, I do not know where to find him.
Il ne sait ce qu'il dit, He does not know what he says.

946. Remark.—But *pas* and *point* must be used when *savoir* is taken in its true meaning; as,

Je ne sais pas le français, I do not know French.

947. 12.—We also say,

Ne vous déplaise, ne vous en déplaise, By your leave, under favor, *or* let it not displease you.

948. *Plus* and *davantage* must not be used indifferently.

949. *Plus* is followed by the preposition *de* or the conjunction *que;* as,

Il a plus de brillant que de solide, He has more brilliancy than solidity.
Il se fie plus à ses lumières qu'à celles des autres, He relies more upon his own knowledge than upon that of others.

950. *Davantage* is used alone and at the end of sentences; as,

La science est estimable, mais la vertu l'est davantage, Learning is estimable, but virtue is still more so.

951. Though *davantage* cannot be followed by the preposition *de*, it may be preceded by the pronoun *en;* as,

Je n'en dirai pas davantage, I shall not say any more about it.

952. It is incorrect to use *davantage* for *le plus*. We must say,

De toutes les fleurs d'un parterre, l'anémone est celle qui me plait le plus, Of all the flowers of a parterre, the anemone is that which pleases me most.

953. *Si*, *aussi*, *tant*, and *autant*, are always followed by the conjunction *que*, expressed or understood.

954. *Si* and *aussi* are joined to adjectives, adverbs, and participles; *tant* and *autant* to substantives and verbs.

L'Angleterre n'est pas si grande que la France, England is not so large as France.

Il est aussi estimé qu'aimé, He is as much esteemed as he is beloved.

Elle a autant de beauté que de vertu, She has as much beauty as virtue.

955. Remark.—*Autant* may, however, be substituted for *aussi*, when it is preceded by one adjective and followed by *que* and another adjective; as,

Il est modeste autant que sage, He is as modest as wise.

956. *Aussi* and *autant* are used in the affirmative; *si* and *tant* in negative and interrogative sentences. The two last are, however, alone to be used in affirmative sentences, when they are put for *tellement;* as,

Il est devenu si gros, qu'il a de la peine à marcher, He is become so bulky that he can hardly walk.

Il a tant couru qu'il en est hors d'haleine, He has been running so fast that he is out of breath.

957. *Jamais* takes sometimes the preposition *à*, and *toujours* the preposition *pour;* as,

Soyez à jamais heureux, Be for ever happy.

C'est pour toujours, It is for ever.

CHAPTER IX.

OF GRAMMATICAL CONSTRUCTION.

958. Grammatical construction is the order which the genius of a language has assigned, in speech, to the different sorts of words into which it is distinguished. Construction is sometimes mistaken for syntax; but there is this difference, the latter consists in the rules which we are to observe, in order to express the relations of words one to another, whereas

grammatical construction consists in the various arrangements which are allowed while we observe the rules of syntax. Now, this arrangement is irrevocably fixed, not only as phrases may be interrogative, imperative, or expositive, but also as each of these kinds may be affirmative or negative.

959. In sentences simply interrogative, the subject is either a noun or pronoun.

960. If the subject be a noun, the following is the order to be observed: first, the noun, then the verb, then the corresponding personal pronoun, the adverb, if any, and the regimen in the simple tenses: in the compound tenses, the pronoun and the adverb are placed between the auxiliary and the participle:

Les lumières sont-elles un bien pour les peuples? ont-elles jamais contribué à leur bonheur?	Are sciences an advantage to nations? Have they ever contributed to their happiness?

961. If the subject be a pronoun, the verb begins the series, and the other words follow in the order already pointed out; as,

Vous plairez-vous toujours à médire?	Will you always take pleasure in slandering?
Aurez-vous bientôt fini?	Shall you soon have done?

962. N. B.—When the verb is reflected, the pronoun forming the regimen begins the series: this pronoun always preserves its place before the verb, except in sentences simply imperative.

963. In interrogative sentences, with negation, the same order is observed; but *ne* is placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in the compound tenses; as,

Votre frère ne viendra-t-il pas demain?	Will not your brother come to-morrow?
N'aurez-vous pas bientôt fini?	Shall you not have soon done?

964. Remark.—There are in French several other ways of interrogating.

965. 1.—With an absolute pronoun; as,

Qui vous a dit cela? or *Qui est-ce qui vous a dit cela?* } Who told you that?

966. 2.—With the demonstrative pronoun *ce;* as,

Est-ce-vous? Is it you? *Est-ce qu'il pleut?* Does it rain?

967. With an interrogative adverb; as,

Pourquoi ne vient-il pas?	Why does he not come?
Comment vous trouvez-vous?	How do you find yourself?

968. Hence we see that the absolute pronouns and the interrogative adverbs always begin the sentence: but the demonstrative pronoun always follows the verb.

969. In sentences simply imperative, the verb is always placed first, in the first and second persons; but in the third, it comes after the conjunction *que* and the noun or pronoun; as,

Allons là,	Let us go there.
Venez ici,	Come here.
Qu'ils y aillent,	Let them go there.
Que Pierre aille à Londres,	Let Peter go to London.

970. With negation, *ne* and *pas* are placed as in interrogative sentences.

971. For the place of the pronouns, see page 131.

972. Sentences are expositive, when we speak without either interrogating or commanding. The following is the order of the words in those which are affirmative: the subject, the verb, the adverb, the participle, the regimen; as,

Un bon prince mérite l'amour de ses sujets, et l'estime de tous les peuples,	A good prince deserves the love of his subjects, and the esteem of all nations.
César eût inutilement passé le Rubicon, s'il y eût eu de son temps des Fabius,	Cæsar would have crossed the Rubicon to no purpose had there been Fabii in his time.

973. The negative sentences differ from this construction only as *ne* is always placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* either after the verb, or between the auxiliary and the participle; as,

Un homme riche ne fait pas toujours le bien qu'il pourrait,	A rich man does not always do all the good he might.
Cicéron n'eût peut-être pas été un si grand orateur, si le désir de s'élever aux premières dignités n'eût enflammé son ame,	Cicero would not perhaps have been so great an orator, had not the desire of rising to the first dignities inflamed his soul.

974. Sentences are either simple or compound. They are simple when they contain only one subject and one attribute; as,

Vous lisez, You read. *Vous êtes jeune,* You are young.

975. They are compound when they associate several subjects with one attribute, or several attributes with one subject, or several attributes with several subjects, or several subjects with several attributes.

976. This sentence, *Pierre et Paul sont heureux*, is compound by having several subjects; this—*cette femme est jolie, spirituelle et sensible*—is compound by having several attributes; and this—*Pierre et Paul sont spirituels et savans*—is composed at once of several subjects and several attributes.

977. A sentence may be compound in various other ways; by the subject, by the verb, or by the attribute.

978. By the subject, when this is restricted by an incidental proposition; as,

Dieu, qui est bon.

979. By the verb, when it is modified by some circumstance of time, order, &c.; as,

Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais.

980. By the attribute, when this attribute is modified by a regimen which is itself restricted; as,

Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais les hommes, qui mettent sincèrement leur confiance en lui.

981. These simple or compound sentences may be joined to others by a conjunction; as,

Quand on aime l'étude, le temps passe sans qu'on s'en aperçoive, When we love study, time flies without our perceiving it.

The two partial phrases here form but one.

982. Rule.—When a sentence is composed of two partial phrases, joined by a conjunction, harmony and perspicuity generally require the shortest to go first.

EXAMPLES.

Quand les passions nous quittent nous nous flattons en vain, que c'est nous qui les quittons, When our passions leave us, we in vain flatter ourselves that it is we that leave them.

On n'est point à plaindre, quand, au défaut de plaisirs réels, on trouve le moyen de s'occuper de chimères, He is not to be pitied who, for want of real pleasure, finds means to amuse himself with chimeras.

983. Periods result from the union of several partial phrases, the whole of which make a complete sense. Periods, to be clear, require the shortest phrases to be placed first The following example of this is taken from Fléchier:

N'attendez pas, Messieurs.

1. Que j'ouvre une scène tragique;
2. Que je représente ce grand homme étendu sur ses propres trophées;
3. Que je découvre ce corps pâle et sanglant, auprès duquel fume encore la foudre qui l'a frappé;
4. Que je fasse crier son sang comme celui d'Abel, et que j'expose à vos yeux les images de la religion et de la patrie éplorée.

984. This admirable period is composed of four members, which go on gradually increasing. It is a rule not to give more than four members to a period, and to avoid multiplying incidental sentences.

985 Obscurity in style is generally owing to those small phrases which divert the attention from the principal sentences, and make us lose sight of them

986. The construction which we have mentioned is called direct or regular, because the words are placed in those sentences according to the order which has been pointed out. But this order may be altered in certain cases, and then the construction is called indirect or irregular. Now, it may be irregular by *inversion*, by *ellipsis*, by *pleonasm*, or by *syllipsis;* these are what are called the four figures of words.

Of Inversion.

987. *Inversion* is the transposition of a word into a place different from that which by usage is properly assigned to it. This ought never to be done except when it introduces more perspicuity, energy, or harmony into the language; for it is a defect in construction whenever the relation subsisting between words is not easily perceived.

988. There are two kinds of inversion: the one, by its boldness, seems to be confined to poetry; the other is frequently employed even in prose.

989. We shall speak here of the latter kind only.

990. The following inversions are authorized by custom.

991. The subject by which a verb is governed may with propriety be placed after it; as,

Tout ce que lui promet l'amitié des Romains,	All that the friendship of the Romans promises him.

992. Remark.—This inversion is a rule of the art of speaking and writing whenever the subject is modified by an incidental sentence, long enough to make us lose sight of the relation of the verb governed to the subject governing.

993. The noun governed by the prepositions *de* and *à* may likewise be very properly placed before the verb; as,

D'une voix entrecoupée de sanglots, ils s'écrièrent,	In a voice interrupted by sobs, they exclaimed.
A tant d'injures, qu'a-t-elle répondu?	To so much abuse, what answer did she give?

994. The verb is likewise elegantly preceded by the prepositions *après*, *dans*, *par*, *sous*, *contre*, &c. with their dependencies, as well as by the conjunctions *si*, *quand*, *parce que*, *puisque*, *quoique*, *lorsque*, &c.; as,

Par la loi du corps, je tiens à ce monde qui passe,	By the law of the body, I am connected with this passing world.
Puisqu'il le veut, qu'il le fasse,	Since he wishes it, let him do it.

Of the Ellipsis.

995. *Ellipsis* is the omission of a word, or even several words, which are necessary to make the construction full and complete. In order to form a good ellipsis, the mind must be able easily to supply the words omitted; as,

J'accepterais les offres de Darius, si j'étais Alexandre :—et moi aussi, si j'étais Parmenion, I would accept the offers of Darius, if I were Alexander:—and so would I, if I were Parmenio.

Here the mind easily supplies the words *je les accepterais* in the second number.

996. The ellipsis is very common in answers to interrogative sentences; as,

Quand viendrez-vous ?—Demain, When will you come?—To-morrow —that is, *je viendrai demain.*

997. In order to know whether an ellipsis be good, the words that are understood must be supplied. It is correct whenever the construction completely expresses the sense denoted by the words which are supplied: otherwise, it is not exact.

Of the Pleonasm.

998. *Pleonasm*, in general, is a superfluity of words; in order to constitute this figure good, it must be sanctioned by custom, which never authorizes its use but to give greater energy to language, or to express, in a clearer manner, the internal feeling with which we are affected.

Et que m'a fait *à moi* cette Troie où je cours!
Je *me* meurs. S'il ne veut pas vous le dire, je vous le dirai, *moi.*
Je l'ai vu *de mes propres yeux.*
Je l'ai entendu *de mes propres oreilles.*

—*A moi*, in the first sentence; *me*, in the second; *moi*, in the third; *de mes propres yeux*, in the fourth; and *de mes propres oreilles*, in the fifth, are employed merely for the sake of energy, or to manifest an internal feeling. But this manner of speaking is sanctioned by custom.

999. Remark.—Expletives must not be mistaken for pleonasms; as,

C'est une affaire, où il y va du salut de l'état, It is an affair in which the safety of the state is concerned,

which is better than *c'est une affaire, où il va*, &c. by omitting *y*, which is in reality useless on account of *où:* but *y* here, is a mode of expression from which it is not allowable to deviate

Of the Syllepsis.

1000. The syllepsis is a figure by which a word relates more to our meaning than to the literal expressions; as in these:

Il est onze heures; l'an mil sept cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf.

1001. When using it, the mind, merely intent upon a precise meaning, pays no attention to either the number or the gender of *heures* and *an*.

1002. There is likewise a syllepsis in these sentences:

Je crains qu'il ne vienne.
J'empêcherai qu'il ne vous nuise.
J'ai peur qu'il ne m'oublie, &c.

1003. Full of a wish that the event may not take place, we are willing to do all we can that nothing should present an obstacle to that wish. This is the cause of the introduction of the negative, which, although unnecessary to complete the sense, yet must be preserved for the idiom.

1004. There is again a very elegant syllepsis in sentences like the following from Racine:

Entre le *peuple* et vous, vous prendrez Dieu pour juge;
Vous souvenant, mon fils, que caché sous ce lin,
Comme *eux* vous fûtes pauvre, et comme *eux*, orphelin.

1005. The poet forgets that he has been using the word *peuple:* nothing remains in his mind but *des pauvres* and *des orphelins*, and it is with that idea of which he is so fully impressed that he makes the pronoun *eux* agree. For the same reason, Bossuet and Mézengui have said,

Quand le *peuple Hébreu* entra dans la terre promise, tout y célébrait *leurs* ancêtres.—Bossuet.

Moïse eut recours au Seigneur, et lui dit: que ferai-je à *ce peuple?* bientôt *ils* me lapideront.—Mezengui.

1006. *Leurs* and *ils* stand for *les Hébreux*

CHAPTER X.

OF GRAMMATICAL DISCORDANCES, AMPHIBOLOGIES AND GALLICISMS.

1007. We have chiefly to notice two incorrect modes of construction, which are contrary to the principles laid down in the preceding chapters—grammatical discordances and amphibologies.

OF DISCORDANCES.

1008. In general, there is a discordance in language when the words which compose the various members of a sentence or period do not agree with each other, either because their construction is contrary to analogy, or because they bring together dissimilar ideas, between which the mind perceives an opposition, or can see no manner of affinity.

1009. The following examples will serve to illustrate this:

Notre réputation ne dépend pas des louanges qu'on nous donne, mais des actions louables que nous fesons.

1010. This sentence is not correct, because the first member being negative, and the second affirmative, cannot come under the government of the same verb. It ought to be,

Notre réputation dépend, non des louanges qu'on nous donne, mais des actions louables que, &c.	Our reputation depends, not upon the praises which are bestowed on us, but upon the praiseworthy actions which we perform.

1011. But the most common discordances are those which arise from the wrong use of tenses; as in this sentence:

Il regarde votre malheur comme une punition du peu de complaisance que *vous avez eue* pour lui, dans le temps qu'il vous *pria*, &c.;

because the two preterits, definite and indefinite, cannot well agree together; it should be,

Que vous eûtes pour lui dans le temps qu'il vous pria.

1012. There is discordance in this sentence:

On en ressentit autant de joie que d'une victoire complète dans un autre temps;

because the verb cannot be understood after the *que* which serves for the comparison when the verb is to be in a different tense: it should be,

On en ressentit autant de joie qu'on en aurait ressenti, &c.

1013. This line of Racine,

Le flot, qui l'apporta, recule épouvanté,

is also incorrect, because the form of the present cannot associate with that of the preterit definite: it should have been, *qui l'a apporté*.

OF AMPHIBOLOGIES.

1014. Amphibology in language is when a sentence is so constructed as to be susceptible of two different interpretations: this must be carefully avoided. As we speak only to be un-

derstood, perspicuity is the first and most essential quality of language; we should always recollect that *what is not clearly expressed in any language, is no language at all.*

1015. Amphibologies are occasioned, 1.—By the misuse of moods and tenses. 2.—Of the personal pronouns *il, le, la*, &c. 3.—Of the possessive pronouns *son, sa, ses*, &c. 4.—By giving a wrong place to nouns.

Of an Amphibology of the first kind.

Qu'ai-je fait, *pour venir* accabler en ces lieux
Un héros, sur qui seul j'ai pu tourner les yeux?—RACINE.

1016. *Pour venir* forms an amphibology, because we do not know whether it relates to the person who speaks or to the person spoken to: it should have been, *Pour que vous veniez.*

Of an Amphibology of the second kind.

César voulut premièrement surpasser Pompée; les grandes richesses de Crassus *lui* firent croire, qu'*il* pourrait partager la gloire de ces deux grands hommes.

1017. This sentence is faulty in its construction, because the pronouns *il* and *lui* seem to relate to *César*, although the sense obliges us to refer them to *Crassus.*

Of an Amphibology of the third kind.

Valère alla chez Léandre; il y trouva *son* fils.

1018. The pronoun *son* is ambiguous, because we do not know to which it relates, to *Valère* or to *Léandre.*

Of an Amphibology of the fourth kind.

J'ai envoyé les lettres, que j'ai écrites, à la poste.

1019. *A la poste*, thus placed, is equivocal, because we do not know whether it is meant that the letters have been *written at* the post office or *sent to* the post office.

OF GALLICISMS.

1020. We have distinguished in our "Grammaire Philosophique et Littéraire," four sorts of gallicisms: we shall only mention here those of construction.

1021. The gallicisms of construction are in general irregularities and deviations from the customary rules of syntax:

there are some, however, which are mere ellipses, and others which can only be attributed to the caprice of custom

1022. General Principle.—Every gallicism of construction which obscures the meaning of the sentence, ought to be condemned. Those only ought to be preserved which do not impair perspicuity by introducing irregularity of construction, and which are at the same time sanctioned by long practice.

1023. According to this principle, this elliptic gallicism is now rejected:

Et qu'ainsi ne soit; *meaning*, ce que je vous dis est si vrai que,

because it obscures the sentence. For instance

J'étais dans ce jardin, *et qu'ainsi ne soit*, voilà une fleur que j'y ai cueillie; *that is*, Et pour preuve de cela, voilà une fleur, &c.

Molière and La Fontaine seem to have been the last great writers that have used this expression.

1024. One of the most common gallicisms is that in which the impersonal verb *il y a* is used for *il est*, *il existe* These expressions,

Il y avait une fois un roi; il y a cent à parier contre un,

are gallicisms. There are two in the following sentence:

Il n'y a pas jusqu'aux enfans, qui ne s'en mêlent,	Even children will meddle with it.

1025. The verb *falloir* forms a sort of gallicism with the pronoun *en* when it is conjugated like pronominal verbs with the double pronouns *il se;* as,

Il s'en faut, il s'en fallait, &c.

It then means, *to be wanting;* and when preceded by an adverb of quantity, the first pronoun is omitted; as,

Peu s'en faut, tant s'en faut.

1026. These several manners of using the verb *falloir* will be found in the following sentences:

EXAMPLES.

Il s'en faut bien qu'il soit aussi habile qu'il croit l'être,	He is far from being so clever as he thinks.
Peu s'en est fallu qu'il n'ait succombé dans cette entreprise,	He was very near failing in that undertaking.
Il ne s'en est presque rien fallu qu'il n'ait été tué,	He was as near as possible being killed.
Vous dites qu'il s'en faut vingt livres que la somme entière n'y soit, mais vous vous trompez, il ne peut pas s'en falloir tant,	You say it wants twenty pounds to complete the sum, but you are mistaken, it cannot want so much.

Son rhume est entièrement guéri, ou peu s'en faut,	His cold is entirely well, or very nearly so.
Que s'en est-il fallu que ces deux amis ne se soient brouillés ?	How near were these two friends quarrelling ?
Je ne suis pas content de votre application à l'étude, tant s'en faut,	I am not satisfied with your application to study, far from it.
Tant s'en faut que cette comédie me plaise, elle me semble au contraire détestable,	So far from this play pleasing me, I think it insufferable.
Il s'en fallait beaucoup que je vous approuvasse dans cette circonstance,	I was far from approving your conduct on that occasion.

1027. The sentences,

Il n'est rien moins que généreux,	He is far from being generous,
Vous avez beau dire,	You may say what you please, but, &c.
A ce qu'il me semble,	By what I can see. As the matter appears to me, &c.
Nous voilà à nous lamenter,	We began to lament. Here we are lamenting, crying, &c.
Qu'est-ce que de nous,	What wretched beings we are ! &c.

are also gallicisms.

1028. The use which is made of the preposition *en*, in many sentences is likewise another source of gallicisms : some of this kind will be found in the following expressions :

A qui en avez-vous ?	Whom are you angry with ?
Où en veut-il venir ?	What does he aim at ? What would he be at ?
Il lui en veut,	He has a quarrel with him, &c.

1029. The preposition *en* changes also sometimes the signification of verbs, and then gives rise to gallicisms.

1030. The conjunction *que* produces also a great number of gallicisms ; as,

C'est une terrible passion que le jeu,	Gaming is a terrible passion.
C'est donc en vain que je travaille,	It is in vain then that I work.
Ce n'est pas trop que cela,	That is not too much.
Il n'est que d'avoir du courage,	There is nothing like having courage.

1031. Many others will be found in the use which is made of the prepositions *à*, *de*, *dans*, *après*, &c. ; but enough has been said on the subject

1032. Gallicisms are of very great use in the simple style ; therefore La Fontaine and Madame de Sévigné abound in them. The middling style has not so many, and the solemn oratorical but few, and these even of a peculiar nature. Only

two examples of this kind, both taken from the tragedy of *Iphigenia*, by Racine, will be here inserted.

> Avez-vous pu penser qu'au sang d'Agamemnon
> Achille préférât une fille sans nom,
> *Qui* de tout son destin ce qu'elle a pu comprendre.
> C'est qu'elle sort d'un sang, &c.

And,

> *Je ne sais qui m'arrête* et retient mon courroux,
> *Que* par un prompt avis de tout ce qui se passe.
> *Je ne coure* des dieux divulguer la menace.

1033. In the first instance, *qui* is the subject, though without relating to any verb; and in the second, *je ne sais qui m'arrête que je ne coure*, is contrary to the rules of common construction. "But," says Vaugelas, "these extraordinary phrases. far from being vicious, possess the more beauty, as they belong to a particular kind of language."

FREE EXERCISES.

MADAME DE MAINTENON TO HER BROTHER.

[1]We can only be unhappy by our own fault; this shall always be my text, and my reply to your lamentations. [2]Recollect, my dear brother, the voyage to America, [3]the misfortunes of our father, of our infancy and our youth; and you will bless Providence instead of murmuring against fortune. Ten years ago we were both very far [4](below our present situation); and our hopes were [5]so feeble that we limited our wishes to an [6](income of three thousand livres). At present we have four times [7]that sum, and our desires are not yet satisfied! we enjoy the happy mediocrity which you [8]have so often extolled; let us be content. If [9]possessions come to us, let us receive them from the hand of God, but [10]let not our views be [11]too extravagant. We have [12](every thing necessary) and [13]comfortable; all the rest is [14]avarice; all these desires of greatness [15]spring from a restless heart. Your debts are all paid, and you may live [16]elegantly without [17]contracting more. What have you to desire? [18]must [19]schemes of wealth and ambition [20]occasion the loss of your repose and your health? Read the Life of St. Louis: you will see how [21]unequal the greatness of this world is to the desires of the human heart; God only can [22]satisfy them. I repeat it, you are only unhappy by your own fault. Your [23]uneasiness destroys your health, which you ought to preserve [24]if it were only because I love you. [25]Watch your [26]temper: if you can render it less [27]splenetic and less gloomy, [28](you will have gained a great advantage). This is not the work of reflection only: exercise, amusement, and a regular life [29](are necessary for the purpose). You cannot think well [30](while your health is affected); when the body is [31]debilitated, the mind is without vigor. Adieu! write to me more frequently, and in a style less gloomy.

1 On ne être....que—2 songer à—3 the misfortunes of our infancy and those of our, &c.—4 du point où nous sommes au jourd'hui—5 si peu de chose—6 trois mille livres de rente—7 *that sum*, en....plus—8 vantiez si fort—9 biens—10 let us not have views—11 trop vaste—12 le nécessaire—13 le commode—14 cupidité—15 *spring from*, partir du vide de—16 délicieusement—17 *contracting more*, en faire de nouvelles—18 *must*, faut-il que—19 projets—20 coûter Q—21 au-dessous de—22 le rassasier—23 inquiétude pl.—24 quand ce être N—25 travailler sur—26 humeur—27 bilieux—28 ce être un grand point de gagné—29 il y faut de—30 tant que vous se porter mal—31 dans l'abattement.

THE CONVERT.

AN EASTERN TALE.

Divine [1]mercy had brought a vicious man into a society of sages, whose morals were holy and pure. He was affected by their virtues: [2]it was not long [3]before he imitated them and lost his old habits: he became just, sober, patient, laborious, and benevolent. His deeds nobody could deny, but [4]they were attributed to odious motives. They praised his good

1 Miséricorde—2 ne pas tarder—3 à *with the* A.—4 On donner des motifs

actions without loving his person: they would always judge him by what he had been, not by what he had become. This injustice filled him with grief; he shed tears in the bosom of an ancient sage, more just and more humane than the others. "O, my son," said the old man to him, "thou art better than thy reputation; be thankful to God for it. Happy the man who can say, my enemies and my rivals censure in me vices of which I am not guilty. [5]What matters it, if thou art good, that men persecute thee as wicked? Hast thou not, to comfort thee, the two best witnesses of thy actions, God and thy conscience?"—*Saint-Lambert.*

5 Qu'importe.

Mr. de Montausier has written a letter to Monseigneur upon the taking of Philipsbourgh, which very much pleases me. "Monseigneur, I do not compliment you on the capture of Philipsbourgh: you had a good army, bombs, cannon, and Vauban; neither shall I compliment you upon your valor, for that is an hereditary virtue in your family; but I rejoice that you are liberal, generous, humane, and that you know how to recompense the services of those who behave well: it is for this that I congratulate you."—*Sévigné.*

THE GOOD MINISTER.

AN EASTERN TALE.

The great Aaron Raschild began to suspect that his vizier Giafar was not deserving of the confidence which he had reposed in him. The women of Aaron, the inhabitants of Bagdad, the courtiers, the dervises, censured the vizier with bitterness. The caliph loved Giafar; he would not condemn him upon the clamors of the city and the court: he visited his empire; every where he saw the land well cultivated, the country smiling, the cottages opulent, the useful arts honored, and youth full of gaiety. He visited his fortified cities and sea-ports, he saw numerous ships, which threatened the coasts of Africa and of Asia; he saw warriors disciplined and content; these warriors, the seamen and the peasantry exclaimed, "O God, pour thy blessings upon the faithful, by giving them a caliph like Aaron and a vizier like Giafar." The caliph, affected by these exclamations, enters a mosque, falls upon his knees, and cries out, "Great God, I return thee thanks; thou hast given me a vizier of whom my courtiers speak ill and my people speak well."—*Saint-Lambert.*

Providence conducts us with so much goodness through the different periods of our life, that we [1](do not perceive our progress). This loss [2]takes place gently: it is imperceptible—it is the shadow of the sun-dial, whose motion we do not see. If, at twenty years of age, [3]we could see in a mirror the face we shall have at three-score, we [4](should be shocked at the contrast) and terrified at our own figure; but it is day by day we advance: we are to-day as we were yesterday, and shall be to-morrow as we are to-day; so we go forward without perceiving it, and this is a miracle of that Providence whom I adore.—*Sévigné.*

1 Ne le sentons presque pas—2 va doucement—3 on nous fesait voir—4 tomber à la renverse.

THE MAGNIFICENT PROSPECT.

This beautiful house was on the declivity of a hill, from whence you beheld the sea, sometimes clear and smooth as glass, sometimes [1]idly irritated against the rocks on which it broke, [2]bellowing and swelling its waves like mountains. On another side was seen a river, in which were islands bordered with blooming limes, and lofty poplars, which raised their proud heads to the very clouds. The several channels which formed those islands seemed [3]sporting in the plain. Some rolled their limpid waters with rapidity; some had a peaceful and still course; others, by long windings, ran back again to reascend as it were to their source, and seemed not to have power to leave these enchanting borders. At a distance were seen hills and mountains which were lost in the clouds, and formed by their fantastic figure as delightful a horizon [4](as the eye could wish to behold). The neighboring mountains were covered with verdant [5](vine-branches) hanging in festoons; the grapes, brighter than purple, could not conceal themselves under the leaves, and the vine was overloaded with its fruit. The fig, the olive, the pomegranate, and all other trees, overspread the plain, and made it one large garden.—*Fénélon.*

1 Follement 2 en gémir—3 se jouer—4 à souhait pour le plaisir des yeux—5 pampre, m—6 vigne, f.

Long hopes [1]wear out joy, as long illness wears out pain.

All philosophic systems are only good when one [2](has no use for them).—*Sévigné.*

1 User—2 n'en a que faire.

A GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

With what magnificence does nature [1]shine upon earth! A pure light, extending from east to west, gilds successively the two hemispheres of this globe; an element transparent and light surrounds it; a gentle fecundating heat animates, [2]gives being to the seeds of life; salubrious running streams contribute to their preservation and growth; eminences diversified over the level land arrest the vapors of the air, make these springs inexhaustible and always new; immense cavities, made to receive them, divide the continents. The extent of the sea is as great as that of the earth; it is not a cold, barren element; it is a new empire, as rich, as populous as the first. The finger of God has marked their boundaries.

The earth, rising above the level of the sea, [3]is secure from its irruptions; its surface, enamelled with flowers, adorned with ever-springing verdure, peopled with thousands and thousands of species of different animals, is a place of rest, a delightful abode, where man, placed in order to second nature, presides over all beings. The only one among them all capable of knowing and worthy of admiring, God has made him spectator of the universe and a witness of his wonders. The divine spark with which he is animated enables him to participate in the divine mysteries; it is by this light that he thinks and reflects; by it he sees and reads in the book of the universe as in a copy of the Deity.

Nature is the exterior throne of the divine Majesty; the man who contemplates, who studies it, rises by degrees to the interior throne of Omnipotence. Made to adore the Creator, the vassal of Heaven, sovereign of

1 Ne brille t-elle pas 2 faire éclore—3 à l'abri de

the earth, he ennobles, peoples, enriches it; he establishes among living beings order, subordination, harmony; he embellishes nature herself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it; lops off the thistle and the briar, and multiplies the grape and the rose.—*Buffon.*

ANOTHER GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

Trees, shrubs, and plants are the ornaments and [1]clothing of the earth Nothing is so [2]melancholy as the prospect of a country naked and [3]bare, exhibiting to the eye nothing but stones, mud, and sand. But, vivified by nature, and [4]clad in its nuptial robe, amidst the course of streams and the singing of birds, the earth presents to man, in the harmony of the three kingdoms, a spectacle full of life, of interest and charms—the only spectacle in the world of which his eyes and heart are never [5]weary.

The more a [6](contemplative man's soul is fraught with sensibility) the more he yields to the ecstasies which this harmony produces in him. A soft and deep melancholy then takes possession of his senses, and in an intoxication of delight he loses himself in the immensity of that beautiful system with which he feels himself identified. Then every particular object escapes him: he sees and feels nothing but in the whole. Some circumstance must contract his ideas, and circumscribe his imagination, [7]before he can observe by parcels that universe which he was endeavoring to embrace.—*J. J. Rousseau.*

1 Vêtement—2 triste—3 pelé—4 revêtu—5 se lasser—6 contemplateur a l'ame sensible—7 pour qu'il.

CULTIVATED NATURE.

How beautiful is cultivated nature! by the labors of man, how brilliant it is, and how pompously adorned! He himself is its chief ornament, its noblest part; by multiplying himself, he multiplies the most precious germ; she also seems to multiply with him: by his art he [1](brings forth to view) all that she [2]concealed in her bosom. How many unknown treasures! What new riches! Flowers, fruits, seeds, brought to perfection, multiplied to infinity; the useful species of animals transported, propagated, increased without number; the noxious species reduced, confined, banished; gold—and iron, more necessary than gold—extracted from the bowels of the earth; torrents [3]confined; rivers directed, [4]contracted; the sea itself subjected, [5]explored, crossed from one hemisphere to the other; the earth accessible in every part, and every where rendered equally cheerful and fruitful; in the vallies, delightful meadows; in the plains, rich pastures and still richer harvests; hills covered with vines and fruits; their summits crowned with useful trees and young forests; deserts changed into cities inhabited by an immense population, which, continually circulating, spreads itself from these centres to their extremities; roads opened and frequented; communications established every where, as so many witnesses of the strength and union of society; a thousand other monuments of power and glory sufficiently demonstrate that man, possessing dominion over the earth, has changed, renewed the whole of its surface, and that, at all times, he shares the empire of it with nature.

1 Mettre au jour—2 recéler—3 contenu—4 resserré—5 reconnu

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

However, man only reigns by right of conquest; he rather enjoys than possesses, and he can preserve only by means of continual labor. If this ceases, every thing droops, every thing declines, every thing changes, and again [1]returns under the hand of nature; she reassumes her rights, erases the work of man, covers with dust and moss his most pompous monuments, destroys them in time, and leaves him nothing but the regret of having lost through his fault what his ancestors had conquered by their labors. Those times in which man loses his dominion, those [2]barbarous ages during which every thing is seen to perish, are always preceded by war, and accompanied by scarcity and depopulation. Man, who can do nothing but by number, who is strong only by union, who can be happy only by peace, is mad enough to arm himself for his misery, and to fight for his ruin. Impelled by an insatiable thirst of having, blinded by ambition still more insatiable, he renounces all the feelings of humanity, turns all his strength against himself, seeks mutual destruction, [3]actually destroys himself, and after these periods of blood and carnage, when the smoke of glory has vanished, he contemplates with a sad eye the earth wasted, the arts buried, nations scattered, the people weakened, his own happiness ruined, and his real power annihilated.—*Buffon.*

Rentrer—2 de barbarie—3 en effet.

INVOCATION TO THE GOD OF NATURE.

Almighty God! whose presence alone supports nature, and maintains the harmony of the laws of the universe: Thou who, from the immoveable throne of the empyrean, seest the celestial spheres roll under thy feet without shock or confusion: who, from the bosom of repose, reproducest every moment their immense movements, and alone governest in profound peace that infinite number of heavens and worlds; restore, restore at length tranquillity to the agitated earth! let it be silent at thy voice; let discord and war cease their proud clamors! God of goodness! author of all beings! thy paternal eye [1]takes in all the objects of the creation; but man is thy chosen being; thou hast [2]illumined his soul with a ray of thy immortal light: complete the measure of thy kindness by penetrating his heart with a ray of thy love: this divine sentiment, diffusing itself every where, will reconcile opposite natures; man will no longer dread the sight of man; his hand will no longer wield the murderous [3]steel; the devouring flames of war will no longer [4]dry up the sources of population: the human species, now weakened, mutilated, mowed down in the blossom, [5]will spring anew, and multiply without number; nature, overwhelmed under the weight of [6]scourges, will soon reassume with a new life its former fruitfulness; and we, beneficent God, will second it, we will cultivate it, we will contemplate it incessantly, that we may every moment offer thee a new tribute of gratitude and admiration.—*Buffon.*

1 Embrasser—2 éclairer—3 le fer.....armer sa main—4 tarir—5 germer de nouveau—6 fléau.

Happy they who [1]are disgusted with turbulent pleasures, and know [2]how to be contented with the sweets of an innocent life! Happy they

1 Se dégoûter de—2 se contenter de.

who delight [3]in being instructed, and who [4]take a pleasure in storing their minds with knowledge! Wherever adverse fortune may throw them, they always carry entertainment with them; and the disquiet which preys upon others, even in the midst of pleasures, is unknown to those who can employ themselves in reading. Happy they who love to read, and are not like me deprived of the ability. As these thoughts were passing in my mind, I went into a gloomy forest, where I immediately perceived an old man, holding a book in his hand. The forehead of this sage was broad, bald, and a little wrinkled: a white beard hung down to his girdle; his stature was tall and majestic; his complexion still fresh and ruddy; his eyes lively and piercing; his voice sweet; his words plain and charming. I never saw so venerable an old man. He was a priest of Apollo, and [5]officiated in a marble temple, which the kings of Egypt had dedicated to that god in this forest. The book which he held in his hand was a collection of hymns in honor of the gods. He accosted me in a friendly manner, and we discoursed together. He related things past so well, that they seemed present; and yet with such brevity, that his account never tired me. He foresaw the future by his profound knowledge, which made him know men, and the designs of which they are capable. With all this wisdom, he was cheerful and complaisant, and the sprightliest youth has not so many graces as this man had at so advanced an age. He accordingly loved young men when they were teachable, and had a taste for study and virtue.—*Fénélon*

3 S'instruire—4 se plaire—5 servir—6 docile.

THOUGHTS ON POETRY.

Wherever I went, I found that poetry was considered as the [1](highest learning), and regarded with a veneration [2](somewhat approaching to) that which men would pay to angelic nature.

It yet fills me with wonder that, in almost all countries, the most ancient poets are considered as the best; whether [3](it be that) every kind of knowledge is an acquisition gradually attained, and poetry is a gift conferred at once; or that the first poetry of every nation surprised them as a novelty, and retained the credit by consent which it received by accident at first; or whether, as the [4]province of poetry is to describe nature and passion, which are always the same, the first writers [5](took possession) of [6](the most striking objects for description), and [7](the most probable occurrences for fiction), and left nothing to those that followed them but [8]transcriptions of the same events, and [9]new combinations of the same images. Whatever be the reason, it is commonly observed that the early writers are in possession of nature, and their [10]followers of art; that the first excel in strength and invention, and the latter in elegance and refinement.

I was desirous to add my name to this illustrious [11]fraternity. I read all the poets of Persia and Arabia, and was able to repeat by memory the volumes that are suspended in the mosque at Mecca. But I soon found that no man was ever great by imitation. My desire of [12]excellence [13]impelled me [14]to transfer my attention to nature and to [15]life. Nature

1 Partie la plus sublime de la littérature—2 qui tenoit de—3 cela vienne de ce que—4 but—5 s'emparer—6 objets qui fournissaient les plus riches descriptions—7 événemens qui prêtaient le plus à la fiction—8 de copier—9 faire de nouvelles combinaisons—10 successeurs—11 famille—12 exceller—13 engager—14 reporter...sur—15 tableau de la vie.

was to be my subject, and men to be my auditors: I could never describe what I had not seen; I could not hope [16](to move those with delight or terror) whose interests and opinions I did not [17]understand.

16 réveiller le plaisir ou la terreur dans ceux—17 ne connaître ni.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

Being now resolved to be a poet, I saw every thing [18](with a new purpose); my sphere of attention was suddenly magnified: no kind of knowledge [19](was to be overlooked). I ranged mountains and deserts [20]for images and resemblances, and [21](pictured upon my mind) every tree of the forest and flower of the valley. I observed with equal care the crags of the rock and the pinnacles of the palace. Sometimes I wandered along the mazes of the rivulet, and sometimes watched the changes of the summer clouds. To a poet nothing can be useless. Whatever is beautiful and whatever is dreadful must be familiar to his imagination: he must [22](be conversant) with all that [23](is awfully vast or elegantly little). The plants of the garden, the animals of the wood, the minerals of the earth, and the meteors of the sky, must all concur to store his mind with inexhaustible variety: for every idea is useful for the [24](enforcement or decoration) of moral or religious truth; and he who knows most will have most [25]power of diversifying his [26]scenes, and gratifying his reader with remote allusions and unexpected instruction.

All the appearances of nature [27]I was therefore careful to study, and every country which I have surveyed has contributed something to my poetical powers.

In so wide a survey, interrupted the prince, you must surely have left much unobserved. I have lived till now within the circuit of these mountains, and yet cannot walk abroad without the sight of something which I had never beheld before or never [28]heeded.

18 Sous un nouveau jour—19 je ne devais négliger—20 pour recueillir—21 pénétrer mon esprit du tableau de—22 bien connaître—23 étonne par sa grandeur ou charme par son élegante petitesse—24 fortifier, ou embellir—25 ressources pour—26 tableau —27 étudier avec soin toutes les, &c —28 remarquer.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

The business of a poet, said Imlac, is to examine, not the individual, but the species; to remark general properties and [29](large appearances): he does not number the streaks of the tulip or describe the different shades in the verdure of the forest. He is to exhibit, in his portraits of nature, [30]such prominent and striking features as recal the original to every mind; and must neglect [31]the minuter discriminations, which one may have remarked and another neglected, [32]for those characteristics which [33]are alike obvious to [34]vigilance and [35]carelessness.

But the knowledge of nature is only [36]half the task of a poet: he must be acquainted likewise with [37]all the modes of life. His character requires that he [38]estimate the happiness and misery of every condition · observe the power of all the passions, in all their combinations, and [39]trace the

29 Considérer les objets en grand—30 de ces traits saillans et frappans qui, &c.—31 ces petits détails—32 pour s'appliquer à caractériser, &c. &c.—33 frappe également—34 œil observateur—35 esprit insouciant—36 the half of—37 tous les différens aspects—38 apprécier—39 suivre les vicissitudes.

changes of the human mind, as they are modified by various institutions and accidental influences of climate or custom, from the sprightliness of infancy to the despondence of decrepitude. He must [40]divest himself of the prejudices of his age or country; he must consider [41]right and wrong [42]in their abstracted and invariable state; he must disregard present laws and opinions, and rise to general and transcendent truths, which will always be the same; he must therefore [43](content himself with the slow progress of his name), contemn the applause of his own time, and commit his claims to the justice of posterity. He must write as the interpreter of nature and the legislator of mankind, and consider himself as [44]presiding over the thoughts and manners of future generations, as a being superior to time and place.

His labor is not yet at an end: he must know many languages and many sciences; and, that his style may be worthy of his thoughts, he must, by incessant practice, familiarize himself to every delicacy of speech and grace of harmony.—*S. Johnson.*

40 Se dépouiller—41 ce qui est juste ou injuste—42 abstraction faite de ces divers préjugés—43 se résigner à voir son nom percer difficilement—44 influer.

First follow nature, and your judgment frame
By her just standard, which is still the same:
Unerring nature, still divinely bright,
One clear, unchanged, and universal light,
Life, force, and beauty must to all impart;[1]
At once the source, and end, and test of art.[2]
Art, from that fund, its just supply provides;
Works without show, and without pomp presides;
In some fair body thus th' informing soul,
With spirit feeds, with vigor fills the whole;
Each motion guides, and every nerve sustains
Itself unseen, but in th' effect remains.[3]
Some, to whom Heav'n in wit has been profuse,
Want as much more to turn it to its use:
For wit and judgment often are at strife,
Though meant each other's aid, like man and wife.[4]
'Tis more to guide than spur the muse's steed,
Restrain his fury than provoke his speed:[5]
The winged courser, like a gen'rous horse,
Shows most true mettle when you check its course.[6]—*Pope.*

1. Light, clear, immutable, and universal nature, which never errs, and shines always with a divine splendor, must impart to all she does life, force, and beauty.
2. She is at once the source, &c.
3. So in a fair body, unseen itself, but always sensible by its effects, the soul continually acting, feeds the whole with spirit, fills it with vigor, guides every motion of it, and sustains every nerve.
4. Some to whom Heaven has given wit in profusion, want as much yet to know the use they ought to make of it; for wit and judgment, though made, like man and wife, to aid each other, are often in opposition.
5. It is more difficult to guide than spur the courser of the muses, and to restrain its ardor than provoke its impetuosity.
6. The winged courser is like a generous horse: the more we strive to stop it in its rapid course, the more it shows unconquerable vigor.

EXAMPLES OF PHRASES

ON THE

PRINCIPAL DIFFICULTIES OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

Sur les Collectifs Partitifs.	On the Collective Partitives.
La plupart des fruits verts sont d'un goût austère,	*The greater part of green fruit is of a harsh taste.*
La plupart des gens ne se conduisent que par intérêt,	*Most people are guided only by interest.*
La plupart du monde se trompe,	*The greater part of mankind live in error*
Il méprise par philosophie les honneurs que la plupart du monde recherche,	*As a true philosopher, he despises those honors which mankind in general court.*
Il devait me fournir tant d'arbres; mais j'en ai rejeté la moitié qui ne valait rien.	*He was to furnish me so many trees, but I refused half of them, which were good for nothing.*
Un grand nombre de spectateurs ajoutait à la beauté du spectacle,	*A considerable number of spectators added to the splendor of the scene.*
Toute sorte de livres ne sont pas également bons,	*Every kind of books are not equally good.*
Beaucoup de personnes se sont présentées,	*Many people presented themselves.*
Bien des personnes se font des principes à leur fantasie,	*Many persons form principles to themselves, according to their fancy.*

Sur quelques Verbs qu'on ne peut conjuguer avec Avoir *sans faire des barbarismes.*	On some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with the verb *Avoir* without making barbarous phrases.
Il lui est échu une succession du chef de sa femme,	*An estate fell to him in right of his wife.*
Il est bien déchu de son crédit,	*He has lost much of his credit.*
Ne sommes-nous pas convenus du prix?	*Have we not agreed about the price?*
N'est-il pas intervenu dans cette affaire, comme il l'avait promis?	*Did he not interfere in that affair as he had promised?*
Il est survenu à l'improviste,	*He came up unawares.*
La neige, qui est tombée ce matin, a adouci le temps,	*The snow which fell this morning has softened the weather.*
Que de neige il est tombé ce matin!	*How much snow has fallen this morning!*
Toutes les dents lui sont tombées,	*All his teeth have fallen out.*
Ce propos n'est pas tombé à terre,	*That remark was not allowed to escape.*
Etes-vous allé voir votre ami?	*Have you been to see your friend?*
Ils sont arrivés à midi et sont repartis de suite,	*They arrived at noon, and set out again immediately.*
Ces fleurs sont à peine écloses,	*These flowers are scarcely blown.*
Il est né de parens vertueux, qui n'ont rien négligé pour son éducation,	*He was born of virtuous parents, who bestowed on him the best education.*
Mademoiselle votre sœur est-elle rentrée?	*Is your sister returned?*
Madame votre mère n'est-elle pas encore venue?	*Is not your mother come yet?*

Sur les Mots de Quantité.	On words of Quantity.
Il a beaucoup d'esprit, mais encore plus d'amour propre.	*He has a great deal of sense, but still more vanity.*
Il a assez d'argent pour ses menus plaisirs,	*He has sufficient pocket-money.*
Il y avait bien du monde à l'Opéra,	*There were a great many people at the* [*Opera.*
Il y avait hier au Parc je ne sais combien de gens,	*There were I do not know how many people in the Park yesterday.*
Il boit autant d'eau que de vin,	*He drinks as much water as wine.*
Il a tant d'amis qu'il ne manquera de rien,	*He has so many friends that he will want for nothing.*
Personne n'y a plus d'intérêt que lui,	*Nobody has more interest there than he*
Il n'a pas plus d'esprit qu'il n'en faut,	*He is not overburdened with sense.*
Trop de loisir perd souvent la jeunesse,	*Too much leisure time is frequently the destruction of youth.*
J'y ai bien moins d'intérêt que vous,	*I am much less concerned in it than you*

Sur les Pronoms Personnels.	On the Personal Pronouns.
Sors et te retire,	*Go out and retire, withdraw.*
Cours vite et ne t'amuse point,	*Go quick, and do not loiter.*
Il dit aujourd'hui une chose et demain il se démentira,	*He advances a thing to-day, and will contradict himself to-morrow.*
Il s'est démenti lui-même,	*He has contradicted himself.*
La jeunesse est naturellement emportée; elle a besoin de quelque entrave qui la retienne,	*Youth is naturally hasty, it needs some check to restrain it.*
Il ne peut voir personne dans la prospérité sans lui porter envie,	*He can see the prosperity of nobody without envying them.*
Ce que vous me dites est une énigme pour moi,	*What you tell me is a perfect riddle to me.*
C'est un homme extrême en tout; il aime et il hait avec fureur,	*He is a man that carries every thing to excess; he is alike violent in his love and in his hatred.*
Si vous n'y avez jamais été, je vous y mènerai,	*If you have never been there, I will take you.*
Je l'ai connu doux et modeste; il s'est bien gâté dans le commerce de ses nouveaux amis,	*I knew him when he was mild and modest; he has been much corrupted by associating with his new acquaintances.*
Elle n'est pas encore revenue du saisissement, que lui causa cette nouvelle.	*She is not yet recovered from the consternation into which that intelligence threw her.*
Il menace de l'exterminer, lui et toute sa race,	*He threatens to exterminate him and all his family.*
Si vous n'avez que faire de ce livre-là, prêtez-le-moi,	*If you have done with this book, lend it me.*
Je lui avais envoyé un diamant, il l'a refusé, je le lui ai renvoyé,	*I had sent him a diamond, and he refused it, but I sent him it back again.*
Il apprend facilement et oublie de même,	*He learns easily and forgets the same.*
Je lui pardonne facilement d'avoir voulu se faire auteur; mais je ne saurais lui pardonner toutes les puérilités dont il a farci son livre,	*I can easily pardon him for having attempted to turn author; but I cannot pardon him all the absurdities with which he has filled his book.*
Je me plains à vous de vous-même,	*I complain to you of yourself.*
Si vous ne voulez pas être pour lui, au moins ne soyez pas contre,	*If you will not be for him, at least do not be against him.*
Quand sera-ce que vous viendrez nous voir?	*When will you come to see us?*

Sur soi, lui, soi-même, *et* lui-même.	On *soi*, *lui*, *soi-même*, and *lui-même*.
Quand on a pour soi le témoignage de sa conscience, on est bien fort,	*The approbation of our conscience imparts great courage.*
L'estime de toute la terre ne sert de rien à un homme qui n'a pas le témoignage de sa conscience pour lui,	*The good opinion of the whole world is of no use to a man who has not the approbation of his own conscience.*
Un homme fait mille fautes, parce qu'il ne fait point de réflexions sur lui,	*A man commits a thousand faults because he does not reflect on future consequences.*
On fait mille fautes, quand on ne fait aucune réflexion sur soi,	*We commit a thousand faults when we neglect to reflect on ourselves.*
Il aime mieux dire du mal de lui, que de n'en point parler,	*He had rather speak ill of himself than not speak of himself at all*
L'égoïste aimera mieux dire du mal de soi, que de n'en point parler,	*The egotist prefers speaking ill of himself rather than not be the subject of his own conversation.*
On a souvent besoin d'un plus petit que soi,	*We frequently want the assistance of one who is below ourselves.*
Un prince a souvent besoin de beaucoup de gens plus petits que lui,	*A prince frequently needs the assistance of many persons inferior to himself.*
C'est un bon moyen de s'élever soi-même, que d'exalter ses pareils; et un homme adroit s'élève ainsi lui-même,	*It is an excellent method of exalting ourselves to exalt our equals, and a man of address by this means exalts himself.*

Sur les Pronoms Relatifs.	On the Relative Pronouns.
Il n'y a rien de si capable d'efféminer le courage, que l'oisiveté et les délices,	*Nothing is so calculated to enervate the mind as idleness and pleasure.*
Il faut empêcher que la division, qui est dans cette famille, n'éclate.	*The dissension in that family must be prevented from becoming public.*

Il y a bien des événemens que l'on suppose se passer pendant les entr'actes,
Je le trouvai qui s'habillait,
Qui le tirera de cet embarras, le tirera d'une grande misère,
Ceux-là sont véritablement heureux, qui croient l'être,
Il n'y a que la vertu, qui puisse rendre un homme heureux en cette vie,
Il n'y a règle, si générale, qui n'ait son exception,
C'est un orateur qui se possède et qui ne se trouble jamais,
Il n'y a pas dans le cœur humain de repli que Dieu ne connaisse,
On n'a trouvé que quelques fragmens du grand ouvrage qu'il avait promis,
La faute, que vous avez faite, est plus importante que vous ne pensez.
Les premières démarches qu'on fait dans le monde, ont beaucoup d'influence sur le reste de la vie,
Cette farce est une des plus risibles qu'on ait encore vues,
Amassez-vous des trésors que les vers et la rouille ne puissent point gâter, et que les voleurs ne puissent point dérober,
L'incertitude, où nous sommes de ce qui doit arriver, fait que nous ne saurions prendre des mesures justes,
Je m'étonne qu'il ne voie pas le danger où il est,
L'homme dont vous parlez, n'est plus ici,

Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle ne vous est pas connu,
Celui à qui ce beau château appartient ne l'habite presque jamais,
Ce sont des événemens auxquels il faut bien se soumettre,
C'est ce à quoi vous ne pensez guère,

There are many events in a piece which are supposed to happen between the acts
I found him dressing.
Whoever extricates him from this difficulty will relieve him from much distress.
Those are really happy who think themselves so.
Virtue alone can render a man happy in this life.
There is no rule so general but it admits of exceptions.
He is an orator who is master of himself, and who is never embarrassed.
There is no recess of the human heart but God perceives it.
Only some fragments of the great work he had promised have been found.
The error you have committed is of more consequence than you imagine.
The first steps we take on entering the world have considerable influence on the rest of our lives.
That farce is one of the most truly comic that ever was seen.
Lay up for yourselves treasures which neither moth nor rust can corrupt, and which thieves cannot steal.
Our uncertainty as to what shall happen makes us incapable of properly providing against it.
I am astonished he does not see the danger he is in.
The man whom you are speaking of is not here now.
The person from whom I received the intelligence is not known to you.
The proprietor of that beautiful seat seldom resides there.
These are events to which we must submit.

It is what you seldom think of.

Sur les Pronoms Démonstratifs.

Ne point reconnaître la divinité, c'est renoncer à toutes les lumières de la raison.
Mentir, c'est mépriser Dieu et craindre les hommes,
Il y a des épidémies morales, et ce sont les plus dangereuses,
Je crois que ce que vous dites est bien éloigné de ce que vous pensez,
Les hommes n'aiment ordinairement que ceux qui les flattent,
Celui qui persuade à un autre de faire un crime, n'est guère moins coupable que celui qui le commet,
Penser ainsi, c'est s'aveugler soi-même,

Ce qu'on rapporte de lui est inconcevable,

Ce qui m'afflige, c'est de voir le triomphe du crime,
Connaissez-vous la jeune Emilie? C'est une enfant dont tout le monde dit du bien,
Imitez en tout votre amie: elle est douce, appliquée, honnête et compatissante,

On the Demonstrative Pronouns.

Not to acknowledge the divinity is totally to renounce the light of reason.

To lie is to despise God and to fear man.

There are moral contagious disorders, and these are the most dangerous.
What you advance is, I think, widely different from your sentiments.
Men in general love only those who flatter them.
He who persuades another to the commission of a crime is hardly less guilty than he who commits it.
To think in this manner is to be wilfully blind.
The reports concerning him are hardly conceivable.
What distresses me is to see guilt triumphant.
Do you know little Emily? She is a child of whom every body speaks well.

Imitate your friend in every thing; she is mild, assiduous, polite, and compassionate.

Sur le verbe Avoir *employé à l'Impersonnel.*

On the verb *Avoir, to have,* employed impersonally.

REMARQUE.—Quand le verbe *avoir* s'emploie à l'impersonnel, c'est dans le sens d'*être*, et alors il se joint toujours avec *y*.

When the verb avoir *is used impersonally it signifies* être, to be, *and in this sense it is always accompanied by the adverb* y.

Il y a un an que je ne vous ai vu,
Y a-t-il des nouvelles?
Non, il n'y en a pas, du moins que je sache,
N'y a-t-il pas cinquante-quatre milles de Londres à Brighton?
Il y avait déjà beaucoup de monde lorsque j'arrivai,
Il n'y avait hier presque personne au parc,
Y avait-il de grands débats?
N'y avait-il pas beaucoup de curieux?
Je l'avais vu il y avait à peine vingt-quatre heures,
Il n'y avait pas deux jours qu'il avait dîné chez moi.
Y avait-il si long-temps que vous ne l'aviez vu?
Il y eut hier un bal chez M. un tel.
Il n'y eut pas hier de spectacle.
Y eut-il beaucoup de confusion et de désordre?
N'y eut-il pas un beau feu d'artifice?
Il y a eu aujourd'hui une foule immense à la promenade,
Il n'y a pas eu de bal, comme on l'avait annoncé,
Est-il vrai qu'il y a eu un duel?
N'y a-t-il pas eu dans sa conduite un peu trop d'emportement?
Quand il y eut eu une explication, les esprits se calmèrent,
N'y avait-il pas eu un plus grand nombre de spectateurs?
Il y aura demain un simulacre de combat naval,
Il n'y aura aucun de vous,
Y aura-t-il une bonne récolte cette année?
N'y aura-t-il pas quelqu'un de votre famille?
A coup sûr il y aura eu bien du désordre,
Sur cent personnes, il n'y en aura pas eu dix de satisfaites,
Y aura-t-il eu un bon soupé?
N'y aura-t-il pas eu de mécontens?
Il y aurait de la malhonnêteté dans ce procédé.
Il n'y aurait pas grand mal à cela.
Y aurait-il quelqu'un assez hardi pour l'attaquer?
N'y aurait-il pas quelqu'un assez charitable pour l'avertir de ce qu'on dit de lui?
Il y aurait eu de l'imprudence à cela.

Il n'y aurait pas eu tant de mésintelligence, si l'on m'en avait cru.
Il n'y aurait pas eu dix personnes,
Y aurait-il eu de l'inconvénient?

N'y aurait il pas eu de jaloux pour le traverser dans ses projets?
Je ne crois pas qu'il y ait un spectacle plus magnifique,
Je désirerais qu'il y eût moins de fausseté dans le commerce de la vie,
Je n'ai pas ouï dire qu'il y ait eu hier des nouvelles du continent,
Auriez-vous cru qu'il y eût eu tant de personnes compromises dans cette affaire?

It is a twelvemonth since I saw you.
Is there any news?
No, there is none, at least that I know.
Is it not fifty-four miles from London to Brighton?
There were already a great many people when I arrived.
There was hardly any body in the park yesterday.
Were there violent debates?
Were there not many curious people?
I had seen him scarcely four-and-twenty hours before.
He had dined with me not two days before.
Was it so long since you had seen him.
There was yesterday a ball at Mr. A's.
There was no play yesterday.
Was there a great deal of confusion and disorder?
Were there not handsome fireworks?
There was an immense crowd to-day at the public walks.
There has not been any ball, as had been mentioned.
Is it true that there has been a duel?
Was there not rather too much hastiness in his behaviour?
After there had been an explanation, tranquillity was restored.
Was there not a greater number of spectators?
To-morrow there will be the representation of a sea-fight.
There will be none of you.
Will there be a good harvest this year?
Will not there be some of your family?
There must certainly have been much disorder.
Out of a hundred persons, there will not have been ten satisfied.
Will there have been a good supper?
Will there not have been some dissatisfied?
Such a step would have been ungenteel.
There would be no great harm in that.
Would there be any one bold enough to attack him?
Would there be nobody kind enough to acquaint him with what is said of him?
There would have been some imprudence in that.

There would not have been so great a misunderstanding had I been believed.
There would not have been ten persons.
Would there have been any inconvenience?

Would there not have been some envious person to thwart him in his designs?
I do not think there can be a more superb spectacle.
I wish there were less duplicity in the concerns of life.
I have not heard that there was any news from the continent yesterday.
Could you have thought so many persons would have been exposed in that affair?

Phrases Diverses.

Sa vie, ses actions, ses paroles, son air même et sa démarche, tout prêche, tout édifie en lui,
On craignait qu'il n'arrivât quelque désordre dans l'assemblée, mais toutes choses s'y passèrent fort doucement,
La vigne et le lierre s'entortillent autour des ormes,
On ne disconvient point qu'il ne soit brave, mais il est un peu trop fanfaron,
Le cadet est riche, mais l'aîné l'est encore davantage,
Le ciel est couvert de nuages, et l'orage est prêt à fondre,
Après qu'il eut franchi les Alpes avec ses troupes, il entra en Italie,
La frugalité rend les corps plus sains et plus robustes,
Ce discours est peut-être un des plus beaux morceaux d'éloquence, qu'il y ait jamais eu,
C'est un homme qui aime la liberté; il ne se gêne pour qui que ce soit,
Il est plus haut que moi de deux doigts,
Irez-vous vous exposer à la barbarie et à l'inhospitalité de ces peuples?

A la longue, les erreurs disparaissent, et la vérité surnage,
Si vous le prenez avec moi sur ce ton de fierté, je serai aussi fier que vous,
C'est un homme rigide, qui ne pardonne rien, ni aux autres ni à lui-même,
Les uns montent, les autres descendent, ainsi va la roue de la fortune,
Je ne vois rien de solide dans tout ce que vous me proposez,
L'art n'a jamais rien produit de plus beau,
Lequel est-ce des deux qui a tort?
On aime quelquefois la trahison, mais on hait toujours les traîtres,

Promiscuous Phrases.

His life, his actions, his very look and deportment, every thing in him instructs and edifies.
It was apprehended some disorder would take place in the assembly, but every thing went off very quietly.
The vine and ivy twist round the elms.

They do not deny that he is brave, but he boasts rather too much.
The youngest is rich, but the eldest is still more so.
The sky is covered with clouds, and the storm is preparing to burst.
After having crossed the Alps with his troops, he entered Italy.
Temperance imparts an increase of health and strength to the body.
This speech is perhaps one of the finest pieces of eloquence that was ever pronounced.
He is a man fond of liberty, he will be restrained by nobody.
He is taller than I by two inches.
Will you go and expose yourself to the barbarity and inhospitality of those nations?
In time errors vanish and truth survives

If you treat me with that haughtiness, I can be as haughty as you.
He is a strange character, who pardons nothing, either in himself or others.
Some mount, others descend; thus goes the wheel of fortune.
I see nothing certain in all you propose to me.
It is one of the finest productions of art.
Which of the two is in the wrong?
We sometimes love the treason, but we always hate the traitor.

Continuation.

L'éléphant se sert de sa trompe pour prendre et pour enlever tout ce qu'il veut,
Plus j'examine cette personne, plus je crois l'avoir vue quelque part,
La nuit vint, de façon que je fus contraint de me retirer,
Il faut vivre de façon qu'on ne fasse tort à personne,
Elle sut qu'on attaquait son mari et courut aussitôt tout éperdue pour le secourir,
Je trouvai ses parens tout éplorés,
Cet arbre pousse ses branches toutes droites,
J'en ai encore la mémoire toute fraîche,
Il a voulu faire voir par cet essai qu'il pouvait réussir en quelque chose de plus grand,
Il fut blessé au front et mourut de cette blessure,
Ces chevaux prirent le mors aux dents et entraînèrent le carrosse,
C'est un homme qui compose sans chaleur ni imagination; tout ce qu'il écrit est froid et plat,
Ce bâtiment a plus de profondeur que de largeur,

Continuation.

The elephant makes use of his trunk to take and lift whatever he pleases.
The more I look at that person, the more think I have seen him (or her) somewhere
Night came on, so that I was obliged to retire.
We must live in such a manner as to injure nobody.
She knew her husband was attacked, and, in a state of distraction, ran to his assistance.
I found his relations all in tears.
The branches of that tree grow quite straight.
It is still quite fresh in my memory.
He wished to show, by that attempt, that he could succeed in an enterprise of more consequence.
He was wounded in the forehead, and died of this wound.
Those horses ran away with the carriage.

He is a man who writes without the least warmth or animation: all his productions are cold and insipid.
That building is deeper than it is broad

Cet homme est un prodige de savoir, de science, de valeur, d'esprit, et de mémoire,
Il est attaché à l'un et à l'autre, mais plus à l'un qu'à l'autre,
Ils ont bien de l'air l'un de l'autre,
Si l'on ruine cet homme-là, le contre-coup retombera sur vous,
Il serait mort, si on ne l'eût assisté avec soin,
Ce poëme serait parfait, si les incidens, qui le font languir, n'interrompaient la continuité de l'action,

That man is a prodigy of knowledge judgment, courage, sense, and memory
He is attached to both, but to one more than to the other.
They very much resemble each other.
If that man is ruined, his misfortune will recoil upon you.
He would have died, if he had not been kindly assisted.
That would be a perfect poem, if the incidents which give a heaviness to it, did not break the connection of the subject.

Continuation.

Quand je le voudrais, je ne le pourrais pas,
Je serai toujours votre ami, quand même vous ne le voudriez pas,
Quand vous auriez réussi, que vous en serait-il revenu?
Quand on découvrirait votre démarche, on ne pourrait la blâmer,
Quand vous auriez consulté quelqu'un sur votre marriage, vous n'auriez pas mieux réussi,
Le tonnerre et l'éclair ne sont sensibles que par la propagation du bruit et de la lumière jusqu'à l'œil et à l'oreille,
Le langage de la prose est plus simple et moins figuré que celui des vers,
Le commencement de son discours est toujours assez sage; mais, dans la suite, à force de vouloir s'élever, il se perd dans les nues: on ne sait plus ni ce qu'on voit, ni ce qu'on entend,
C'est une faute excusable dans un autre homme, mais à un homme aussi sage que lui, elle ne se peut pardonner,
Il ne suffit pas de paraître honnête homme, il faut l'être,
Il nous a reçus avec bonté, et nous a écoutés avec patience,
Tout y est si bien peint, qu'on croit voir ce qu'il décrit,
On ne pense rien de vous, qui ne vous soit glorieux,
Les eaux de citernes ne sont que des eaux de pluie ramassées,
S'il n'est pas fort riche, du moins a-t-il de quoi vivre honnêtement,
Quel quantième du mois avons-nous?
Il lui tarde qu'il ne soit majeur, il compte les jours et les mois,
Des qualités excellentes, jointes à de rares talens, font le parfait mérite,
Il a une mauvaise qualité, c'est qu'il ne saurait garder un secret,

Continuation.

If I were disposed, I could not do it.
I will always be your friend, even though you should not wish it.
Had you even succeeded, what were you to have derived from it?
Should the steps you have taken be discovered, they could not be blamed.
Had you consulted somebody about your marriage, you could not have succeeded better.
Thunder and lightning are only perceptible by the transmission of sound and light to the ear and eye.
Prose language is much more simple and less figurative than poetic.
The beginning of his speech is always tolerably sensible; but afterwards, by affecting the sublime, he loses himself, and we no longer understand either what we see or hear.
This fault would be excusable in another man, but in a man of his sense it is unpardonable.
It is not enough to seem an honest man; we must be so.
He received us with kindness, and heard us patiently.
Every thing in it is so well delineated, you think you see what he describes.
They think nothing of you but what is to your honor.
Cistern-water is only rain-water collected
If he is not rich, at least he has enough to live upon respectably.
What day of the month is it?
He longs to be of age, and counts the days and months.
Excellent qualities, joined to distinguished talents, constitute perfect merit.
He has one bad quality, he cannot keep a secret.

Modèles de phrases dans lesquelles, on doit faire usage de l'article.

L'homme est sujet à bien des vicissitudes,
Les hommes d'un vrai génie sont rares,
Les hommes à imagination sont rarement heureux,
L'homme, dont vous parlez, est un de mes amis,
La vie est un mélange de biens et de maux,
La perfection en tout genre est le but auquel on doit tendre

Examples of Phrases in which the Article is used.

Man is liable to a variety of changes.
Men of real genius are scarce.
Men of a visionary character are seldom happy.
The man you speak of is a friend of mine
Life is a compound of good and evil.
Perfection in every thing ought to be our object.

La beauté, les grâces, et l'esprit sont des avantages bien précieux, quand ils sont relevés par la modestie,
Voilà des tableaux d'une grande beauté,
Faites-vous des principes, dont vous ne vous écartiez jamais,
Cet arbre porte des fruits excellens,
Ces raisons sont des conjectures bien faibles.
Servez-vous des termes établis par l'usage,
On doit éviter l'air de l'affectation,

Le Jupiter de Phidias était d'une grande beauté,

Beauty, gracefulness, and wit are valuable endowments, when heightened by modesty.
These are very beautiful pictures.
Establish rules for yourself, and never deviate from them.
This tree bears very excellent fruit.
These reasons are very idle conjectures

Use the expressions established by custom.
We ought to avoid the appearance of affectation.
The Jupiter of Phidias was extremely beautiful

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

La mémoire est le trésor de l'esprit, le fruit de l'attention et de la réflexion,
J'achetai hier des gravures précieuses et rares,
La France est le plus beau pays de l'Europe,
L'interêt de l'Allemagne était opposé à celui de la Russie.
La longueur de l'Angleterre du nord au sud est de 360 milles, et sa largeur de l'est à l'ouest est de 300.
Il arrive de la Chine, du Japon, et des Indes Orientales, &c.
Il arrive de l'Amérique, de la Barbade, de la Jamaïque, &c.
Il vient de la Flandre française,
Il s'est établi dans la province de Middlesex,
Des petits maitres sont des êtres insupportables dans la société,
C'est l'opinion des nouveaux philosophes,
Elle a bien de la grâce dans tout ce qu'elle fait,
Cette étoffe se vend une guinée l'aune,
Ce vin coûte 70 livres sterlings la piece,

The same Phrases continued.

Memory is the treasure of the mind, the result of attention and reflection.
I yesterday bought some valuable and scarce engravings.
France is the finest country in Europe.
The German interest was contrary to the Russian.
The length of England from north to south is 360 miles, and its breadth from east to west is 300.
He comes from China, Japan, and the East Indies.
He comes from America, Barbadoes, Jamaica, &c.
He comes from French Flanders.
He has settled in the county of Middlesex.
Coxcombs are insufferable beings in society.
It is the opinion of the new philosophers.
She does every thing most gracefully.

This stuff sells at a guinea an ell.
This wine costs seventy pounds the pipe

Modèles de Phrases dans lesquelles on ne doit pas faire usage de l'article.

Nos connaissances doivent être tirées de principes évidens,
Cet arbre porte d'excellens fruits,
Ces raisons sont de faibles conjectures,
Evitez tout ce qui a un air d'affectation,

Ces exemples peuvent servir de modèles,
Il a une grande présence d'esprit,
La mémoire de raison et d'esprit est plus utile que les autres sortes de mémoire,
Peu de personnes réfléchissent sur la rapidité de la vie,
Que d'événemens inconcevables se sont succédés les uns aux autres!
Il y a plus d'esprit, mais moins de connaissances, dans ce siècle que dans le siècle dernier,
On ne vit jamais autant d'effronterie,
Je pris hier beaucoup de peine pour rien,

Candie est une des îles les plus agréables de la Méditerranée,
Il arrive de Perse, d'Italie, d'Espagne, &c.
Il est revenu de Suisse, d'Allemagne, &c.

Les vins de France seront chers cette année les vignes ont coulé,

Examples of Phrases in which the Article is omitted.

Our knowledge ought to be derived from evident principles.
This tree produces excellent fruit.
These reasons are idle conjectures.
Avoid whatever bears the appearance of affectation.
These examples may serve as models.
He has great presence of mind.
The memory of reason and sense is more useful than any other kind of memory.
Few persons reflect on the rapidity of life.

How many inconceivable events have followed in succession!
There is more wit, but less knowledge, in this age than the last.

So much assurance never was met with.
I took a great deal of trouble yesteraay about nothing.
Candia is one of the most agreeable islands in the Mediterranean.
He comes from Persia, Italy, Spain, &c.
He is returned from Switzerland, Germany, &c.
French wines will be dear this year; the vines have been blighted.

L'empire d'Allemagne est composé de grands et de petits états,
Les chevaux d'Angleterre sont excellens,
Après mon départ de Suisse, je me retirai à Rome.

The German empire is composed of great and small states.
English horses are excellent.
After leaving Switzerland, I retired to Rome.

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

Vous trouverez ce passage page 120, livre premier, chapitre dix.
Il s'est retiré en Angleterre,
Il vit dans sa retraite en vrai philosophe,
Quand il réfléchit sur sa conduite, il en eut honte,
C'est un homme qui cherche fortune,
Il entend malice à tout,
Ne portez envie à personne,
Si vous promettez, tenez parole,
Dans les affaires importantes ne vous décidez jamais sans prendre conseil,
Courage, soldats, tenons fermes; la victoire est à nous,
Cette femme n'a ni grâce ni beauté,

Monseigneur le duc de, &c. prince du sang, alla hier à la campagne,
Montrer tant de faiblesse, c'est n'être pas homme,
Cet homme est une espèce de misanthrope, dont les brusqueries sont quelquefois très-plaisantes,
L'ananas est une sorte de fruit très-commun aux Antilles,
C'est un genre de vie qui ne me plaît point,

Continuation of the same Phrases.

You will find this passage at page 120, book the first, chapter the tenth.
He has retired to England.
He lives in his retreat like a real philosopher
When he reflected on his conduct, he was ashamed of it.
He is a man that seeks to make a fortune.
He puts a malicious construction on every thing.
Envy nobody.
If you promise, keep your word.
In matters of consequence, never decide without advice.
Cheer up, soldiers, let us continue firm; the day is our own.
This woman is destitute both of grace and beauty.
The duke of, &c. a prince of the blood, went yesterday into the country.
To show so much weakness, is not acting like a man,
This man is a kind of misanthropist, whose oddities are sometimes comical.

The pine-apple is a kind of fruit very common in the Antilles.
It is a kind of life that is not agreeable to me

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

Cette dame plaît à tout le monde par son honnêteté et sa douceur,
Tout homme a des défauts plus ou moins sensibles,
Cette conduite augmentait chaque jour le nombre de ses amis,
Tous les biens nous viennent de Dieu,
Vénus était la déesse de la beauté, et la mère de l'amour et des grâces,
Selon les païens, Jupiter était le premier des dieux,
Apollon était frère jumeau de Diane,
Rubens a été un grand peintre,
Homère et Virgile sont les deux plus grands poëtes épiques,
Londres est la plus belle ville que je connaisse,
L'eau de rivière est douce, et l'eau de mer est salée,
C'est un excellent poisson de mer,
Voilà une superbe table de marbre,
L'eau de Seine est celle qu'on préfère à Paris,
Pauvreté n'est pas vice,
Citoyens, étrangers, grands, peuples, se sont montrés sensibles à cette perte,

The same Sentences continued.

This lady pleases every one by her good breeding and mildness.
Every one has defects, more or less obvious.
This behaviour daily increased the number of his friends.
Every blessing comes from God.
Venus was the goddess of beauty, and the mother of love and the graces.
According to the heathens, Jupiter was the first of the gods.
Apollo was twin-brother to Diana.
Rubens was a great painter.
Homer and Virgil are the two greatest epic poets.
London is the finest city that I know.

River-water is sweet, and sea-water is salt.
It is an excellent sea-fish.
There is a superb marble table.
The water of the Seine is preferred at Paris.
Poverty is not a vice.
Citizens, strangers, grandees, people, have shown themselves sensible of this loss.

Modèles de Phrases sur le pronom LE.

Est-ce là votre opinion?—Ne doutez point que ce ne la soit.
Sont ce là vos domestiques?—Oui, ce les sont.
Mesdames, êtes-vous les étrangères qu'on m'a annoncées?—Oui, nous les sommes.

Forms of Phrases upon the pronoun LE.

Is that your opinion?—Do not question it
Are these your servants?—Yes, they are.
Ladies, are you the strangers that have been announced to me?—Yes, we are.

Madame, êtes-vous la malade pour laquelle on m'a appelé ?—Oui, je la suis.
Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant ?—Oui, je la suis.
Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de cette musique ?—Oui, nous le sommes.
Elle est malheureuse, et je crains bien, qu'elle ne le soit toute la vie.
Madame, êtes-vous mère ?—Oui, je le suis.
Madame, êtes-vous malade ?—Oui, je le suis.
Madame, depuis quel temps êtes-vous mariée ?—Je le suis depuis un an,
Y a-t-il long temps que vous êtes arrivée ?—Je le suis depuis quinze jours,
Aristote croyait que le monde était de toute éternité; mais Platon ne le croyait pas,
Quoique cette femme montre plus de fermeté que les autres, elle n'est pas pour cela la moins affligée,
Cette femme a l'art de répandre des larmes dans le temps même qu'elle est le moins affligée.

Madam, are you the sick person for whom I have been called?—Yes, I am.
Madam, are you the mother of this child?—Yes, I am.
Ladies, are you pleased with this music?—Yes, we are.
She is unhappy, and I much fear she will continue so for life.
Madam, are you a mother?—Yes, I am.
Madam, are you sick?—Yes, I am.
Madam, how long have you been married?—A year.
Is it long since you arrived?—A fortnight.
Aristotle believed the world to have been from all eternity, but Plato did not.

Although this woman shows more resolution than the others, she is nevertheless not the least afflicted.
This woman has the art of shedding tears even when she is least afflicted.

Modèles de phrases sur les différentes règles du participe passé.

La nouvelle pièce a-t-elle été applaudie ?
Vos parens y seront-ils arrivés à temps ?
Elle s'est donné de belles robes,
Elles nous ont apporté de superbes œillets,
Cette ruse ne lui a pas réussi,
La vie tranquille que j'ai menée depuis dix ans, a beaucoup contribué à me faire oublier mes malheurs,
Les lettres, qui j'ai reçues, m'ont beaucoup affligé,
Que de peines vous vous êtes données !
Quelle tâche vous vous êtes imposée !
C'est une satire que j'ai retrouvée dans mes papiers,
Les lettres qu'a écrites Pline le jeune, quelque agréables qu'elles soient, se ressentent néanmoins un peu de la décadence du goût parmi les Romains,
Je ne serais pas entré avec vous dans tous ces détails de grammaire, si je ne les avais crus nécessaires,
L'Egypte s'était rendue célèbre par la sagesse de ses lois long-temps avant que la Grèce sortit de la barbarie,
C'est une des plus grandes merveilles qu'on ait vues,
L'homme de lettres, dont vous m'avez parlé, a un goût exquis,
Vous avez très-bien instruit vos élèves,
Lucrèce s'est donné la mort,
La sécheresse qu'il y a eu au printemps a fait périr tous les fruits,
Je n'ai point réussi, malgré les mesures que vous m'avez conseillé de prendre,
Quelle aventure vous est-il arrivé ?
Cette femme s'est proposée pour modèle à ses enfans,
Cette femme s'est proposé d'enseigner la géographie et l'histoire à ses enfans.

Forms of Phrases upon the different rules of the participle past.

Did the new piece meet with applause?
Will your relations have arrived there in time?
She has given herself fine gowns.
They have brought us beautiful pinks.
He has not succeeded in this stratagem.
The quiet life I have led these ten years has greatly contributed to make me forget my misfortunes.
The letters I have received have afflicted me greatly.
What a deal of trouble you have given yourself!
What a task you have imposed on yourself!
It is a satire that I have again met with in my papers.
The letters which the younger Pliny has written, however agreeable they may be, savor nevertheless a little of the decline of taste among the Romans.
I would not have entered into these grammatical details with you, had I not thought them necessary.
Egypt had become celebrated for the wisdom of its laws long before Greece had emerged from barbarism.
It is one of the greatest wonders that has ever been seen.
The man of letters you spoke to me of has an excellent taste.
You have instructed your pupils extremely well.
Lucretia killed herself.
The dry weather we had in the spring has destroyed all the fruit.
I have not succeeded, notwithstanding the steps you advised me to take.
What adventures have you met with?
This woman proposed herself as a model for her children.
This woman proposed to teach geography and history to her children.

Modèles de Phrases sur les principaux rapports des modes et des temps.

Je l'attendais depuis long-temps, quand il vint me joindre,
Il sortit au moment même que j'entrais,

Forms of Phrases upon the principal relations of moods and tenses.

I had waited a long time for him, when he came to me.
He was going out at the time I was entering.

Je commençais à avoir des craintes sur la réussite de votre affaire, lorsque j'ai reçu votre lettre,
Dès que j'eus fait quelques visites indispensables, je rentrai chez moi, et je ne sortis plus,
J'avais déjà tout préparé pour mon départ, lorsque des affaires imprevues, m'ont forcé à le différer de quelques jours,

Vous étiez déjà sorti, quand je me présentai chez vous,
J'avais déjà livré à l'impression mon ouvrage, lorsque vous me demandiez, si je le donnerais bientôt au public,
Lorsque j'ai eu terminé mon affaire vous avez commencé la vôtre,
Lorsque j'eus déjeûné je montai à cheval, et je fus à Londres,
Lorsque j'aurai lu la nouvelle pièce, je vous dirai avec franchise ce que j'en pense.
Iriez-vous à Rome si vous le pouviez?—Oui, j'irais,
Auriez-vous consenti à ces conditions, si on vous les avait proposées?
Irez-vous demain à Londres, si vous le pouvez?—Oui, j'irai,
Il sera sûrement parti, si vous l'avez voulu,
Vous eussiez laissé échapper une occasion si favorable, si l'on ne vous eût averti à temps,

I was beginning to be apprehensive of the success of your business when I received your letter.
As soon as I had paid some indispensable visits, I went home, and did not go out afterwards.
I had already made every preparation for my departure, when some unexpected business occurred that obliged me to defer it for some days.
You were already gone out when I called upon you.
My work had been sent to be printed when you asked me if I should soon bring it out.
When my business was over, you began yours.
When I had done breakfast, I got on horseback, and went to London.
When I have read the new piece, I will candidly give you my opinion of it.
Would you go to Rome if it were in your power?—Yes, I would.
Would you have agreed to those terms, had they been proposed to you?
Shall you go to London to-morrow, if you can?—Yes, I shall. [wished it.
He will certainly have set out, if you
You would have let so favorable an opportunity slip, had you not been warned in time.

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

On dit que vous partez aujourd'hui pour Paris,
Tout le monde soutient que vous accepterez la place qu'on vous offre,
On soupçonne que vous aviez hier reçu cette agréable nouvelle quand on vous rencontra,
Beaucoup de vos amis croient que vous partites hier pour la campagne,
Le bruit se répand que vous avez fait une grosse perte,
J'apprends dans l'instant que vous fussiez parti il y a trois jours, si des engagemens, que vous aviez contractés depuis long-temps, ne vous avaient retenu,
N'est-il pas vrai que vous partiriez aujourd'hui, si vous le pouviez?
Est-il vrai que vous seriez parti depuis long-temps pour la campagne, si votre amour pour les arts ne vous avait retenu à la ville?
Je ne crois pas que vous partiez, quoique tout le monde l'assure,
Je ne croyais pas qu'il fût si-tôt de retour,
Il a fallu qu'il ait eu affaire à bien des personnes,
Je doute que votre ami fût venu à bout de ses projets, s'il n'avait pas été fortement protégé,
Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne fût très-mortifié, s'il savait tout ce qu'on pense de lui,

Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les affaires pussent si mal tourner,

The same Phrases continued

It is said that you set off to-day for Paris.

Every one maintains that you will accept of the place that is offered to you.
It is suspected that you had received this agreeable intelligence when you were met yesterday.
Many of your friends believe that you set out yesterday for the country.
There is a report that you have met with a considerable loss.
I have this moment learned that you would have set out three days since, had not engagements which you had formed long ago detained you.
Is it not true that you would set out to-day if you could?
Is it true that you would have set out for the country long since, had not your love for the arts detained you in town?

I do not imagine that you will set out, although every body asserts it.
I did not believe he had gone back so soon.
He must have had business with a great many persons.
I doubt that your friend would have succeeded in his plan, had he not been strongly patronized.
There is not a man, whatever merit he may possess, that would not be very much mortified were he to know every thing that is thought of him.
You never persuaded yourself that matters could have taken so unfortunate a turn.

Modèles de Phrases sur la négative NE.

Il n'y a pas beaucoup d'argent chez ces gens de lettres,

Forms of Phrases upon the negative NE.

There is not much money to be found among men of letters.

Il n'y a point de ressource dans une personne qui n'a point d'esprit,
C'est à tort que vous l'accusez de jouer, je vous assure qu'il ne joue point,
Entrez dans le salon; vous pourrez lui parler; il ne joue pas,
Si pour avoir du bien, il en coûte à la probité, je n'en veux point,
Rien n'est sûr avec les capricieux; vous croyez être bien en faveur, point du tout; l'instant de la plus belle humeur est suivi de la plus fâcheuse,
Vous ne cessez de nous répéter les mêmes choses,
Je n'aurais osé vous en parler le premier,
Malgré ses protections, il n'a pu réussir dans ses projets,
Cet ouvrage serait fort bon, n'était pour la négligence du style,
Y a-t-il quelqu'un dont elle ne médise,
J'ai pris tant de goût pour une vie retirée, que je ne sors presque jamais.
Voilà ce qui s'est passé; n'en parlez à personne,
Mon parti est pris; ne m'en parlez plus,
N'employez aucun de ces moyens: ils sont indignes de vous,
Rien n'est plus joli,
Je ne dis rien que je ne pense,
Je ne fais jamais d'excès que je n'en sois incommodé,

There are no resources in a person without sense.
You accuse him wrongfully of gaming: I assure you he never games.
Go into the room, you may speak to him: he is not playing.
I do not wish to make a fortune, if it can only be done at the expense of honesty.
Nothing is certain with capricious people, you think yourself in favor, by no means; the moment of the best humor is followed by that of the worst.
You are constantly repeating the same thing to us. [*speak to you of it.*
I should not have dared to be the first to
With all his interest, he has not been able to succeed in his plans.
This work would be very good, were it not for the negligence of the style.
Is there any one she does not slander?
I have acquired so great a taste for retirement that I seldom go abroad.
This is what has passed; do not speak of it to any one. [*of it.*
My resolution is fixed; talk to me no more
Do not employ any one of these measures; they are unworthy of you.
Nothing is more beautiful.
I never speak but what I think.
I never commit any excess without suffering by it.

Continuation des mêmes Phrases.

C'est un homme pour qui je n'ai ni amour, ni estime,
Il n'est ni assez prudent ni assez éclairé,
Je vous assure que je ne le fréquente ni ne le vois,
Ne faire que parcourir les différentes branches des connaissances humaines sans s'arrêter à aucune, c'est moins chercher à s'instruire, qu'à tuer le temps,
Que n'êtes-vous toujours aussi complaisant?
Il ne le fera pas, à moins que vous ne l'y engagiez,
Il n'ira pas, si vous ne l'en priez,
Il nous a menacés de se venger; nous n'avons fait qu'en rire,
Trop d'insouciance ne peut que nuire,
Que devenez-vous? il y a trois mois que nous ne vous avons vu?
Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que nous ne vous avons vu?
C'est bien pire qu'on ne le disait,
Peu s'en faut que je n'aie donné tête baissée dans le piége,
Dites la vérité en toute occasion; on méprise toujours ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils ne pensent,
Ne désespérez pas que la vérité ne se fasse jour à la longue, [ainsi,
Je ne disconviens pas que la chose ne soit
Prenez garde qu'on ne vous entraîne dans quelque fausse démarche,
J'empêcherai bien qu'on ne vous nuise dans cette affaire,
Il craint qu'on ne le soupçonne d'avoir trempé dans ce complot,
On lui a donné d'excellens conseils, de crainte qu'il ne manquât l'occasion de faire connaître ce qu'il est en état de faire.

Continuation of the same Phrases.

He is a man for whom I have neither love nor esteem. [*lightened.*
He is neither sufficiently prudent nor enI assure you I neither associate with him nor see him.
To go through the different branches of human knowledge only, without fixing upon any one of them, is not to seek for instruction, but to kill time.
Why are you not at all times equally complaisant?
He will not do it unless you persuade him to it. [*him.*
He will not go, if you do not request it of
He has threatened us with vengeance: we only laughed at him.
Too great supineness cannot but be hurtful.
What had become of you? we have not seen you these three months.
How have you been since we saw you?
It is much worse than was said.
I was near running headlong into the snare.
Tell the truth on all occasions: those who speak what they do not think are always despised.
Do not despair that truth will appear in time.
I admit that it is so.
Take care that you are not led into some false step.
I shall prevent them from doing you any harm in this business.
He is apprehensive that he is suspected of being concerned in this plot.
They have given him excellent advice, lest he should lose the opportunity of showing what he was capable of doing.

J'y ai long-temps travaillé; je ne saurais en venir à bout,
Vous feriez mieux de vous taire; vous ne savez ce que vous dites, [plaisir,
Vous ne sauriez me faire un plus grand

I have been long employed about it; I cannot accomplish it.
You had better be silent; you do not know what you are saying.
You cannot do me a greater favor.

Phrases sur quelques Délicatesses de la Langue Française.

Irez-vous ce soir à l'opéra?—Oui, j'irai,

Iriez-vous avec plaisir à Rome?—Oui, j'irais,
La justice qui nous est quelquefois refusée par nos contemporains, la postérité sait nous la rendre,
Cette grandeur qui vous étonne si fort, il la doit à votre nonchalance,
Il périt, ce héros, si cher à son pays,
Je l'avais bien prévu que ce haut degré de grandeur serait la cause de sa ruine,
Citoyens, étrangers, ennemis, peuples, rois, empereurs, le plaignent et le révèrent,
L'assemblée finie, chacun se retira chez soi,
Heureux le peuple qu'un sage roi gouverne,
Il refusa les plus grands honneurs, content de les mériter,
Prières, remontrances, commandemens, tout est inutile,
Le vent renverse tours, cabanes, palais, églises,
Notre réputation ne dépend pas du caprice des hommes; mais elle dépend des actions louables que nous fesons,
Il y a beaucoup de choses qu'il n'importe point du tout de savoir,
La vue de l'esprit a plus d'étendue que la vue du corps,
Ce qui sert à la vanité, n'est que vanité,
Tout ce qui n'a que le monde pour fondement, se dissipe et s'évanouit avec le monde,
C'est le privilége des grands hommes de vaincre l'envie; le mérite la fait naître, le mérite la fait mourir,
L'amour-propre est plus habile que le plus habile homme du monde,
En quittant le monde, on ne quitte le plus souvent ni les erreurs, ni les folles passions du monde.

Phrases on some Delicacies of the French Language.

Shall you go to the opera this evening?—Yes, I shall.
Would you cheerfully go to Rome?—Yes, I would.
Posterity knows how to do us that justice which is sometimes refused us by our contemporaries.
That greatness which so much astonishes you, he owes to your indifference.
That hero, so dear to his country, perished.
I foresaw that the greatness of his elevation would be his ruin.
Citizens, strangers, enemies, nations, kings, emperors, pity and respect him.
The assembly being over, each returned home. [*by a wise king.*
Happy are the people who are governed
He refused the greatest honors, satisfied with having deserved them.
Entreaties, remonstrances, injunctions, are all useless.
The wind overturns towers, cottages, palaces, churches.
Our reputation does not depend on the caprice of men, but on the commendable actions we perform.
There are many things which it is of no consequence at all to know.
The eye of the mind reaches much farther than the bodily eye.
What promotes vanity is only vanity.
All that is confined to this lower world disperses and vanishes with the world.

It is the prerogative of great men to conquer envy; merit gives it birth and merit destroys it.
Self-love is more ingenious than the most ingenious man in the world.
In renouncing the world, we generally renounce neither the errors nor giddy passions of the world.

THE END

Of Verbs.

1 A verb is a word which expresses what is affirmed of persons, animals, things, etc.

2. *Or, as it is more commonly defined*, a verb is a word, or that part of speech which signifies *to do*, *to be*, or *to suffer*.

3. When we say *John is polite*, we affirm that the quality *polite*, belongs to *John*. When we say *John is not polite*, we also affirm that the quality *polite*, does not belong to *John*—in both sentences, the word *is*, which expresses that affirmation, is a verb.

Of the different sorts of French Verbs.

4. There are in French seven sorts of verbs:—the auxiliary verb—the active verb—the neuter verb—the passive verb—the reflected verb—the reciprocal verb—and the unipersonal, or impersonal verb.

Of Auxiliary Verbs.

5. A verb is *auxiliary* when it serves to conjugate some of the tenses of other verbs.

6. In French there are but two auxiliary verbs, *Avoir* to have, and *Etre* to be.

7. *Avoir*, is sometimes an auxiliary verb, and sometimes an irregular active verb of the third conjugation.

8. *Avoir* to have, is an auxiliary verb whenever it is used to conjugate the compound tenses of another verb, as: *vous avez parlé* you have spoken, &c. When auxiliary, it is always followed by the participle past of some other verb.

9. *Avoir* to have, is an active verb, whenever it is used to indicate the possession of any thing—as, *vous avez une pomme* you have an apple, &c.

10. *Avoir* to have, is used as an auxiliary verb—1st, to all the active verbs, and 2d, to upward of six hundred neuter verbs.

11. *Etre* to be, is sometimes an auxiliary verb and sometimes an irregular neuter verb of the fourth conjugation. It is also called substantive verb.

12. *Etre* to be, is an auxiliary verb, whenever it is used to conjugate the compound tenses of another verb—as, *je suis frappé* I am struck, &c. When auxiliary it is always followed by the participle past of some other verb.

13. *Etre* to be, is a neuter verb whenever it is used to indicate the state of any person or thing—as, *je suis ici* I am here—*cette table est ronde* this table is round, &c.

14. *Etre* to be, is used as an auxiliary verb—1st, To a few neuter verbs, the list of which may be found in page 160.—2d, To all the passive verbs—and 3d, To all the reflected and reciprocal verbs, although these two last kinds of verbs are conjugated with *to have* in English

Of Active Verbs.

15. A verb is *active* in French when it expresses that an agent called nominative, or subject, performs an action on an object, or regimen, without the help of a preposition—as, *Jean frappe Joseph* John strikes Joseph, &c.

Of Neuter Verbs.

16. A verb is *neuter* in French—1st, When it expresses that an agent called nominative, or subject, performs an action, that either is, or can be directed towards an object or regimen, with the help of a preposition—as, *Jean parle à Joseph* John speaks to Joseph. 2d, When it expresses the state, situation, or manner of being, or existing, of the nominative or subject—as, *je dors* I sleep—*Jean est ici* John is here, &c.

17. Note—The words *active* and *neuter*, applied to verbs, do not mean that an active verb expresses action, and that a neuter verb expresses inaction. For *chanter* to sing, which is an active verb, does not express so much action as *courir* to run, which is a neuter verb. It means that the verbs called active, are those after which *une personne* a person—or *une chose* a thing; can be put as an object or regimen, without a preposition—as, *frapper une personne* to strike a person—*frapper une chose* to strike a thing; whereas the verbs called *neuter*, are those after which *une personne* a person—or *une chose* a thing; cannot be put as an object or regimen without a preposition, being either expressed or understood—as, *courir à une personne* to run to a person; in English the preposition is often understood—as, *to run an hour* meaning *to run during an hour*. Some neuter verbs, those that express the state of the nominative, or subject, admit of no object or regimen, either with or without a preposition—as, *je dors* I sleep—*je suis* I am. The best division of verbs, I think, is that of Mr. Noah Webster, in his Dictionary, who divides them into transitive and intransitive; but I could not for the French adopt this division, which would confuse the pupil, whose French Dictionary would not be on that plan.

Of Passive Verbs.

18. A verb is *passive* in French, when it indicates that the nominative, or subject, bears the effect of another's action—as, *Jean fut frappé par Joseph* John was struck by Joseph—*Jean fut tué par une balle* John was killed by a ball.

19. The passive verbs in French, as in English, are formed with the help of the different tenses and persons of the auxiliary verb, *Etre* to be; to which is joined the participle past, of the verb to be conjugated—as, *je suis frappé* I am struck—*il sera vendu* it will be sold, &c.

20. All the French active verbs may be employed in the passive voice, except *avoir* to have.

21. In French the passive voice of verbs is but very seldom used, we generally make use of the active voice; for instance, instead of saying *Jean fut frappé par Joseph* John was struck by Joseph—we would more readily say, *Joseph frappa Jean* Joseph struck John, &c.

22. Properly speaking, there are no passive verbs in French; for *être frappé* to be struck—*je suis frappé* I am struck; is no more a passive verb than *être malade* to be sick—*je suis malade* I am sick, &c.

Of Reflected Verbs.

23. A verb is *reflected* when it expresses an action which falls on the nominative, or subject—as, *je me flatte* I flatter myself, &c.

Of Reciprocal Verbs.

24. A verb is *reciprocal* when it expresses that two or more nominatives, or subjects act upon each other—as, *Jean et Joseph s'aiment* John and Joseph love one another—*Jean, Joseph, et Paul s'aiment* John, Joseph, and Paul love each other, &c.

Of Unipersonal or Impersonal Verbs.

25. A verb is *unipersonal* or *impersonal* when it expresses what happens—as, *il pleut* it rains—*il arriva* it happened, &c.

26. They are called by some *unipersonal*, because they are only used in one person; the third person singular.

27. They are called by others *impersonal*, because the acts indicated by them, are attributed to no person.

Division of the Verbs.

28. The above seven different sorts of verbs, are divided into regular, and irregular, perfect, and defective verbs.

Of Regular Verbs.

29. *Regular Verbs* are those whose tenses are conjugated in a uniform manner, according to some general standard.

Of Irregular Verbs.

30. *Irregular Verbs* are those which deviate, in the conjugation of their tenses, from the general standard, given for the conjugation of regular verbs.

Of Perfect Verbs.

31. *Perfect Verbs* have all their moods, tenses, and persons.

Of Defective Verbs.

32. *Defective Verbs* are those which want some of their moods, tenses, or persons.

Conjugation of Verbs.

33. To *conjugate a verb*, is to write or rehearse it, with all its different inflections, through every *mood*, *tense*, *number*, and *person*.

Of Moods.

34. *Mood*, signifies manner. We call moods the different manners of using a verb, in order to express the different ways in which an action is performed, or suffered.

35. A *verb* may be used in French in five different manners, namely, in an *indefinite*, *positive*, *conditional*, *imperative*, and *subordinate* manner ; which constitute five moods in verbs, called the *infinitive mood*, the *indicative mood*, the *conditional mood*, the *imperative mood*, and the *subjunctive mood*.

36. The *Infinitive mood*, is so called, because it expresses an action in an *indefinite* manner, without any reference to number or person—as, *chanter* to sing—*punir* to punish.

37. The *Indicative mood*, affirms in a direct, positive, and absolute manner, that a thing is or is not, without depending on any other word, whatever may be the time to which the affirmative relates—as, *je connais ces dames* I know these ladies—*j'ai vu ces dames* I have seen these ladies—*je ne porterai pas ce livre* I will not carry this book, &c.

38. The *Conditional mood*, denotes that a thing or an action would take place, or would have taken place, depending on a condition—as, *je vous rendrais service si je le pouvais* I would render you service if I could—*je vous aurais rendu service si je l'avais pu* I would have rendered you service if I had been able, &c.

39. The *Imperative mood*, is used for either commanding, exhorting, entreating, or permitting—as, *venez ici* come here—*faites cela* do that—*permettez-moi de sortir* allow me to go out, &c.

40. The *Subjunctive mood*, represents a person or a thing, under a condition, motive, wish, or supposition, and is dependant on a conjunction—as, *je souhaite qu'il vienne* I wish (*that*) he may come, &c. In English the conjunction is often understood.

Of Tenses.

41. *Tenses* indicate whether an action, is doing, has been done, or will be done: hence three tenses, the *present*, the

past, and the *future*. These tenses have been subdivided, to mark their difference with accuracy.

42. The tenses of verbs are divided into simple and compound.

43. *Simple tenses* are those which are conjugated without the help of either the auxiliary, *Avoir* to have, or *Etre* to be.

44. *Compound tenses*, (which have also other names, which indicate more clearly their use,) are those which are formed with the help of either the auxiliary, *Avoir* to have, or *Etre* to be; to which the past participle of the verb to be conjugated, is joined.

Names and Number of Tenses in each Mood.

45. The *Infinitive mood* has five tenses;
The present, (*which is the root of the verb*,)
The past or perfect, (*or compound of the present*,)
The participle present or active,
The compound of the participle present, and
The participle past or passive.

46. The *Indicative mood* has eight tenses;
The present,
The perfect or preterit indefinite, (*or compound of the present*,)
The imperfect,
The pluperfect, (*or compound of the imperfect*,)
The preterit definite,
The preterit anterior, (*or compound of the preterit definite*,)
The future absolute, and
The future anterior, (*or compound of the future absolute.*)

47. The *Conditional mood* has two tenses;
The present, and
The past, (*or compound of the present.*)

48. The *Imperative mood* has but one tense, which is at once *present* and *future*. *Present* with respect to the action of commanding, and *future* with respect to the thing enjoined.

49. The *Subjunctive mood* has four tenses;
The present or future,
The preterit or past, (*or compound of the present*,)
The imperfect, and
The pluperfect, (*or compound of the imperfect.*)

Of Numbers.

50. Number, is the form which verbs assume, to denote their agreement with their nominatives.

51. There are *two numbers* in every tense: the *singular*, which is employed when only one thing, or one person is mentioned—as, *la maison tombe* the house is falling—*Joseph parle* Joseph speaks. And the *plural*, which is employed when more than one thing, or more than one person are mentioned—as, *les maisons tombent* the houses are falling—*Joseph et Jean parlent* Joseph and John speak.

Of Persons.

52. Each number has three persons.

First Person.

53. The first person is the *person who speaks*, or the *persons who speak;* it is designated by *je* I, in the singular—as, *je pense* I think · and by *nous* we, in the plural—as, *nous pensons* we think.

Second Person.

54. The second person is the *person spoken to*, or the *persons spoken to;* it is expressed by *tu* thou, for the singular—as, *tu penses* thou thinkest; and by *vous* you, for the plural—as, *vous pensez* you think.

55. When in speaking to *one* person, we wish to be polite and respectful; custom has established in modern languages that the second person plural be used instead of the second person singular: thus, for instance, a person speaking to Mr. A..., instead of saying *tu es ici* thou art here—will say *vous êtes ici* you are here; as he would if he was speaking to several persons

56. When one person only is spoken to, if an adjective comes after the verb, that adjective is put in the singular, although, through politeness and custom, the verb be in the plural: thus in speaking to Mr. A..., I shall say *vous êtes fort* you are strong—whereas in speaking to several persons, the adjective will be in the plural; speaking to Messrs A... and B..., I shall say *vous êtes forts* you are strong.

57. When in addressing ourselves to a person, politeness or respect induces us to use a dignifying expression, instead of a personal pronoun of the second person, the verb as well as what relates to that expression, is put in the third person: for instance, instead of saying *Monsieur avez-vous eu la bonté de penser à ce que vous m'avez promis*, we say *Monsieur a-t-il eu la bonté de penser à ce qu'il m'a promis?* Have you been so kind, Sir, as to think of what you promised me? The literal translation of the French is: Sir has he had the goodness to think to what he has promised me.

Third Person.

58. The third person, is the *person spoken of* or *the persons spoken of;* it is expressed by *il* he or it; or *elle* she or it, for the singular, or by any noun in the singular—as, *il parle* he speaks —*elle parle* she speaks—*l'homme parle* man speaks. And by *ils* they—*elles* they, or any noun in the plural—as, *ils parlent* they speak—*elles parlent* they speak—*les hommes parlent* men speak.

Different Ways of Conjugating Verbs.

59. There are four ways of conjugating verbs:—1st, *Affirmatively;* 2d, *Negatively;* 3d, *Interrogatively;* 4th, *Negatively and Interrogatively.*

First Way.

60. *Affirmatively.* When verbs are preceded by their nominatives or subjects, and used without any negation, they are said to be conjugated *affirmatively*—as, *je parle* I speak—*tu parles* thou speakest, &c.

Second Way.

61. *Negatively.* Verbs are conjugated *negatively*, by placing *ne* immediately after the nominative or subject of the verb; and *pas* after the verb, in simple tenses—as, *je ne parle pas* I speak not, &c. In compound tenses, *ne* is placed as in the simple tenses, after the nominative or subject of the verb; but *pas* is placed between the auxiliary and the participle past, of the verb—as, *je n'ai pas parlé* I have not spoken. *Ne* and *pas* are generally placed together, before the infinitive present—as, *ne pas parler* not to speak; however a few writers place *ne* before the infinitive present, and *pas* after; *ne parler pas* not to speak.

Third Way.

62. *Interrogatively.* Verbs are conjugated *interrogatively* in French, by placing the pronoun, which is the nominative or subject of the verb, after the verb, in simple tenses; the pronoun must be joined to the verb by a hyphen—as, *parlé-je* do I speak—*parles-tu* dost thou speak—*parle-t-il* does he speak, &c. In compound tenses, the pronoun must be placed after the auxiliary, that is, between the auxiliary and the participle past of the verb; the pronoun must also be joined to the auxiliary by a hyphen—as, *ai-je parlé* have I spoken—*as tu parlé* hast thou spoken—*a-t-il parlé* has he spoken, &c.

63. When a noun instead of a personal pronoun is the nominative of the verb, in the interrogative sentence, this noun, subject of the question, is placed before the verb; and either of the pronouns *il*, *elle*, *ils*, or *elles*, according to the gender and number of the noun, is added and placed after the verb in simple tenses, joined to it by a hyphen; and in compound tenses, after the auxiliary, joined to it by a hyphen.

Example in Simple Tenses.

Mon frère sait-il ? My brother knows he?
Meaning Does my brother know?

Example in Compound Tenses.

Mes frères avaient-ils chanté ? My brothers had they sung?
Meaning Had my brothers sung?

Observations.

64. 1st, The first person of the present of the indicative mood, ending with *e* mute, (see page 44 ,) in all the verbs of the first conjugation, and in about fifteen of the irregular verbs of the second, we are obliged, to avoid a disagreeable sound, to put an *acute accent* on the *e* mute, when used *interrogatively*—as, *je parle* I speak—*parlé-je* do I speak—*j'ouvre* I open—*ouvré-je* do I open, &c.

65. 2d, When the first person singular of the present of the indicative, of any verb, has only one syllable, we cannot use it *interrogatively;* thus, we cannot say, *vends-je* do I sell—*prends-je* do I take, &c. We have recourse to a different expression, we say, *est-ce que je vends* do I sell—*est-ce que je prends* do I take, &c. The only exceptions that custom authorises—are, *fais-je* do I do—*dis-je* do I say—*dois-je* do I owe—*vois-je* do I see—*ai-je* have I—and *vais-je* do I go.

66. 3d, When the third person singular of any tense, ends with *e* or *a*, we are obliged, to avoid a disagreeable sound, to put a *t* between two hyphens: thus, *-t-*, between the verb and the pronoun, *il* or *elle*—as, *a-t-il* has he—*a-t-elle* has she—*parle-t-il* does he speak—*parle-t-elle* does she speak, &c.

67. 4th, The imperative mood, and the subjunctive mood, cannot be used *interrogatively;* we however, can say, in the present of the subjunctive, *puissé-je* may I; and in the imperfect of the subjunctive, *dussé-je* were I obliged to.

Fourth Way.

68. *Negatively and Interrogatively.* Verbs are conjugated negatively and interrogatively, in French, by placing in simple tenses *ne* before the verb, the subject or nominative pronoun, after the verb, joined to it by a hyphen, and *pas* after the pronoun—as, *ne parlé-je pas ?* do I not speak? &c. And in compound tenses, by placing *ne* before the verb, the subject or nominative pronoun, after the auxiliary; and *pas* after the pronoun; then comes the participle past of the verb, to be conjugated, which comes last, *n'ai-je pas parlé ?* have I not spoken? &c.

69. When a noun instead of a personal pronoun, is the nominative of the verb, in a sentence both negative and interrogative, this noun, subject of the question, is placed before the verb, and either of the pronouns, *il*, *elle*, *ils*, or *elles*, is added, and placed after the verb in simple tenses, joined to it by a hyphen; and in compound tenses, after the auxiliary, joined to it by a hyphen.

Example in Simple Tenses.

Ma sœur ne sait-elle pas? My sister knows she not?
Meaning Does not my sister know?

Example in Compound Tenses.

Mes sœurs n'avaient-elles pas chanté? My sisters had they not sung?
Meaning Had not my sisters sung?

70. The four observations made with regard to the conjugation of verbs interrogatively, apply also to verbs conjugated both negatively and interrogatively.

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verbs.

71. The auxiliary verbs *avoir* to have, and *être* to be, being used in the formation of the compound tenses of all the other verbs, it will be proper to begin by their conjugation.

72. *Avoir* to have, is employed as an auxiliary, to conjugate its own compound tenses—so that any compound tenses of *avoir* to have, is one of its simple tenses, to which the participle past has been added; thus the preterit indefinite, (*or compound of the present*,) is formed with the present indicative, *j'ai* I have, to which the participle past, *eu* had, is added—*j'ai eu* I have had—*tu as eu* thou hast had, &c.; and so on of the other compound tenses.

73 The compound tenses of *être* to be, are formed with the help of *avoir* to have, so that any compound tense of *être* to be, is composed of a simple tense of *avoir* to have, to which the participle past of *être* to be, is added; thus the preterit indefinite, (*or compound of the present*,) is formed with the present indicative, *j'ai* I have, of *avoir* to have, to which the participle past, *été* been, of *être* to be, is added; *j'ai été* I have been—*tu as été* thou hast been, &c.; and so on, of the other compound tenses.

74. Observe that the terminations of the imperfects, and of the conditionals, which are now generally spelt *ais*, *ais*, *ait*, *ient*, in all verbs, were formerly, and are still now, by a few writers, spelt *ois*, *ois*, *oit*, *oient*. Both ways are pronounced alike, but the new spelling is nearer the pronunciation than the old one.

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]st. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too, fool.

†CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR *to have.* (*Affirmatively.*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
avoir	*to have*	a voir
-B-	PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*	
avoir eu	*to have had*	a voi ru
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.	
ayant	*having*	é yan
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
ayant eu	*having had*	é yan tu
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PERFECT *or* PASSIVE.	
eu, *m. s.* eue, *f. s.* eus, *m. p.* eues, *f. p.*	*had*	u

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
J'ai	*I have*	jé
tu as	*thou hast*	tu a
il a	*he has*	i la
nous avons	*we have*	nou za von
vous avez	*you have*	vou za vé
ils ont	*they have*	il zon
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*	
J'ai eu	*I have had*	jé u
tu as eu	*thou hast had*	tu a zu
il a eu	*he has had*	i la u
nous avons eu	*we have had*	nou za von zu
vous avez eu	*you have had*	vou za vé zu
ils ont eu	*they have had*	il zon tu
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
J'avais	*I had*	ja vè
tu avais	*thou hadst*	tu a vè
il avait	*he had*	i la vè
nous avions	*we had*	nou za vi on
vous aviez	*you had*	vou za vi é
ils avaient	*they had*	il za vè
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*	
J'avais eu	*I had had*	ja vè zu
tu avais eu	*thou hadst had*	tu a vè zu
il avait eu	*he had had*	i la vè tu
nous avions eu	*we had had*	nou za vi on zu
vous aviez eu	*you had had*	vou za vi é zu
ils avaient eu	*they had had*	il za vè tu

†See page 1, art. 7.

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. boite. boîte. *ancre, ingrat. onde. un,* amen. [4]*j,* as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn,* as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill,* as *lli,* in Wi*lli*am.

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

J'eus	*I had*	ju
tu eus	*thou hadst*	tu u
il eut	*he had*	i lu
nous eûmes	*we had*	nou zum
vous eûtes	*you had*	vou zut
ils eurent	*they had*	il zur

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

J'eus eu	*I had had*	ju zu
tu eus eu	*thou hadst had*	tu u zu
il eut eu	*he had had*	i lu tu
nous eûmes eu	*we had had*	nou zum zu
vous eûtes eu	*you had had*	vou zut zu
ils eurent eu	*they had had*	il zur tu

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

J'aurai	*I shall* or *will have*	jo ré
tu auras	*thou shalt* or *wilt have*	tu o râ
il aura	*he shall* or *will have*	i lo ra
nous aurons	*we shall* or *will have*	nou zo ron
vous aurez	*you shall* or *will have*	vou zo ré
ils auront	*they shall* or *will have*	il zo ron

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

J'aurai eu	*I shall* or *will have had*	jo ré u
tu auras eu	*thou shalt* or *wilt have had*	tu o râ zu
il aura eu	*he shall* or *will have had*	i lo ra u
nous aurons eu	*we shall* or *will have had*	nou zo ron zu
vous aurez eu	*you shall* or *will have had*	vou zo ré zu
ils auront eu	*they shall* or *will have had*	il zo ron tu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

J'aurais	*I should, would, could,* or *might have*	jo rè
tu aurais	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst have*	tu o rè
il aurait	*he should, would, could,* or *might have*	i lo rè
nous aurions	*we should, would, could,* or *might have*	nou zo ri on
vous auriez	*you should, would, could,* or *might have*	vou zo ri é
ils auraient	*they should, would, could,* or *might have*	il zo rè

[1]*ami.* *âne.* *te.* *écrit.* *mère.* *être.* *idole.* *gîte.* *opéra.* *ôter.* *tout.* *voûte.*
[2]*at.* *arm.* *tub.* *ale.* *mare.* *there.* *idiom.* *eel.* *opera.* *over.* *too.* *fool.*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

J'aurais eu,	*I should, would, could,*	jo rè zu
or *j'eusse eu*	or *might have had*	*jus u*
tu aurais eu,	*thou shouldst, wouldst,*	tu o rè zu
or *tu eusses eu*	*couldst,* or *mightst have had*	*tu us zu*
il aurait eu,	*he should, would, could,*	i lo rè tu
or *il eût eu*	or *might have had*	*i lu tu*
nous aurions eu,	*we should, would, could,*	nou zo ri on zu
or *nous eussions eu*	or *might have had*	*nou zu si on zu*
vous auriez eu,	*you should, would, could,*	vou zo ri é zu
or *vous eussiez eu*	or *might have had*	*vou zu si é zu*
ils auraient eu,	*they should, would, could,*	il zo rè tu
or *ils eussent eu*	or *might have had*	*il zus tu*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

aie	*have (thou)*	è
qu'il ait	*let him have*	ki lè
ayons	*let us have*	é yon
ayez	*have (you)*	é yé
qu'ils aient	*let them have*	kil zè

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que j'aie	*that I may have*	ke jè
que tu aies	*that thou mayst have*	ke tu è
qu'il ait	*that he may have*	ki lè
que nous ayons	*that we may have*	ke nou zé yon
que vous ayez	*that you may have*	ke vou zé yé
qu'ils aient	*that they may have*	kil zè

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que j'aie eu	*that I may have had*	ke jè u
que tu aies eu	*that thou mayst have had*	ke tu è zu
qu'il ait eu	*that he may have had*	ki lè tu
que nous ayons eu	*that we may have had*	ke nou zé yon zu
que vous ayez eu	*that you may have had*	ke vou zé yé zu
qu'ils aient eu	*that they may have had*	kil zè tu

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que j'eusse	*that I might have*	ke jus
que tu eusses	*that thou mightst have*	ke tu us
qu'il eût	*that he might have*	ki lu
que nous eussions	*that we might have*	ke nou zu si on
que vous eussiez	*that you might have*	ke vou zu si é
qu'ils eussent	*that they might have*	kil zus

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse eu	*that I might have had*	ke jus u
que tu eusses eu	*that thou mightst have had*	ke tu us zu
qu'il eût eu	*that he might have had*	ki lu tu
que nous eussions eu	*that we might have had*	ke nou zu si on zu
que vous eussiez eu	*that you might have had*	ke vou zu si é zu
qu'ils eussent eu	*that they might have had*	kil zus tu

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
[4]j, as *s* in pleasure. *gn*, as ni in union. *ill*, as *lli*, in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR *to have* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

ne pas avoir	*not to have*	ne pâ za voir

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

n'avoir pas eu	*not to have had*	na voir pâ zu

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.

n'ayant pas	*not having*	né yan pâ

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

n'ayant pas eu	*having not had*	né yan pâ zu

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je n'ai pas	*I have not*	je né pâ
tu n'as pas	*thou hast not*	tu nâ pâ
il n'a pas	*he has not*	il na pâ
nous n'avons pas	*we have not*	nou na von pâ
vous n'avez pas	*you have not*	vou na vé pâ
ils n'ont pas	*they have not*	il non pâ

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Je n'ai pas eu	*I have not had*	je né pâ zu
tu n'as pas eu	*thou hast not had*	tu nâ pâ zu
il n'a pas eu	*he has not had*	il na pâ zu
nous n'avons pas eu	*we have not had*	nou na von pâ zu
vous n'avez pas eu	*you have not had*	vou na vé pâ zu
ils n'ont pas eu	*they have not had*	il non pâ zu

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je n'avais pas	*I had not*	je na vè pâ
tu n'avais pas	*thou hadst not*	tu na vè pâ
il n'avait pas	*he had not*	il na vè pâ
nous n'avions pas	*we had not*	nou na vi on pâ
vous n'aviez pas	*you had not*	vou na vi é pâ
ils n'avaient pas	*they had not*	il na vè pâ

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Je n'avais pas eu	*I had not had*	je na vè pâ zu
tu n'avais pas eu	*thou hadst not had*	tu na vè pâ zu
il n'avait pas eu	*he had not had*	il na vè pâ zu
nous n'avions pas eu	*we had not had*	nou na vi on pâ zu
vous n'aviez pas eu	*you had not had*	vou na vi é pâ zu
ils n'avaient pas eu	*they had not had*	il na vè pâ zu

[1]*ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.*
[2]*at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too, fool.*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je n'eus pas	*I had not*	je nu pâ
tu n'eus pas	*thou hadst not*	tu nu pâ
il n'eut pas	*he had not*	il nu pâ
nous n'eûmes pas	*we had not*	nou num pâ
vous n'eûtes pas	*you had not*	vou nut pâ
ils n'eurent pas	*they had not*	il nur pâ

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas eu	*I had not had*	je nu pâ zu
tu n'eus pas eu	*thou hadst not had*	tu nu pâ zu
il n'eut pas eu	*he had not had*	il nu pâ zu
nous n'eûmes pas eu	*we had not had*	nou num pâ zu
vous n'eûtes pas eu	*you had not had*	vou nut pâ zu
ils n'eurent pas eu	*they had not had*	il nur pâ zu

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je n'aurai pas	*I shall* or *will not have*	je nơ ré pâ
tu n'auras pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have*	tu no râ pâ
il n'aura pas	*he shall* or *will not have*	il no ra pâ
nous n'aurons pas	*we shall* or *will not have*	nou no ron pâ
vous n'aurez pas	*you shall* or *will not have*	vou no ré pâ
ils n'auront pas	*they shall* or *will not have*	il no ron pâ

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas eu	*I shall* or *will not have had*	je no ré pâ zu
tu n'auras pas eu	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have had*	tu no râ pâ zu
il n'aura pas eu	*he shall* or *will not have had*	il no ra pâ zu
nous n'aurons pas eu	*we shall* or *will not have had*	nou no ron pâ zu
vous n'aurez pas eu	*you shall* or *will not have had*	vou no ré pâ zu
ils n'auront pas eu	*they shall* or *will not have had*	il no ron pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je n'aurais pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might not have*	je no rè pâ
tu n'aurais pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst not have*	tu no rè pâ
il n'aurait pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might not have*	il no rè pâ
nous n'aurions pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might not have*	nou no ri on pâ
vous n'auriez pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might not have*	vou no ri é pâ
ils n'auraient pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might not have*	il no rè pâ

[3]mur mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas eu,	*I should, would, could,*	je no rè pâ zu
or *je n'eusse pas eu*	or *might not have had*	*je nus pâ zu*
tu n'aurais pas eu,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*	tu no rè pâ zu
or *tu n'eusses pas eu*	or *mightst not have had*	*tu nus pâ zu*
il n'aurait pas eu,	*he should, would, could,*	il no rè pâ zu
or *il n'eût pas eu*	or *might not have had*	*il nu pâ zu*
nous n'aurions pas eu,	*we should, would, could,*	nou no ri on pâ zu
or *nous n'eussions pas eu*	or *might not have had*	*nou nu si on pâ zu*
vous n'auriez pas eu,	*you should, would, could,*	vou no ri é pâ zu
or *vous n'eussiez pas eu*	or *might not have had*	*vou nu si é pâ zu*
ils n'auraient pas eu,	*they should, would could,*	il no rè pâ zu
or *ils n'eussent pas eu*	or *might not have had*	*il nus pâ zu*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

n'aie pas	*have not (thou)*	nè pâ
qu'il n'ait pas	*let him not have*	kil nè pâ
n'ayons pas	*let us not have*	né yon pâ
n'ayez pas	*have not (you)*	né yé pâ
qu'ils n'aient pas	*let them not have*	kil nè pâ

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je n'aie pas	*that I may*	*not have*	kej nè pâ
que tu n'aies pas	*that thou mayst*		ke tu nè pâ
qu'il n'ait pas	*that he may*		kil nè pâ
que nous n'ayons pas	*that we may*		ke nou né yon pâ
que vous n'ayez pas	*that you may*		ke vou né yé pâ
qu'ils n'aient pas	*that they may*		kil nè pâ

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que je n'aie pas eu	*that I may*	*not have had*	kej nè pâ zu
que tu n'aies pas eu	*that thou mayst*		ke tu nè pâ zu
qu'il n'ait pas eu	*that he may*		kil nè pâ zu
que nous n'ayons pas eu	*that we may*		ke nou né yon pâ zu
que vous n'ayez pas eu	*that you may*		ke vou né yé pâ zu
qu'ils n'aient pas eu	*that they may*		kil nè pâ zu

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je n'eusse pas	*that I might*	*not have*	kej nus pâ
que tu n'eusses pas	*that thou mightst*		ke tu nus pâ
qu'il n'eût pas	*that he might*		kil nu pâ
que nous n'eussions pas	*that we might*		ke nou nu si on pâ
que vous n'eussiez pas	*that you might*		ke vou nu si é pâ
qu'ils n'eussent pas	*that they might*		kil nus pâ

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas eu	*that I might*	*not have had*	kej nus pa zu
que tu n'eusses pas eu	*that thou mightst*		ke tu nus pâ zu
qu'il n'eût pas eu	*that he might*		kil nu pâ zu
que nous n'eussions pas eu	*that we might*		ke nou nu si on pâ zu
que vous n'eussiez pas eu	*that you might*		ke vou nu si é pâ zu
qu'ils n'eussent pas eu	*that they might*		kil nus pâ zu

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR *to have.* (*Interrogatively.*)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Ai-je	*have I*	éj
as-tu	*hast thou*	â tu
a-t-il	*has he*	a til
avons-nous	*have we*	a von nou
avez-vous	*have you*	a vé vou
ont-ils	*have they*	on til

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ai-je eu	*have I had*	éj u
as-tu eu	*hast thou had*	â tu u
a-t-il eu	*has he had*	a til u
avons-nous eu	*have we had*	a von nou zu
avez-vous eu	*have you had*	a vé vou zu
ont-ils eu	*have they had*	on til zu

-H- IMPERFECT.

Avais-je	*had I*	a vèj
avais-tu	*hadst thou*	a vè tu
avait-il	*had he*	a vè til
avions-nous	*had we*	a vi on nou
aviez-vous	*had you*	a vi é vou
avaient-ils	*had they*	a vè til

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Avais-je eu	*had I had*	a vèj u
avais-tu eu	*hadst thou had*	a vè tu u
avait-il eu	*had he had*	a vè til u
avions-nous eu	*had we had*	a vi on nou zu
aviez-vous eu	*had you had*	a vi é vou zu
avaient-ils eu	*had they had*	a vè til zu

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Eus-je	*had I*	uj
eus-tu	*hadst thou*	u tu
eut-il	*had he*	u til
eûmes-nous	*had we*	um nou
eûtes-vous	*had you*	ut vou
eurent-ils	*haa they*	ur til

[3]*mur.* m*û*r. *jeune.* je*û*ne. boîte. b*oî*te. *an*cre. *in*grat. *on*de. *un.* amen. [4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*	
Eus-je eu	*had I had*	uj u
eus-tu eu	*hadst thou had*	u tu u
eut-il eu	*had he had*	u ti lu
eûmes-nous eu	*had we had*	um nou zu
eûtes-vous eu	*had you had*	ut vou zu
eurent-ils eu	*had they had*	ur til zu
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Aurai-je	*shall* or *will I have*	o réj
auras-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou have*	o râ tu
aura-t-il	*shall* or *will he have*	o ra til
aurons-nous	*shall* or *will we have*	o ron nou
aurez-vous	*shall* or *will you have*	o ré vou
auront-ils	*shall* or *will they have*	o ron til
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*	
Aurai-je eu	*shall* or *will I have had*	o réj u
auras-tu eu	*shalt* or *wilt thou have had*	o râ tu u
aura-t-il eu	*shall* or *will he have had*	o ra til u
aurons-nous eu	*shall* or *will we have had*	o ron nou zu
aurez-vous eu	*shall* or *will you have had*	o ré vou zu
auront-ils eu	*shall* or *will they have had*	o ron til zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Aurais-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I have*	o rèj
aurais-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou have*	o rè tu
aurait-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he have*	o rè til
aurions-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we have*	o ri on nou
auriez-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you have*	o ri é vou
auraient-ils	*should, would, could,* or *might they have*	o rè til
-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*	
Aurais-je eu,	*should, would, could,*	o rèj u
or *eussé-je eu*	or *might I have had*	*u séj u*
aurais-tu eu,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*	o rè tu u
or *eusses-tu eu*	or *mightst thou have had*	*us tu u*
aurait-il eu,	*should, would, could,*	o rè til eu
or *eût-il eu*	or *might he have had*	*u ti lu*
aurions-nous eu,	*should, would, could,*	o ri on nou zu
or *eussions-nous eu*	or *might we have had*	*u si on nou zu*
auriez-vous eu,	*should, would, could,*	o ri é vou zu
or *eussiez-vous eu*	or *might you have had*	*u si é vou zu*
auraient-ils eu,	*should, would, could,*	o rè til zu
or *eussent-ils eu*	or *might they have had*	*us til zu*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

AVOIR *to have* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

N'ai-je pas	*have I not*	néj pâ
n'as-tu pas	*hast thou not*	nâ tu pâ
n'a-t-il pas	*has he not*	na til pâ
n'avons-nous pas	*have we not*	na von nou pâ
n'avez-vous pas	*have you not*	na vé vou pâ
n'ont-ils pas	*have they not*	non til pâ

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

N'ai je pas eu	*have I not had*	néj pâ zu
n'as-tu pas eu	*hast thou not had*	nâ tu pâ zu
n'a-t-il pas eu	*has he not had*	na til pâ zu
n'avons-nous pas eu	*have we not had*	na von nou pâ zu
n'avez-vous pas eu	*have you not had*	na vé vou pâ zu
n'ont-ils pas eu	*have they not had*	non til pâ zu

-H- IMPERFECT.

N'avais-je pas	*had I not*	na vèj pâ
n'avais-tu pas	*hadst thou not*	na vè tu pâ
n'avait-il pas	*had he not*	na vè til pâ
n'avions-nous pas	*had we not*	na vi on nou pâ
n'aviez-vous pas	*had you not*	na vi é vou pâ
n'avaient-ils pas	*had they not*	na vè til pâ

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas eu	*had I not had*	na vèj pâ zu
n'avais-tu pas eu	*hadst thou not had*	na vè tu pâ zu
n'avait-il pas eu	*had he not had*	na vè til pâ zu
n'avions-nous pas eu	*had we not had*	na vi on nou pâ zu
n'aviez-vous pas eu	*had you not had*	na vi é vou pâ zu
n'avaient-ils pas eu	*had they not had*	na vè til pâ zu

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

N'eus-je pas	*had I not*	nuj pâ
n'eus-tu pas	*hadst thou not*	nu tu pâ
n'eut-il pas	*had he not*	nu til pâ
n'eûmes-nous pas	*had we not*	num nou pâ
n'eûtes-vous pas	*had you not*	nut vou pâ
n'eurent-ils pas	*had they not*	nur til pâ

[3]*m.ur.* m*û*r. *jeune.* j*eû*ne. boite. bo*î*te. *ancre, ingrat. onde. un,* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn,* as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill,* as *lli,* in Wi*lli*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas eu	*had I not had*	nuj pâ zu
n'eus-tu pas eu	*hadst thou not had*	nu tu pâ zu
n'eut-il pas eu	*had he not had*	nu til pâ zu
n'eûmes-nous pas eu	*had we not had*	num nou pâ zu
n'eûtes-vous pas eu	*had you not had*	nut vou pâ zu
n'eurent-ils pas eu	*had they not had*	nur til pâ zu

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

N'aurai-je pas	*shall* or *will I not have*	no réj pâ
n'auras-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have*	no râ tu pâ
n'aura-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not have*	no ra til pâ
n'aurons-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not have*	no ron nou pâ
n'aurez-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not have*	no ré vou pâ
n'auront-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not have*	no ron til pâ

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas eu	*shall* or *will I not have had*	no réj pâ zu
n'auras-tu pas eu	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have had*	no râ tu pâ zu
n'aura-t-il pas eu	*shall* or *will he not have had*	no ra til pâ zu
n'aurons-nous pas eu	*shall* or *will we not have had*	no ron nou pâ zu
n'aurez-vous pas eu	*shall* or *will you not have had*	no ré vou pâ zu
n'auront-ils pas eu	*shall* or *will they not have had*	no ron til pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

N'aurais-je pas	*should, would, could,* or *might I not have*	no rèj pâ
n'aurais-tu pas	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou not have*	no rè tu pâ
n'aurait-il pas	*should, would, could,* or *might he not have*	no rè til pâ
n'aurions-nous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might we not have*	no ri on nou pâ
n'auriez-vous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might you not have*	no ri é vou pâ
n'auraient-ils pas	*should, would, could,* or *might they not have*	no rè til pâ

-O- PAST,

or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas eu,	*should, would, could,*	no rèj pâ zu
or *n'eussé-je pas eu*	or *might I not have had*	*nu séj pâ zu*
n'aurais-tu pas eu,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*	no rè tu pâ zu
or *n'eusses-tu pas eu*	or *mightst thou not have had*	*nus tu pâ zu*
n'aurait il pas eu,	*should, would, could,*	no rè til pâ zu
or *n'eût-il pas eu*	or *might he not have had*	*nu til pâ zu*
n'aurions-nous pas eu,	*should, would, could,*	no ri on nou pâ zu
or *n'eussions-nous pas eu*	or *might we not have had*	*nu si on nou pâ zu*
n'auriez-vous pas eu,	*should, would, could,*	no ri é vou pâ
or *n'eussiez-vous pas eu*	or *might you not have had*	*nu si é vou pâ zu*
n'auraient-ils pas eu,	*should, would could,*	no rè til pâ zu
or *n'eussent-ils pas eu*	or *might they not have had*	*nus til pâ zu*

[1]*ami.* *âne.* *te.* *écrit.* *mère.* *être.* *idole.* *gîte.* *opéra.* *ôter.* *tout.* *voûte.*
[2]*at.* *arm.* *tub.* *ale.* *mare.* *there.* *idiom.* *eel.* *opera.* *over.* *too.* *fool*

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR *there to be* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Y avoir	*there to be*	i a voir

-B- PAST OR PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*

Y avoir eu	*there to have been*	i a voi ru

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT OR ACTIVE.

Y ayant	*there being*	i é yan

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Y ayant eu	*there having been*	i é yan tu

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Il y a	*there is* or *there are*	il ya

-G- PERFECT OR PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*

Il y a eu	*there has been* or *there have been*	il ya u

-H- IMPERFECT.

Il y avait	*there was* or *there were*	il ya vè

-I- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

Il y avait eu	*there had been*	il ya vè tu

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Il y eut	*there was* or *there were*	il yu

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*

Il y eut eu	*there had been*	il yu tu

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Il y aura	*there will be*	il yo ra

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*

Il y aura eu	*there will have been*	il yo ra u

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Il y aurait	*there would be*	il yo rè

-O- PAST, *or compound of the present.*

Il y aurait eu	*there would have been*	il yo rè tu

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Qu'il y ait	*that there may be*	kil yè

-R- PRETERIT OR PAST, *or compound of the present.*

Qu'il y ait eu	*that there may have been*	kil yè tu

-S- IMPERFECT.

Qu'il y eût	*that there might be*	kil yu

-T- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

Qu'il y eût eu	*that there might have been*	kil yu tu

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boîte.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in pleasure. *gn*, as ni in union. *ill*, as *lli*, in William.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR *there to be* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne pas y avoir — *not there to be* — ne pâ zi a voir

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*

Ne pas y avoir eu — *not there to have been* — ne pâ zi a voi ru

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

N'y ayant pâs — *there not being* — ni é yan pâ

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT

N'y ayant pas eu — *there not having been* — ni é yan pâ zu

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Il n'y a pas — *there is not* or *there are not* — il gna pâ

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*

Il n'y a pas eu — *there has not been* or *there have not been* — il gna pâ zu

-H- IMPERFECT.

Il n'y avait pas — *there was not* or *there were not* — il gna vè pâ

-I- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

Il n'y avait pas eu — *there had not been* — il gna vè pâ zu

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Il n'y eut pas — *there was not* or *there were not* — il gnu pâ

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*

Il n'y eut pas eu — *there had not been* — il gnu pâ zu

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Il n'y aura pas — *there will not be* — il gno ra pâ

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*

Il n'y aura pas eu — *there will not have been* — il gno ra pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Il n'y aurait pas — *there would not be* — il gno rè pâ

-O- PAST, *or compound of the present.*

Il n'y aurait pas eu — *there would not have been* — il gno rè pâ zu

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Qu'il n'y ait pas — *that there may not be* — kil gnè zu

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST, *or compound of the present,*

Qu'il n'y ait pas eu — *that there may not have been* — kil gnè pâ zu

-S- IMPERFECT.

Qu'il n'y eût pas — *that there might not be* — kil gnu pâ

-T- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

Qu'il n'y eût pas eu — *that there might not have been* — kil gnu pâ zu

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR *there to be (Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Y a-t-il	*is there* or *are there*	ya til
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*	
Y a-t-il eu	*has there been* or *have there been*	ya ti lu
-H-	IMPERFECT.	
Y avait-il	*was there* or *were there*	ya vè til
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*	
Y avait-il eu	*had there been*	ya vè ti lu
-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.	
Y eut-il	*was there* or *were there*	yu til
-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*	
Y eut-il eu	*had there been*	yu ti lu
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Y aura-t-il	*will there be*	yo ra til
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*	
Y aura-t-il eu	*will there have been*	yo ra ti lu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Y aurait-il	*would there be*	yo rè til
-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*	
Y aurait-il eu	*would there have been*	yo rè ti lu

[3]*mur.* mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. *an*cre. *in*grat. *on*de. *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*nion*. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

CONJUGATION OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Y AVOIR *there to be* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

F-	PRESENT.		
N'y a-t-il pas	*is there not* or *are there not*		gna til pâ
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*		
N'y a-t-il pas eu	*has there not been* or *have there not been*		gna til pâ zu
-H-	IMPERFECT.		
N'y avait-il pas	*was there not* or *were there not*		gna vè til pâ
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*		
N'y avait-il pas eu	*had there not been*		gna vè til pâ zu
-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.		
N'y eut-il pas	*was there not* or *were there not*		gnu til pâ
-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*		
N'y eut-il pas eu	*had there not been*		gnu til pâ zu
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.		
N'y aura-t-il pas	*will there not be*		gno ra til pâ
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*		
N'y aura-t-il pas eu	*will there not have been*		gno ra til pâ zu

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.		
N'y aurait-il pas	*would there not be*		gno rè til pâ
-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present*		
N'y aurait-il pas eu	*would there not have been*		gno rè til pâ zu

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

†CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE *to be* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

être	*to be*	ê tre

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

avoir été	*to have been*	a vio ré té

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.

étant	*being*	é tan

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

ayant été	*having been*	é yan té té

-E- PARTICIPLE PAST OR PERFECT OR PASSIVE

été	*been*	é té

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je suis	*I am*	je su i
tu es	*thou art*	tu è
il est	*he is*	i lè
nous sommes	*we are*	nou som
vous êtes	*you are*	vou zêt
ils sont	*they are*	il son

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

J'ai été	*I have been*	jé é t i
tu as été	*thou hast been*	tu â z i té
il a été	*he has been*	i la é té
nous avons été	*we have been*	nou za von zé té
vous avez été	*you have been*	vou za vé zé té
ils ont été	*they have been*	il z on té té

-H- IMPERFECT.

J' étais	*I was*	jé è
tu étais	*thou wast*	tu é tè
il était	*he was*	il é tè
nous étions	*we were*	n ou zé ti on
vous étiez	*you were*	v ou zé ti é
ils étaient	*they were*	il zé tè

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

J'avais été	*I had been*	j a vè zé té
tu avais été	*thou hadst been*	t u a vè z é té
il avait été	*he had been*	i la vè t é té
nous avions été	*we had been*	n ou za v i on zé té
vous aviez été	*you had been*	v ou za vi é zé té
ils avaient été	*they had been*	il za vè té té

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boire. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amen. [4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.	
Je fus	*I was*	je fu
tu fus	*thou wast*	tu fu
il fut	*he was*	il fu
nous fûmes	*we were*	nou fum
vous fûtes	*you were*	vou fut
ils furent	*they were*	il fur

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*	
J'eus été	*I had been*	ju zé té
tu eus été	*thou hadst been*	tu u zé té
il eut été	*he had been*	i lu té té
nous eûmes été	*we had been*	nou zum zé té
vous eûtes été	*you had been*	vou zut zé té
ils eurent été	*they had been*	il zur té té

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Je serai	*I shall* or *will be*	je sré
tu seras	*thou shalt* or *wilt be*	tu srâ
il sera	*he shall* or *will be*	il sra
nous serons	*we shall or will be*	nou sron
vous serez	*you shall* or *will be*	vou sré
ils seront	*they shall or will be*	il sron

-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*	
J'aurai été	*I shall* or *will have been*	jo ré é té
tu auras été	*thou shalt* or *wilt have been*	tu o râ zé té
il aura été	*he shall* or *will have been*	il o ra é té
nous aurons été	*we shall* or *will have been*	nou zo ron zé té
vous aurez été	*you shall* or *will have been*	vou zo ré zé té
ils auront été	*they shall* or *will have been*	il zo ron té té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Je serais	*I should, would, could,* or *might be*	je srè
tu serais	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst be*	tu srè
il serait	*he should, would, could,* or *might be*	il srè
nous serions	*we should, would, could,* or *might be*	nou se ri on
vous seriez	*you should, would, could,* or *might be*	vou se ri é
ils seraient	*they should, would, could,* or *might be*	il srè

*a*mi. *â*ne. *te*. *é*crit. mère. *ê*tre. *i*dole. *g*îte. *o*péra. ôter. *t*out. *v*oûte.
'at. arm. *t*ub. *a*le. mare. there. *i*diom. *ee*l. *o*pera. over. *t*oo. *f*ool.

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

J'aurais été	*I should, would, could,*	jo rè zé té
or *j'eusse été*	or *might have been*	*jus é té*
tu aurais été	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*	tu o rè zé té
or *tu eusses été*	or *mightst have been*	*tu us zé té*
il aurait été	*he should, would, could,*	i lo rè té té
or *il eût été*	or *might have been*	*i lu té té*
nous aurions été	*we should, would, could,*	nou zo ri on zé té
or *nous eussions été*	or *might have been*	*nou zu si on zé té*
vous auriez été	*you should, would, could,*	vou zo ri é zé té
or *vous eussiez été*	or *might have been*	*vou zu si é zé té*
ils auraient été	*they should, would, could,*	il zo rè té té
or *ils eussent été*	or *might have been*	*il zus té té*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sois	*be (thou)*	soi
qu'il soit	*let him be*	kil soi
soyons	*let us be*	soi yon
soyez	*be (you)*	soi yé
qu'ils soient	*let them be*	kil soi

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je sois	*that I may be*	kej soi
que tu sois	*that thou mayst be*	ke tu soi
qu'il soit	*that he may be*	kil soi
que nous soyons	*that we may be*	ke nou soi yon
que vous soyez	*that you may be*	ke vou soi yé
qu'ils soient	*that they may be*	kil soi

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que j'aie été	*that I may have been*	ke jè é té
que tu aies été	*that thou mayst have been*	ke tu è zé té
qu'il ait été	*that he may have been*	ki lè té té
que nous ayons été	*that we may have been*	ke nou zé yon zé té
que vous ayez été	*that you may have been*	ke vou zé yé zé té
qu'ils aient été	*that they may have been*	kil zè té té

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je fusse	*that I might be*	kej fus
que tu fusses	*that thou mightst be*	ke tu fus
qu'il fût	*that he might be*	kil fu
que nous fussions	*that we might be*	ke nou fu si on
que vous fussiez	*that you might be*	ke vou fu si é
qu'ils fussent	*that they might be*	kil fus

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse été	*that I might have been*	ke jus é té
que tu eusses été	*that thou mightst have been*	ke tu us zé té
qu'il eût été	*that he might have been*	ki lu té té
que nous eussions été	*that we might have been*	ke nou zu si on zé té
que vous eussiez été	*that you might have been*	ke vou zu si é zé té
qu'ils eussent été	*that they might have been*	kil zus té té

[3]*mur.* mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. *an*cre. *in*grat. *on*de. *un.* amen. [4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE *to be* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne pas être	*not to be*	ne pâ zê tre

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

ne pas avoir été	*not to have been*	ne pâ za voi ré té

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

n' étant pas	*not being*	né tan pâ

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

n'ayant pas été	*not having been*	né yan pâ zé té

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je ne suis pas	*I am not*	jeN su i pâ
tu n'es pas	*thou art not*	tu nè pâ
il n'est pas	*he is not*	il nè pâ
nous ne sommes pas	*we are not*	nouN som pâ
vous n'êtes pas	*you are not*	vou nêt pâ
ils ne sont pas	*they are not*	il ne son pâ

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Je n'ai pas été	*I have not been*	je né pâ zé té
tu n'as pas été	*thou hast not been*	tu nâ pâ zé té
il n'a pas été	*he has not been*	il na pâ zé té
nous n'avons pas été	*we have not been*	nou na von pâ zé té
vous n'avez pas été	*you have not been*	vou na vé pâ zé té
ils n'ont pas été	*they have not been*	il non pâ zé té

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je n'étais pas	*I was not*	je né tè pâ
tu n'étais pas	*thou wast not*	tu né tè pâ
il n'était pas	*he was not*	il né tè pâ
nous n'étions pas	*we were not*	nou né ti on pâ
vous n'étiez pas	*you were not*	vou né ti é pâ
ils n'étaient pas	*they were not*	il né tè pâ

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Je n'avais pas été	*I had not been*	je na vè pâ zé té
tu n'avais pas été	*thou hadst not been*	tu na vè pâ zé té
il n'avait pas été	*he had not been*	il na vè pâ zé té
nous n'avions pas été	*we had not been*	nou na vi on pâ zé té
vous n'aviez pas été	*you had not been*	vou na vi é pâ zé té
ils n'avaient pas été	*they had not been*	il na vè pâ zé té

[1]*ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.*
[2]*at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne fus pas	*I was not*	jen fu pâ
tu ne fus pas	*thou wast not*	tun fu pâ
il ne fut pas	*he was not*	il ne fu pâ
nous ne fûmes pas	*we were not*	noun fum pâ
vous ne fûtes pas	*you were not*	voun fut pâ
ils ne furent pas	*they were not*	il ne fur pâ

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas été	*I had not been*	je nu pâ zé té
tu n'eus pas été	*thou hadst not been*	tu nu pâ zé té
il n'eut pas été	*he had not been*	il nu pâ zé té
nous n'eûmes pas été	*we had not been*	nou num pâ zé té
vous n'eûtes pas été	*you had not been*	vou nut pâ zé té
ils n'eurent pas été	*they had not been*	il nur pâ zé té

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne serai pas	*I shall* or *will not be*	jen sré pâ
tu ne seras pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not be*	tun srâ pâ
il ne sera pas	*he shall* or *will not be*	il ne sra pâ
nous ne serons pas	*we shall or will not be*	noun sron pâ
vous ne serez pas	*you shall* or *will not be*	voun sré pâ
ils ne seront pas	*they shall or will not be*	il ne sron pâ

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas été	*I shall* or *will not have been*	jno ré pâ zé té
tu n'auras pas été	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have been*	tu no râ pâ zé té
il n'aura pas été	*he shall* or *will not have been*	il no ra pâ zé té
nous n'aurons pas été	*we shall* or *will not have been*	nou no ron pâ zé té
vous n'aurez pas été	*you shall* or *will not have been*	vou no ré pâ zé té
ils n'auront pas été	*they shall* or *will not have been*	il no ron pâ zé té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne serais pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might not be*	jen srè pâ
tu ne serais pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst not be*	tun srè pâ
il ne serait pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might not be*	il ne srè pâ
nous ne serions pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might not be*	noun se ri on pâ
vous ne seriez pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might not be*	voun se ri é pâ
ils ne seraient pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might not be*	il ne srè pâ

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre, ingrat. onde. un, amen. [4]j, as s in plea s ure. gn, as ni in u nion. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

-O- PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas été	*I should, would,*	*not have been*	je no rè pâ zé té
or *je n'eusse pas été*	*could,* or *might*		*je nus pâ zé té*
tu n'aurais pas été	*thou shouldst, wouldst,*		tu no rè pâ zé té
or *tu n'eusses pas été*	*couldst,* or *mightst*		*tu nus pâ ze té*
il n'aurait pas été	*he should, would,*		il no rè pâ zé té
or *il n'eût pas été*	*could,* or *might*		*il nu pâ zé té*
nous n'aurions pas été	*we should, would,*		nou no ri on pâ zé té
or *nous n'eussions pas été*	*could,* or *might*		*nou nu si on pâ zé te*
vous n'auriez pas été	*you should, would,*		vou no ri é pâ zé té
or *vous n'eussiez pas été*	*could,* or *might*		*vou nu si é pâ zé té*
ils n'auraient pas été	*they should, would,*		il no rè pâ zé té
or *ils n'eussent pas été*	*could,* or *might*		*il nus pâ zé té*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne sois pas	*be not (thou)*	ne soi pâ
qu'il ne soit pas	*let him not be*	kil ne soi pâ
ne soyons pas	*let us not be*	ne soi yon pâ
ne soyez pas	*be not (you)*	ne soi yé pâ
qu'ils ne soient pas	*let them not be*	kil ne soi pâ

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne sois pas	*that I may*	*not be*	ke jeN soi pâ
que tu ne sois pas	*that thou mayst*		ke tuN soi pâ
qu'il ne soit pas	*that he may*		kil ne soi pâ
que nous ne soyons pas	*that we may*		ke nouN soi yon pâ
que vous ne soyez pas	*that you may*		ke vouN soi yé pâ
qu'ils ne soient pas	*that they may*		kil ne soi pâ

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,

or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas été	*that I may*	*not have been*	kej nè pâ zé té
que tu n'aies pas été	*that thou mayst*		ke tu nè pâ zé té
qu'il n'ait pas été	*that he may*		kil nè pâ zé té
que nous n'ayons pas été	*that we may*		ke nou né yon pâ zé té
que vous n'ayez pas été	*that you may*		ke vou né yé pâ zé té
qu'ils n'aient pas été	*that they may*		kil nè pâ zé té

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne fusse pas	*that I might*	*not be*	ke jeN fus pâ
que tu ne fusses pas	*that thou mightst*		ke tuN fus pâ
qu'il ne fût pas	*that he might*		kil ne fu pâ
que nous ne fussions pas	*that we might*		ke nouN fu si on pâ
que vous ne fussiez pas	*that you might*		ke vouN fu si é pâ
qu'ils ne fussent pas	*that they might*		kil ne fus pâ

-T- PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas été	*that I might*	*not have been*	kej nus pâ zé té
que tu n'eusses pas été	*that thou mightst*		ke tu nus pâ zé té
qu'il n'eût pas été	*that he might*		kil nu pâ zé té
que nous n'eussions pas été	*that we might*		ke nou nu si on pâ zé té
que vous n'eussiez pas été	*that you might*		ke vou nu si é pâ zé té
qu'ils n'eussent pas été	*that they might*		kil nus pâ zé té

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE *to be* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Suis-je	*am I*	su ij
es-tu	*art thou*	è tu
est-il	*is he*	è til
sommes-nous	*are we*	som nou
êtes-vous	*are you*	êt vou
sont-ils	*are they*	son til

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ai-je été	*have I been*	é jé té
as-tu été	*hast thou been*	â tu é té
a-t-il été	*has he been*	a ti lé té
avons-nous été	*have we been*	a von nou zé té
avez-vous été	*have you been*	a vé vou zé té
ont-ils été	*have they been*	on til zé té

-H- IMPERFECT.

Étais-je	*was I*	é tèj
étais-tu	*wast thou*	é tè tu
était-il	*was he*	é tè til
étions-nous	*were we*	é ti on nou
étiez-vous	*were you*	é ti é vou
étaient-ils	*were they*	é tè til

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect

Avais-je été	*had I been*	a vè jé té
avais-tu été	*hadst thou been*	a vè tu é té
avait-il été	*had he been*	a vè ti lé té
avions-nous été	*had we been*	a vi on nou zé té
aviez-vous été	*had you been*	a vi é vou zé té
avaient-ils été	*had they been*	a vè til zé té

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Fus-je	*was I*	fuj
fus-tu	*wast thou*	fu tu
fut-il	*was he*	fu til
fûmes-nous	*were we*	fum nou
fûtes-vous	*were you*	fut vou
furent-ils	*were they*	fur til

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
[4]j, as s in pleasure. gn, as ni in union. ill, as lli, in William.

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*	
Eus-je été	*had I been*	u jé té
eus-tu été	*hadst thou been*	u tu é té
eut-il été	*had he been*	u ti lé té
eûmes-nous été	*had we been*	um nou zé té
eûtes-vous été	*had you been*	ut vou zé té
eurent-ils été	*had they been*	ur til zé té
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.	
Serai-je	*shall* or *will I be*	se réj
seras-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou be*	se rà tu
sera-t-il	*shall* or *will he be*	se ra til
serons-nous	*shall* or *will we be*	se ron nou
serez-vous	*shall* or *will you be*	se ré vou
seront-ils	*shall* or *will they be*	se ron til
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future*	
Aurai-je été	*shall* or *will I have been*	o ré jé té
auras-tu été	*shalt* or *wilt thou have been*	o râ tu é té
aura-t-il été	*shall* or *will he have been*	o ra til é té
aurons-nous été	*shall* or *will we have been*	o ron nou zé té
aurez-vous été	*shall* or *will you have been*	o ré vou zé té
auront-ils été	*shall* or *will they have been*	o ron til zé té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.	
Serais-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I be*	se rèj
serais-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou be*	se re tu
serait-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he be*	sa rè til
serions-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we be*	se ri on nou
seriez-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you be*	se ri é vou
seraient-ils	*should, would, could,* or *might they be*	se rè til
-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*	
Aurais-je été	*should, would, could,*	o rè jé té
or *eussé-je été*	or *might I have been*	*u sé jé té*
aurais-tu été	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*	o rè tu é té
or *eusses-tu été*	or *mightst thou have been*	*us tu é te*
aurait-il été	*should, would, could,*	o rè ti lé té
or *eût-il été*	or *might he have been*	*u ti lé té*
aurions-nous été	*should, would, could,*	o ri on nou zé té
or *eussions-nous été*	or *might we have been*	*u si on nou zé té*
auriez-vous été	*should, would, could,*	o ri é vou zé té
or *eussiez-vous été*	or *might you have been*	*u si é vou zé té*
auraient-ils été	*should, would, could,*	o rè til zé té
or *eussent-ils été*	or *might they have been*	*us til zé té*

[1]*am. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.*
[2]*at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.*

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB.

ÊTRE *to be* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Ne suis-je pas	*am I not*	ne su ij pâ
n'es-tu pas	*art thou not*	nè tu pâ
n'est-il pas	*is he not*	nè til pâ
ne sommes-nous pas	*are we not*	ne som nou pâ
n'êtes-vous pas	*are you not*	nêt vou pâ
ne sont-ils pas	*are they not*	ne son til pâ

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

N'ai-je pas été	*have I not been*	néj pâ zé té
n'as-tu pas été	*hast thou not been*	na tu pâ zé té
n'a-t-il pas été	*has he not been*	na til pâ zé té
n'avons-nous pas été	*have we not been*	na von nou pâ zé té
n'avez-vous pas été	*have you not been*	na vé vou pâ zé té
n'ont-ils pas été	*have they not been*	non til pâ zé té

-H- IMPERFECT.

N'étais-je pas	*was I not*	né tèj pâ
n'étais-tu pas	*wast thou not*	né tè tu pâ
n'était-il pas	*was he not*	né tè til pâ
n'étions-nous pas	*were we not*	né ti on nou pâ
n'étiez-vous pas	*were you not*	né ti é vou pâ
n'étaient-ils pas	*were they not*	né tè til pâ

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas été	*had I not been*	na vèj pâ zé té
n'avais-tu pas été	*hadst thou not been*	na vè tu pâ zé té
n'avait-il pas été	*had he not been*	na vè til pâ zé té
n'avions-nous pas été	*had we not been*	na vi on nou pâ zé té
n'aviez-vous pas été	*had you not been*	na vi é vou pâ zé té
n'avaient-ils pas été	*had they not been*	na vè til pâ zé té

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne fus-je pas	*was I not*	ne fuj pâ
ne fus-tu pas	*wast thou not*	ne fu tu pâ
ne fut-il pas	*was he not*	ne fu til pâ
ne fûmes-nous pas	*were we not*	ne fum nou pâ
ne fûtes-vous pas	*were you not*	ne fut vou pâ
ne furent-ils pas	*were they not*	ne fur til pâ

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un, amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas été	*had I not been*	nuj pâ zé té
n'eus-tu pas été	*hadst thou not been*	nu tu pâ zé té
n'eut-il pas été	*had he not been*	nu til pâ zé té
n'eûmes-nous pas été	*had we not been*	num nou pâ zé té
n'eûtes-vous pas été	*had you not been*	nut vou pâ zé té
n'eurent-ils pas été	*had they not been*	nur til pâ zé té

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne serai-je pas	*shall* or *will I not be*	ne sréj pâ
ne seras-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not be*	ne srâ tu pâ
ne sera-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not be*	ne sra til pâ
ne serons-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not be*	ne sron nou pâ
ne serez-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not be*	ne sré vou pâ
ne seront-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not be*	ne sron til pâ

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas été	*shall* or *will I not have been*	no réj pâ zé té
n'auras-tu pas été	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have been*	no râ tu pâ zé té
n'aura-t-il pas été	*shall* or *will he not have been*	no ra til pâ zé té
n'aurons-nous pas été	*shall* or *will we not have been*	no ron nou pâ zé té
n'aurez-vous pas été	*shall* or *will you not have been*	no ré vou pâ zé té
n'auront-ils pas été	*shall* or *will they not have been*	no ron til pâ zé té

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne serais-je pas	*should, would, could,* or *might I not be*	ne srèj pâ
ne serais-tu pas	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou not be*	ne srè tu pâ
ne serait-il pas	*should, would, could,* or *might he not be*	ne srè til pâ
ne serions-nous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might we not be*	ne se ri on nou pâ
ne seriez-vous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might you not be*	ne se ri é vou pâ
ne seraient-ils pas	*should, would, could,* or *might they not be*	ne srè til pâ

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas été,	*should, would,*	no rèj pâ zé té
or *n'eussé-je pas été*	*could*, or *might I*	*nu séj pâ zé té*
n'aurais-tu pas été,	*shouldst, wouldst,*	no rè tu pâ zé té
or *n'eusses-tu pas été*	*couldst*, or *mightst thou*	*nus tu pâ zé té*
n'aurait-il pas été,	*should, would,*	no rè til pâ zé té
or *n'eût-il pas été*	*could*, or *might he*	*nu til pâ zé té*
n'aurions-nous pas été,	*should, would,*	no ri on nou pâ zé té
or *n'eussions-nous pas été*	*could*, or *might we*	*nu si on nou pâ zé té*
n'auriez-vous pas été,	*should, would,*	no ri é vou pâ zé té
or *n'eussiez-vous pas été*	*could*, or *might you*	*nu si é vou pâ zé té*
n'auraient-ils pas été,	*should, would,*	no rè til pâ zé té
or *n'eussent-ils pas été*	*could*, or *might they*	*nus til pâ zé té*

not have been

Of the different kinds of Conjugations.

75. There are in French, four Conjugations, (comprising upwards of 3164 verbs,) which are distinguished from each other by the termination of the present of the Infinitive.

First Conjugation.

76. The present of the Infinitive of the first conjugation, has for termination *er*—as, parl *er*, donn *er*, &c.

Second Conjugation.

77. The present of the Infinitive of the second conjugation, has for termination *ir*—as, fin *ir*, pun *ir*, &c.

Third Conjugation.

78. The present of the Infinitive of the third conjugation, has for termination *oir*—as, recev *oir*, Sav *oir*, &c.

Fourth Conjugation.

79. The present of the Infinitive of the fourth conjugation, has for termination *re*—as, vend *re*, rend *re*, &c.

Of the First Conjugation.

80. All verbs whose present of the Infinitive ends with *er*, (to the number of about 2500) are of the first conjugation, and if regular, are conjugated like *parler* to speak; which is hereafter conjugated, to be used as a model.

81. The only irregular verbs of the first conjugation, are *s'en aller* to go away, page 112—*aller* to go, page 122—*envoyer* to send, page123—and *renvoyer* to send back; conjugated like *envoyer* to send.

82. Some verbs ending in *er*, although not among the irregular verbs of the first conjugation, are not exactly conjugated like *parler*; these verbs are noticed at page 48.

83. Conjugate in the same manner—as, parl *er* to speak; the following verbs:—

accord *er*	to grant,	épouvant *er*	to frighten,
accus *er*	to accuse,	inspir *er*	to inspire,
affirm *er*	to affirm,	lim *er*	to file,
camp *er*	to encamp,	patin *er*	to skate,
donn *er*	to give,	piqu *er*	to sting,
port *er*	to carry,	prépar *er*	to prepare,
montr *er*	to show,	priv *er*	to deprive,
trouv *er*	to find,	propos *er*	to propose,
cass *er*	to break,	imagin *er*	to imagine,

allum *er*	to light,	import *er*	to import,
pleur *er*	to weep,	improuv *er*	to disapprove,
vol *er*	to steal,	irrit *er*	to irritate,
déjeûn *er*	to breakfast,	invent *er*	to invent,
dîn *er*	to dine,	pens *er*	to think,
soup *er*	to sup,	vant *er*	to praise,

84. To conjugate the above verbs, or any other regular verb, of the first conjugation: observe that in French a regular verb is divided into two parts:—1st, The *radical part*, which is, that portion of the word which is the same in all tenses and persons of the verb; 2d, The *termination*, which is, that portion of the word that varies at almost every tense and person; for instance, in *parler* to speak; *parl* is the radical part, and *er* is the termination: then *parl* will be the same in all tenses and persons; whereas the termination *er*, will change at every tense and person. Knowing the above, when a verb is to be conjugated on *parler*, the only thing to be done, is to place the terminations of the different tenses and persons of *parler* after the *radical part* of the verb to be conjugated.

85. In the different conjugations throughout this volume, the *radical part*, and the *terminations* have been separated, and the terminations in the model verbs have been besides printed in italics.

Formation of the Compound Tenses.

86. The formation of the compound tenses, in all the verbs of the four conjugations, whether regular or irregular, is the same.

87. When a scholar wants to form a compound tense, he must first ascertain whether the verb in question, takes the auxiliary *avoir* to have, or *être* to be, which he can easily do, by referring to page 1, Art. 10 and 14; afterwards he must take from *avoir* to have, or *être* to be, the tense named, and add to it the participle past, of the verb he has to conjugate; for instance, suppose a scholar wants to form the compound of the future absolute, of *parler* to speak, he must after having ascertained that *parler* to speak, is one of those neuter verbs that takes the auxiliary *avoir* to have, as not being among the neuter verbs, that are put down in page 101; take the future absolute of *avoir* to have, which is, *j'aurai* I shall or will have, and add to it the participle past of *parler* to speak, which is, *parlé* spoken; then he shall have for the compound of the future absolute *j'aurai parlé* I shall or will have spoken—*tu auras parlé* thou shalt or wilt have spoken, &c.

Table of the Terminations of the Regular Verbs.

SIMPLE TENSES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

	parl	*er*	fin	*ir*	rec	*evoir*	vend *re*

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

	parl	*ant*	fin	*issant*	rec	*evant*	vend *ant*

PARTICIPLE PAST OR PASSIVE.

	parl	*é*	fin	*i*	reç	*u*	vend *u*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je	parl	*e*	fin	*is*	reç	*ois*	vend *s*
tu		*es*		*is*		*ois*	*s*
il *or* elle		*e*		*it*		*oit*	vend
nous		*ons*		*issons*		*evons*	*ons*
vous		*ez*		*issez*		*evez*	*ez*
ils *or* elles		*ent*		*issent*		*oivent*	*ent*

IMPERFECT.

je	parl	*ais*	fin	*issais*	rec	*evais*	vend *ais*
tu		*ais*		*issais*		*evais*	*ais*
il *or* elle		*ait*		*issait*		*evait*	*ait*
nous		*ions*		*issions*		*evions*	*ions*
vous		*iez*		*issiez*		*eviez*	*iez*
ils *or* elles		*aient*		*issaient*		*evaient*	*aien*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

je	parl	*ai*	fin	*is*	reç	*us*	vend *is*
tu		*as*		*is*		*us*	*is*
il *or* elle		*a*		*it*		*ut*	*it*
nous		*âmes*		*îmes*		*ûmes*	*îmes*
vous		*âtes*		*îtes*		*ûtes*	*îtes*
ils *or* elles		*èrent*		*irent*		*urent*	*irent*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

je	parl	*erai*	fin	*irai*	rec	*evrai*	vend *rai*
tu		*eras*		*iras*		*evras*	*ras*
il *or* elle		*era*		*ira*		*evra*	*ra*
nous		*erons*		*irons*		*evrons*	*rons*
vous		*erez*		*irez*		*evrez*	*rez*
ils *or* elles		*eront*		*iront*		*evront*	*ront*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

je	parl	*erais*	fin	*irais*	rec	*evrais*	vend *rais*
tu		*erais*		*irais*		*evrais*	*rais*
il *or* elle		*erait*		*irait*		*evrait*	*rait*
nous		*erions*		*irions*		*evrions*	*rions*
vous		*eriez*		*iriez*		*evriez*	*riez*
ils *or* elles		*eraient*		*iraient*		*evraient*	*raient*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	parl	*e*	fin	*is*	reç	*ois*	vend *s*
qu'il *or* qu'elle		*e*		*isse*		*oive*	*e*
		ons		*issons*		*evons*	*ons*
		ez		*issez*		*evez*	*ez*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles		*ent*		*issent*		*oivent*	*ent*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que je	parl	*e*	fin	*isse*	reç	*oive*	vend *e*
que tu		*es*		*isses*		*oives*	*es*
qu'il *or* qu'elle		*e*		*isse*		*oive*	*e*
que nous		*ions*		*issions*		*evions*	*ions*
que vous		*iez*		*issiez*		*eviez*	*iez*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles		*ent*		*issent*		*oivent*	*ent*

IMPERFECT.

que je	parl	*asse*	fin	*isse*	reç	*usse*	vend *isse*
que tu		*asses*		*isses*		*usses*	*isses*
qu'il *or* qu'elle		*ât*		*ît*		*ût*	*ît*
que nous		*assions*		*issions*		*ussions*	*issions*
que vous		*assiez*		*issiez*		*ussiez*	*issiez*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles		*assent*		*issent*		*ussent*	*issent*
		1*st* Conjugation.		2*d* Conj.		3*d* Conj.	4*th* Conj.

Of the Four Regular Conjugations.

COMPOUND TENSES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PAST *or* PERFECT, (*or compound of the present.*)

avoir	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*

COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

ayant	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, (*or compound of the present.*)

j'ai	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
tu as	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
il *or* elle a	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
nous avons	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
vous avez	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
ils *or* elles ont	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

PLUPERFECT, (*or componnd of the Imperfect.*)

j'avais	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
tu avais	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
il *or* elle avait	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
nous avions	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
vous aviez	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
ils *or* elles avaient	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

PRETERIT ANTERIOR, (*or compound of the preterit definite.*)

j'eus	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
tu eus	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
il *or* elle eut	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
nous eûmes	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
vous eûtes	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
ils *or* elles eurent	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

FUTURE ANTERIOR, (*or compound of the future absolute.*)

j'aurai	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
tu auras	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
il *or* elle aura	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
nous aurons	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
vous aurez	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
ils *or* elles auront	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PAST, (*or compound of the present.*)

j'aurais	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
tu aurais	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
il *or* elle aurait	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
nous aurions	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
vous auriez	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
ils *or* elles auraient	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

No Compound of the Imperative.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRETERIT *or* PAST, (*or compound of the present.*)

que j aie	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
que tu aies	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
qu'il *or* qu'elle ait	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
que nous ayons	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
que vous ayez	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles aient	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

PLUPERFECT, (*or compound of the imperfect.*)

que j'eusse	parl *é*	fin *i*	reç *u*	vend *u*
que tu eusses	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
qu'il *or* qu'elle eût	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
que nous eussions	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
que vous eussiez	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles eussent	*é*	*i*	*u*	*u*

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER *to speak.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Parl *er* — *to speak*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*

Avoir parl *é* — *to have spoken*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.

Parl *ant* — *speaking*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant parl *é* — *having spoken*

-E- PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.

Parl *é* — *spoken*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je parl *e* — *I speak, do speak,* or *am speaking*
tu parl *es* — *thou speakest, dost speak,* or *art speaking*
il parl *e* — *he speaks, does speak,* or *is speaking*
nous parl *ons* — *we speak, do speak,* or *are speaking*
vous parl *ez* — *you speak, do speak,* or *are speaking*
ils parl *ent* — *they speak, do speak,* or *are speaking*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*

J'ai parl *é* — *I have spoken, did speak,* or *have been speaking*
tu as parl *é* — *thou hast spoken, didst speak,* or *hast been speaking*
il a parl *é* — *he has spoken, did speak,* or *has been speaking*
nous avons parl *é* — *we have spoken, did speak,* or *have been speaking*
vous avez parl *é* — *you have spoken, did speak,* or *have been speaking*
ils ont parl *é* — *they have spoken, did speak,* or *have been speaking*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je parl *ais* — *I spoke, did speak,* or *was speaking*
tu parl *ais* — *thou spokest, didst speak,* or *wast speaking*
il parl *ait* — *he spoke, did speak,* or *was speaking*
nous parl *ions* — *we spoke, did speak,* or *were speaking*
vous parl *iez* — *you spoke, did speak,* or *were speaking*
ils parl *aient* — *they spoke, did speak,* or *were speaking*

-I- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

J'avais parl *é* — *I had spoken,* or *had been speaking*
tu avais parl *é* — *thou hadst spoken,* or *hadst been speaking*
il avait parl *é* — *he had spoken,* or *had been speaking*
nous avions parl *é* — *we had spoken,* or *had been speaking*
vous aviez parl *é* — *you had spoken,* or *had been speaking*
ils avaient parl *é* — *they had spoken,* or *had been speaking*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Je parl *ai*	*I spoke*, or *did speak*
tu parl *as*	*thou spokest*, or *didst speak*
il parl *a*	*he spoke*, or *did speak*
nous parl *âmes*	*we spoke*, or *did speak*
vous parl *âtes*	*you spoke*, or *did speak*
il parl *èrent*	*they spoke*, or *did speak*

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*
J'eus parl *é*	*I had spoken*
tu eus parl *é*	*thou hadst spoken*
il eut parl *é*	*he had spoken*
nous eûmes parl *é*	*we had spoken*
vous eûtes parl *é*	*you had spoken*
ils eurent parl *é*	*they had spoken*

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.
Je parl *erai*	*I shall*, or *will speak*
tu parl *eras*	*thou shalt*, or *wilt speak*
il parl *era*	*he shall*, or *will speak*
nous parl *erons*	*we shall*, or *will speak*
vous parl *erez*	*you shall*, or *will speak*
ils parl *eront*	*they shall*, or *will speak*

-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*
J'aurai parl *é*	*I shall*, or *will have spoken*
tu auras parl *é*	*thou shalt*, or *wilt have spoken*
il aura parl *é*	*he shall*, or *will have spoken*
nous aurons parl *é*	*we shall*, or *will have spoken*
vous aurez parl *é*	*you shall*, or *will have spoken*
ils auront parl *é*	*they shall*, or *will have spoken.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.
Je parl *erais*	*I should*, *would*, *could*, or *might speak*
tu parl *erais*	*thou shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*, or *mightst speak*
il parl *erait*	*he should*, *would*, *could*, or *might speak*
nous parl *erions*	*we should*, *would*, *could*, or *might speak*
vous parl *eriez*	*you should*, *would*, *could*, or *might speak*
ils parl *eraient*	*they should*, *would*, *could*, or *might speak*

-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*
J'aurais parl *é*, or *j'eusse parl é*	*I should*, *would*, *could*, or *might have spoken*
tu aurais parl *é*, or *tu eusses parl é*	*thou shouldst*, *wouldst couldst*, or *mightst have spoken*
il aurait parl *é*, or *il eût parl é*	*he should*, *would*, *could*, or *might have spoken*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous aurions parl *é*, or *nous eussions parl é* } *we should, would, could,* or *might have spoken*
vous auriez parl *é*, or *vous eussiez parl é* } *you should, would, could,* or *might have spoken*
ils auraient parl *é*, or *ils eussent parl é* } *they should, would, could,* or *might have spoken*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Parl *e*	*speak* or *do speak* (*thou*)
qu'il parl *e*	*let him speak*
parl *ons*	*let us speak*
parl *ez*	*speak* or *do speak* (*you*)
qu'ils parl *ent*	*let them speak*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je parl *e*	*that I may speak*
que tu parl *es*	*that thou mayst speak*
qu'il parl *e*	*that he may speak*
que nous parl *ions*	*that we may speak*
que vous parl *iez*	*that you may speak*
qu'ils parl *ent*	*that they may speak*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que j'aie parl *é*	*that I may have spoken*
que tu aies parl *é*	*that thou mayst have spoken*
qu'il ait parl *é*	*that he may have spoken*
que nous ayons parl *é*	*that we may have spoken*
que vous ayez parl *é*	*that you may have spoken*
qu'ils aient parl *é*	*that they may have spoken*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je parl *asse*	*that I might speak*
que tu parl *asses*	*that thou mightst speak*
qu'il parl *ât*	*that he might speak*
que nous parl *assions*	*that we might speak*
que vous parl *assiez*	*that you might speak*
qu'ils parl *assent*	*that they might speak*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse parl *é*	*that I might have spoken*
que tu eusses parl *é*	*that thou mightst have spoken*
qu'il eût parl *é*	*that he might have spoken*
que nous eussions parl *é*	*that we might have spoken*
que vous eussiez parl *é*	*that you might have spoken*
qu'ils eussent parl *é*	*that they might have spoken*

[8]*mur.* mûr. je*u*ne. jeûne. b*oi*te. boîte. *an*cre. *in*grat. *on*de. *un*, ame
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*an.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER *to speak.* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne pas parl *er* — *not to speak*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

N'avoir pas parl *é* — *not to have spoken*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

Ne parl *ant* pas — *not speaking*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

N'ayant pas parl *é* — *not having spoken*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je ne parl *e* pas — *I speak not, do not speak*, or *am not*
tu ne parl *es* pas — *thou speakest not, dost not speak*, or *art not*
il ne parl *e* pas — *he speaks not, does not speak*, or *is not*
nous ne parl *ons* pas — *we speak not, do not speak*, or *are not*
vous ne parl *ez* pas — *you speak not, do not speak*, or *are not*
ils ne parl *ent* pas — *they speak not, do not speak*, or *are not*

speaking

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Je n'ai pas parl *é* — *I have not spoken, did not speak*, or *have not*
tu n'as pas parl *é* — *thou hast not spoken, didst not speak*, or *hast not*
il n'a pas parl *é* — *he has not spoken, did not speak*, or *has not*
nous n'avons pas parl *é* — *we have not spoken, did not speak*, or *have not*
vous n'avez pas parl *é* — *you have not spoken, did not speak*, or *have not*
ils n'ont pas parl *é* — *they have not spoken, did not speak*, or *have not*

been speaking

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je ne parl *ais* pas — *I spoke not, did not speak*, or *was not*
tu ne parl *ais* pas — *thou spokest not, didst not speak*, or *wast not*
il ne parl *ait* pas — *he spoke not, did not speak*, or *was not*
nous ne parl *ions* pas — *we spoke not, did not speak*, or *were not*
vous ne parl *iez* pas — *you spoke not, did not speak*, or *were not*
ils ne parl *aient* pas — *they spoke not, did not speak*, or *were not*

speaking

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Je n'avais pas parl *é* — *I had not spoken*, or *had not been*
tu n'avais pas parl *é* — *thou hadst not spoken*, or *hadst not been*
il n'avait pas parl *é* — *he had not spoken*, or *had not been*
nous n'avions pas parl *é* — *we had not spoken*, or *had not been*
vous n'aviez pas parl *é* — *you had not spoken*, or *had not been*
ils n'avaient pas parl *é* — *they had not spoken*, or *had not been*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne parl *ai* pas	*I spoke not* or *did not speak*
tu ne parl *as* pas	*thou spokest not* or *didst not speak*
il ne parl *a* pas	*he spoke not* or *did not speak*
nous ne parl *âmes* pas	*we spoke not* or *did not speak*
vous ne parl *âtes* pas	*you spoke not* or *did not speak*
ils ne parl *èrent* pas	*they spoke not* or *did not speak*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas parl *é*	*I had not spoken*
tu n'eus pas parl *é*	*thou hadst not spoken*
il n'eut pas parl *é*	*he had not spoken*
nous n'eûmes pas parl *é*	*we had not spoken*
vous n'eûtes pas parl *é*	*you had not spoken*
ils n'eurent pas parl *é*	*they had not spoken*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne parl *erai* pas	*I shall* or *will not speak*
tu ne parl *eras* pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not speak*
il ne parl *era* pas	*he shall* or *will not speak*
nous ne parl *erons* pas	*we shall* or *will not speak*
vous ne parl *erez* pas	*you shall* or *will not speak*
ils ne parl *eront* pas	*they shall* or *will not speak*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas parl *é*	*I shall* or *will not have spoken*
tu n'auras pas parl *é*	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have spoken*
il n'aura pas parl *é*	*he shall* or *will not have spoken*
nous n'aurons pas parl *é*	*we shall* or *will not have spoken*
vous n'aurez pas parl *é*	*you shall* or *will not have spoken*
ils n'auront pas parl *é*	*they shall* or *will not have spoken*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne parl *erais* pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might*
tu ne parl *erais* pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst*
il ne parl *erait* pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might*
nous ne parl *erions* pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might*
vous ne parl *eriez* pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might*
ils ne parl *eraient* pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might*

not speak

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas parl *é*,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je n'eusse pas parl é*	or *might not have spoken*
tu n'aurais pas parl *é*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu n'eusses pas parl é*	or *mightst not have spoken*
il n'aurait pas parl *é*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il n'eût pas parl é*	or *might not have spoken*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am

nous n'aurions pas parl *é*	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous n'eussions pas parl é*	or *might not have spoken*
vous n'auriez pas parl *é*	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous n'eussiez pas parl é*	or *might not have spoken*
ils n'auraient pas parl *é*	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils n'eussent pas parl é*	or *might not have spoken*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne parl *e* pas	*speak not* or *do not speak* (*thou*)
qu'il ne parl *e* pas	*let him not speak*
ne parl *ons* pas	*let us not speak*
ne parl *ez* pas	*speak not* or *do not speak* (*you*)
qu'ils ne parl *ent* pas	*let them not speak*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne parl *e* pas	*that I may not speak*
que tu ne parl *es* pas	*that thou mayst not speak*
qu'il ne parl *e* pas	*that he may not speak*
que nous ne parl *ions* pas	*that we may not speak*
que vous ne parl *iez* pas	*that you may not speak*
qu'ils ne parl *ent* pas	*that they may not speak*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas parl *é*	*that I may not have spoken*
que tu n'aies pas parl *é*	*that thou mayst not have spoken*
qu'il n'ait pas parl *é*	*that he may not have spoken*
que nous n'ayons pas parl *é*	*that we may not have spoken*
que vous n'ayez pas parl *é*	*that you may not have spoken*
qu'ils n'aient pas parl *é*	*that they may not have spoken*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne parl *asse* pas	*that I might not speak*
que tu ne parl *asses* pas	*that thou mightst not speak*
qu'il ne parl *ât* pas	*that he might not speak*
que nous ne parl *assions* pas	*that we might not speak*
que vous ne parl *assiez* pas	*that you might not speak*
qu'ils ne parl *assent* pas	*that they might not speak*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas parl *é*	*that I might not have spoken*
que tu n'eusses pas parl *é*	*that thou mightst not have spoken*
qu'il n'eût pas parl *é*	*that he might not have spoken*
que nous n'eussions pas parl *é*	*that we might not have spoken*
que vous n'eussiez pas parl *é*	*that you might not have spoken*
qu'ils n'eussent pas parl *é*	*that they might not have spoken*

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER *to speak.* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

	PRESENT.
Parl *é*-je†	*do I speak* or *am I speaking*
parl *es*-tu	*dost thou speak* or *art thou speaking*
parl *e*-t-il	*does he speak* or *is he speaking*
parl *ons*-nous	*do we speak* or *are we speaking*
parl *ez*-vous	*do you speak* or *are you speaking*
parl *ent*-ils	*do they speak* or *are they speaking*

	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
Ai-je parl *é*	*have I spoken* or *did I speak*
as-tu parl *é*	*hast thou spoken* or *didst thou speak*
a-t-il parl *é*	*has he spoken* or *did he speak*
avons-nous parl *é*	*have we spoken* or *did we speak*
avez-vous parl *é*	*have you spoken* or *did you speak*
ont-ils parl *é*	*have they spoken* or *did they speak*

	IMPERFECT.
Parl *ais*-je	*did I speak* or *was I speaking*
parl *ais*-tu	*didst thou speak* or *wast thou speaking*
parl *ait*-il	*did he speak* or *was he speaking*
parl *ions*-nous	*did we speak* or *were we speaking*
parl *iez*-vous	*did you speak* or *were you speaking*
parl *aient*-ils	*did they speak* or *were they speaking*

	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
Avais-je parl *é*	*had I spoken* or *had I been speaking*
avais-tu parl *é*	*hadst thou spoken* or *hadst thou been speaking*
avait-il parl *é*	*had he spoken* or *had he been speaking*
avions-nous parl *é*	*had we spoken* or *had we been speaking*
aviez-vous parl *é*	*had you spoken* or *had you been speaking*
avaient-ils parl *é*	*had they spoken* or *had they been speaking*

	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Parl *ai*-je	*did I speak*
parl *as*-tu	*didst thou speak*
parl *a*-t-il	*did he speak*
parl *âmes*-nous	*did we speak*
parl *âtes*-vous	*did you speak*
parl *èrent*-ils	*did they speak*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn,* as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill,* as *lli,* in Wi*lli*am

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je parl *é*	*had I spoken*
eus-tu parl *é*	*hadst thou spoken*
eut-il parl *é*	*had he spoken*
eûmes-nous parl *é*	*had we spoken*
eûtes-vous parl *é*	*had you spoken*
eurent-ils parl *é*	*had they spoken*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Parl *erai*-je	*shall* or *will I speak*
parl *eras*-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou speak*
parl *era*-t-il	*shall* or *will he speak*
parl *erons*-nous	*shall* or *will we speak*
parl *erez*-vous	*shall* or *will you speak*
parl *eront*-ils	*shall* or *will they speak*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Aurai-je parl *é*	*shall* or *will I have spoken*
auras-tu parl *é*	*shalt* or *wilt thou have spoken*
aura-t-il parl *é*	*shall* or *will he have spoken*
aurons-nous parl *é*	*shall* or *will we have spoken*
aurez-vous parl *é*	*shall* or *will you have spoken*
auront-ils parl *é*	*shall* or *will they have spoken*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Parl *erais*-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I speak*
parl *erais*-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou speak*
parl *erait*-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he speak*
parl *erions*-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we speak*
parl *eriez*-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you speak*
parl *eraient*-iis	*should, would, could,* or *might they speak*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Aurais-je parl *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or *eussé-je parl é*	or *might I have spoken*
aurais-tu parl *é,*	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *eusses-tu parl é*	or *mightst thou have spoken*
aurait-il parl *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or *eût-il parl é*	or *might he have spoken*
aurions-nous parl *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or *eussions-nous parl é*	or *might we have spoken*
auriez-vous parl *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or *eussiez-vous parl é*	or *might you have spoken*
auraient-ils parl *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or eussent-ils parl é	or *might they have spoken*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
[2]at. arm. tub. aie. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

PARLER *to speak.* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Ne parl *é*-je pas	*do I not speak* or *am I not speaking*
ne parl *es*-tu pas	*dost thou not speak* or *art thou not speaking*
ne parl *e*-t-il pas	*does he not speak* or *is he not speaking*
ne parl *ons*-nous pas	*do we not speak* or *are we not speaking*
ne parl *ez*-vous pas	*do you not speak* or *are you not speaking*
ne parl *ent*-ils pas	*do they not speak* or *are they not speaking*

-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
N'ai-je pas parl *é*	*have I not spoken, did I not speak,* or *have I not been speaking*
n'as-tu pas parl *é*	*hast thou not spoken, didst thou not speak,* or *hast thou not been speaking*
n'a-t-il pas parl *é*	*has he not spoken, did he not speak.* or *has he not been speaking*
n'avons-nous pas parl *é*	*have we not spoken, did we not speak,* or *have we not been speaking*
n'avez-vous pas parl *é*	*have you not spoken, did you not speak* or *have you not been speaking*
n'ont-ils pas parl *é*	*have they not spoken, did they not speak,* or *have they not been speaking*

-H-	IMPERFECT.
Ne parl *ais*-je pas	*did I not speak* or *was I not speaking*
ne parl *ais*-tu pas	*didst thou not speak* or *wast thou not speaking*
ne parl *ait*-il pas	*did he not speak* or *was he not speaking*
ne parl *ions*-nous pas	*did we not speak* or *were we not speaking*
ne parl *iez*-vous pas	*did you not speak* or *were you not speaking*
ne parl *aient*-ils pas	*did they not speak* or *were they not speaking*

-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
N'avais-je pas parl *é*	*had I not spoken* or *had I not been*
n'avais-tu pas parl *é*	*hadst thou not spoken* or *hadst thou not been*
n'avait-il pas parl *é*	*had he not spoken* or *had he not been*
n'avions-nous pas parl *é*	*had we not spoken* or *had we not been*
n'aviez-vous pas parl *é*	*had you not spoken* or *had you not been*
n'avaient-ils pas parl *é*	*had they not spoken* or *had they not been*

speaking

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Ne parl *ai*-je pas	*did I not speak*
ne parl *as*-tu pas	*didst thou not speak*
ne parl *a*-t-il pas	*did he not speak*
ne parl *âmes*-nous pas	*did we not speak*
ne parl *âtes*-vous pas	*did you not speak*
ne parl *èrent*-ils pas	*did they not speak*

[e] *mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen. [f] *j*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas parl *é*	*had I not spoken*
n'eus-tu pas parl *é*	*hadst thou not spoken*
n'eut-il pas parl *é*	*had he not spoken*
n'eûmes-nous pas parl *é*	*had we not spoken*
n'eûtes-vous pas parl *é*	*had you not spoken*
n'eurent-ils pas parl *é*	*had they not spoken*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne parl *erai*-je pas	*shall* or *will I not speak*
ne parl *eras*-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not speak*
ne parl *era*-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not speak*
ne parl *erons*-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not speak*
ne parl *erez*-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not speak*
ne parl *eront*-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not speak*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas parl *é*	*shall* or *will I not have spoken*
n'auras-tu pas parl *é*	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have spoken*
n'aura-t-il-pas parl *é*	*shall* or *will he not have spoken*
n'aurons-nous pas parl *é*	*shall* or *will we not have spoken*
n'aurez-vous pas parl *é*	*shall* or *will you not have spoken*
n'auront-ils pas parl *é*	*shall* or *will they not have spoken*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne parl *erais*-je pas	*should, would, could,* or *might I*
ne parl *erais*-tu pas	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou*
ne parl *erait*-il pas	*should, would, could,* or *might he*
ne parl *erions*-nous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might we*
ne parl *eriez*-vous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might you*
ne parl *eraient*-ils pas	*should, would, could,* or *might they*

not speak

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas parl *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussé-je pas parl é*	or *might I not have spoken*
n'aurais-tu pas parl *é*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *n'eusses-tu pas parl é*	or *mightst thou not have spoken*
n'aurait-il pas parl *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eût-il pas parl é*	or *might he not have spoken*
n'aurions-nous pas parl *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussions-nous pas parl é*	or *might we not have spoken*
n'auriez-vous pas parl *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussiez-vous pas parl é*	or *might you not have spoken*
n'auraient-ils pas parl *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussent-ils pas parl é*	or *might they not have spoken*

Of Irregularities in some Verbs of the First Conjugation.

N. B. *What follows will be better studied after the pupil shall have learned the other three conjugations.*

88. Of the verbs of the *first conjugation*, that is, of all the verbs having the termination of the infinitive present, in *er*, (amounting to about 2500,) four only are, properly speaking, irregular; that is, cannot take the terminations of the model verb, *parler* to speak, in all their tenses and persons these verbs are, *s'en aller*, page112.—*aller*, page122.—*envoyer*, page123,—and *renvoyer*, conjugated like *envoyer*.

89. However, besides these four irregular verbs, there are some, which though generally classed among the regular verbs of the *first conjugation*, undergo some changes in the orthography of some of their tenses and persons; these irregularities deserve so much the more attention, as they are absolutely necessary to a correct pronunciation.

90. This subject has not been clearly explained in any books published for the use of the English pupil. The following directions will supply the deficiency:

91. Some of the verbs ending with *eler*—as, *appeler* to call, generally speaking, take a second *l*, in those tenses and persons only, in which the letter *l* is followed by *e, es, ent.* Those tenses and persons are the following:—

F	j'appelle	tu appelles	il appelle ils appellent
L	j'appellerai nous appellerons	tu appelleras vous appellerez	il appellera ils appelleront
N	j'appellerais nous appellerions	tu appellerais vous appelleriez	il appellerait ils appelleraient
F		appelle	qu'il appelle qu'ils appellent
Q	que j'appelle	que tu appelles	qu'il appelle qu'ils appellent.

92. Conjugate in the same manner:—*atteler* to put to—*amonceler* to heap—*chanceler* to stagger—*dételer* to unteam—*étinceler* to sparkle—*ficeler* to tie with pack thread—*niveler* to level—*rappeler* to recall—*renouveler* to renew.

93. Some other verbs, ending also with *eler*, instead of taking a second *l* in those tenses and persons, in which the letter *l* is followed by *e, es, ent*, take a *grave accent* upon the *e*, which precedes the *l*—as, *peler* to peal.

F	je pèle	tu pèles	il pèle ils pèlent
L	je pèlerai nous pèlerons	tu pèleras vous pèlerez	il pèlera ils pèleront
N	je pèlerais nous pèlerions	tu pèlerais vous pèleriez	il pèlerait ils pèleraient
P		pèle	qu'il pèle qu'ils pèlent
Q	que je pèle	que tu pèles	qu'il pèle qu'ils pèlent.

94. Conjugate in the same manner:—*bourreler* to torment—*congeler* to congeal—*dégeler* to thaw—*geler* to freeze—*harceler* to torment—*regeler* to freeze again

95. Some of the verbs ending with *eter*—as, *jeter* to throw, take a second *t*, in those tenses and persons only in which the letter *t* is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*.

F	je jette	tu jettes	il jette ils jettent
L	je jetterai nous jetterons	tu jetteras vous jetterez	il jettera ils jetteront
N	je jetterais nous jetterions	tu jetterais vous jetteriez	il jetterait ils jetteraient
P		jette	qu'il jette qu'ils jettent
Q	que je jette	que tu jettes	qu'il jette qu'ils jettent.

96. Conjugate in the same manner :—*cacheter* to seal—*décacheter* to unseal—*projeter* to project—*recacheter* to seal again.

97. Some other verbs, also ending with *eter*, instead of taking a second *t* in those tenses and persons in which the *t* is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*, take a *grave accent* upon the *e* which precedes the *t*—as, *acheter* to buy.

F	j'achète	tu achètes	il achète ils achètent
L	j'achèterai	tu achèteras	il achètera ils achèteront
N	j'achèterais	tu achèterais	il achèterait ils achèteraient
P		achète	qu'il achète qu'ils achètent
Q	que j'achète	que tu achètes	qu'il achète qu'ils achètent.

98 Conjugate in the same manner:—*colleter* to collar—*coqueter* to coquet—*décolleter* to uncover the neck—*étiqueter* to label—*suracheter* to overpay—*trompeter* to summon with sound of trumpet.

99. Conjugate also, in the same manner, all verbs ending with

ecer—as, *dépecer*	to carve,	ever—as, *achever*	to finish.
emer—as, *semer*	to sow,	evrer—as, *sevrer*	to wean
ener—as, *mener*	to lead,		

100. All verbs ending with

ébrer—as, *célébrer*	to celebrate,
écer—as, *rapiécer*	to piece,
écher—as, *lécher*	to lick,
éder—as, *posséder*	to possess,
égler—as, *régler*	to regulate,
égner—as, *régner*	to reign,
égrer—as, *réintégrer*	to reinstate
éguer—as, *alléguer*	to allege,
éler—as, *révéler*	to reveal,
émer—as, *blasphémer*	to blaspheme,
éner—as, *aliéner*	to alienate,
équer—as, *hypothéquer*	to mortgage,
érer—as, *espérer*	to hope,
éter—as, *inquiéter*	to make uneasy,
étrer—as, *pénétrer*	to penetrate

change the *acute accent* which is on the *e* of the last syllable but one, (the penultimate,) into a *grave accent*, in those tenses and persons in which that penultimate syllable is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*—as, *espérer* to hope.

F	j'espère	tu espères	il espère ils espèrent
L	j'espèrerai nous espèrerons	tu espèreras vous espèrerez	il espèrera ils espèrerons
N	j'espèrerais nous espèrerions	tu espèrerais vous espèreriez	il espèrerait ils espèreraient
P		espère	qu'il espère qu'ils espèrent
Q	que j'espère	que tu espères	qu'il espère qu'ils espèrent.

101. In verbs ending with *cer*—as, *avancer* to advance, a *cedilla*, that is a small comma, (ç) is put under the *c*, in those tenses and persons in which the *c* is followed by *a*, *o*, in order to preserve the soft sound the *c* has in the infinitive present, and in other tenses and persons. See page 11, Art. 40. *Cedilla.*

102. In verbs ending with *ger*—as, *négliger* to neglect; the *g* having the sound of *j*, an *e* mute must be put after the *g*, in those tenses and persons in which the *g* is followed by *a*, *o*; in order to preserve the sound of *j*, throughout the tenses.

103. In the verbs ending with

ayer—as,	*essayer*	to try,
éyer—as,	*grasséyer*	to speak thick,
oyer—as,	*employer*	to employ,
uyer—as,	*appuyer*	to support,

the *y* is changed into *i*, in those tenses and persons only, in which the *y* is followed by *e*, *es*, *ent*; but *y* is preserved when followed by any other letters, even when followed by *i*—as, *essayer* to try.

The pronunciation of this verb being very difficult, it is figured *under every person.*

-A- essayer,
é-sè-yé,

-C- essayant,
é-sè-yan,

-E- essayé,
é-sè-yé,

-F- j'essaie,
j.é-sè,
tu essaies,
tu é-sè,
il essaie,
il é-sè,
nous essayons,
nou z.é-sè-yon,
vous essayez,
vou z.é-sè-yé,
ils essaient.
il z.é-sè.

-H- j'essayais,
j.é-sè-yè,
tu essayais,
tu é-se-yè,
il essayait,
il e-sè-yè.
nous essayions,
nou z.é-se-vion,
vous essayiez,
vou z.é-sè-yié,
ils essayaient
il z.é-sè-yè.

-J-	j'essayai,	nous essayâmes,
	j.é-sè-yé,	nou z.é-sè-yam,
	tu essayas,	vous essayâtes,
	tu é-sè-yâ,	vou z.é-sè-yat,
	il essaya,	ils essayèrent.
	il é-sè-ya,	il z.é-sè-yèr.
-L-	j'essaierai,	nous essaierons,
	j.é-sè-ré,	nou z.é-sè-ron,
	tu essaieras	vous essaierez,
	tu é-sè-râ	vou z.é-sè-ré,
	il essaiera,	ils essaieront.
	il é-sè-ra,	il z.é-sè-ron.
-N-	j'essaierais,	nous essaierions,
	j.é-sè-rè,	nou z.é-sè-rion,
	tu essaierais,	vous essaieriez,
	tu é-sè-rè,	vou z.é-sè-rié,
	il essaierait,	ils essaieraient.
	il é-sè-rè,	il z.é-sè-rè.
-P-		essayons,
		é-sè-yon,
	essaie,	essayez,
	é-sè,	é-sè-yé,
	qu'il essaie,	qu'ils essaient.
	k.il é-sè,	k.il z.é-sè.
-Q-	que j'essaie,	que nous essayions,
	ke j.é-sè,	ke nou z.é-sè-yion,
	que tu essaies,	que vous essayiez,
	ke tu é-sè,	ke vou z.é sè-yié,
	qu'il essaie,	qu'ils essaient.
	k.il é-sè,	k.il z.é-sè.
-S-	que j'essayasse,	que nous essayassions,
	ke j.é-sè-yas,	ke nou z.é-sè-ya-sion,
	que tu essayasses,	que vous essayassiez,
	ke tu é-sè-yas	ke vou z.é-sè-ya-sié,
	qu'il essayât,	qu'ils essayassent.
	k.il é-sè-ya,	k.il z.é-sè-yas.

104. In verbs whose participle present ends with *uant*—as, *saluant*, from *saluer* to bow; a *diæresis* is put upon the *i*, thus, *ï*, to cause the *u* and *ï* to be pronounced separately in the first and second person plural of the imperfect of the indicative: *nous saluïons* we bowed—*vous saluïez* you bowed; and of the subjunctive present: *que nous saluïons* that we may bow—*que vous saluïez* that you may bow.

105. All the verbs of that kind are found in the first conjugation, except *conclure* to conclude—and *exclure* to exclude, which belong to the fourth conjugation.

Of the Second Conjugation.

106. The verbs of the second conjugation, like those of the first, are known by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

107. The present of the infinitive of the second conjugation has for termination *ir*—as, fin *ir* to finish.

108. All verbs whose present of the infinitive end with *ir*, to the amount of about 366, are of the second conjugation; and, if regular, are conjugated like *finir* to finish; which is hereafter conjugated to be used as a model.

109. There are in the second conjugation about 294 regular verbs which take the termination of *finir* to finish, and 92 irregular which are all conjugated in this volume, and which are to be found in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, page162.

110. To diminish the number of the irregular verbs of this conjugation, several schemes have been invented. Among others, Levizac, in his grammar, has divided the verbs of this conjugation into *four*, what he calls *branches;* this plan, which is not in accordance with any of our French grammars, affords no advantage over the old one, as every practical teacher must have found out, to his great annoyance; it is besides erroneous in many instances. I shall here mention some of the errors alluded to: page 151, Levizac's Grammar, sen *tir*, to feel, is there given as the model verb, of all the verbs composing the second *branch*, page 150, among which, are, dor *mir* to sleep—redor *mir* to sleep again—ser *vir* to serve; and several others.

Now taking any tense of the model verb, sen *tir* to feel; the present of the indicative, for instance, we shall have—

je sen *s*,	je dor *s*,	je ser *s*,
tu sen *s*,	tu dor *s*,	tu ser *s*,
il sen *t*,	il dor *t*,	il ser *t*,
nous sen *tons*,	nous dor *tons*,	nous ser *tons*,
vous sen *tez*,	vous dor *tez*,	vous ser *tez*,
ils sen *tent*,	ils dor *tent*,	ils ser *tent*.

Taking any other tense, the future, for instance, we shall have—

je sen *tirai*,	je dor *tirai*,	je ser *tirai*,
tu sen *tiras*,	tu dor *tiras*,	tu ser *tiras*,
il sen *tira*,	il dor *tira*,	il ser *tira*,
nous sen *tirons*,	nous dor *tirons*,	nous ser *tirons*
vous sen *tirez*,	vous dor *tirez*,	vous ser *tirez*,
ils sen *tiront*,	ils dor *tiront*,	ils ser *tiront*,

and so on for the other tenses, which are by no means correct. The fact is, that Levizac, deceived by the first three persons of the present of the indicative, which happened to be right, concluded, without further inquiry, that the rest would also be right

These faults, and a great many others, are in the first edition of Levizac's; since that first edition, the grammar has gone through *nine editions* in England, and through *seven* in America, and the same faults are still in it, although the preface of every edition announces that the work has been thoroughly *revised*, *corrected*, and *improved*, by the ablest masters.

111. *Hint.* The best way for a pupil to ascertain whether a verb ending in the present of the infinitive, with *ir*, is regular or irregular: he must look for it in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, given at page 162, if met there, the scholar will be referred to the page where it is conjugated; if not to be met in the above mentioned table, it is a regular verb, and is to be conjugated like the model verb, *finir* to finish.

112. Those who have already learned the verbs, will readily ascertain whether a verb of the second conjugation, is regular or irregular, if they remember that *issant* is the *termination* of the participle present, of all the regular verbs of the second conjugation.

113. Conjugate in the same manner—as, fin *ir* to finish, the following verbs:—

adouc *ir*	to soften,	gém *ir*	to groan,
compat *ir*	to sympathise,	noirc *ir*	to blacken
démol *ir*	to pull down,	pér *ir*	to perish,
éblou *ir*	to dazzle,	pun *ir*	to punish,
établ *ir*	to establish,	rempl *ir*	to fill,
fourn *ir*	to furnish,	sais *ir*	to seize.

114. For the formation of the compound tenses, see page 35, art. 86 and 87.

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR *to finish.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Fin *ir* — *to finish*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*

Avoir fin *i* — *to have finished*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

Fin *issant* — *finishing*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ayant fin *i* — *having finished*

-E- PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.

Fin *i* — *finished*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je fin *is*	*I finish, do finish,* or *am finishing*
tu fin *is*	*thou finishest, dost finish,* or *art finishing*
il fin *it*	*he finishes, does finish,* or *is finishing*
nous fin *issons*	*we finish, do finish,* or *are finishing*
vous fin *issez*	*you finish, do finish,* or *are finishing*
ils fin *issent*	*they finish, do finish,* or *are finishing*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*

J'ai fin *i*	*I have finished, did finish,* or *have been*
tu as fin *i*	*thou hast finished, didst finish,* or *hast been*
il a fin *i*	*he has finished, did finish,* or *has been*
nous avons fin *i*	*we have finished, did finish,* or *have been*
vous avez fin *i*	*you have finished, did finish,* or *have been*
ils ont fin *i*	*they have finished, did finish,* or *have been*

finishing

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je fin *issais*	*I finished, did finish,* or *was finishing*
tu fin *issais*	*thou finishedst, didst finish,* or *wast finishing*
il fin *issait*	*he finished, did finish,* or *was finishing*
nous fin *issions*	*we finished, did finish,* or *were finishing*
vous fin *issiez*	*you finished, did finish,* or *were finishing*
ils fin *issaient*	*they finished, did finish,* or *were finishing*

-I- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

J'avais fin *i*	*I had finished* or *had been finishing*
tu avais fin *i*	*thou hadst finished* or *hadst been finishing*
il avait fin *i*	*he had finished* or *had been finishing*
nous avions fin *i*	*we had finished* or *had been finishing*
vous aviez fin *i*	*you had finished* or *had been finishing*
ils avaient fin *i*	*they had finished* or *had been finishing*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
[4]j, as *s* in pleasure. *gn*, as *ni* in union. *ill*, as *lli* in William.

	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
-J-	
Je fin *is*	*I finished* or *did finish*
tu fin *is*	*thou finishedst* or *didst finish*
il fin *it*	*he finished* or *did finish*
nous fin *îmes*	*we finished* or *did finish*
vous fin *îtes*	*you finished* or *did finish*
ils fin *irent*	*they finished* or *did finish*
-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*
J'eus fin *i*	*I had finished*
tu eus fin *i*	*thou hadst finished*
il eut fin *i*	*he had finished*
nous eûmes fin *i*	*we had finished*
vous eûtes fin *i*	*you had finished*
ils eurent fin *i*	*they had finished*
-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.
Je fin *irai*	*I shall* or *will finish*
tu fin *iras*	*thou shalt* or *wilt finish*
il fin *ira*	*he shall* or *will finish*
nous fin *irons*	*we shall* or *will finish*
vous fin *irez*	*you shall* or *will finish*
ils fin *iront*	*they shall* or *will finish*
-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*
J'aurai fin *i*	*I shall* or *will have finished*
tu auras fin *i*	*thou shalt* or *wilt have finished*
il auras fin *i*	*he shall* or *will have finished*
nous aurons fin *i*	*we shall* or *will have finished*
vous aurez fin *i*	*you shall* or *will have finished*
ils auront fin *i*	*they shall* or *will have finished*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

	PRESENT.
-N-	
Je fin *irais*	*I should, would, could,* or *might finish*
tu fin *irais*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst finish*
il fin *irait*	*he should, would, could,* or *might finish*
nous fin *irions*	*we should, would, could,* or *might finish*
vous fin *iriez*	*you should, would, could,* or *might finish*
ils fin *iraient*	*they should, would, could,* or *might finish*
-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*
J'aurais fin *i*, or *j'eusse fin i*	*I should, would, could,* or *might have finished*
tu aurais fin *i*, or *tu eusses fin i*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst have finished*
il aurait fin *i*, or *il eût fin i*	*he should, would, could,* or *might have finished*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idoie. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
[2]at. arm. tub. aie. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous aurions fin *i*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous eussions fin i*	or *might have finished*
vous auriez fin *i*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous eussiez fin i*	or *might have finished*
ils auraient fin *i*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils eussent fin i*	or *might have finished*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Fin *is*	*finish (thou)*
qu'il fin *isse*	*let him finish*
fin *issons*	*let us finish*
fin *issez*	*finish (you)*
qu'ils fin *issent*	*let them finish*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je fin *isse*	*that I may finish*
que tu fin *isses*	*that thou mayst finish*
qu'il fin *isse*	*that he may finish*
que nous fin *issions*	*that we may finish*
que vous fin *issiez*	*that you may finish*
qu'ils fin *issent*	*that they may finish*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que j'aie fin *i*	*that I may have finished*
que tu aies fin *i*	*that thou mayst have finished*
qu'il ait fin *i*	*that he may have finished*
que nous ayons fin *i*	*that we may have finished*
que vous ayez fin *i*	*that you may have finished*
qu'ils aient fin *i*	*that they may have finished*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je fin *isse*	*that I might finish*
que tu fin *isses*	*that thou mightst finish*
qu'il fin *ît*	*that he might finish*
que nous fin *issions*	*that we might finish*
que vous fin *issiez*	*that you might finish*
qu'ils fin *issent*	*that they might finish*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse fin *i*	*that I might have finished*
que tu eusses fin *i*	*that thou mightst have finished*
qu'il eût fin *i*	*that he might have finished*
que nous eussions fin *i*	*that we might have finished*
que vous eussiez fin *i*	*that you might have finished*
qu'ils eussent fin *i*	*that they might have finished*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR *to finish.* *(Negatively)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.	
Ne pas fin *ir*	*not to finish*	
-B-	PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*	
N'avoir pas fin *i*	*not to have finished*	
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.	
Ne fin *issant* pas	*not finishing*	
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.	
N'ayant pas fin *i*	*not having finished*	

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.	
Je ne fin *is* pas	*I finish not, do not finish*, or *am not*	finishing
tu ne fin *is* pas	*thou finishest not, dost not finish*, or *art not*	
il ne fin *it* pas	*he finishes not, does not finish*, or *is not*	
nous ne fin *issons* pas	*we finish not, do not finish*, or *are not*	
vous ne fin *issez* pas	*you finish not, do not finish*, or *are not*	
il ne fin *issent* pas	*they finish not, do not finish*, or *are not*	
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*	
Je n'ai pas fin *i*	*I have not finished, did not finish*, or *have not*	been finishing
tu n'as pas fin *i*	*thou hast not finished, didst not finish*, or *hast not*	
il n'a pas fin *i*	*he has not finished, did not finish*, or *has not*	
nous n'avons pas fin *i*	*we have not finished, did not finish*, or *have not*	
vous n'avez pas fin *i*	*you have not finished, did not finish*, or *have not*	
ils n'ont pas fin *i*	*they have not finished, did not finish*, or *have not*	
-H-	IMPERFECT	
Je ne fin *issais* pas	*I finished not, did not finish*, or *was*	not finishing
tu ne fin *issais* pas	*thou finishedst not, didst not finish*, or *wast*	
il ne fin *issait* pas	*he finished not, did not finish*, or *was*	
nous ne fin *issions* pas	*we finished not, did not finish*, or *were*	
vous ne fin *issiez* pas	*you finished not, did not finish*, or *were*	
ils ne fin *issaient* pas	*they finished not, did not finish*, or *were*	
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*	
Je n'avais pas fin *i*	*I had not finished* or *had not been*	finishing
tu n'avais pas fin *i*	*thou hadst not finished* or *hadst not been*	
il n'avait pas fin *i*	*he had not finished* or *had not been*	
nous n'avions pas fin *i*	*we had not finished* or *had not been*	
vous n'aviez pas fin *i*	*you had not finished* or *had not been*	
ils n'avaient pas fin *i*	*they had not finished* or *had not been*	

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne fin *is* pas	*I finished not* or *did not finish*
tu ne fin *is* pas	*thou finishedst not* or *didst not finish*
il ne fin *it* pas	*he finished not* or *did not finish*
nous ne fin *îmes* pas	*we finished not* or *did not finish*
vous ne fin *îtes* pas	*you finished not* or *did not finish*
ils ne fin *irent* pas	*they finished not* or *did not finish*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas fin *i*	*I had not finished*
tu n'eus pas fin *i*	*thou hadst not finished*
il n'eût pas fin *i*	*he had not finished*
nous n'eûmes pas fin *i*	*we had not finished*
vous n'eûtes pas fin *i*	*you had not finished*
ils n'eurent pas fin *i*	*they had not finished*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne fin *irai* pas	*I shall* or *will not finish*
tu ne fin *iras* pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not finish*
il ne fin *ira* pas	*he shall* or *will not finish*
nous ne fin *irons* pas	*we shall* or *will not finish*
vous ne fin *irez* pas	*you shall* or *will not finish*
ils ne fin *iront* pas	*they shall* or *will not finish*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je n'aurai pas fin *i*	*I shall* or *will not have finished*
tu n'auras pas fin *i*	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have finished*
il n'aura pas fin *i*	*he shall* or *will not have finished*
nous n'aurons pas fin *i*	*we shall* or *will not have finished*
vous n'aurez pas fin *i*	*you shall* or *will not have finished*
ils n'auront pas fin *i*	*they shall* or *will not have finished*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne fin *irais* pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might*
tu ne fin *irais* pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst*
il ne fin *irait* pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might*
nous ne fin *irions* pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might*
vous ne fin *iriez* pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might*
ils ne fin *iraient* pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might*

not finish

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas fin *i*,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je n'eusse pas fin i*	or *might not have finished*
tu n'aurais pas fin *i*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu n'eusses pas fin i*	or *mightst not have finished,*
il n'aurait pas fin *i*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il n'eût pas fin i*	or *might not have finished*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boîte. boîte. *an*cre. *in*grat. *on*de. *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

nous n'aurions pas fin *i*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous n'eussions pas fin i*	or *might not have finished*
vous n'auriez pas fin *i*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous n'eussiez pas fin i*	or *might not have finished*
ils n'auraient pas fin *i*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils n'eussent pas fin i*	or *might not have finished*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne fin *is* pas	*finish not* or *do not finish*	(*thou*)
qu'il ne fin *isse* pas	*let him not finish*	
ne fin *issons* pas	*let us not finish*	
ne fin *issez* pas	*finish not* or *do not finish*	(*you*)
qu'ils ne fin *issent* pas	*let them not finish*	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne fin *isse* pas	*that I may not finish*
que tu ne fin *isses* pas	*that thou mayst not finish*
qu'il ne fin *isse* pas	*that he may not finish*
que nous ne fin *issions* pas	*that we may not finish*
que vous ne fin *issiez* pas	*that you may not finish*
qu'ils ne fin *issent* pas	*that they may not finish*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas fin *i*	*that I may not have finished*
que tu n'aies pas fin *i*	*that thou mayst not have finished*
qu'il n'ait pas fin *i*	*that he may not have finished*
que nous n'ayons pas fin *i*	*that we may not have finished*
que vous n'ayez pas fin *i*	*that you may not have finished*
qu'ils n'aient pas fin *i*	*that they may not have finished*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne fin *isse* pas	*that I might not finish*
que tu ne fin *isses* pas	*that thou mightst not finish*
qu'il ne fin *ît* pas	*that he might not finish*
que nous ne fin *issions* pas	*that we might not finish*
que vous ne fin *issiez* pas	*that you might not finish*
qu'ils ne fin *issent* pas	*that they might not finish*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas fin *i*	*that I might not have finished*
que tu n'eusses pas fin *i*	*that thou mightst not have finished*
qu'il n'eût pas fin *i*	*that he might not have finished*
que nous n'eussions pas fin *i*	*that we might not have finished*
que vous n'eussiez pas fin *i*	*that you might not have finished*
qu'ils n'eussent pas fin *i*	*that they might not have finished*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR *to finish* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Fin *is*-je	*do I finish* or *am I finishing*
fin *is*-tu	*dost thou finish* or *art thou finishing*
fin *it*-il	*does he finish* or *is he finishing*
fin *issons*-nous	*do we finish* or *are we finishing*
fin *issez*-vous	*do you finish* or *are you finishing*
fin *issent*-ils	*do they finish* or *are they finishing*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ai-je fin *i*	*have I finished* or *did I finish*
as-tu fin *i*	*hast thou finished* or *didst thou finish*
a-t-il fin *i*	*has he finished* or *did he finish*
avons-nous fin *i*	*have we finished* or *did we finish*
avez-vous fin *i*	*have you finished* or *did you finish*
ont-ils fin *i*	*have they finished* or *did they finish*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Fin *issais*-je	*did I finish* or *was I finishing*
fin *issais*-tu	*didst thou finish* or *wast thou finishing*
fin *issait*-il	*did he finish* or *was he finishing*
fin *issions*-nous	*did we finish* or *were we finishing*
fin *issiez*-vous	*did you finish* or *were you finishing*
fin *issaient*-ils	*did they finish* or *were they finishing*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

avais-je fin *i*	*had I finished* or *had I been finishing*
avais-tu fin *i*	*hadst thou finished* or *hadst thou been finishing*
avait-il fin *i*	*had he finished* or *had he been finishing*
avions-nous fin *i*	*had we finished* or *had we been finishing*
aviez-vous fin *i*	*had you finished* or *had you been finishing*
avaient-ils fin *i*	*had they finished* or *had they been finishing*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE

Fin *is*-je	*did I finish*
fin *is*-tu	*didst thou finish*
fin *it*-il	*did he finish*
fin *îmes*-nous	*did we finish*
fin *îtes*-vous	*did you finish*
fin *irent*-ils	*did they finish*

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boîte.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *an.* *amen*
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*
Eus-je fin *i*	*had I finished*
eus-tu fin *i*	*hadst thou finished*
eut-il fin *i*	*had he finished*
eûmes-nous fin *i*	*had we finished*
eûtes-vous fin *i*	*had you finished*
eurent-ils fin *i*	*had they finished*

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.
Fin *irai*-je	*shall* or *will I finish*
fin *iras*-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou finish*
fin *ira*-t-il	*shall* or *will he finish*
fin *irons*-nous	*shall* or *will we finish*
fin *irez*-vous	*shall* or *will you finish*
fin *iront*-ils	*shall* or *will they finish*

-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*
Aurai-je fin *i*	*shall* or *will I have finished*
auras-tu fin *i*	*shalt* or *wilt thou have finished*
aura-t-il fin *i*	*shall* or *will he have finished*
aurons-nous fin *i*	*shall* or *will we have finished*
aurez-vous fin *i*	*shall* or *will you have finished*
auront-ils fin *i*	*shall* or *will they have finished*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.
Fin *irais*-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I finish*
in *irais*-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou finish*
in *irait*-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he finish*
in *irions*-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we finish*
in *iriez*-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you finish*
n *iraient*-ils	*should, would, could,* or *might they finish*

-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*
Aurais-je fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussé-je fin i*	or *might I have finished*
aurais-tu fin *i*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *eusses-tu fin i*	or *mightst thou have finished*
aurait-il fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eût-il fin i*	or *might he have finished*
aurions-nous fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussions-nous fin i*	or *might we have finished*
auriez-vous fin *i*	*should, would, could,*
or *eussiez-vous fin i*	or *might you have finished*
auraient-ils fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussent-ils fin i*	or *might they have finished*

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

FINIR *to finish.* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

	PRESENT.
Ne fin *is*-je pas	*do I not finish* or *am I not finishing*
ne fin *is*-tu pas	*dost thou not finish* or *art thou not finishing*
ne fin *it*-il pas	*does he not finish* or *is he not finishing*
ne fin *issons*-nous pas	*do we not finish* or *are we not finishing*
ne fin *issez*-vous pas	*do you not finish* or *are you not finishing*
ne fin *issent*-ils pas	*do they not finish* or *are they not finishing*

	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
N'ai-je pas fin *i*	*have I not finished, did I not finish,* or *have I not been finishing*
n'as-tu pas fin *i*	*hast thou not finished, didst thou not finish,* or *hast thou not been finishing*
n'a-t-il pas fin *i*	*has he not finished, did he not finish,* or *has he not been finishing*
n'avons-nous pas fin *i*	*have we not finished, did we not finish,* or *have we not been finishing*
n'avez-vous pas fin *i*	*have you not finished, did you not finish,* or *have you not been finishing*
n'ont-ils pas fin *i*	*have they not finished, did they not finish* or *have they not been finishing*

	IMPERFECT.
Ne fin *issais*-je pas	*did I not finish* or *was I not finishing*
ne fin *issais*-tu pas	*didst thou not finish* or *wast thou not finishing*
ne fin *issait*-il pas	*did he not finish* or *was he not finishing*
ne fin *issions*-nous pas	*did we not finish* or *were we not finishing*
ne fin *issiez*-vous pas	*did you not finish* or *were you not finishing*
ne fin *issaient*-ils pas	*did they not finish* or *were they not finishing*

	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
N'avais-je pas fin *i*	*had I not finished* or *had I not been*
n'avais-tu pas fin *i*	*hadst thou not finished* or *hadst thou not been*
n'avait-il pas fin *i*	*had he not finished* or *had he not been*
n'avions-nous pas fin *i*	*had we not finished* or *had we not been*
n'aviez-vous pas fin *i*	*had you not finished* or *had you not been*
n'avaient-ils pas fin *i*	*had they not finished* or *had they not been*

finishing

	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Ne fin *is*-je pas	*did I not finish*
ne fin *is*-tu pas	*didst thou not finish*
ne fin *it*-il pas	*did he not finish*
ne fin *îmes*-nous pas	*did we not finish*
ne fin *îtes*-vous pas	*did you not finish*
ne fin *irent*-ils pas	*did they not finish*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas fin *i*	*had I not finished*
n'eus-tu pas fin *i*	*hadst thou not finished*
n'eut-il pas fin *i*	*had he not finished*
n'eûmes-nous pas fin *i*	*had we not finished*
n'eûtes-vous pas fin *i*	*had you not finished*
n'eurent-ils pas fin *i*	*had they not finished*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne fin *irai*-je pas	*shall* or *will I not finish*
ne fin *iras*-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not finish*
ne fin *ira*-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not finish*
ne fin *irons*-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not finish*
ne fin *irez*-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not finish*
ne fin *iront*-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not finish*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas fin *i*	*shall* or *will I not have finished*
n'auras-tu pas fin *i*	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have finished*
n'aura-t-il-pas fin *i*	*shall* or *will he not have finished*
n'aurons-nous pas fin *i*	*shall* or *will we not have finished*
n'aurez-vous pas fin *i*	*shall* or *will you not have finished*
n'auront-ils pas fin *i*	*shall* or *will they not have finished*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne fin *irais*-je pas	*should, would, could,* or *might I*
ne fin *irais*-tu pas	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou*
ne fin *irait*-il pas	*should, would, could,* or *might he*
ne fin *irions*-nous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might we*
ne fin *iriez*-vous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might you*
ne fin *iraient*-ils pas	*should, would, could,* or *might they*

not finish

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussé-je pas fin i*	or *might I not have finished*
n'aurais-tu pas fin *i*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *n'eusses-tu pas fin i*	or *mightst thou not have finished*
n'aurait-il pas fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eût-il pas fin i*	or *might he not have finished*
n'aurions-nous pas fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussions-nous pas fin i*	or *might we not have finished*
n'auriez-vous pas fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussiez-vous pas fin i*	or *might you not have finished*
n'auraient-ils pas fin *i*,	*should, would, could,*
or *n'eussent-ils pas fin i*	or *might they not have finished*

Of the Third Conjugation.

115. The verbs of the third conjugation, like those of the first and of the second, are known by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

116. The present of the infinitive, of the third conjugation, has for its termination, *oir*—as, *recevoir* to receive.

117. All verbs whose present of the infinitive ends with *oir*, to the amount of 230, are of the third conjugation; and if regular, are conjugated like *recevoir* to receive; which is hereafter conjugated, to be used as a model.

118. There are in the third conjugation 7 regular verbs only. The regular verbs of this conjugation are easily known, from the irregular ones; they all 7 end with *evoir*, in the present of the infinitive.

119. There are about 223 irregular verbs in this conjugation; they are all conjugated in this volume, and are to be found in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, page162.

120. List of the 7 regular verbs, all conjugated like rec *evoir* to receive.

aperc *evoir*	to perceive,
conc *evoir*	to conceive
déc *evoir*	to deceive,
perc *evoir*	to collect taxes
rec *evoir*	to receive,
d *evoir*	to owe,
red *evoir*	to owe again.

121. When the termination of any tense or person begins with *a*, *o*, *u*, the *c*, which terminates the *radical part* of the five regular verbs—

aperc *evoir*	to perceive,
conc *evoir*	to conceive,
déc *evoir*	to deceive,
perc *evoir*	to collect taxes,
rec *evoir*	to receive,

take a *cedilla*, thus ç, to change the hard sound the *c* would have before *a*, *o*, *u*, into the soft sound it has in the infinitive present, and in other tenses and persons, when before *e*.

122. In conjugating d *evoir* to owe, and red *evoir* to owe again, on rec *evoir*, care must be taken to observe what is the *radical part* of these two verbs.

123. In the participle past dû owed, from *devoir* to owe, a circumflex accent is put over the *u* to distinguish dû owed, from *du* of the.

124. The circumflex accent is put on *dû* owed, in the masculine singular only.

125. The participle past *redu* owed again, from *redevoir* to owe again, takes no accent.

126. *Apercevoir* to perceive, which is an active verb, is very often used as a reflected verb: thus, *s'apercevoir* (to perceive one's self of) that is, to notice. We say, *apercevoir quelque chose* to perceive something—but we say, *s'apercevoir de quelque chose* (to perceive one's self of something,) that is, to notice something. It must be remembered that the verb *s'apercevoir*, requires the preposition *de* of, before its object, whereas *apercevoir* being an active verb, requires no preposition before its object.

127. *Apercevoir* to perceive, forms its compound tenses with *avoir* to have, like all other active verbs.

128. *S'apercevoir* to notice, is conjugated like *apercevoir* to perceive, with this difference; that, like all other reflected verbs, it forms its compound tenses with *être* to be, and takes two pronouns. See *se lever* to rise, page 92.

129. For the formation of the compound tenses, see page 35. art. 86 and 87

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR *to receive.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Rec *evoir*	*to receive*
-B-	PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present*
Avoir reç *u*	*to have received*
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.
Rec *evant*	*receiving*
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
Ayant reç *u*	*having received*
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.
Reç *u*	*received*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Je reç *ois*	*I receive, do receive,* or *am receiving*
tu reç *ois*	*thou receivest, dost receive,* or *art receiving*
il reç *oit*	*he receives, does receive,* or *is receiving*
nous rec *evons*	*we receive, do receive,* or *are receiving*
vous rec *evez*	*you receive, do receive,* or *are receiving*
ils reç *oivent*	*they receive, do receive,* or *are receiving*
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
J'ai reç *u*	*I have received, did receive,* or *have been*
tu as reç *u*	*thou hast received, didst receive,* or *hast been*
il a reç *u*	*he has received, did receive,* or *has been*
nous avons reç *u*	*we have received, did receive,* or *have been*
vous avez reç *u*	*you have received, did receive,* or *hast been*
ils ont reç *u*	*they have received, did receive,* or *have been*
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Je rec *evais*	*I received, did receive,* or *was receiving*
tu rec *evais*	*thou receivedst, didst receive,* or *wast receiving*
il rec *evait*	*he received, did receive,* or *was receiving*
nous rec *evions*	*we received, did recewe,* or *were receiving*
vous rec *eviez*	*you received, did receive,* or *were receiving*
ils rec *evaient*	*they received, did receive,* or *were receiving*
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
J'avais reç *u*	*I had received* or *had been receiving*
tu avais reç *u*	*thou hadst received* or *hadst been receiving*
il avait reç *u*	*he had received* or *had been receiving*
nous avions reç *u*	*we had received* or *had been receiving*
vous aviez reç *u*	*you had received* or *had been receiving*
ils avaient reç *u*	*they had received* or *had been receiving*

receiving

[3]*mur.* *mûr* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boite.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]*j*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli* in Wi*lli*am.

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je reç *us*	*I received* or *did receive*
tu reç *us*	*thou receivedst* or *didst receive*
il reç *ut*	*he received* or *did receive*
nous reç *ûmes*	*we received* or *did receive*
vous reç *ûtes*	*you received* or *did receive*
ils reç *urent*	*they received* or *did receive*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

J'eus reç *u*	*I had received*
tu eus reç *u*	*thou hadst received*
il eut reç *u*	*he had received*
nous eûmes reç *u*	*we had received*
vous eûtes reç *u*	*you had received*
ils eurent reç *u*	*they had received*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je rec *evrai*	*I shall* or *will receive*
tu rec *evras*	*thou shalt* or *wilt receive*
il rec *evra*	*he shall* or *will receive*
nous rec *evrons*	*we shall* or *will receive*
vous rec *evrez*	*you shall* or *will receive*
ils rec *evront*	*they shall* or *will receive*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

J'aurai reç *u*	*I shall* or *will have received*
tu auras reç *u*	*thou shalt* or *wilt have received*
il aura reç *u*	*he shall* or *will have received*
nous aurons reç *u*	*we shall* or *will have received*
vous aurez reç *u*	*you shall* or *will have received*
ils auront reç *u*	*they shall* or *will have received*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je rec *evrais*	*I should, would, could,* or *might receive*
tu rec *evrais*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst receive*
il rec *evrait*	*he should, would, could,* or *might receive*
nous rec *evrions*	*we should, would, could,* or *might receive*
vous rec *evriez*	*you should, would, could,* or *might receive*
ils rec *evraient*	*they should, would, could,* or *might receive*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present

J'aurais reç *u,*	*I should, would, could,*
or *j'eusse reç u*	or *might have received*
tu aurais reç *u,*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst*
or *tu eusses reç u*	or *mightst, have received*
il aurait reç *u,*	*he should, would, could*
or *il eût reç u*	or *might have received*

nous aurions reç *u*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous eussions reç u*	or *might have received*
vous auriez reç *u*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous eussiez reç u*	or *might have received*
ils auraient reç *u*,	*they should, would, could*
or *ils eussent reç u*	or *might have received*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Reç *ois*	*receive (thou)*
qu'il reç *oive*	*let him receive*
rec *evons*	*let us receive*
rec *evez*	*receive (you)*
qu'ils reç *oivent*	*let them receive*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je reç *oive*	*that I may receive*
que tu reç *oives*	*that thou mayst receive*
qu'il reç *oive*	*that he may receive*
que nous rec *evions*	*that we may receive*
que vous rec *eviez*	*that you may receive*
qu'ils reç *oivent*	*that they may receive*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

que j'aie reç *u*	*that I may have received*
que tu aies reç *u*	*that thou mayst have received*
qu'il ait reç *u*	*that he may have received*
que nous ayons reç *u*	*that we may have received*
que vous ayez reç *u*	*that you may have received*
qu'ils aient reç *u*	*that they may have received*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je reç *usse*	*that I might receive*
que tu reç *usses*	*that thou mightst receive*
qu'il reç *ût*	*that he might receive*
que nous reç *ussions*	*that we might receive*
que vous reç *ussiez*	*that you might receive*
qu'ils reç *ussent*	*that they might receive*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que j'eusse reç *u*	*that I might have received*
que tu eusses reç *u*	*that thou mightst have received*
qu'il eût reç *u*	*that he might have received*
que nous eussions reç *u*	*that we might have received*
que vous eussiez reç *u*	*that you might have received*
qu'ils eussent reç *u*	*that they might have received*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR *to receive.* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne pas rec *evoir* — *not to receive*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

N'avoir pas reç *u* — *not to have received*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

Ne rec *evant* pas — *not receiving*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

N'ayant pas reç *u* — *not having received*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je ne reç *ois* pas	*I receive not, do not receive*, or *am not*	receiving
tu ne reç *ois* pas	*thou receivest not, dost not receive*, or *art not*	
il ne reç *oit* pas	*he receives not, does not receive*, or *is not*	
nous ne rec *evons* pas	*we receive not, do not receive*, or *are not*	
vous ne rec *evez* pas	*you receive not, do not receive*, or *are not*	
ils ne reç *oiv-ent pas*	*they receive not, do not receive*, or *are not*	

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Je n'ai pas reç *u*	*I have not received, did not receive*, or *have not*	been receiving
tu n'as pas reç *u*	*thou hast not received, didst not receive*, or *hast not*	
il n'a pas reç *u*	*he has not received, did not receive*, or *has not*	
nous n'avons pas reç *u*	*we have not received, did not receive*, or *have not*	
vous n'avez pas reç *u*	*you have not received, did not receive*, or *have not*	
ils n'ont pas reç *u*	*they have not received, did not receive*, or *have not*	

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je ne rec *evais* pas	*I received not, did not receive*, or *was*	not receiving
tu ne rec *evais* pas	*thou receivedst not, didst not receive*, or *wast*	
il ne rec *evait* pas	*he received not, did not receive*, or *was*	
nous ne rec *evions* pas	*we received not, did not receive*, or *were*	
vous ne rec *eviez* pas	*you received not, did not receive*, or *were*	
ils ne rec *evaient* pas	*they received not, did not receive*, or *were*	

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Je n'avais pas reç *u*	*I had not received* or *had not been*	receiving
tu n'avais pas reç *u*	*thou hadst not received* or *hadst not been*	
il n'avait pas reç *u*	*he had not received* or *had not been*	
nous n'avions pas reç *u*	*we had not received* or *had not been*	
vous n'aviez pas reç *u*	*you had not received* or *had not been*	
ils n'avaient pas reç *u*	*they had not received* or *had not been*	

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne reç *us* pas	*I received not* or *did not receive*
tu ne reç *us* pas	*thou receivedst not* or *didst not receive*
il ne reç *ut* pas	*he received not* or *did not receive*
nous ne reç *ûmes* pas	*we received not* or *did not receive*
vous ne reç *ûtes* pas	*you received not* or *did not receive*
ils ne reç *urent* pas	*they received not* or *did not receive*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je n'eus pas reç *u*	*I had not received*
tu n'eus pas reç *u*	*thou hadst not received*
il n'eut pas reç *u*	*he had not received*
nous n'eûmes pas reç *u*	*we had not received*
vous n'eûtes pas reç *u*	*you had not received*
ils n'eurent pas reç *u*	*they had not received*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne rec *evrai* pas	*I shall* or *will not receive*
tu ne rec *evras* pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not receive*
il ne rec *evra* pas	*he shall* or *will not receive*
nous ne rec *evrons* pas	*we shall* or *will not receive*
vous ne rec *evrez* pas	*you shall* or *will not receive*
ils ne rec *evront* pas	*they shall* or *will not receive*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future

Je n'aurai pas reç *u*	*I shall* or *will not have received*
tu n'auras pas reç *u*	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have received*
il n'aura pas reç *u*	*he shall* or *will not have received*
nous n'aurons pas reç *u*	*we shall* or *will not have received*
vous n'aurez pas reç *u*	*you shall* or *will not have received*
ils n'auront pas reç *u*	*they shall* or *will not have received*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne rec *evrais* pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might not*
tu ne rec *evrais* pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst not*
il ne rec *evrait* pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might not*
nous ne rec *evrions* pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might not*
vous ne rec *evriez* pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might not*
ils ne rec *evraient* pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might not*

receive

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je n'aurais pas reç *u,*	*I should, would, could,*
or *je n'eusse pas reç u*	or *might not have received*
tu n'aurais pas reç *u,*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu n'eusses pas reç u*	or *mightst not have received*
il n'aurait pas reç *u,*	*he should, would, could,*
or *il n'eût pas reç u*	or *might not have received*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

nous n'aurions pas reç *u*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous n'eussions pas reç u*	or *might not have received*
vous n'auriez pas reç *u*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous n'eussiez pas reç u*	or *might not have received*
ils n'auraient pas reç *u*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils n'eussent pas reç u*	or *might not have received*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne reç *ois* pas	*receive not* or *do not receive*	(*thou*)
qu'il ne reç *oive* pas	*let him not receive*	
ne rec *evons* pas	*let us not receive*	
ne rec *evez* pas	*receive not* or *do not receive*	(*you*)
qu'ils ne reç *oivent* pas	*let them not receive*	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne reç *oive* pas	*that I may not receive*
que tu ne reç *oives* pas	*that thou mayst not receive*
qu'il ne reç *oive* pas	*that he may not receive*
que nous ne rec *evions* pas	*that we may not receive*
que vous ne rec *eviez* pas	*that you may not receive*
qu'ils ne reç *oivent* pas	*that they may not receive*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que je n'aie pas reç *u*	*that I may not have received*
que tu n'aies pas reç *u*	*that thou mayst not have received*
qu'il n'ait pas reç *u*	*that he may not have received*
que nous n'ayons pas reç *u*	*that we may not have received*
que vous n'ayez pas reç *u*	*that you may not have received*
qu'ils n'aient pas reç *u*	*that they may not have received*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne reç *usse* pas	*that I might not receive*
que tu ne reç *usses* pas	*that thou mightst not receive*
qu'il ne reç *ût* pas	*that he might not receive*
que nous ne reç *ussions* pas	*that we might not receive*
que vous ne reç *ussiez* pas	*that you might not receive*
qu'ils ne reç *ussent* pas	*that they might not receive*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas reç *u*	*that I might not have received*
que tu n'eusses pas reç *u*	*that thou mightst not have received*
qu'il n'eût pas reç *u*	*that he might not have received*
que nous n'eussions pas reç *u*	*that we might not have received*
que vous n'eussiez pas reç *u*	*that you might not have received*
qu'ils n'eussent pas reç *u*	*that they might not have received*

[1]*ami.* *âne.* *te.* *écrit.* *mère.* *être.* *idole.* *gîte.* *opéra.* *ôter.* *tout.* *voûte.*
[2]*at.* *arm.* *tub.* *ale.* *mare.* *there.* *idiom.* *eel.* *opera.* *over.* *too.* *fool.*

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR *to receive.* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Reç *ois*-je	*do I receive* or *am I receiving*
reç *ois*-tu	*dost thou receive* or *art thou receiving*
reç *oit*-il	*does he receive* or *is he receiving*
rec *evons*-nous	*do we receive* or *are we receiving*
rec *evez*-vous	*do you receive* or *are you receiving*
reç *oivent*-ils	*do they receive* or *are they receiving*

-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
Ai-je reç *u*	*have I received* or *did I receive*
as-tu reç *u*	*hast thou received* or *didst thou receive*
a-t-il reç *u*	*has he received* or *did he receive*
avons-nous reç *u*	*have we received* or *did we receive*
avez-vous reç *u*	*have you received* or *did you receive*
ont-ils reç *u*	*have they received* or *did they receive*

-H-	IMPERFECT.
Rec *evais*-je	*did I receive* or *was I receiving*
rec *evais*-tu	*didst thou receive* or *wast thou receiving*
rec *evait*-il	*did he receive* or *was he receiving*
rec *evions*-nous	*did we receive* or *were we receiving*
rec *eviez*-vous	*did you receive* or *were you receiving*
rec *evaient*-ils	*did they receive* or *were they receiving*

-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
Avais-je reç *u*	*had I received* or *had I been receiving*
avais-tu reç *u*	*hadst thou received* or *hadst thou been receiving*
avait-il reç *u*	*had he received* or *had he been receiving*
avions-nous reç *u*	*had we received* or *had we been receiving*
aviez-vous reç *u*	*had you received* or *had you been receiving*
avaient-ils reç *u*	*had they received* or *had they been receiving*

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Reç *us*-je	*did I receive*
reç *us*-tu	*didst thou receive*
reç *ut*-il	*did he receive*
reç *ûmes*-nous	*did we receive*
reç *ûtes*-vous	*did you receive*
reç *urent*-ils	*did they receive*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli* in Wi*lli*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je reç *u*	*had I received*
eus-tu reç *u*	*hadst thou received*
eut-il reç *u*	*had he received*
eûmes-nous reç *u*	*had we received*
eûtes-vous reç *u*	*had you received*
eurent-ils reç *u*	*had they received*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Rec *evrai*-je	*shall* or *will I receive*
rec *evras*-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou receive*
rec *evra*-t-il	*shall* or *will he receive*
rec *evrons*-nous	*shall* or *will we receive*
rec *evrez*-vous	*shall* or *will you receive*
rec *evront*-ils	*shall* or *will they receive*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Aurai-je reç *u*	*shall* or *will I have received*
auras-tu reç *u*	*shalt* or *wilt thou have received*
aura-t-il reç *u*	*shall* or *will he have received*
aurons-nous reç *u*	*shall* or *will we have received*
aurez-vous reç *u*	*shall* or *will you have received*
auront-ils reç *u*	*shall* or *will they have received*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Rec *evrais*-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I receive*
rec *evrais*-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou receive*
rec *evrait*-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he receive*
rec *evrions*-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we receive*
rec *evriez*-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you receive*
rec *evraient*-ils	*should, would, could,* or *might they receive*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Aurais-je reç *u*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussé-je reç u*	or *might I have received*
aurais-tu reç *u*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *eusses-tu reç u*	or *mightst thou have received*
aurait-il reç *u*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eût-il reç u*	or *might he have received*
aurions-nous reç *u*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussions-nous reç u*	or *might we have received*
auriez-vous reç *u*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussiez-vous reç u*	or *might you have received*
auraient-ils reç *u*,	*should, would, could,*
or *eussent-ils reç u*	or *might they have received*

'ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
'at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

RECEVOIR *to receive.* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Ne reç *ois*-je pas	*do I not receive* or *am I not receiving*
ne reç *ois*-tu pas	*dost thou not receive* or *art thou not receiving*
ne reç *oit*-il pas	*does he not receive* or *is he not receiving*
ne rec *evons*-nous pas	*do we not receive* or *are we not receiving*
ne rec *evez*-vous pas	*do you not receive* or *are you not receiving*
ne reç *oivent*-ils pas	*do they not receive* or *are they not receiving*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present

N'ai-je pas reç *u*	*have I not received, did I not receive,* or *have I not been receiving*
n'as-tu pas reç *u*	*hast thou not received, didst thou not receive* or *hast thou not been receiving*
n'a-t-il pas reç *u*	*has he not received, did he not receive,* or *has he not been receiving*
n'avons-nous pas reç *u*	*have we not received, did we not receive,* or *have we not been receiving*
n'avez-vous pas reç *u*	*have you not received, did you not receive,* or *have you not been receiving*
n'ont-ils pas reç *u*	*have they not received, did they not receive* or *have they not been receiving*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Ne rec *evais*-je pas	*did I not receive* or *was I not receiving*
ne rec *evais*-tu pas	*didst thou not receive* or *wast thou not receiving*
ne rec *evait*-il pas	*did he not receive* or *was he not receiving*
ne rec *evions*-nous pas	*did we not receive* or *were we not receiving*
ne rec *eviez*-vous pas	*did you not receive* or *were you not receiving*
ne rec *evaient*-ils pas	*did they not receive* or *were they not receiving*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas reç *u*	*had I not received* or *had I not been*
n'avais-tu pas reç *u*	*hadst thou not received* or *hadst thou not been*
n'avait-il pas reç *u*	*had he not received* or *had he not been*
n'avions-nous pas reç *u*	*had we not received* or *had we not been*
n'aviez-vous pas reç *u*	*had you not received* or *had you not been*
n'avaient-ils pas reç *u*	*had they not received* or *had they not been*

receiving

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne reç *us*-je pas	*did I not receive*
ne reç *us*-tu pas	*didst thou not receive*
ne reç *ut*-il pas	*did he not receive*
ne reç *ûmes*-nous pas	*did we not receive*
ne reç *ûtes*-vous pas	*did you not receive*
ne reç *ûrent*-ils pas	*did they not receive*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]*i*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas reç *u*	*had I not received*
n'eus-tu pas reç *u*	*hadst thou not received*
n'eut-il pas reç *u*	*had he not received*
n'eûmes-nous pas reç *u*	*had we not received*
n'eûtes-vous pas reç *u*	*had you not received*
n'eurent-ils pas reç *u*	*had they not received*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne rec *evrai*-je pas	*shall* or *will I not receive*
ne rec *evras*-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not receive*
ne rec *evra*-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not receive*
ne rec *evrons*-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not receive*
ne rec *evrez*-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not receive*
ne rec *evront*-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not receive*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas reç *u*	*shall* or *will I not have received*
n'auras-tu pas reç *u*	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have received*
n'aura-t-il pas reç *u*	*shall* or *will he not have received*
n'aurons-nous pas reç *u*	*shall* or *will we not have received*
n'aurez-vous pas reç *u*	*shall* or *will you not have received*
n'auront-ils pas reç *u*	*shall* or *will they not have received*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne rec *evrais*-je pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might I*
ne rec *evrais*-tu pas	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*, or *mightst thou*
ne rec *evrait*-il pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might he*
ne rec *evrions*-nous pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might we*
ne rec *evriez*-vous pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might you*
ne rec *evraient*-ils pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might they*

not receive

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas reç *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eusssé-je pas reç u*	or *might I not have received*
n'aurais-tu pas reç *u*,	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*,
or *n'eusses-tu pas reç u*	or *mightst*, *thou not have received*
n'aurait-il pas reç *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eût-il pas reç u*	or *might he not have receivea*
n'aurions-nous pas reç *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussions-nous pas reç u*	or *might we not have received*
n'auriez-vous pas reç *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussiez-vous pas reç u*	or *might you not have received*
n'auraient-ils pas reç *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussent-ils pas reç u*	or *might they not have received*

Of the Fourth Conjugation.

130. The verbs of the fourth conjugation, like those of the first, second, and third, are known by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

131. The present of the infinitive of the fourth conjugation has for its termination *re*—as, vend *re* to sell.

132. All verbs, whose present of the infinitive ends with *re*, to the amount of about 240, are of the fourth conjugation; and if regular, are conjugated like vend *re* to sell, which is hereafter conjugated, to be used as a model.

133. There are in the fourth conjugation 40 regular verbs which take the termination of vend *re* to sell.

134. They are—

append *re*	to hang up,	mord *re*	to bite,
attend *re*	to wait, to expect,	morfond *re*	to make very cold,
	to wait for,	parfond *re*	to melt equally,
confond *re*	to confound,	pend *re*	to hang,
correspond *re*	to correspond,	perd *re*	to lose, to destroy,
défend *re*	to defend,	pond *re*	to lay eggs,
	to prohibit,	pourfend *re*	to split, to cut in two,
	to forbid,	prétend *re*	to pretend,
démord *re*	to give up,	refend *re*	to cleave again,
	to cease biting,		to split again,
dépend *re*	to take down,	refond *re*	to melt again,
	to depend on or upon,		to cast again,
descend *re*	to go down,	remord *re*	to bite again,
	to descend,	rend *re*	to render, to
	to take down,		return, to give back,
détend *re*	to unbend,	répand *re*	to spill, to shed,
	to loosen,	répond *re*	to answer, to reply
détord *re*	to untwist,	retord *re*	to twist again,
distend *re*	to distend,	revend *re*	to sell again,
	to extend,	sous-entend *re*	to understand,
entend *re*	to hear,		not to express,
	to understand,	survend *re*	to sell too dear,
	to comprehend,	suspend *re*	to suspend,
épand *re*	to spread,	tend *re*	to hold out,
étand *re*	to spread,		to stretch out,
fend *re*	to cleave,		to bend,
	to split,	tond *re*	to shear,
fond *re*	to melt,	tord *re*	to twist,
mévend *re*	to undersell,	vend *re*	to sell.

135. All the other verbs whose present of the infinitive ends with *re*, and not included in the above list, are irregular, and are to be found in the alphabetical list of all the irregular verbs, page 162

136. Those who have already learned the verbs, will readily ascertain, without having recourse to the above table of the regular verbs, whether a verb, whose present of the infinitive ends with *re*, is regular or irregular, if they remember that *dant* terminates the participle present of all the regular verbs of the fourth conjugation.

137. The third person singular of the present of the indicative of this conjugation, consists of the *radical part* of the verb only, it does not take any termination.

138. Observe, that when *vendre* to sell, like several other verbs, mentioned in page 8, art. 65, is conjugated Interrogatively or Negatively and Interrogatively, the first person singular of the present of the indicative, is not conjugated like other verbs; for the reason of this deviation, see page 8, art. 65.

139. For the formation of the compound tenses, see page 35, art. 86 and 87.

·ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE *to sell.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Vend *re*	*to sell*
-B-	PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*
Avoir vend *u*	*to have sold*
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,
Vend *ant*	*selling*
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
Ayant vend *u*	*having sold*
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.
Vend *u*	*sold*

INDICATIVE MOOD

-F-	PRESENT.
Je vend *s*	*I sell, do sell,* or *am selling*
tu vend *s*	*thou sellest, dost sell,* or *art selling*
il vend	*he sells, does sell,* or *is selling*
nous vend *ons*	*we sell, do sell,* or *are selling*
vous vend *ez*	*you sell, do sell,* or *are selling*
ils vend *ent*	*they sell, do sell,* or *are selling*
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE *or compound of the present.*
J'ai vend *u*	*I have sold, did sell,* or *have been selling*
tu as vend *u*	*thou hast sold, didst sell,* or *hast been selling*
il a vend *u*	*he has sold, did sell,* or *has been selling*
nous avons vend *u*	*we have sold, did sell,* or *have been selling*
vous avez vend *u*	*you have sold, did sell,* or *have been selling*
ils ont vend *u*	*they have sold, did sell,* or *have been selling*
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Je vend *ais*	*I sold, did sell,* or *was selling*
tu vend *ais*	*thou soldest, didst sell,* or *wast selling*
il vend *ait*	*he sold, did sell,* or *was selling*
nous vend *ions*	*we sold, did sell,* or *were selling*
vous vend *iez*	*you sold, did sell,* or *were selling*
ils vend *aient*	*they sold, did sell,* or *were selling*
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
J'avais vend *u*	*I had sold* or *had been selling*
tu avais vend *u*	*thou hadst sold* or *hadst been selling*
il avait vend *u*	*he had sold* or *had been selling*
nous avions vend *u*	*we had sold* or *had been selling*
vous aviez vend *u*	*you had sold* or *had been selling*
ils avaient vend *u*	*they had sold* or *had been selling*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen. [4]*j*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-J-

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je vend *is*	*I sold* or *did sell*
tu vend *is*	*thou soldest*, or *didst sell*
il vend *it*	*he sold* or *did sell*
nous vend *îmes*	*we sold* or *did sell*
vous vend *îtes*	*you sold* or *did sell*
ils vend *irent*	*they sold* or *did sell*

-K-

PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

J'eus vend *u*	*I had sold*
tu eus vend *u*	*thou hadst sold*
il eut vend *u*	*he had sold*
nous eûmes vend *u*	*we had sold*
vous eûtes vend *u*	*you had sold*
ils eurent vend *u*	*they had sold*

-L-

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je vend *rai*	*I shall* or *will sell*
tu vend *ras*	*thou shalt* or *wilt sell*
il vend *ra*	*he shall* or *will sell*
nous vend *rons*	*we shall* or *will sell*
vous vend *rez*	*you shall* or *will sell*
ils vend *ront*	*they shall* or *will sell*

-M-

FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

J'aurai vend *u*	*I shall* or *will have sold*
tu auras vend *u*	*thou shalt* or *wilt have sold*
il aura vend *u*	*he shall* or *will have sold*
nous aurons vend *u*	*we shall* or *will have sold*
vous aurez vend *u*	*you shall* or *will have sold*
ils auront vend *u*	*they shall* or *will have sold*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-

PRESENT.

Je vend *rais*	*I should, would, could*, or *might sell*
tu vend *rais*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst*, or *mightst sel.*
il vend *rait*	*he should, would, could*, or *might sell*
nous vend *rions*	*we should, would, could*, or *might sell*
vous vend *riez*	*you should, would, could*, or *might sell*
ils vend *raient*	*they should, would, could*, or *might sell*

-O-

PAST,
or compound of the present.

J aurais vend *u*,	*I should, would, could,*
or *j'eusse vend u*	or *might have sold*
tu aurais vend *u*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu eusses vend u*	or *mightst have sold*
il aurait vend *u*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il eût vend u*	or *might have sold*

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Je ne vend *is* pas	*I sold not* or *did not sell*
tu ne vend *is* pas	*thou soldest not* or *didst not sell*
il ne vend *it* pas	*he sold not* or *did not sell*
nous ne vend *îmes* pas	*we sold not* or *did not sell*
vous ne vend *îtes* pas	*you sold not* or *did not sell*
ils ne vend *irent* pas	*they sold not* or *did not sell*

-K-	PRETERIT ANTERIOR, *or compound of the preterit.*
Je n'eus pas vend *u*	*I had not sold*
tu n'eus pas vend *u*	*thou hadst not sold*
il n'eut pas vend *u*	*he had not sold*
nous n'eûmes pas vend *u*	*we had not sold*
vous n'eûtes pas vend *u*	*you had not sold*
ils n'eurent pas vend *u*	*they had not sold*

-L-	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.
Je ne vend *rai* pas	*I shall* or *will not sell*
tu ne vend *ras* pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not sell*
il ne vend *ra* pas	*he shall* or *will not sell*
nous ne vend *rons* pas	*we shall* or *will not sell*
vous ne vend *rez* pas	*you shall* or *will not sell*
ils ne vend *ront* pas	*they shall* or *will not sell*

-M-	FUTURE ANTERIOR, *or compound of the future.*
Je n'aurai pas vend *u*	*I shall* or *will not have sold*
tu n'auras pas vend *u*	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have sold*
il n'aura pas vend *u*	*he shall* or *will not have sold*
nous n'aurons pas vend *u*	*we shall* or *will not have sold*
vous n'aurez pas vend *u*	*you shall* or *will not have sold*
ils n'auront pas vend *u*	*they shall* or *will not have sold*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N-	PRESENT.
Je ne vend *rais* pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might*
tu ne vend *rais* pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst*
il ne vend *rait* pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might*
nous ne vend *rions* pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might*
vous ne vend *riez* pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might*
ils ne vend *raient* pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might*

all not

-O-	PAST, *or compound of the present.*
Je n'aurais pas vend *u*,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je n'eusse pas vend u*	or *might not have sold*
tu n'aurais pas vend *u*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu n'eusses pas vend u*	or *mightst not have sold*
il n'aurait pas vend *u*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il n'eût pas vend u*	or *might not have sold*

[3]*mur.* m*û*r *jeune.* je*ü*ne. bo*î*te. bo*î*te. *ancre.* *in*grat. *onde.* *un.* amen. [4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli* in Wi*lli*am.

nous n'aurions pas vend *u*,	*we should, would, could.*
or *nous n'eussions pas vend u*	or *might not have sold*
vous n'auriez pas vend *u*	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous n'eussiez pas vend u*	or *might not have sold*
ils n'auraient pas vend *u*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils n'eussent pas vend u*	or *might not have sold*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD

Ne vend *s* pas	*sell not* or *do not sell* (*thou*)
qu'il ne vend *e* pas	*let him not sell*
ne vend *ons* pas	*let us not sell*
ne vend *ez* pas	*sell not* or *do not sell* (*you*)
qu'ils ne vend *ent* pas	*let them not sell*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne vend *e* pas	*that I may not sell*
que tu ne vend *es* pas	*that thou mayst not sell*
qu'il ne vend *e* pas	*that he may not sell*
que nous ne vend *ions* pas	*that we may not sell*
que vous ne vend *iez* pas	*that you may not sell*
qu'ils ne vend *ent* pas	*that they may not sell*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je n'aie pas vend *u*	*that I may not have sold*
que tu n'aies pas vend *u*	*that thou mayst not have sold*
qu'il n'ait pas vend *u*	*that he may not have sold*
que nous n'ayons pas vend *u*	*that we may not have sold*
que vous n'ayez pas vend *u*	*that you may not have sold*
qu'ils n'aient pas vend *u*	*that they may not have sold*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne vend *isse* pas	*that I might not sell*
que tu ne vend *isses* pas	*that thou mightst not sell*
qu'il ne vend *ît* pas	*that he might not sell*
que nous ne vend *issions* pas	*that we might not sell*
que vous ne vend *issiez* pas	*that you might not sell*
qu'ils ne vend *issent* pas	*that they might not sell*

-T- PLUPERFECT.
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je n'eusse pas vend *u*	*that I might not have sold*
que tu n'eusses pas vend *u*	*that thou mightst not have sold*
qu'il n'eût pas vend *u*	*that he might not have sold*
que nous n'eussions pas vend *u*	*that we might not have sold*
que vous n'eussiez pas vend *u*	*that you might not have sold*
qu'ils n'eussent pas vend *u*	*that they might not have sold*

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
²at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE *to sell.* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Est-ce que je vend *s*†	*do I sell* or *am I selling*
vend *s*-tu	*dost thou sell* or *art thou selling*
vend-il	*does he sell* or *is he selling*
vend *ons*-nous	*do we sell* or *are we selling*
vend *ez*-vous	*do you sell* or *are you selling*
vend *ent*-ils	*do they sell* or *are they selling*

-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
Ai-je vend *u*	*have I sold* or *did I sell*
as-tu vend *u*	*hadst thou sold* or *didst thou sell*
a-t-il vend *u*	*has he sold* or *did he sell*
avons-nous vend *u*	*have we sold* or *did we sell*
avez-vous vend *u*	*have you sold* or *did you sell*
ont-ils vend *u*	*have they sold* or *did they sell*

-H-	IMPERFECT.
Vend *ais*-je	*did I sell* or *was I selling*
vend *ais*-tu	*didst thou sell* or *wast thou selling*
vend *ait*-il	*did he sell* or *was he selling*
vend *ions*-nous	*did we sell* or *were we selling*
vend *iez*-vous	*did you sell* or *were you selling*
vend *aient*-ils	*did they sell* or *were they selling*

-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
Avais-je vend *u*	*had I sold* or *had I been selling*
avais-tu vend *u*	*hadst thou sold* or *hadst thou been selling*
avait-il vend *u*	*had he sold* or *had he been selling*
avions-nous vend *u*	*had we sold* or *had we been selling*
aviez-vous vend *u*	*had you sold* or *had you been selling*
avaient-ils vend *u*	*had they sold* or *had they been selling*

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Vend *is*-je	*did I sell*
vend *is*-tu	*didst thou sell*
vend *it*-il	*did he sell*
vend *îmes*-nous	*did we sell*
vend *îtes*-vous	*did you sell*
vend *irent*-ils	*did they sell*

†See page 8, art. 65

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-K- IRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Eus-je vend *u*	*had I sold*
eus-tu vend *u*	*hadst thou sold*
eut-il vend *u*	*had he sold*
eûmes-nous vend *u*	*had we sold*
eûtes-vous vend *u*	*had you sold*
eurent-ils vend *u*	*had they sold*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Vend *rai*-je	*shall* or *will I sell*
vend *ras*-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou sell*
vend *ra*-t-il	*shall* or *will he sell*
vend *rons*-nous	*shall* or *will we sell*
vend *rez*-vous	*shall* or *will you sell*
vend *ront*-ils	*shall* or *will they sell*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Aurai-je vend *u*	*shall* or *will I have sold*
auras-tu vend *u*	*shalt* or *wilt thou have sold*
aura-t-il vend *u*	*shall* or *will he have sold*
aurons-nous vend *u*	*shall* or *will we have sold*
aurez-vous vend *u*	*shall* or *will you have sold*
auront-il vend *u*	*shall* or *will they have sold*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Vend *rais*-je	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might I sell*
vend *rais*-tu	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*, or *mightst thou sell*
vend *rait*-il	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might he sell*
vend *rions*-nous	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might we sell*
vend *riez*-vous	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might you sell*
vend *raient*-ils	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might they sell*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present

Aurais-je vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *eussé-je vend u*	or *might I have sold*
aurais-tu vend *u*,	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*,
or *eusses-tu vend u*	or *mightst thou have sold*
aurait-il vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *eût-il vend u*	or *might he have sold*
aurions-nous vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *eussions-nous vend u*	or *might we have sold*
auriez-vous vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *eussiez-vous vend u*	or *might you have sold*
auraient-ils vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *eussent-ils vend u*	or *might they have sold*

CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERB.

VENDRE *to sell.* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Est-ce que je ne vend *s* pas	*do I not sell* or *am I not selling*
ne vend *s*-tu pas	*dost thou not sell* or *art thou not selling*
ne vend-il pas	*does he not sell* or *is he not selling*
ne vend *ons*-nous pas	*do we not sell* or *are we not selling*
ne vend *ez*-vous pas	*do you not sell* or *are you not selling*
ne vend *ent*-ils pas	*do they not sell* or *are they not selling*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

N'ai-je pas vend *u*	*have I not sold, did I not sell,* or *have I not been selling*
n'as-tu pas vend *u*	*hast thou not sold, didst thou not sell,* or *hast thou not been selling*
n'a-t-il pas vend *u*	*has he not sold, did he not sell,* or *has he not been selling*
n'avons-nous pas vend *u*	*have we not sold, did we not sell,* or *have we not been selling*
n'avez-vous pas vend *u*	*have you not sold, did you not sell,* or *have you not been selling*
n'ont-ils pas vend *u*	*have they not sold, did they not sell,* or *have they not been selling*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Ne vend *ais*-je pas	*did I not sell* or *was I not selling*
ne vend *ais*-tu pas	*didst thou not sell* or *wast thou not selling*
ne vend *ait*-il pas	*did he not sell* or *was he not selling*
ne vend *ions*-nous pas	*did we not sell* or *were we not selling*
ne vend *iez*-vous pas	*did you not sell* or *were you not selling*
ne vend *aient*-ils pas	*did they not sell* or *were they not selling*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

N'avais-je pas vend *u*	*had I not sold* or *had I not been*
n'avais-tu pas vend *u*	*hadst thou not sold* or *hadst thou not been*
n'avait-il pas vend *u*	*had he not sold*, or *had he not been*
n'avions-nous pas vend *u*	*had we not sold* or *had we not been*
n'aviez-vous pas vend *u*	*had you not sold* or *had you not been*
n'avaient-ils pas vend *u*	*had they not sold* or *had they not been*

selling

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne vend *is*-je pas	*did I not sell*
ne vend *is*-tu pas	*didst thou not sell*
ne vend *it*-il pas	*did he not sell*
ne vend *îmes* nous pas	*did we not sell*
ne vend *îtes*-vous pas	*did you not sell*
ne vend *irent*-ils pas	*did they not sell*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in pleasure. *gn*, as ni in union. *ill*, as *lli*, in William

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

N'eus-je pas vend *u*	*had I not sold*
n'eus-tu pas vend *u*	*hadst thou not sold*
n'eut-il pas vend *u*	*had he not sold*
n'eûmes-nous pas vend *u*	*had we not sold*
n'eûtes-vous pas vend *u*	*had you not sold*
n'eurent-ils pas vend *u*	*had they not sold*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne vend *rai*-je pas	*shall* or *will I not sell*
ne vend *ras*-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not sell*
ne vend *ra*-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not sell*
ne vend *rons*-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not sell*
ne vend *rez*-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not sell*
ne vend *ront*-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not sell*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

N'aurai-je pas vend *u*	*shall* or *will I not have sold*
n'auras-tu pas vend *u*	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have sold*
n'aura-t-il pas vend *u*	*shall* or *will he not have sold*
n'aurons-nous pas vend *u*	*shall* or *will we not have sold*
n'aurez-vous pas vend *u*	*shall* or *will you not have sold*
n'auront-ils pas vend *u*	*shall* or *will they not have sold*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne vend *rais*-je pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might I*
ne vend *rais*-tu pas	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*, or *mightst thou*
ne vend *rait*-il pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might he*
ne vend *rions*-nous pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might we*
ne vend *riez*-vous pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might you*
ne vend *raient*-ils pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might they*

not sell

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

N'aurais-je pas vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussé-je pas vend u*	or *might I not have sold*
n'aurais-tu pas vend *u*,	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*,
or *n'eusses-tu pas vend u*	or *mightst thou not have sold*
n'aurait-il pas vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eût-il pas vend u*	or *might he not have sold*
n'aurions-nous pas vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussions-nous pas vend u*	or *might we not have sold*
n'auriez-vous pas vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussiez-vous pas vend u*	or *might you not have sold*
n'auraient-ils pas vend *u*,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *n'eussent-ils pas vend u*	or *might they not have sold*

1*st*, nous nous secourons l'un l'autre *we assist one another.*

Mary and *Sarah* will say,
2*d*, nous nous secourons l'une l'autre *we assist one another.*

John, *Joseph*, *Paul*, and any number of others will say,
3*d*, nous nous secourons les uns les autres *we assist one another*

Mary, *Sarah*, *Rebecca*, and any number of others will say,
4*th*, nous nous secourons les unes les autres *we assist one another.*

156. Remark that when two persons only, are the nominatives or subjects of the verb, *one another*, is put in the singular in French; and if both persons, or one only, is of the masculine gender, *one another* is rendered by *l'un l'autre* as in the 1st example; but if both persons are of the feminine gender, *one another* is rendered by *l'une l'autre*, as in the 2d example.

157. When more than two persons are the nominatives or subjects of the verbs, then *one another* is put in the plural in French; and if all the persons, or one only, is of the masculine gender, *one another* is rendered by *les uns les autres*, as in the 3d example; but if all the persons are of the feminine gender, *one another* is rendered by *les unes les autres*, as in the 4th example.

158. A list of Verbs, which, though not admitting in English, the pronouns *one's-self*, *myself*, *thyself*, *himself*, *herself*, *ourselves*, *yourselves*, *themselves*, are nevertheless reflected in French.

to abstain	s'abstenir,	*to break loose*	se déchaîner,
to agree	s'accorder,	*to catch cold*	s'enrhumer,
to apply	s'adresser,	*to care for*	se soucier,
to bathe	se baigner,	*to complain*	se plaindre,
to bear up against	se raidir,	*to come forward*	s'avancer,
to be angry	se fâcher,	*to confer*	s'aboucher,
to be offended	se fâcher,	*to congeal*	se figer,
to become liquid	se liquéfier,	*to creep into*	se glisser,
to be dying	se mourir,	*to delight in*	se plaire,
to be eager	s'empresser,	*to delight in*	se complaire,
to be eclipsed	s'éclipser,	*to diminish*	s'apetisser,
to begin to thrive	se remplumer,	*to desist*	se désister,
to be moved	s'attendrir,	*to discharge*	s'acquitter,
to be obstinate	s'opiniâtrer,	*to discourse with,*	s'entretenir,
to be out of conceit with	se dégoûter,	*to distrust*	se défier,
to be renewed	se renouveler,	*to determine*	se déterminer,
to be resolved	se résoudre,	*to elapse*	s'écouler,
to be silent	se taire,	*to endeavour*	s'efforcer,
to beware	se garder,	*to exclaim*	se récrier,
to blow	s'épanouir,	*to expect*	s'attendre,
to boast	se vanter,	*to evaporate*	s'évaporer,
		to fade away	se flétrir,

to faint away	s'évanouir,
to fall asleep	s'endormir,
to fall asleep again	se rendormir,
to fall furiously upon	s'acharner,
to fall tooth and nail upon	s'acharner,
to fancy	se figurer,
to fancy	s'imaginer,
to new feather	se remplumer,
to flock in crowds	s'attrouper,
to flow out	s'écouler,
to fly away	s'envoler,
to fly into a passion	s'emporter,
to gangrene	se gangrener,
to get intoxicated	s'enivrer,
to get palsied	se paraliser,
to get preferment	s'avancer,
to get up	se lever,
to get weary	s'ennuyer,
to give over	se désister,
to give up	se démettre,
to go away	s'en aller,
to go forward	s'avancer,
to go to bed	se coucher,
to grieve	s'attrister,
to grow better	s'amender,
to grow bold	s'enhardir,
to grow drowsy	s'assoupir,
to grow familiar	se familiariser,
to grow impatient	s'impatienter
to grow milder	se radoucir
to grow poor	s'appauvrir,
to grow proud	s'enorgueillir,
to grow rich	s'enrichir,
to grow tired	se lasser,
to heal	se guérir,
to inquire	s'enquérir,
to intermeddle	s'entremettre,
to intermeddle	s'ingérer,
to keep from	se garder,
o kneel down	s'agenouiller,
to laugh at	se moquer
to lay hold of	se saisir,
to league	se liguer,
to lean on one's elbow	s'accouder,
to lean upon	s'appuyer,
to make haste	se dépêcher,
to make haste	se hâter
to make one's escape	s'évader,
to make one's escape	s'échapper,
to make an alliance	s'allier,
to marry	se marier
to meddle with	se mêler,
to melt	se fondre,
to mistake	se méprendre,
to mistrust	se méfier,
to move forward	s'avancer,
to mutiny	se mutiner,
to oppose,	s'opposer,
to overflow	se déborder,
to paint	se farder,
to perceive	s'apercevoir
to persist	s'obstiner,
to putrefy	se putréfier,
to quit one's country	s'expatrier,
to rebel	se révolter,
to recant	se dédire,
to rejoice	se réjouir,
to remember	se souvenir,
to remember	se ressouvenir,
to repent	se repantir,
to resign	se démettre,
to retract	se rétracter,
to rise	se lever,
to run into debt	s'endetter,
to run away	s'enfuir
to seize	se saisir,
to sell	se vendre,
to set off	s'acheminer
to shrink	s'apetisser,
to sit down	s'asseoir,
to sit down at table	s'attabler,
to slip	se glisser,
to stay	s'arrêter,
to steal away	s'esquiver,
to stick to	s'attacher,
to stiffen	se raidir,
to stoop	se baisser,
to stop	s'arrêter,
to strive	s'efforcer,
to struggle	se débattre,
to submit	se soumettre,
to subscribe	s'abonner,
to surrender	se rendre,
to take a strong fancy	s'entêter,
to take delight in	se plaire,
to take offence	se formaliser,
to take pet	se piquer,
to take refuge	se réfugier,
to take rest	se reposer,
to take root	s'enraciner.
to trust	se fier,
to vanish away	s'éclipser,
to walk	se promener,
to withdraw	se retirer,
to wonder	s'étonner,
to wonder	s'émerveiller,

[1]ami. îne. té. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER *to rise.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A-	PRESENT.
Se lev *er*	*to rise*
-B-	PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*
S'être lev *é*	*to have risen*
-C-	PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,
Se lev *ant*	*rising*
-D-	COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
S'étant lev *é*	*having risen*
-E-	PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.
Lev *é*	*risen*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Je me lèv *e*	*I rise, do rise,* or *am rising*
tu te lèv *es*	*thou risest, dost rise,* or *art rising*
il se lèv *e*	*he rises, does rise,* or *is rising*
nous nous lev *ons*	*we rise, do rise,* or *are rising*
vous vous lev *ez*	*you rise, do rise,* or *are rising*
ils se lèv *ent*	*they rise, do rise,* or *are rising*
-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
Je me suis lev *é*	*I have risen, did rise,* or *have been rising*
tu t'es lev *é*	*thou hast risen, didst rise,* or *hast been rising*
il s'est lev *é*	*he has risen, did rise,* or *has been rising*
nous nous sommes lev *és*	*we have risen, did rise,* or *have been rising*
vous vous êtes lev *és*	*you have risen, did rise,* or *have been rising*
ils se sont lev *és*	*they have risen, did rise,* or *have been rising*
-H-	IMPERFECT.
Je me lev *ais*	*I rose, did rise,* or *was rising*
tu te lev *ais*	*thou rosest, didst rise,* or *wast rising*
il se lev *ait*	*he rose, did rise,* or *was rising*
nous nous lev *ions*	*we rose, did rise,* or *were rising*
vous vous lev *iez*	*you rose, did rise,* or *were rising*
ils se lev *aient*	*they rose, did rise,* or *were rising*
-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
Je m'étais lev *é*	*I had risen* or *had been rising*
tu t'étais lev *é*	*thou hadst risen* or *hadst been rising*
il s'était lev *é*	*he had risen* or *had been rising*
nous nous étions lev *és*	*we had risen* or *had been rising*
vous vous étiez lev *és*	*you had risen* or *had been rising*
ils s'étaient lev *és*	*they had risen* or *had been rising*

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boite.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]*j*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli* in Wi*lli*am.

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je me lev *ai*	*I rose* or *did rise*
tu te lev *as*	*thou rosest* or *didst rise*
il se lev *a*	*he rose* or *did rise*
nous nous lev *âmes*	*we rose* or *did rise*
vous vous lev *âtes*	*you rose* or *did rise*
ils se lev *èrent*	*they rose* or *did rise*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je me fus lev *é*	*I had risen*
tu te fus lev *é*	*thou hadst risen*
il se fut lev *é*	*he had risen*
nous nous fûmes lev *és*	*we had risen*
vous vous fûtes lev *és*	*you had risen*
ils se furent lev *és*	*they had risen*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je me lèv *erai*	*I shall* or *will rise*
tu te lèv *eras*	*thou shalt* or *wilt rise*
il se lèv *era*	*he shall* or *will rise*
nous nous lèv *erons*	*we shall* or *will rise*
vous vous lèv *erez*	*you shall* or *will rise*
ils se lèv *eront*	*they shall* or *will rise*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je me serai lev *é*	*I shall* or *will have risen*
tu te seras lev *é*	*thou shalt* or *wilt have risen*
il se sera lev *é*	*he shall* or *will have risen*
nous nous serons lev *és*	*we shall* or *will have risen*
vous vous serez lev *és*	*you shall* or *will have risen*
ils se seront lev *és*	*they shall* or *will have risen*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je me lèv *erais*	*I should, would, could,* or *might rise*
tu te lèv *erais*	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst rise*
il se lèv *erait*	*he should, would, could,* or *might rise*
nous nous lèv *erions*	*we should, would, could,* or *might rise*
vous vous lèv *eriez*	*you should, would, could,* or *might rise*
ils se lèv *eraient*	*they should, would, could,* or *might rise*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je me serais lev *é*,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je me fusse lev e*	or *might have risen*
tu te serais lev *é*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu te fusses lev é*	or *mightst have risen*
il se serait lev *é*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il se fût lev é*	or *might have risen*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool

nous nous serions lev *és*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous nous fussions lev és*	or *might have risen*
vous vous seriez lev *és*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous vous fussiez lev és*	or *might have risen*
ils se seraient lev *és*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils se fussent lev és*	or *might have risen*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Lèv *e*-toi	*rise (thou)*
qu'il se lèv *e*	*let him rise*
lev *ons*-nous	*let us rise*
lev *ez*-vous	*rise (you)*
qu'ils se lèv *ent*	*let them rise*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je me lèv *e*	*that I may rise*
que tu te lèv *es*	*that thou mayst rise*
qu'il se lèv *e*	*that he may rise*
que nous nous lev *ions*	*that we may rise*
que vous vous lev *iez*	*that you may rise*
qu'ils se lèv *ent*	*that they may rise*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je me sois lev *é*	*that I may have risen*
que tu te sois lev *é*	*that thou mayst have risen*
qu'il se soit lev *é*	*that he may have risen*
que nous nous soyons lev *és*	*that we may have risen*
que vous vous soyez lev *és*	*that you may have risen*
qu'ils se soient lev *és*	*that they may have risen*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je me lev *asse*	*that I might rise*
que tu te lev *asses*	*that thou mightst rise*
qu'il se lev *ât*	*that he might rise*
que nous nous lev *assions*	*that we might rise*
que vous vous lev *assiez*	*that you might rise*
qu'ils se lev *assent*	*that they might rise*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je me fusse lev *é*	*that I might have risen*
que tu te fusses lev *é*	*that thou mightst have risen*
qu'il se fût lev *é*	*that he might have risen*
que nous nous fussions lev *és*	*that we might have risen*
que vous vous fussiez lev *és*	*that you might have risen*
qu'ils se fussent lev *és*	*that they might have risen*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *in*grat. *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER *to rise.* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne pas se lev *er* — *not to rise*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT, *or compound of the present.*

Ne pas s'être lev *é* — *not to have risen*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.

Ne se lev *ant* pas — *not rising*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ne s'étant pas lev *é* — *not having risen*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je ne me lèv *e* pas — *I rise not, do not rise*, or *am not*
tu ne te lèv *es* pas — *thou risest not, dost not rise*, or *art not*
il ne se lèv *e* pas — *he rises not, does not rise*, or *is not*
nous ne nous lev *ons* pas — *we rise not, do not rise*, or *are not*
vous ne vous lev *ez* pas — *you rise not, do not rise*, or *are not*
ils ne se lèv *ent* pas — *they rise not, do not rise*, or *are not*

} RISING

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*

Je ne me suis pas lev *é* — *I have not risen, did not rise,* or *have not been rising*
tu ne t'es pas lev *é* — *thou hast not risen, didst not rise,* or *hast not been rising*
il ne s'est pas lev *é* — *he has not risen, did not rise,* or *has not been rising*
nous ne nous sommes pas lev *és* — *we have not risen, did not rise,* or *have not been rising*
vous ne vous êtes pas lev *és* — *you have not risen, did not rise,* or *have not been rising*
ils ne se sont pas lev *és* — *they have not risen, did not rise,* or *have not been rising*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je ne me lev *ais* pas — *I rose not, did not rise*, or *was*
tu ne te lev *ais* pas — *thou rosest not, didst not rise*, or *wast*
il ne se lev *ait* pas — *he rose not, did not rise*, or *was*
nous ne nous lev *ions* pas — *we rose not, did not rise*, or *were*
vous ne vous lev *iez* pas — *you rose not, did not rise*, or *were*
ils ne se lev *aient* pas — *they rose not, did not rise*, or *were*

} NOT RISING

-I- PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*

Je ne m'étais pas lev *é* — *I had not risen* or *had not been*
tu ne t'étais pas lev *é* — *thou hadst not risen* or *hadst not been*
il ne s'était pas lev *é* — *he had not risen* or *had not been*
nous ne nous étions pas lev *és* — *we had not risen* or *had not been*
vous ne vous étiez pas lev *és* — *you had not risen* or *had not been*
ils ne s'étaient pas lev *és* — *they had not risen* or *had not been*

} RISING

[1]*ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.*
[2]*at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne me lev *ai* pas	*I rose not* or *did not rise*
tu ne te lev *as* pas	*thou rosest not* or *didst not rise*
il ne se lev *a* pas	*he rose not* or *did not rise*
nous ne nous lev *âmes* pas	*we rose not* or *did not rise*
vous ne vous lev *âtes* pas	*you rose not* or *did not rise*
ils ne se lev *èrent* pas	*they rose not* or *did not rise*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je ne me fus pas lev *é*	*I had not risen*
tu ne te fus pas lev *é*	*thou hadst not risen*
il ne se fut pas lev *é*	*he had not risen*
nous ne nous fûmes pas lev *és*	*we had not risen*
vous ne vous fûtes pas lev *és*	*you had not risen*
ils ne se furent pas lev *és*	*they had not risen*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne me lèv *erai* pas	*I shall* or *will not rise*
tu ne te lèv *eras* pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not rise*
il ne se lèv *era* pas	*he shall* or *will not rise*
nous ne nous lèv *erons* pas	*we shall* or *will not rise*
vous ne vous lèv *erez* pas	*you shall* or *will not rise*
ils ne se lev *eront* pas	*they shall* or *will not rise*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je ne me serai pas lev *é*	*I shall* or *will not have risen*
tu ne te seras pas lev *é*	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have risen*
il ne se sera pas lev *é*	*he shall* or *will not have risen*
nous ne nous serons pas lev *és*	*we shall* or *will not have risen*
vous ne vous serez pas lev *és*	*you shall* or *will not have risen*
ils ne se seront pas lev *és*	*they shall* or *will not have risen*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne me lèv *erais* pas	*I should*, *would*, *could*, or *might*
tu ne te lèv *erais* pas	*thou shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*, or *mightst*
il ne se lèv *erait* pas	*he should*, *would*, *could*, or *might*
nous ne nous lèv *erions* pas	*we should*, *would*, *could*, or *might*
vous ne vous lèv *eriez* pas	*you should*, *would*, *could*, or *might*
ils ne se lèv *eraient* pas	*they should*, *would*, *could*, or *might*

NOT PAST.

-O- PAST
or compound of the present.

Je ne me serais pas lev *é*,	*I should*, *would*, *could*,
or *je ne me fusse pas lev é*	or *might not have risen*
tu ne te serais pas lev *é*,	*thou shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*,
or *tu ne te fusses pas lev é*	or *mightst not have risen*
il ne se serait pas lev *é*,	*he should*, *would*, *could*,
or *il ne se fût pas lev é*	or *might not have risen*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* ingrat. *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

nous ne nous serions pas lev *és*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous ne nous fussions pas lev és*	or *might not have risen*
vous ne vous seriez pas lev *és*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous ne vous fussiez pas lev és*	or *might not have risen*
ils ne se seraient pas lev *és*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils ne se fussent pas lev és*	or *might not have risen*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne te lèv *e* pas	*rise not* or *do not rise* (*thou*)
qu'il ne se lèv *e* pas	*let him not rise*
ne nous lev *ons* pas	*let us not rise*
ne vous lev *ez* pas	*rise not* or *do not rise* (*you*)
qu'ils ne se lèv *ent* pas	*let them not rise*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne me lèv *e* pas	*that I may not rise*
que tu ne te lèv *es* pas	*that thou mayst not rise*
qu'il ne se lèv *e* pas	*that he may not rise*
que nous ne nous lev *ions* pas	*that we may not rise*
que vous ne vous lev *iez* pas	*that you may not rise*
qu'ils ne se lèv *ent* pas	*that they may not rise*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que je ne me sois pas lev *é*	*that I may not have risen*
que tu ne te sois pas lev *é*	*that thou mayst not have risen*
qu'il ne se soit pas lev *é*	*that he may not have risen*
que nous ne nous soyons pas lev *és*	*that we may not have risen*
que vous ne vous soyez pas lev *és*	*that you may not have risen*
qu'ils ne se soient pas lev *és*	*that they may not have risen*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne me lev *asse* pas	*that I might not rise*
que tu ne te lev *asses* pas	*that thou mightst not rise*
qu'il ne se lev *ât* pas	*that he might not rise*
que nous ne nous lev *assions* pas	*that we might not rise*
que vous ne vous lev *assiez* pas	*that you might not rise*
qu'ils ne se lev *assent* pas	*that they might not rise*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je ne me fusse pas lev *é*	*that I might not have risen*
que tu ne te fusses pas lev *é*	*that thou mightst not have risen*
qu'il ne se fût pas lev *é*	*that he might not have risen*
que nous ne nous fussions pas lev *és*	*that we might not have risen*
que vous ne vous fussiez pas lev *és*	*that you might not have risen*
qu'ils ne se fussent pas lev *és*	*that they might not have risen*

Fr. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
Eng. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER *to rise.* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F-	PRESENT.
Me lev *é*-je	*do I rise* or *am I rising*
te lèv *es*-tu	*dost thou rise* or *art thou rising*
se lèv *e*-t-il	*does he rise* or *is he rising*
nous lev *ons*-nous	*do we rise* or *are we rising*
vous lev *ez*-vous	*do you rise* or *are you rising*
se lèv *ent*-ils	*do they rise* or *are they rising*

-G-	PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE, *or compound of the present.*
Me suis-je lev *é*	*have I risen* or *did I rise*
t'es-tu lev *é*	*hadst thou risen* or *didst thou rise*
s'est-il lev *é*	*has he risen* or *did he rise*
nous sommes-nous lev *és*	*have we risen* or *did we rise*
vous êtes-vous lev *és*	*have you risen* or *did you rise*
se sont-ils lev *és*	*have they risen* or *did they rise*

-H-	IMPERFECT.
Me lev *ais*-je	*did I rise* or *was I rising*
te lev *ais*-tu	*didst thou rise* or *wast thou rising*
se lev *ait*-il	*did he rise* or *was he rising*
nous lev *ions*-nous	*did we rise* or *were we rising*
vous lev *iez*-vous	*did you rise* or *were you rising*
se lev *aient*-ils	*did they rise* or *were they rising*

-I-	PLUPERFECT, *or compound of the imperfect.*
M'étais-je lev *é*	*had I risen* or *had I been rising*
t'étais-tu lev *é*	*hadst thou risen* or *hadst thou been rising*
s'était-il lev *é*	*had he risen* or *had he been rising*
nous étions-nous lev *és*	*had we risen* or *had we been rising*
vous étiez-vous lev *és*	*had you risen* or *had you been rising*
s'étaient-ils lev *és*	*had they risen* or *had they been rising*

-J-	PRETERIT DEFINITE.
Me lev *ai*-je	*did I rise*
te lev *as*-tu	*didst thou rise*
se lev *a*-t-il	*did he rise*
nous lev *âmes*-nous	*did we rise*
vous lev *âtes*-vous	*did you rise*
se lev *èrent*-ils	*did they rise*

[3] *mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* ancre. *ingrat.* ingrat. *onde.* onde. *un.* amen
[4] j, as *s* in pleasure. *gn*, as *ni* in union. *ill*, as *lli* in William.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Me fus-je lev *é*	*had I risen*
te fus-tu lev *é*	*hadst thou risen*
se fut-il lev *é*	*had he risen*
nous fûmes-nous lev *és*	*had we risen*
vous fûtes-vous lev *és*	*had you risen*
se furent ils lev *és*	*had they risen*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Me lèv *erai*-je	*shall* or *will I rise*
te lèv *eras*-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou rise*
se lèv *era*-t-il	*shall* or *will he rise*
nous lèv *erons*-nous	*shall* or *will we rise*
vous lèv *erez*-vous	*shall* or *will you rise*
se lèv *eront*-ils	*shall* or *will they rise*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Me serai-je lev *é*	*shall* or *will I have risen*
te seras-tu lev *é*	*shalt* or *wilt thou have risen*
se sera-t-il lev *é*	*shall* or *will he have risen*
nous serons-nous lev *és*	*shall* or *will we have risen*
vous serez-vous lev *és*	*shall* or *will you have risen*
se seront-ils lev *és*	*shall* or *will they have risen*

CONDITIONAL MOOD

-N- PRESENT.

Me lèv *erais*-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I rise*
te lèv *erais*-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou rise*
se lèv *erait*-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he rise*
nous lèv *erions*-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we rise*
vous lèv *eriez*-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you rise*
se lèv *eraient*-ils	*should, would, could,* or *might they rise*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Me serais-je lev *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *me fussé-je lev é*	or *might I have risen*
te serais-tu lev *é*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *te fusses-tu lev é*	or *mightst thou have risen*
se serait-il lev *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *se fût-il lev é*	or *might he have risen*
nous serions-nous lev *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *nous fussions-nous lev és*	or *might we have risen*
vous seriez-vous lev *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *vous fussiez-vous lev és*	or *might you have risen*
se seraient-ils lev *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *se fussent-ils lev és*	or *might they have risen*

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE LEVER *to rise.* *(Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Ne me lev é-je pas	*do I not rise* or *am I not rising*
ne te lèv *es*-tu pas	*dost thou not rise* or *art thou not rising*
ne se lèv *e*-t-il pas	*does he not rise* or *is he not rising*
ne nous lev *ons*-nous pas	*do we not rise* or *are we not rising*
ne vous lev *ez*-vous pas	*do you not rise* or *are you not rising*
ne se lèv *ent*-ils pas	*do they not rise* or *are they not rising*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ne me suis-je pas lev é	*have I not risen, did I not rise,* or *have I not been rising*
ne t'es-tu pas lev é	*hast thou not risen, didst thou not rise,* or *hast thou not been rising*
ne s'est-il pas lev é	*has he not risen, did he not rise,* or *has he not been rising*
ne nous sommes-nous pas lev és	*have we not risen, did we not rise,* or *have we not been rising*
ne vous êtes-vous pas lev és	*have you not risen, did you not rise,* or *have you not been rising*
ne se sont-ils pas lev és	*have they not risen, did they not rise,* or *have they not been rising*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Ne me lev *ais*-je pas	*did I not rise* or *was I not rising*
ne te lev *ais*-tu pas	*didst thou not rise* or *wast thou not rising*
ne se lev *ait*-il pas	*did he not rise* or *was he not rising*
ne nous lev *ions*-nous pas	*did we not rise* or *were we not rising*
ne vous lev *iez*-vous pas	*did you not rise* or *were you not rising*
ne se lev *aient*-ils pas	*did they not rise* or *were they not rising*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Ne m'étais-je pas lev é	*had I not risen* or *had I not*
ne t'étais-tu pas lev é	*hadst thou not risen* or *hadst thou not*
ne s'était-il pas lev é	*had he not risen* or *had he not*
ne nous étions-nous pas lev és	*had we not risen* or *had we not*
ne vous étiez-vous pas lev és	*had you not risen* or *had you not*
ne s'étaient-ils pas lev és	*had they not risen* or *had they not*

been rising

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne me lev *ai*-je pas	*did I not rise*
ne te lev *as*-tu pas	*didst thou not rise*
ne se lev *a*-t-il pas	*did he not rise*
ne nous lev *âmes*-nous pas	*did we not rise*
ne vous lev *âtes*-vous pas	*did you not rise*
ne se lev *èrent*-ils pas	*did they not rise*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *in*grat. *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea *s* ure. *gn,* as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill,* as *lli,* in Wi*lli*am

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Ne me fus-je pas lev *é*	*had I not risen*
ne te fus-tu pas lev *é*	*hadst thou not risen*
ne se fut-il pas lev *é*	*had he not risen*
ne nous fûmes-nous pas lev *és*	*had we not risen*
ne vous fûtes-vous pas lev *és*	*had you not risen*
ne se furent-ils pas lev *és*	*had they not risen*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne me lèv *erai*-je pas	*shall* or *will I not rise*
ne te lèv *eras*-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not rise*
ne se lèv *era*-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not rise*
ne nous lèv *erons*-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not rise*
ne vous lèv *erez*-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not rise*
ne se lèv *eront*-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not rise*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Ne me serai-je pas lev *é*	*shall* or *will I not have risen*
ne te seras-tu pas lev *é*	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have risen*
ne se sera-t-il pas lev *é*	*shall* or *will he not have risen*
ne nous serons-nous pas lev *és*	*shall* or *will we not have risen*
ne vous serez-vous pas lev *és*	*shall* or *will you not have risen*
ne se seront-ils pas lev *és*	*shall* or *will they not have risen*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne me lèv *erais*-je pas	*should, would, could,* or *might I*
ne te lèv *erais*-tu pas	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou*
ne se lèv *erait*-il pas	*should, would, could,* or *might he*
ne nous lèv *erions*-nous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might we*
ne vous lèv *eriez*-vous pas	*should, would, could,* or *might you*
ne se lèv *eraient*-ils pas	*should, would, could,* or *might they*

not rise

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Ne me serais-je pas lev *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or *ne me fussé-je pas lev é*	or *might I not have risen*
ne te serais-tu pas lev *é,*	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *ne te fusses-tu pas lev é*	or *mightst thou not have risen*
ne se serait-il pas lev *é,*	*should, would, could,*
or *ne se fût-il pas lev é*	or *might he not have risen*
ne nous serions-nous pas lev *és,*	*should, would, could,*
or *ne nous fussions-nous pas lev és*	or *might we not have risen*
ne vous seriez-vous pas lev *és,*	*should. would, could,*
or *ne vous fussiez-vous pas lev es*	or *might you not have risen*
ne se seraient-ils pas lev *és*	*should, would, could,*
or *ne se fussent-ils pas lev és*	or *might they not have risen*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Se bien port*er* — *to be well*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

S'être bien port *é* — *to have been well*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

Se port *ant* bien — *being well*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

S'étant bien port *é* — *having been well*

-E- PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.

Bien port *é* — *been well*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je me port *e* bien	*I am well*
tu te port *es* bien	*thou art well*
il se port *e* bien	*he is well*
nous nous port *ons* bien	*we are well*
vous vous port *ez* bien	*you are well*
ils se port *ent* bien	*they are well*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Je me suis bien port *é*	*I have been well*
tu t'es bien port *é*	*thou hast been well*
il s'est bien port *é*	*he has been well*
nous nous sommes bien port *és*	*we have been well*
vous vous êtes bien port *és*	*you have been well*
ils se sont bien port *és*	*they have been well*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je me port *ais* bien	*I was well*
tu te port *ais* bien	*thou wast well*
il se port *ait* bien	*he was well*
nous nous port *ions* bien	*we were well*
vous vous port *iez* bien	*you were well*
ils se port *aient* bien	*they were well*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Je m'étais bien port *é*	*I had been well*
tu t'étais bien port *é*	*thou hadst been well*
il s'était bien port *é*	*he had been well*
nous nous étions bien port *és*	*we had been well*
vous vous étiez bien port *és*	*you had been well*
ils s'étaient bien port *es*	*they had been well*

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boîte.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen. [4]*j*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je me port *ai* bien	*I was well*
tu te port *as* bien	*thou wast well*
il se port *a* bien	*he was well*
nous nous port *âmes* bien	*we were well*
vous vous port *âtes* bien	*you were well*
ils se port *èrent* bien	*they were well*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je me fus bien port *é*	*I had been well*
tu te fus bien port *é*	*thou hadst been well*
il se fut bien port *é*	*he had been well*
nous nous fûmes bien port *és*	*we had been well*
vous vous fûtes bien port *és*	*you had been well*
ils se furent bien port *és*	*they had been well*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je me port *erai* bien	*I shall* or *will be well*
tu te port *eras* bien	*thou shalt* or *wilt be well*
il se port *era* bien	*he shall* or *will be well*
nous nous port *erons* bien	*we shall* or *will be well*
vous vous port *erez* bien	*you shall* or *will be well*
ils se port *eront* bien	*they shall* or *will be well*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je me serai bien port *é*	*I shall* or *will have been well*
tu te seras bien port *é*	*thou shalt* or *wilt have been well*
il se sera bien port *é*	*he shall* or *will have been well*
nous nous serons bien port *és*	*we shall* or *will have been well*
vous vous serez bien port *és*	*you shall* or *will have been well*
ils se seront bien port *és*	*they shall* or *will have been well*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je me port *erais* bien	*I should, would, could,* or *might*
tu te port *erais* bien	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst*
il se port *erait* bien	*he should, would, could,* or *might*
nous nous port *erions* bien	*we should, would, could,* or *might*
vous vous port *eriez* bien	*you should, would, could,* or *might*
ils se port *eraient* bien	*they should, would, could,* or *might*

be well

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je me serais bien port *é*,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je me fusse bien port é*	or *might have been well*
tu te serais bien port *é*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst*
or *tu te fusses bien port é*	or *mightst have been well*
il se serait bien port *é*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il se fût bien port é*	or *might have been well*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. foul.

nous nous serions bien port *és*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous nous fussions bien port és*	or *might have been well*
vous vous seriez bien port *és*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous vous fussiez bien port és*	or *might have been well*
ils se seraient bien port *és*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils se fussent bien port és*	or *might have been well*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Port *e*-toi bien	*be well (thou)*
qu'il se port *e* bien	*let him be well*
port *ons*-nous bien	*let us be well*
port *ez*-vous bien	*be well (you)*
qu'ils se port *ent* bien	*let them be well*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je me port *e* bien	*that I may be well*
que tu te port *es* bien	*that thou mayst be well*
qu'il se port *e* bien	*that he may be well*
que nous nous port *ions* bien	*that we may be well*
que vous vous port *iez* bien	*that you may be well*
qu'ils se port *ent* bien	*that they may be well*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je me sois bien port *é*	*that I may have been well*
que tu te sois bien port *é*	*that thou mayst have been well*
qu'il se soit bien port *é*	*that he may have been well*
que nous nous soyons bien port *és*	*that we may have been well*
que vous vous soyez bien port *és*	*that you may have been well*
qu'ils se soient bien port *és*	*that they may have been well*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je me port *asse* bien	*that I might be well*
que tu te port *asses* bien	*that thou mightst be well*
qu'il se port *ât* bien	*that he might be well*
que nous nous port *assions* bien	*that we might be well*
que vous vous port *assiez* bien	*that you might be well*
qu'ils se port *assent* bien	*that they might be well*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je me fusse bien port *é*	*that I might have been well*
que tu te fusses bien port *é*	*that thou mightst have been well*
qu'il se fût bien port *é*	*that he might have been well*
que nous nous fussions bien port *és*	*that we might have been well*
que vous vous fussiez bien port *és*	*that you might have been well*
qu'ils se fussent bien port *és*	*that they might have been well*

[3]*mur.* m*û*r. je*u*ne. je*û*ne. bo*î*te. bo*î*te. *an*cre. *in*grat. *on*de. *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli* in Wi*lli*am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well.* *(Negatively)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne se pas bien port *er* — *not to be well*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

Ne s'être pas bien port *é* — *not to have been well*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.

Ne se port *ant* pas bien — *not being well*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ne s'étant pas bien port *é* — *not having been well*

INDICATIVE MOOD

-F- PRESENT.

Je ne me port *e* pas bien	*I am not well*
tu ne te port *es* pas bien	*thou art not well*
il ne se port *e* pas bien	*he is not well*
nous ne nous port *ons* pas bien	*we are not well*
vous ne vous port *ez* pas bien	*you are not well*
ils ne se port *ent* pas bien	*they are not well*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Je ne me suis pas bien port *é*	*I have not been well*
tu ne t'es pas bien port *é*	*thou hast not been well*
il ne s'est pas bien port *é*	*he has not been well*
nous ne nous sommes pas bien port *és*	*we have not been well*
vous ne vous êtes pas bien port *és*	*you have not been well*
ils ne se sont pas bien port *és*	*they have not been well*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je ne me port *ais* pas bien	*I was not well*
tu ne te port *ais* pas bien	*thou wast not well*
il ne se port *ait* pas bien	*he was not well*
nous ne nous port *ions* pas bien	*we were not well*
vous ne vous port *iez* pas bien	*you were not well*
ils ne se port *aient* pas bien	*they were not well*

-I- PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect

Je ne m'étais pas bien port *é*	*I had not been well*
tu ne t'étais pas bien port *é*	*thou hadst not been well*
il ne s'était pas bien port *é*	*he had not been well*
nous ne nous étions pas bien port *és*	*we had not been well*
vous ne vous étiez pas bien port *és*	*you had not been well*
ils ne s'étaient pas bien port *és*	*they had not been well*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne me port *ai* pas bien	*I was not well*
tu ne te port *as* pas bien	*thou wast not well*
il ne se port *a* pas bien	*he was not well*
nous ne nous port *âmes* pas bien	*we were not well*
vous ne vous port *âtes* pas bien	*you were not well*
ils ne se port *èrent* pas bien	*they were not well*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Je ne me fus pas bien port *é*	*I had not been well*
tu ne te fus pas bien port *é*	*thou hadst not been well*
il ne se fut pas bien port *é*	*he had not been well*
nous ne nous fûmes pas bien port *és*	*we had not been well*
vous ne vous fûtes pas bien port *és*	*you had not been well*
il ne se furent pas bien port *és*	*they had not been well*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne me port *erai* pas bien	*I shall* or *will not be well*
tu ne te port *eras* pas bien	*thou shalt* or *wilt not be well*
il ne se port *era* pas bien	*he shall* or *will not be well*
nous ne nous port *erons* pas bien	*we shall* or *will not be well*
vous ne vous port *erez* pas bien	*you shall* or *will not be well*
ils ne se port *eront* pas bien	*they shall* or *will not be well*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Je ne me serai pas bien port *é*	*I shall* or *will not have*
tu ne te seras pas bien port *é*	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have*
il ne se sera pas bien port *é*	*he shall* or *will not have*
nous ne nous serons pas bien port *és*	*we shall* or *will not have*
vous ne vous serez pas bien port *és*	*you shall* or *will not have*
ils ne se seront pas bien port *és*	*they shall* or *will not have*

been well

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne me port *erais* pas bien	*I should, would, could,* or *might not be well*
tu ne te port *erais* pas bien	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst not be well*
il ne se port *erait* pas bien	*he should, would, could,* or *might not be well*
nous ne nous port *erions* pas bien	*we should, would, could,* or *might not be well*
vous ne vous port *eriez* pas bien	*you should, would, could,* or *might not be well*
ils ne se port *eraient* pas bien	*they should, would, could,* or *might not be well*

-O- PAST,

or compound of the present.

Je ne me serais pas bien port *é*	*I should, would, could,*
or *je ne me fusse pas bien port é*	or *might not have been well*
tu ne te serais pas bien port *é*,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu ne te fusses pas bien port é*	or *mightst not have been well*

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boite.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*nion*. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

il ne se serait pas bien port *é*,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il ne se fût pas bien port é*	or *might not have been well*
nous ne nous serions pas bien port *és*,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous ne nous fussions pas bien port és*	or *might not have been well*
vous ne vous seriez pas bien port *és*,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous ne vous fussiez pas bien port és*	or *might not have been well*
ils ne se seraient pas bien port *és*,	*they should, would, could,*
or *il ne se fussent pas bien port és*	or *might not have been well*

-P- IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne te port *e* pas bien	*be not well* or *do not be well* (*thou*)
qu'il ne se port *e* pas bien	*let him not be well*
ne nous port *ons* pas bien	*let us not be well*
ne vous port *ez* pas bien	*be not well* or *do not be well* (*you*)
qu'ils ne se port *ent* pas bien	*let them not be well*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne me port *e* pas bien	*that I may not be well*
que tu ne te port *es* pas bien	*that thou mayst not be well*
qu'il ne se port *e* pas bien	*that he may not be well*
que nous ne nous port *ions* pas bien	*that we may not be well*
que vous ne vous port *iez* pas bien	*that you may not be well*
qu'ils ne se port *ent* pas bien	*that they may not be well*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que je ne me sois pas bien port *é*	*that I may not have been well*
que tu ne te sois pas bien port *é*	*that thou mayst not have been well*
qu'il ne se soit pas bien port *é*	*that he may not have been well*
que nous ne nous soyons pas bien port *és*	*that we may not have been well*
que vous ne vous soyez pas bien port *és*	*that you may not have been well*
qu'ils ne se soient pas bien port *és*	*that they may not have been well*

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne me port *asse* pas bien	*that I might not be well*
que tu ne te port *asses* pas bien	*that thou mightst not be well*
qu'il ne se port *ât* pas bien	*that he might not be well*
que nous ne nous port *assions* pas bien	*that we might not be well*
que vous ne vous port *assiez* pas bien	*that you might not be well*
qu'ils ne se port *assent* pas bien	*that they might not be well*

-T- PLUPERFECT.
or compound of the imperfect

Que je ne me fusse pas bien port *é*	*that I might not have*
que tu ne te fusses pas bien port *é*	*that thou mightst not have*
qu'il ne se fût pas bien port *é*	*that he might not have*
que nous ne nous fussions pas bien port *és*	*that we might not have*
que vous ne vous fussiez pas bien port *és*	*that you might not have*
qu'ils ne se fussent pas bien port *és*	*that they might not have*

been well

'ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
'at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well.* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Me port *é*-je bien	*am I well*
te port *es*-tu bien	*art thou well*
se port *e*-t-il bien	*is he well*
nous port *ons*-nous bien	*are we well*
vous port *ez*-vous bien	*are you well*
se port *ent*-ils bien	*are they well*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Me suis-je bien port *é*	*have I been well*
t'es-tu bien port *é*	*hast thou been well*
s'est-il bien port *é*	*has he been well*
nous sommes-nous bien port *és*	*have we been well*
vous êtes-vous bien port *és*	*have you been well*
se sont-ils bien port *és*	*have they been well*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Me port *ais*-je bien	*was I well*
te port *ais*-tu bien	*wast thou well*
se port *ait*-il bien	*was he well*
nous port *ions*-nous bien	*were we well*
vous port *iez*-vous bien	*were you well*
se port *aient*-ils bien	*were they well*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

M'étais-je bien port *é*	*had I been well*
t'étais-tu bien port *é*	*hadst thou been well*
s'était-il bien port *é*	*had he been well*
nous étions-nous bien port *és*	*had we been well*
vous étiez-vous bien port *és*	*had you been well*
s'étaient-ils bien port *és*	*had they been well*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Me port *ai*-je bien	*was I well*
te port *as*-tu bien	*wast thou well*
se port *a*-t-il bien	*was he well*
nous port *âmes*-nous bien	*were we well*
vous port *âtes*-vous bien	*were you well*
se port *èrent*-ils bien	*were they well*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *in*grat. *onde.* *un.* amen [4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*n*ion. *ill*, as *lli*, in W*illi*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Me fus-je bien port *é*	*had I been well*
te fus-tu bien port *é*	*hadst thou been well*
se fut-il bien port *é*	*had he been well*
nous fûmes-nous bien port *és*	*had we been well*
vous fûtes-vous bien port *és*	*had you been well*
se furent-ils bien port *és*	*had they been well*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Me port *erai*-je bien	*shall* or *will I be well*
te port *eras*-tu bien	*shalt* or *wilt thou be well*
se port *era*-t-il bien	*shall* or *will he be well*
nous port *erons*-nous bien	*shall* or *will we be well*
vous port *erez*-vous bien	*shall* or *will you be well*
se port *eront*-ils bien	*shall* or *will they be well*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Me serai-je bien port *é*	*shall* or *will I have been well*
te seras-tu bien port *é*	*shalt* or *wilt thou have been well*
se sera-t-il bien port *é*	*shall* or *will he have been well*
nous serons-nous bien port *és*	*shall* or *will we have been well*
vous serez-vous bien port *és*	*shall* or *will you have been well*
se seront-ils bien port *és*	*shall* or *will they have been well*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Me port *erais*-je bien	*should, would, could,* or *might I*
te port *erais*-tu bien	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou*
se port *erait*-il bien	*should, would, could,* or *might he*
nous port *erions*-nous bien	*should, would, could,* or *might we*
vous port *eriez*-vous bien	*should, would, could,* or *might you*
se port *eraient*-ils bien	*should, would, could,* or *might they*

be well

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Me serais-je bien port *e*,	*should, would, could,*
or *me fussé-je bien porté*	or *might I have been well*
te serais-tu bien port *é*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *te fusses-tu bien port é*	or *mightst thou have been well*
se serait-il bien port *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *se fût-il bien port é*	or *might he have been well*
nous serions-nous bien port *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *nous fussions-nous bien port és*	or *might we have been well*
vous seriez-vous bien port *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *vous fussiez-vous bien port és*	or *might you have been well*
se seraient-ils bien port *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *se fussent-ils bien port és*	or *might they have been well*

*a*mi âne. te. écrit. mère. être. *i*dole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte
*a*t. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

SE BIEN PORTER *to be well. (Negatively and Interrogatively)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Ne me port *é*-je pas bien	*am I not well*
ne te port *es*-tu pas bien	*art thou not well*
ne se port *e*-t-il pas bien	*is he not well*
ne nous port *ons*-nous pas bien	*are we not well*
ne vous port *ez*-vous pas bien	*are you not well*
ne se port *ent*-ils pas bien	*are they not well*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ne me suis-je pas bien port *é*	*have I not been well*
ne t'es-tu pas bien port *é*	*hast thou not been well*
ne s'est-il pas bien port *é*	*has he not been well*
ne nous sommes-nous pas bien port *és*	*have we not been well*
ne vous êtes-vous pas bien port *és*	*have you not been well*
ne se sont-ils pas bien port *és*	*have they not been well*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Ne me port *ais*-je pas bien	*was I not well*
ne te port *ais*-tu pas bien	*wast thou not well*
ne se port *ait*-il pas bien	*was he not well*
ne nous port *ions*-nous pas bien	*were we not well*
ne vous port *iez*-vous pas bien	*were you not well*
ne se port *aient*-ils pas bien	*were they not well*

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Ne m'étais-je pas bien port *é*	*had I not been well*
ne t'étais-tu pas bien port *é*	*hadst thou not been well*
ne s'était-il pas bien port *é*	*had he not been well*
ne nous étions-nous pas bien port *és*	*had we not been well*
ne vous étiez-vous pas bien port *és*	*had you not been well*
ne s'étaient-ils pas bien port *és*	*had they not been well*

J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne me port *ai*-je pas bien	*was I not well*
ne te port *as*-tu pas bien	*wast thou not well*
ne se port *a*-t-il pas bien	*was he not well*
ne nous port *âmes*-nous pas bien	*were we not well*
ne vous port *âtes*-vous pas bien	*were you not well*
ne se port *èrent*-ils pas bien	*were they not well*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*ll*iam.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Ne me fus-je pas bien port *é*	*had I not been well*
ne te fus-tu pas bien port *é*	*hadst thou not been well*
ne se fut-il pas bien port *é*	*had he not been well*
ne nous fûmes-nous pas bien port *és*	*had we not been well*
ne vous fûtes-vous pas bien port *és*	*had you not been well*
ne se furent-ils pas bien port *és*	*had they not been well*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne me port *erai*-je pas bien	*shall* or *will I not be well*
ne te port *eras*-tu pas bien	*shalt* or *wilt thou not be well*
ne se port *era*-t-il pas bien	*shall* or *will he not be well*
ne nous port *erons*-nous pas bien	*shall* or *will we not be well*
ne vous port *erez*-vous pas bien	*shall* or *will you not be well*
ne se port *eront*-ils pas bien	*shall* or *will they not be well*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Ne me serai-je pas bien port *é*	*shall* or *will I not have*
ne te seras-tu pas bien port *é*	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have*
ne se sera-t-il pas bien port *é*	*shall* or *will he not have*
ne nous serons-nous pas bien port *és*	*shall* or *will we not have*
ne vous serez-vous pas bien port *és*	*shall* or *will you not have*
ne se seront-ils pas bien port *és*	*shall* or *will they not have*

} *been well*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne me port *erais*-je pas bien	*should, would, could,* or *might I not be well*
ne te port *erais*-tu pas bien	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst.* or *mightst thou not be well*
ne se port *erait*-il pas bien	*should, would, could,* or *might he not be well*
ne nous port *erions*-nous pas bien	*should, would, could,* or *might we not be well*
ne vous port *eriez*-vous pas bien	*should, would, could,* or *might you not be well*
ne se port *eraient*-ils pas bien	*should, would, could,* or *might they not be well*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Ne me serais-je pas bien port *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *ne me fussé-je pas bien port é*	or *might I not have been well*
ne te serais-tu pas bien port *é*,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *ne te fusses-tu pas bien port é*	or *mightst thou not have been well*
ne se serait-il pas bien port *é*,	*should, would, could,*
or *ne se fût-il pas bien port é*	or *might he not have been well*
ne nous serions-nous pas bien port *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *ne nous fussions-nous pas bien port és*	or *might we not have been well*
ne vous seriez-vous pas bien port *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *ne vous fussiez-vous pas bien port és*	or *might you not have been well*
ne se seraient-ils pas bien port *és*,	*should, would, could,*
or *ne se fussent-ils pas bien port és*	or *might they not have been well*

ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB..

S'EN ALLER *to go away.* *(Affirmatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

S'en aller — *to go away*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,
or compound of the present.

S'en être allé — *to have gone away*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE,

S'en allant — *going away*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

S'en étant allé — *having gone away*

-E- PARTICIPLE PAST *or* PASSIVE.

En allé — *gone away*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je m'en vais	*I go away, do go away,* or *am*	*Going away*
tu t'en vas	*thou goest away, dost go away,* or *art*	
il s'en va	*he goes away, does go away,* or *is*	
nous nous en allons	*we go away, do go away,* or *are*	
vous vous en allez	*you go away, do go away,* or *are*	
ils s'en vont	*they go away, do go away,* or *are*	

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Je m'en suis allé	*I went away, did go away,* or *have*	*Gone away*
tu t'en es allé	*thou wentest away, didst go away,* or *hast*	
il s'en est allé	*he went away, did go away,* or *has*	
nous nous en sommes allés	*we went away, did go away,* or *have*	
vous vous en êtes allés	*you went away, did go away,* or *have*	
ils s'en sont allés	*they went away, did go away,* or *have*	

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je m'en allais	*I went away, did go away,* or *was*	*Going away*
tu t'en allais	*thou wentest away, didst go away,* or *wast*	
il s'en allait	*he went away, did go away,* or *was*	
nous nous en allions	*we went away, did go away,* or *were*	
vous vous en alliez	*you went away, did go away,* or *were*	
ils s'en allaient	*they went away, did go away,* or *were*	

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Je m'en étais allé	*I had gone away*
tu t'en étais allé	*thou hadst gone away*
il s'en était allé	*he had gone away*
nous nous en étions allés	*we had gone away*
vous vous en étiez allés	*you had gone away*
ils s'en étaient allés	*they had gone away*

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boite.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen
[4]*j*, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as *ni* in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli* in Wi*lli*am

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je m'en allai	*I went away* or *did go away*
tu t'en allas	*thou wentest away* or *didst go away*
il s'en alla	*he went away* or *did go away*
nous nous en allâmes	*we went away* or *did go away*
vous vous en allâtes	*you went away* or *did go away*
ils s'en allèrent	*they went away* or *did go away*

-K- RETERIT ANTERIOR,
compound of the preterit.

Je m'en fus allé	*I had gone away*
tu t'en fus allé	*thou hadst gone away*
il s'en fut allé	*he had gone away*
nous nous en fûmes allés	*we had gone away*
vous vous en fûtes allés	*you had gone away*
ils s'en furent allés	*they had gone away*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je m'en irai	*I shall* or *will go away*
tu t'en iras	*thou shalt* or *wilt go away*
il s'en ira	*he shall* or *will go away*
nous nous en irons	*we shall* or *will go away*
vous vous en irez	*you shall* or *will go away*
ils s'en iront	*they shall* or *will go away*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je m'en serai allé	*I shall* or *will have gone away*
tu t'en seras allé	*thou shalt* or *wilt have gone away*
il s'en sera allé	*he shall* or *will have gone away*
nous nous en serons allés	*we shall* or *will have gone away*
vous vous en serez allés	*you shall* or *will have gone away*
ils s'en seront allés	*they shall* or *will have gone away*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Je m'en irais	*I should, would, could,* or *might go away*
tu t'en irais	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst go away*
il s'en irait	*he should, would, could,* or *might go away*
nous nous en irions	*we should, would, could,* or *might go away*
vous vous en iriez	*you should, would, could,* or *might go away*
ils s'en iraient	*they should, would, could,* or *might go away*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je m'en serais allé,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je m'en fusse allé*	or *might have gone away*
tu t'en serais allé,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu t'en fusses allé*	or *mightst have gone away*
il s'en serait allé,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il s'en fût allé*	or *might have gone away*

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

nous nous en serions allés,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous nous en fussions allés*	or *might have gone away*
vous vous en seriez allés,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous vous en fussiez allés*	or *might have gone away*
ils s'en seraient allés,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils s'en fussent allés*	or *might have gone away*

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Va-t'en	*go away (thou)*
qu'il s'en aille	*let him go away*
allons-nous-en	*let us go away*
allez-vous-en	*go away (you)*
qu'ils s'en aillent	*let them go away*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q-

PRESENT.

Que je m'en aille	*that I may go away*
que tu t'en ailles	*that thou mayst go away*
qu'il s'en aille	*that he may go away*
que nous nous en allions	*that we may go away*
que vous vous en alliez	*that you may go away*
qu'ils s'en aillent	*that they may go away*

-R-

PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present,

Que je m'en sois allé	*that I may have gone away*
que tu t'en sois allé	*that thou mayst have gone away*
qu'il s'en soit allé	*that he may have gone away*
que nous nous en soyons allés	*that we may have gone away*
que vous vous en soyez allés	*that you may have gone away*
qu'ils s'en soient allés	*that they may have gone away*

-S-

IMPERFECT.

Que je m'en allasse	*that I might go away*
que tu t'en allasses	*that thou mightst go away*
qu'il s'en allât	*that he might go away*
que nous nous en allassions	*that we might go away*
que vous vous en allassiez	*that you might go away*
qu'ils s'en allassent	*that they might go away*

-T-

PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je m'en fusse allé	*that I might have gone away*
que tu t'en fusses allé	*that thou mightst have gone away*
qu'il s'en fût allé	*that he might have gone away*
que nous nous en fussions allés	*that we might have gone away*
que vous vous en fussiez allés	*that you might have gone away*
qu'ils s'en fussent allés	*that they might have gone away*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeûne.* jeûne. *boîte.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen. [4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in Wi*lli*am.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away.* *(Negatively.)*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

-A- PRESENT.

Ne pas s'en aller — *not to go away*

-B- PAST *or* PERFECT,

or compound of the present.

Ne pas s'en être allé — *not to have gone away*

-C- PARTICIPLE PRESENT *or* ACTIVE.

Ne s'en allant pas — *not going away*

-D- COMPOUND OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Ne s'en étant pas allé — *not having gone away*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Je ne m'en vais pas	*I do not go away* or *am not*	going away
tu ne t'en vas pas	*thou dost not go away* or *art not*	
il ne s'en va pas	*he does not go away* or *is not*	
nous ne nous en allons pas	*we do not go away* or *are not*	
vous ne vous en allez pas	*you do not go away* or *are not*	
ils ne s'en vont pas	*they do not go away* or *are not*	

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,

or compound of the present.

Je ne m'en suis pas allé	*I did not go away* or *have not*	gone away
tu ne t'en es pas allé	*thou didst not go away* or *hast not*	
il ne s'en est pas allé	*he did not go away* or *has not*	
nous ne nous en sommes pas allés	*we did not go away* or *have not*	
vous ne vous en êtes pas allés	*you did not go away* or *have not*	
ils ne s'en sont pas allés	*they did not go away* or *have not*	

-H- IMPERFECT.

Je ne m'en allais pas	*I did not go away* or *was not*	going away
tu ne t'en allais pas	*thou didst not go away* or *wast not*	
il ne s'en allait pas	*he did not go away* or *was not*	
nous ne nous en allions pas	*we did not go away* or *were not*	
vous ne vous en alliez pas	*you did not go away* or *were not*	
ils ne s'en allaient pas	*they did not go away* or *were not*	

-I- PLUPERFECT,

or compound of the imperfect.

Je ne m'en étais pas allé	*I had not gone away*
tu ne t'en étais pas allé	*thou hadst not gone away*
il ne s'en était pas allé	*he had not gone away*
nous ne nous en étions pas allés	*we had not gone away*
vous ne vous en étiez pas allés	*you had not gone away*
ils ne s'en étaient pas allés	*they had not gone away*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Je ne m'en allai pas	*I did not go away*
tu ne t'en allas pas	*thou didst not go away*
il ne s'en alla pas	*he did not go away*
nous ne nous en allâmes pas	*we did not go away*
vous ne vous en allâtes pas	*you did not go away*
ils ne s'en allèrent pas	*they did not go away*

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

Je ne m'en fus pas allé	*I had not gone away*
tu ne t'en fus pas allé	*thou hadst not gone away*
il ne s'en fut pas allé	*he had not gone away*
nous ne nous en fûmes pas allés	*we had not gone away*
vous ne vous en fûtes pas allés	*you had not gone away*
ils ne s'en furent pas allés	*they had not gone away*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je ne m'en irai pas	*I shall* or *will not go away*
tu ne t'en iras pas	*thou shalt* or *wilt not go away*
il ne s'en ira pas	*he shall* or *will not go away*
nous ne nous en irons pas	*we shall* or *will not go away*
vous ne vous en irez pas	*you shall* or *will not go away*
ils ne s'en iront pas	*they shall* or *will not go away*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

Je ne m'en serai pas allé	*I shall* or *will not have gone away*
tu ne t'en seras pas allé	*thou shalt* or *wilt not have gone away*
il ne s'en sera pas allé	*he shall* or *will not have gone away*
nous ne nous en serons pas allés	*we shall* or *will not have gone away*
vous ne vous en serez pas allés	*you shall* or *will not have gone away*
ils ne s'en seront pas allés	*they shall* or *will not have gone away*

CONDITIONAL MOOD

-N- PRESENT.

Je ne m'en irais pas	*I should, would, could,* or *might*
tu ne t'en irais pas	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst*
il ne s'en irait pas	*he should, would, could,* or *might*
nous ne nous en irions pas	*we should, would, could,* or *might*
vous ne vous en iriez pas	*you should, would, could,* or *might*
ils ne s'en iraient pas	*they should, would, could,* or *might*

not to go away

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

Je ne m'en serais pas allé,	*I should, would, could,*
or *je ne m'en fusse pas allé*	or *might not have gone away*
tu ne t'en serais pas allé,	*thou shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *tu ne t'en fusses pas allé*	or *mightst not have gone away*
il ne s'en serait pas allé,	*he should, would, could,*
or *il ne s'en fût pas allé*	or *might not have gone away*

[3]mur. mûr. jeune. jeûne. boite. boîte. ancre. ingrat. onde. un. amen
[4]j, as s in plea s ure. gn, as ni in u nion. ill, as lli, in Wi lli am.

nous ne nous en serions pas allés,	*we should, would, could,*
or *nous ne nous en fussions pas allés*	or *might not have gone away*
vous ne vous en seriez pas allés,	*you should, would, could,*
or *vous ne vous en fussiez pas allés*	or *might not have gone away*
ils ne s'en seraient pas allés,	*they should, would, could,*
or *ils ne s'en fussent pas allés*	or *might not have gone away*

-P-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Ne t'en va pas	*do not go away (thou)*
qu'il ne s'en aille pas	*let him not go away*
ne nous en allons pas	*let us not go away*
ne vous en allez pas	*do not go away (you)*
qu'ils ne s'en aillent pas	*let them not go away*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

-Q- PRESENT.

Que je ne m'en aille pas	*that I may not go away*
que tu ne t'en ailles pas	*that thou mayst not go away*
qu'il ne s'en aille pas	*that he may not go away*
que nous ne nous en allions pas	*that we may not go away*
que vous ne vous en alliez pas	*that you may not go away*
qu'ils ne s'en aillent pas	*that they may not go away*

-R- PRETERIT *or* PAST,
or compound of the present.

Que je ne m'en sois pas allé	*that I may not have gone*
que tu ne t'en sois pas allé	*that thou mayst not have gone*
qu'il ne s'en soit pas allé	*that he may not have gone*
que nous ne nous en soyons pas allés	*that we may not have gone*
que vous ne vous en soyez pas allés	*that you may not have gone*
qu'ils ne s'en soient pas allés	*that they may not have gone*

away

-S- IMPERFECT.

Que je ne m'en allasse pas	*that I might not go away*
que tu ne t'en allasses pas	*that thou mightst not go away*
qu'il ne s'en allât pas	*that he might not go away*
que nous ne nous en allassions pas	*that we might not go away*
que vous ne vous en allassiez pas	*that you might not go away*
qu'ils ne s'en allassent pas	*that they might not go away*

-T- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Que je ne m'en fusse pas allé	*that I might not have*
que tu ne t'en fusses pas allé	*that thou mightst not have*
qu'il ne s'en fût pas allé	*that he might not have*
que nous ne nous en fussions pas allés	*that we might not have*
que vous ne vous en fussiez pas allés	*that you might not have*
qu'ils ne s'en fussent pas allés	*that they might not have*

gone away

[1]ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
[2]at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away.* *(Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

M'en vais-je	*do I go away* or *am I going away*
t'en vas-tu	*dost thou go away* or *art thou going away*
s'en va-t-il	*does he go away* or *is he going away*
nous en allons-nous	*do we go away* or *are we going away*
vous en allez-vous	*do you go away* or *are you going away*
s'en vont-ils	*do they go away* or *are they going away*

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

M'en suis-je allé	*did I go away* or *have I*	gone away
t'en es-tu allé	*didst thou go away* or *hadst thou*	
s'en est-il allé	*did he go away* or *has he*	
nous en sommes-nous allés	*did we go away* or *have we*	
vous en êtes-vous allés	*did you go away* or *have you*	
s'en sont-ils allés	*did they go away* or *have they*	

-H- IMPERFECT.

M'en allais-je	*did I go away* or *was I*	going away
t'en allais-tu	*didst thou go away* or *wast thou*	
s'en allait-il	*did he go away* or *was he*	
nous en allions-nous	*did we go away* or *were we*	
vous en alliez-vous	*did you go away* or *were you*	
s'en allaient-ils	*did they go away* or *were they*	

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

M'en étais-je allé	*had I gone away*
t'en étais-tu allé	*hadst thou gone away*
s'en était-il allé	*had he gone away*
nous en étions-nous allés	*had we gone away*
vous en étiez-vous allés	*had you gone away*
s'en étaient-ils allés	*had they gone away*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

M'en allai-je	*did I go away*
t'en allas-tu	*didst thou go away*
s'en alla-t-il	*did he go away*
nous en allâmes-nous	*did we go away*
vous en allâtes-vous	*did you go away*
s'en allèrent-ils	*did they go away*

[3]*mur.* mûr. *jeune.* jeûne. *boite.* boîte. *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]j, as *s* in plea*s*ure. *gn*, as ni in u*ni*on. *ill*, as *lli*, in W*illi*am.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,
or compound of the preterit.

M'en fus-je allé	*had I gone away*
t'en fus-tu allé	*hadst thou gone away*
s'en fut-il allé	*had he gone away*
nous en fûmes-nous allés	*had we gone away*
vous en fûtes-vous allés	*had you gone away*
s'en furent-ils allés	*had they gone away*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

M'en irai-je	*shall* or *will I go away*
t'en iras-tu	*shalt* or *wilt thou go away*
s'en ira-t-il	*shall* or *will he go away*
nous en irons-nous	*shall* or *will we go away*
vous en irez-vous	*shall* or *will you go away*
s'en iront-ils	*shall* or *will they go away*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,
or compound of the future.

M'en serai-je allé	*shall* or *will I have gone away*
t'en seras-tu allé	*shalt* or *wilt thou have gone away*
s'en sera-t-il allé	*shall* or *will he have gone away*
nous en serons-nous allés	*shall* or *will we have gone away*
vous en serez-vous allés	*shall* or *will you have gone away*
s'en seront-ils allés	*shall* or *will they have gone away*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

M'en irais-je	*should, would, could,* or *might I go away*
t'en irais-tu	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,* or *mightst thou go away*
s'en irait-il	*should, would, could,* or *might he go away*
nous en irions-nous	*should, would, could,* or *might we go away*
vous en iriez-vous	*should, would, could,* or *might you go away*
s'en iraient-ils	*should, would, could,* or *might they go away*

-O- PAST,
or compound of the present.

M'en serais-je allé,	*should, would, could,*
or *m'en fussé-je allé*	or *might I have gone away*
t'en serais-tu allé,	*shouldst, wouldst, couldst,*
or *t'en fusses-tu allé*	or *mightst thou have gone away*
s'en serait-il allé,	*should, would, could,*
or *s'en fût-il allé*	or *might he have gone away*
nous en serions-nous allés,	*should, would, could,*
or *nous en fussions-nous allés*	or *might we have gone away*
vous en seriez-vous allés,	*should, would, could,*
or *vous en fussiez-vous allés*	or *might you have gone away*
s'en seraient-ils allés,	*should, would, could,*
or *s'en fussent-ils allés*	or *might they have gone away*

'ami. âne. te. écrit. mère. être. idole. gîte. opéra. ôter. tout. voûte.
'at. arm. tub. ale. mare. there. idiom. eel. opera. over. too. fool.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERB.

S'EN ALLER *to go away. (Negatively and Interrogatively.)*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-F- PRESENT.

Ne m'en vais-je pas	*do I not go away* or *am I not*	going away
ne t'en vas-tu pas	*dost thou not go away* or *art thou not*	
ne s'en va-t-il pas	*does he not go away* or *is he not*	
ne nous en allons-nous pas	*do we not go away* or *are we not*	
ne vous en allez-vous pas	*do you not go away* or *are you not*	
ne s'en vont-ils pas	*do they not go away* or *are they not*	

-G- PERFECT *or* PRETERIT INDEFINITE,
or compound of the present.

Ne m'en suis-je pas allé	*did I not go away* or *have I not gone away*
ne t'en es-tu pas allé	*didst thou not go away* or *hast thou not gone away*
ne s'en est-il pas allé	*did he not go away* or *has he not gone away*
ne nous en sommes-nous pas allés	*did we not go away* or *have we not gone away*
ne vous en êtes-vous pas allés	*did you not go away* or *have you not gone away*
ne s'en sont-ils pas allés	*did they not go away* or *have they not gone away*

-H- IMPERFECT.

Ne m'en allais-je pas	*did I not go away* or *was I not*	going away
ne t'en allais-tu pas	*didst thou not go away* or *wast thou not*	
ne s'en allait-il pas	*did he not go away* or *was he not*	
ne nous en allions-nous pas	*did we not go away* or *were we not*	
ne vous en alliez-vous pas	*did you not go away* or *were you not*	
ne s'en allaient-ils pas	*did they not go away* or *were they not*	

-I- PLUPERFECT,
or compound of the imperfect.

Ne m'en étais-je pas allé	*had I not gone away*
ne t'en étais-tu pas allé	*hadst thou not gone away*
ne s'en était-il pas allé	*had he not gone away*
ne nous en étions-nous pas allés	*had we not gone away*
ne vous en étiez-vous pas allés	*had you not gone away*
ne s'en étaient-ils pas allés	*had they not gone away*

-J- PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Ne m'en allai-je pas	*did I not go away*
ne t'en allas-tu pas	*didst thou not go away*
ne s'en alla-t-il pas	*did he not go away*
ne nous en allâmes-nous pas	*did we not go away*
ne vous en allâtes-vous pas	*did you not go away*
ne s'en allèrent-ils pas	*did they not go away*

[3]*mur.* *mûr.* *jeune.* *jeûne.* *boite.* *boîte.* *ancre.* *ingrat.* *onde.* *un.* amen.
[4]*j*, as *s* in pleasure. *gn*, as *ni* in union. *ill*, as *lli* in William.

-K- PRETERIT ANTERIOR,

or compound of the preterit.

Ne m'en fus-je pas allé	*had I not gone away*
ne t'en fus-tu pas allé	*hadst thou not gone away*
ne s'en fut-il pas allé	*had he not gone away*
ne nous en fûmes-nous pas allés	*had we not gone away*
ne vous en fûtes-vous pas allés	*had you not gone away*
ne s'en furent-ils pas allés	*had they not gone away*

-L- FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Ne m'en irai-je pas	*shall* or *will I not go away*
ne t'en iras-tu pas	*shalt* or *wilt thou not go away*
ne s'en ira-t-il pas	*shall* or *will he not go away*
ne nous en irons-nous pas	*shall* or *will we not go away*
ne vous en irez-vous pas	*shall* or *will you not go away*
ne s'en iront-ils pas	*shall* or *will they not go away*

-M- FUTURE ANTERIOR,

or compound of the future.

Ne m'en serai-je pas allé	*shall* or *will I not have*
ne t'en seras-tu pas allé	*shalt* or *wilt thou not have*
ne s'en sera-t-il pas allé	*shall* or *will he not have*
ne nous en serons-nous pas allés	*shall* or *will we not have*
ne vous en serez-vous pas allés	*shall* or *will you not have*
ne s'en seront-ils pas allés	*shall* or *will they not have*

gone away

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

-N- PRESENT.

Ne m'en irais-je pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might I*
ne t'en irais-tu pas	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*, or *mightst thou*
ne s'en irait-il pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might he*
ne nous en irions-nous pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might we*
ne vous en iriez-vous pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might you*
ne s'en iraient-ils pas	*should*, *would*, *could*, or *might they*

not go away

-O- PAST,

or compound of the present.

Ne m'en serais-je pas allé,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *ne m'en fussé-je pas allé*	or *might I not have gone away*
ne t'en serais-tu pas allé,	*shouldst*, *wouldst*, *couldst*,
or *ne t'en fusses-tu pas allé*	or *mightst thou not have gone away*
ne s'en serait-il pas allé,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *ne s'en fût-il pas allé*	or *might he not have gone away*
ne nous en serions-nous pas allés,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *ne nous en fussions-nous pas allés*	or *might we not have gone away*
ne vous en seriez-vous pas allés,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *ne vous en fussiez-vous pas allés*	or *might you not have gone away*
ne s'en seraient-ils pas allés,	*should*, *would*, *could*,
or *ne s'en fussent-ils pas allés*	or *might they not have gone away*

IRREGULAR VERBS are those, which differ in the variations of some of their tenses and persons, from the verbs which serve as models to the four regular conjugations.

However great the irregularity of a verb may be, its irregularities never occur but in the simple tenses; the compound are always regular, and consequently conjugated as the compound tenses of the verbs given as models of the four regular conjugations.

DEFECTIVE VERBS, are those, which are not employed in all tenses or persons.

UNIPERSONAL VERBS, or, as commonly called IMPERSONAL VERBS, are those, which are only employed in the third person singular, as IL IMPORTE, *it matters;* IL PLEUT, *it rains*, &c.

ALLER *to go.*

-A- Aller.	-C- Allant.		-E- Allé.
-F- Je vais,	tu vas,		il va,
nous allons,	vous allez,		ils vont.
-H- J'allais,	tu allais,		il allait,
nous allions,	vous alliez,		ils allaient.
-J- J'allai,	tu allas,		il alla,
nous allâmes,	vous allâtes,		ils allèrent.
-L- J'irai,	tu iras,		il ira.
nous irons,	vous irez,		ils iront.
-N- J'irais,	tu irais,		il irait,
nous irions,	vous iriez,		ils iraient.
-P-	va,		qu'il aille,
allons,	allez,		qu'ils aillent.
-Q- Que j'aille,	que tu aille,		qu'il aille,
que nous allions,	que vous alliez,		qu'ils aillent.
-S- Que j'allasse,	que tu allasses,		qu'il allât,
que nous allassions,	que vous allassiez,		qu'ils allassent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with ÊTRE, to be.

There is a very common error prevalent in France, even among pretty well informed people, in the application of the Compound Tenses of the above verb ALLER, *to go;* people are very liable to use the Compound Tenses *Etre allé, je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé*, &c. instead of using the Compound Tenses of ETRE, *to be; avoir été, j'ai été, tu as été, il a été*, &c.

The general rule to follow is, that, whenever the return from the place mentioned, has not taken place, *être allé, je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé*, &c. must be used; for instance—*Jean est allé à l'école ce matin*, John has gone to school this morning; means that John has gone to school, and has not yet returned.

Whenever the return from the place mentioned, has taken place, *Avoir été, j'ai été, tu as été, il a été*, &c. must be used, for instance—*Jean a été à l'école ce matin*, John has been to school this morning; means that John has been to school and has returned, or at least has left the school.

The following mode of expression, *I will come and see you—Je viendrai vous voir;* is frequently erroneously used in English, instead of *I will go and see you—J'irai vous voir.* VENIR, *to come*, must be used in the sense of coming again to the place where the person speaking is; and ALLER, *to go*, in the sense of going from the place where one is, to any other place; for instance—being at a person's house, I must say, *Je viendrai vous voir demain*—I will come and see you to-morrow; but being at any place out of the house of the person to whom I speak, I must say, *J'irai vous voir demain*—I will go and see you to-morrow. In French this distinction must absolutely be made.

S'EN ALLER, *to go away*, is conjugated, page 112.

ENVOYER *to send.*

-A- Envoyer.	-C- Envoyant.	-E- Envoyé.
-F- J'envoie,	tu envoies,	il envoie,
nous envoyons,	vous envoyez,	ils envoient.
-H- J'envoyais,	tu envoyais,	il envoyait,
nous envoyions,	vous envoyiez,	ils envoyaient.
-J- J'envoyai,	tu envoyas,	il envoya,
nous envoyâmes,	vous envoyâtes,	ils envoyèrent.
-L- J'enverrai,	tu enverras,	il enverra,
nous enverrons,	vous enverrez,	ils enverront.
-N- J'enverrais,	tu enverrais,	il enverrait,
nous enverrions,	vous enverriez,	ils enverraient.
-P-	envoie,	qu'il envoie,
envoyons,	envoyez,	qu'ils envoient.
-Q- Que j'envoie,	que tu envoies,	qu'il envoie,
que nous envoyions,	que vous envoyiez,	qu'ils envoient.
-S- Que j'envoyasse,	que tu envoyasses,	qu'il envoyât,
que nous envoyassions,	que vous envoyassiez,	qu'ils envoyassent.

Conjugate after the same manner—RENVOYER, *to send back.*

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Defective and Unipersonal Verbs of the First Conjugation.

The following verbs are conjugated as PARLER, *to speak;* but are employed, at the third persons singular only.

NEIGER *to snow.*

-A- Neig*er*	*to snow.*	-B- Avoir neig*é*	*to have snowed.*
-C- Neige*ant*	*snowing.*	-D- Ayant neig*é*	*having snowed.*

-E- Neig*é* *snowed.*

-F- Il neig*e* *it snows, it does snow, it is snowing.*

-G- Il a neig*é* *it has snowed, it did snow, it has been snowing*

-H- Il neige*ait* *it snowed, it did snow, it was snowing.*

-I-	Il avait neig*é*	*it had snowed* or *had been snowing.*
-J-	Il neige *a*	*it snowed* or *did snow.*
-K-	Il eut neig *é*	*it had snowed.*
-L-	Il neig *era*	*it will snow*
-M-	Il aura neig *é*	*it will have snowed.*
-N-	Il neig *erait*	*it should, would, could,* or *might snow*
-O-	Il aurait neig *é*, or *il eût neig é*	*it should, would, could,* or *might have snowed*
-Q-	Qu'il neig *e*	*that it may snow.*
-R-	Qu'il ait neig *é*	*that it may have snowed.*
-S-	Qu'il neige *ât*	*that it might snow.*
-T-	Qu'il eût neig *é*	*that it might have snowed.*

See the verb PARLER, *to speak*, page 38, and conjugate like it, the above verb *Negatively*, *Interrogatively*, and *Negatively and Interrogatively;* in the third person singular of every tense.

Conjugate after the same manner, the following verbs.

Il arriv *e*	*it happens.*	Il grêl *e*	*it hails.*
Il bruin *e*	*it drizzles.*	Il grésill *e*	*it rimes.*
Il dégèl *e*	*it thaws.*	Il import *e*	*it matters.*
Il éclair *e*	*it lightens.*	Il résult *e*	*it follows.*
Il gèl *e*	*it freezes.*	Il tonn *e*	*it thunders.*

Irregular, Defective, and Unipersonal Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

ACQUÉRIR *to acquire.*

-A-	Acquérir.	-C- Acquérant.	-E- Acquis.
-F-	J'acquiers, nous acquérons,	tu acquiers, vous acquérez,	il acquiert, ils acquièrent.
-H-	J'acquérais, nous acquérions,	tu acquérais, vous acquériez,	il acquérait, ils acquéraient.
-J-	J'acquis, nous acquîmes,	tu acquis, vous acquîtes,	il acquit, ils acquirent.
-L-	J'acquerrai, nous acquerrons,	tu acquerras, vous acquerrez,	il acquerra, ils acquerront.
-N-	J'acquerrais, nous acquerrions,	tu acquerrais, vous acquerriez,	il acquerrait, ils acquerraient.
-P-	acquérons,	acquiers, acquérez,	qu'il acquière, qu'ils acquièrent.
-Q-	Que j'acquière, que nous acquérions,	que tu acquières, que vous acquériez,	qu'il acquière, qu'ils acquièrent.
-S-	Que j'acquisse, que nous acquissions,	que tu acquisses, que vous acquissiez,	qu'il acquît, qu'ils acquissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner—

Requérir	*to require.*	S'enquérir	*to inquire.*
Conquérir	*to conquer*	Quérir	*to fetch.*
Reconquérir	*to conquer again.*		

Conquérir, *to conquer*, (*defective*) only used in -A- the *present of the infinitive*, in -J- the *preterit definite*, in -S- the *imperfect of the subjunctive*, and in the *compound tenses.*

Reconquérir, *to conquer again*, (*defective*) chiefly used in -E- the *past participle.*

S'enquérir, *to inquire*, (*defective*) very little used, except in -A- the *present of the infinitive*, and in the *compound tenses.*

Quérir, *to fetch*, (*defective*) is only used in -A- the *present of the infinitive*, with the verbs VENIR *to come*, ALLER *to go*, and ENVOYER *to send*, as *il est venu quérir Jean*—he has come to fetch John; *allez me quérir Jean*—go and fetch me John; *j'ai envoyé quérir Jean*—I have sent for John; this verb is only used in common conversation.

ASSAILLIR *to assault.*

-A- Assaillir.	-C- Assaillant,	-E- Assailli.	
-F- J'assaille,	tu assailles,	il assaille,	
nous assaillons,	vous assaillez,	ils assaillent.	
-H- J'assaillais,	tu assaillais,	il assaillait,	
nous assaillions,	vous assailliez,	ils assaillaient,	
-J- J'assaillis,	tu assaillis,	il assaillit,	
nous assaillîmes,	vous assaillîtes,	ils assaillirent.	
-L- J'assaillirai,	tu assailliras,	il assaillira,	
nous assaillirons,	vous assaillirez,	ils assailliront.	
-N- J'assaillirais,	tu assaillirais,	il assaillirait,	
nous assaillirions,	vous assailliriez,	ils assailliraient.	
-P-	assaille,	qu'il assaille,	
assaillons,	assaillez,	qu'ils assaillent	
-Q- Que j'assaille,	que tu assailles	qu'il assaille,	
que nous assaillions,	que vous assailliez,	qu'ils assaillent.	
-S- Que j'assaillisse,	que tu assaillisses,	qu'il assaillît,	
que nous assaillissions,	que vous assaillissiez,	qu'ils assaillissent	

Conjugated after the same manner, TRESSAILLIR, *to start. to leap for.*

The compound tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

BOUILLIR *to boil.*

-A- Bouillir.	-C- Bouillant.	-E- Bouilli.
-F- Je bous,	tu bous,	il bout,
nous bouillons,	vous bouillez,	ils bouillent.
-H- Je bouillais,	tu bouillais,	il bouillait,
nous bouillions,	vous bouilliez,	ils bouillaient.

-J-	Je bouillis,	tu bouillis,	il bouillit,
	nous bouillîmes,	vous bouillîtes,	ils bouillirent.
-L-	Je bouillirai,	tu bouilliras,	il bouillira,
	nous bouillirons,	vous bouillirez	ils bouilliront.
-N-	Je bouillirais,	tu bouillirais,	il bouillirait,
	nous bouillirions,	vous bouilliriez,	ils bouilliraient.
-P-		bous,	qu'il bouille,
	bouillons,	bouillez,	qu'ils bouillent.
-Q-	Que je bouille,	que tu bouilles,	qu'il bouille,
	que nous bouillions,	que vous bouilliez,	qu'ils bouillent.
-S-	Que je bouillisse,	que tu bouillisses,	qu'il bouillît,
	que nous bouillissions,	que vous bouillissiez,	qu'ils bouillissent.

Conjugate after the same manner, ÉBOUILLIR, *to boil away*, REBOUILLIR, *to boil again.*

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

The above verbs are but seldom employed in any persons, except the third person singular and plural of their different tenses, simple and compound—as *l'eau bout*—the water boils; *les pois ont bouilli*—the peas have boiled, &c. If any other person of these verbs is wanting, the verb FAIRE, *to make*, is used with the present of the infinitive BOUILLIR, ÉBOUILLIR, or REBOUILLIR, which is put after—thus we say, *je fais bouillir*—I boil; *je ferai bouillir*—I shall boil, &c.

COURIR *to run.*

-A- Courir. -C- Courant, -E- Couru.

-F-	Je cours,	tu cours,	il court,
	nous courons,	vous courez,	ils courent.
-H-	Je courais,	tu courais,	il courait,
	nous courions,	vous couriez,	ils couraient.
J-	Je courus,	tu courus,	il courut,
	nous courûmes,	vous courûtes,	ils coururent.
-L-	Je courrai,	tu courras,	il courra,
	nous courrons,	vous courrez,	ils courront.
-N-	Je courrais,	tu courrais,	il courrait,
	nous courrions,	vous courriez,	ils courraient.
-P-		cours,	qu'il coure,
	courons,	courez,	qu'ils courent.
-Q-	Que je coure,	que tu coures,	qu'il coure,
	que nous courions,	que vous couriez,	qu'ils courent.
-S-	Que je courusse,	que tu courusses,	qu'il courût,
	que nous courussions,	que vous courussiez,	qu'ils courussent.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Accourir,	*to run to.*	Parcourir,	*to run over.*
Concourir,	*to concur.*	Recourir,	*to have recourse.*
Discourir,	*to discourse.*	Secourir,	*to succour, to help.*
Encourir,	*to incur.*		

The Compound Tenses, of the above verbs, are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have;* those of ACCOURIR, *to run to,* are also sometimes conjugated with ETRE, *to be.*

CUEILLIR *to gather.*

-A-	Cueillir.	-C- Cueillant,	-E- Cueilli.
-F-	Je cueille, nous cueillons,	tu cueilles, vous cueillez.	il cueille, ils cueillent.
-H-	Je cueillais, nous cueillions,	tu cueillais, vous cueilliez.	il cueillait, ils cueillaient.
-J-	Je cueillis, nous cueillîmes,	tu cueillis, vous cueillîtes.	il cueillit, ils cueillirent.
-L-	Je cueillerai, nous cueillerons,	tu cueilleras, vous cueillerez.	il cueillera, ils cueilleront.
-N-	Je cueillerais, nous cueillerions,	tu cueillerais, vous cueilleriez.	il cueillerait, ils cueilleraient.
-P-	 cueillons,	cueille, cueillez.	qu'il cueille, qu'ils cueillent.
-Q-	Que je cueille, que nous cueillions,	que tu cueilles, que vous cueilliez.	qu'il cueille, qu'ils cueillent.
-S-	Que je cueillisse, que nous cueillissions,	que tu cueillisses, que vous cueillissiez,	qu'il cueillît, qu'ils cueillissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner—

Accueillir,	*to welcome.*	Recueillir,	*to gather, to reap*

DORMIR *to sleep.*

-A-	Dormir.	-C- Dormant.	-E- Dormi.
-F-	Je dors, nous dormons,	tu dors, vous dormez,	il dort, ils dorment.
-H-	Je dormais, nous dormions,	tu dormais, vous dormiez,	il dormait, ils dormaient.
-J-	Je dormis, nous dormîmes,	tu dormis, vous dormîtes,	il dormit, ils dormirent.
-L-	Je dormirai, nous dormirons,	tu dormiras, vous dormirez,	il dormira, ils dormiront.
-N-	Je dormirais, nous dormirions,	tu dormirais, vous dormiriez,	il dormirait, ils dormiraient.

-P-	dormons,	dors, dormez,	qu'il dorme, qu'ils dorment.
-Q-	Que je dorme, que nous dormions,	que tu dormes, que vous dormiez,	qu'il dorme, qu'ils dorment.
-S-	Que je dormisse, que nous dormissions,	que tu dormisses, que vous dormissiez,	qu'il dormît, qu'ils dormissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Endormir, *to lull asleep.* | Redormir, *to sleep again.*
S'endormir, *to fall asleep.* | Se rendormir, *to fall asleep again.*

The Compound Tenses of S'ENDORMIR, and SE RENDORMIR, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*, as all pronominal verbs are.

FAILLIR *to fail*

-A-	Faillir,	-C- Faillant.	-E- Failli.
-J-	Je faillis, nous faillîmes,	tu faillis, vous faillîtes,	il faillit, ils faillirent.

This verb is *defective*, and only used in the above tenses, and in all the compound tenses, which are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

FLEURIR *to blossom, to flourish.*

This verb is regular and conjugated like FINIR, when speaking of plants and flowers; but when speaking of the prosperity of a kingdom, or of a town, -C- the participle present, is *florissant;* and -H- the imperfect of the indicative, *je florissais, tu florissais*, &c.

REFLEURIR, *to blossom, or flourish again*, follows the same rule.

FUIR *to fly.*

-A-	Fuir.	-C- Fuyant.	-E- Fui.
-F-	Je fuis, nous fuyons,	tu fuis, vous fuyez,	il fuit, ils fuient.
-H-	Je fuyais, nous fuyions,	tu fuyais, vous fuyiez,	il fuyait, ils fuyaient.
-J-	Je fuis, nous fuîmes,	tu fuis, vous fuîtes,	il fuit, ils fuirent.
-L-	Je fuirai, nous fuirons,	tu fuiras, vous fuirez,	il fuira, ils fuiront.
-N-	Je fuirais, nous fuirions,	tu fuirais, vous fuiriez,	il fuirait, ils fuiraient.
-P-	fuyons,	fuis, fuyez,	qu'il fuie, qu'ils fuient.

-Q-	Que je fuie,	que tu fuies,	qu'il fuie,
	que nous fuyions,	que vous fuyiez,	qu'ils fuient.
-S-	Que je fuisse,	que tu fuisses,	qu'il fût,
	que nous fuissions,	que vous fuissiez,	qu'ils fuissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner, S'ENFUIR, *to run away.*

GÉSIR *to lie.*

This verb, (*defective*) which formerly signified *to be lying down* is no longer in use; we however, say sometimes, *il gît; ci-gît*, here lies, is the common form by which an epitaph begins.

HAÏR *to hate.*

This verb is regular, and conjugated like FINIR, except in the first three persons singular of -F- the present of the indicative, *Je hais*, I hate; *tu hais*, thou hatest; *il hait*, he hates; and in the second person singular of -P- the imperative, *hais*, hate.

A diæresis (··) is required over the ï in all tenses and persons, except in those above mentioned; this diæresis is to cause the *a* and *i* to be pronounced as two syllables.

MOURIR *to die.*

-A-	Mourir.	-C- Mourant.	-E- Mort.
-F-	Je meurs,	tu meurs,	il meurt,
	nous mourons	vous mourez,	ils meurent.
-H-	Je mourais,	tu mourais,	il mourait,
	nous mourions,	vous mouriez,	ils mouraient.
-J-	Je mourus,	tu mourus,	il mourut,
	nous mourûmes,	vous mourûtes,	ils moururent.
-L-	Je mourrai,	tu mourras,	il mourra,
	nous mourrons,	vous mourrez,	ils mourront.
-N-	Je mourrais,	tu mourrais,	il mourrait,
	nous mourrions,	vous mourriez,	ils mourraient.
-P-		meurs,	qu'il meure,
	mourons,	mourez,	qu'ils meurent.
-Q-	Que je meure,	que tu meures,	qu'il meure,
	que nous mourions,	que vous mouriez,	qu'ils meurent.
-S-	Que je mourusse,	que tu mourusses,	qu'il mourût,
	que nous mourussions,	que vous mourussiez,	qu'ils mourussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with ETRE, *to be.*

Conjugated after the same manner, SE MOURIR, *to be dying*

OUÏR *to hear.*

This verb, (*defective*) can only be used in -A- the present of the infinitive, *ouïr*, to hear; in -J- the preterit definite, *j'ouïs*, I heard; *il ouït*, he heard; in -S- the imperfect of the subjunctive, *que j'ouïsse*, that I might hear; *qu'il ouït*, that he might hear; and in its compound tenses, which are formed with the simple tenses of AVOIR, *to have*, and its past participle *ouï*, as *j'ai ouï*, I have heard, *tu as ouï*, &c.

OUVRIR *to open.*

	-C-	-E-
-A- Ouv *rir.*	-C- Ouv *rant.*	-E- Ouv *ert.*
-F- J'ouv *re*,	tu ouv *res*,	il ouv *re*,
nous ouv *rons*,	vous ouv *rez*,	ils ouv *rent.*
-H- J'ouv *rais*,	tu ouv *rais*,	il ouv *rait*,
nous ouv *rions*,	vous ouv *riez*,	ils ouv *raient.*
-J- J'ouv *ris*,	tu ouv *ris*,	il ouv *rit*,
nous ouv *rîmes*,	vous ouv *rîtes*,	ils ouv *rirent.*
-L- J'ouv *rirai*,	tu ouv *riras*,	il ouv *rira*,
nous ouv *rirons*,	vous ouv *rirez*,	ils ouv *riront.*
-N- J'ouv *rirais*,	tu ouv *rirais*,	il ouv *rirait*,
nous ouv *ririons*,	vous ouv *ririez*,	ils ouv *riraient.*
-P-	ouv *re*,	qu'il ouv *re*,
ouv *rons*,	ouv *rez*,	qu'ils ouv *rent.*
-Q- Que j'ouv *re*,	que tu ouv *res*,	qu'il ouv *re*,
que nous ouv *rions*,	que vous ouv *riez*,	qu'ils ouv *rent.*
-S- Que j'ouv *risse*,	que tu ouv *risses*,	qu'il ouv *rît*,
que nous ouv *rissions*,	que vous ouv *ristiez*,	qu'ils ouv *rissent.*

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner—.

Rouv *rir*,	*to open again.*	Découv *rir*,	*to discover.*
Entr'ouv *rir*,	*to half open.*	Off *rir*,	*to offer.*
Couv *rir*,	*to cover.*	Mésoff *rir*,	*to underbid*
Recouv *rir*,	*to cover again.*	Souff *rir*	*to suffer.*

SENTIR *to feel.*

	-C-	-F-
-A- Sen *tir.*	-C- Sen *tant.*	-F- Sen *ti.*
-F- Je sen *s*,	tu sen *s*,	il sen *t*,
nous sen *tons*,	vous sen *tez.*	ils sen *tent.*
-H- Je sen *tais*,	tu sen *tais*,	il sen *tait*,
nous sen *tions*	vous sen *tiez*,	ils sen *taient*
J- Je sen *tis*,	tu sen *tis*,	il sen *tit*,
nous sen *tîmes*	vous sen *tîtes*,	ils sen *tirent.*

-L-	Je sen *tirai*,	tu sen *tiras*,	il sen *tira*.
	nous sen *tirons*,	vous sen *tirez*,	ils sen *tiront*,
-N-	Je sen *tirais*,	tu sen *tirais*,	il sen *tirait*,
	nous sen *tirions*,	vous sen *tiriez*,	ils sen *tiraient*.
-P-		sen *s*,	qu'il sen *te*,
	sen *tons*,	sen *tez*,	qu'ils sen *tent*.
-Q-	Que je sen *te*,	que tu sen *tes*,	qu'il sen *te*,
	que nous sen *tions*,	que vous sen *tiez*,	qu'ils sen *tent*.
-S-	Que je sen *tisse*,	que tu sen *tisses*,	qu'il sen *tît*,
	que nous sen *tissions*,	que vous sen *tissiez*,	qu'ils sen *tissent*.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Consen *tir*, *to consent, to agree*.	Se ressen *tir*, *to feel still*.
Pressen *tir*, *to foresee*.	Se repen *tir*, *to repent*.
Ressen *tir*, *to resent, to feel still*.	
Men *tir*, *to lie*.	Par *tir*, *to set out, to depart*.
Démen *tir*, *to give the lie, to belie, to contradict*.	Repar *tir*, *to set out again*.
	Sor *tir*, *to go out*.
Repar *tir*, to *reply*.	Ressor *tir*, *to go out again*.

The Compound Tenses of the first six of the above verbs, are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Those of SE RESSENTIR and SE REPENTIR, as all other pronominal verbs, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

And those of PARTIR, REPARTIR, SORTIR, and RESSORTIR, sometimes with AVOIR, sometimes with ETRE.

SERVIR *to serve*.

-A- Ser *vir*. -C- Ser *vant*. -E- Ser *vi*.

-F-	Je ser *s*,	tu ser *s*,	il ser *t*,
	nous ser *vons*,	vous ser *vez*,	ils ser *vent*.
-H-	Je ser *vais*,	tu ser *vais*,	il ser *vait*,
	nous ser *vions*,	vous ser *viez*,	ils ser *vaient*.
-J-	Je ser *vis*,	tu ser *vis*,	il ser *vit*,
	nous ser *vîmes*,	vous ser *vîtes*,	ils ser *virent*.
-L-	Je ser *virai*,	tu ser *viras*,	il ser *vira*,
	nous ser *virons*,	vous ser *virez*,	ils ser *viront*.
-N-	Je ser *virais*,	tu ser *virais*,	il ser *virait*,
	nous ser *virions*,	vous ser *viriez*,	ils ser *viraient*.
-P-		ser *s*,	qu'il ser *ve*,
	ser *vons*,	ser *vez*,	qu'ils ser *vent*

-Q- Que je ser*ve*,	que tu ser *ves*,	qu'il ser*ve*,
que nous ser*vions*,	que vous ser *viez*,	qu'ils ser*vent*,
-S- Que je ser *visse*,	que tu ser *visses*,	qu'il ser*vît*,
que nous ser *vissions*,	que vous ser *vissiez*,	qu'ils ser *vissent*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Desser *vir*, *to clear a table, to do an ill office to somebody.*
Se ser *vir*, *to make use, to use.*

The Compound Tenses of SERVIR and DESSERVIR, are conjugated with AVOIR; those of SE SERVIR, with ETRE.

ASSERVIR, *to subject*, is regular, and conjugated like FINIR.

TENIR *to hold.*

-A- T*enir.*	-C- T*enant.*	-E- T*enu*
-F- Je t*iens*,	tu t*iens*,	il t*ient*,
nous t*enons*,	vous t*enez*,	ils t*iennent*.
-H- Je t*enais*,	tu t*enais*,	il t*enait*,
nous t*enions*,	vous t*eniez*,	ils t*enaient*.
-J- Je t*ins*,	tu t*ins*,	il t*int*,
nous t*înmes*,	vous t*întes*,	ils t*inrent*.
-L- Je t*iendrai*,	tu t*iendras*,	il t*iendra*,
nous t*iendrons*,	vous t*iendrez*,	ils t*iendront*.
-N- Je t*iendrais*,	tu t*iendrais*,	il t*iendrait*,
nous t*iendrions*,	vous t*iendriez*,	ils t*iendraient*.
-P-	t*iens*,	qu'il t*ienne*,
t*enons*,	t*enez*,	qu'ils t*iennent*.
-Q- Que je t*ienne*,	que tu t*iennes*,	qu'il t*ienne*,
que nous t*enions*,	que vous t*eniez*,	qu'ils t*iennent*.
-S- Que je t*insse*,	que tu t*insses*,	qu'il t*înt*,
que nous t*inssions*,	que vous t*inssiez*,	qu'ils t*inssent*.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

*Appart*enir*, *to belong.*	Disconv *enir*, *to disagree.*
Av *enir*, *to happen.*	*Entret *enir*, *to entertain.*
*Circonv *enir*, *to circumvent.*	Interv *enir*, *to intervene.*
*Cont *enir*, *to contain.*	*Maint*enir*, *to maintain.*
*Contrev*enir*, *to contravene.*	Mésav *enir*, *to succeed ill.*
Conv *enir*, *to agree, to suit.*	*Obt *enir*, *to obtain.*
*Déprév *enir*, *to unprepossess.*	Parv *enir*, *to attain.*
*Dét *enir*, *to detain.*	*Prév *enir*, *to prevent, to inform.*
Dev *enir*, *to become.*	Prov *enir*, *to proceed from.*

Redev *enir, to become again.*
*Ret *enir, to retain.*
Rev *enir, to come again, to come back.*
S'abst *enir, to abstain.*
*Sout *enir, to sustain, to support.*
Se ressouv *enir, to recollect.*
Se souv *enir, to remember.*
*Subv *enir, to relieve.*
Surv *enir, to come unexpectedly.*
V *enir, to come.*

Those of the above verbs, which are marked with an asterisk (*), are conjugated in their compound tenses, with AVOIR, *to have*, and the others, with ETRE, *to be.*

AVENIR, *to happen*, is only used in the third person singular, of -F- the present of the indicative, as *s'il avient*, if it happens.

PROVENIR, *to proceed from*, is employed in its third persons singular, and plural; as *cela provient de*, that proceeds from; *Tous ses malheurs proviennent de*, &c. all his misfortunes proceed from, &c.

VÊTIR *to clothe.*

	-A- Vêt *ir.*	-C- Vêt *ant.*	-E- Vêt *u.*
-F-	Je vêt *s*,	tu vêt *s*,	il vêt,
	nous vêt *ons*,	vous vêt *ez*,	ils vêt *ent.*
-H-	Je vêt *ais*,	tu vêt *ais*,	il vêt *ait*,
	nous vêt *ions*,	vous vêt *iez*,	ils vêt *aient.*
-J-	Je vêt *is*,	tu vêt *is*,	il vêt *it*,
	nous vêt *îmes*,	vous vêt *îtes*,	ils vêt *irent*
-L-	Je vêt *irai*,	tu vêt *iras*,	il vêt *ira*,
	nous vêt *irons*,	vous vêt *irez*,	ils vêt *iront.*
-N-	Je vêt *irais*,	tu vêt *irais*,	il vêt *irait*,
	nous vêt *irions*,	vous vêt *iriez*,	ils vêt *iraient.*
-P-		vêt *s*,	qu'il vêt *e*,
	vêt *ons*,	vêt *ez*,	qu'ils vêt *ent.*
-Q-	Que je vêt *e*,	que tu vêt *es*,	qu'il vêt *e*,
	que nous vêt *ions*,	que vous vêt *iez*,	qu'ils vêt *ent.*
-S-	Que je vêt *isse*,	que tu vêt *isses*,	qu'il vêt *ît*,
	que nous vêt *issions*,	que vous vêt *issiez*,	qu'il vêt *issent.*

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner—

Revêt *ir, to clothe.*
Dévêt *ir, to strip, to undress.*
Se vêt *ir, to dress*, or *clothe one's self.*
Se dévêt *ir, to divest one's self*

The Compound Tenses of *Se vêtir*, and *Se dévêtir*, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be;* as all other pronominal verbs are.

Irregular, Defective, and Unipersonal Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

AVOIR *to have.*

This verb, (*active and auxiliary*) is one of the most irregular. See its conjugation, page 10.

RAVOIR *to have again.*

This verb, (*active and defective*) is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive.

Y AVOIR *there to be.*

This verb, (*unipersonal*) is conjugated, page 20.

S'ASSEOIR *to sit down.*

-A- S'asseoir. -C- S'asseyant. -E- Assis

-F- Je m'assieds, tu t'assieds, il s'assied,
nous nous asseyons, vous vous asseyez, ils s'asseyent,
or ils s'asseient.

-H- Je m'asseyais, tu t'asseyais, il s'asseyait,
nous nous asseyions, vous vous asseyiez, ils s'asseyaient.

-J- Je m'assis, tu t'assis, il s'assit,
nous nous assîmes, vous vous assîtes, ils s'assirent.

-L- Je m'asseyerai, tu t'asseyeras, il s'asseyera,
or je m'asseierai, tu t'asseieras, il s'asseiera,
or je m'assiérai, tu t'assiéras, il s'assiéra,
nous nous asseyerons, vous vous asseyerez, ils s'asseyeront,
or nous nous asseierons, vous vous asseierez, ils s'asseieront,
or nous nous assiérons, vous vous assiérez, ils s'assiéront.

-N- Je m'asseyerais, tu t'asseyerais, il s'asseyerait,
or je m'asseierais, tu t'asseierais, il s'asseierait,
or je m'assiérais, tu t'assiérais, il s'assiérait,
nous nous asseyerions, vous vous asseyeriez, ils s'asseyeraient,
or nous nous asseierions, vous vous asseieriez, ils s'asseieraient,
or nous nous assiérions, vous vous assiériez, ils s'assiéraient.

-P- assieds-toi, qu'il s'asseye,
or qu'il s'asseie.

asseyons-nous, asseyez-vous, qu'ils s'asseyent,
or qu'ils s'asseient.

-Q- Que je m'asseye, que tu t'asseyes, qu'il s'asseye,
or que je m'asseie, *or* que tu t'asseies, *or* qu'il s'asseie,
que nous nous asseyions, que vous vous asseyiez, qu'ils s'asseyent,
or qu'ils s'asseient.

-S- Que je m'assisse, que tu t'assisses, qu'il s'assît,
que nous nous assissions, que vous vous assissiez, qu'ils s'assissent.

Conjugated after the same manner, Se rasseoir, *to sit down again.*

The Compound Tenses of these two verbs, are conjugated with Etre, *to be;* as all other pronominal verbs are.

Conjugate after the same manner, without the second pronoun, *me, te, se,* &c. Asseoir, *to set,* or *to lay something,* or *somebody down.*

The compound tenses are conjugated with Avoir, *to have.*

The different ways of writing and pronouncing some of the tenses and persons of the above verbs, render them very difficult; particular attention must be paid to their conjugations. Of the three ways of writing and pronouncing, -L- the future, and -N- the conditional present; I would recommend the third as being the easiest, and I believe the most used.

Some Grammarians have imagined, to do away with the difficulties these verbs offer, even to French people, to conjugate them as follows—

S'Assoir *to sit down.*

-A- S'assoir. -C- S'assoyant. -E- Assis.

-F- Je m'assois, tu t'assois, il s'assoit,
nous nous assoyons, vous vous assoyez, ils s'assoient.

-H- Je m'assoyais, tu t'assoyais, il s'assoyait,
nous nous assoyions, vous vous assoyiez, ils s'assoyaient

-J- Je m'assis, tu t'assis, il s'assit,
nous nous assîmes, vous vous assîtes, ils s'assirent.

-L- Je m'assoirai, tu t'assoiras, il s'assoira,
nous nous assoirons, vous vous assoirez, ils s'assoiront.

-N- Je m'assoirais, tu t'assoirais, il s'assoirait,
nous nous assoirions, vous vous assoiriez, ils s'assoiraient.

-P- assois-toi, qu'il s'assoie,
assoyons-nous, assoyez-vous, qu'ils s'assoient

-Q- Que je m'assoie, que tu t'assoies, qu'il s'assoie,
que nous nous assoyions, que vous vous assoyiez, qu'ils s'assoient.

-S- que je m'assisse, que tu t'assisses, qu'il s'assît,
que nous nous assissions, que vous vous assissiez. qu'ils s'assissent.

It is certain that this way of conjugating the above, is much more convenient; and I should like to recommend it; but although much used in some parts of France, it is not yet generally received as correct by most of those of the Old School—who in every country seem to be opposed to every thing that can facilitate knowledge, lest we should now acquire in a *short* time, and with *little* trouble, what has cost them *much* time and *great* trouble.

Choir *to fall.*

This verb is not used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive

DÉCHOIR *to decay.*

This verb is seldom used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive, and in its compound tenses, which are conjugated sometimes with ETRE, sometimes with AVOIR.

ECHOIR *to fall to, to expire, to be due, to fall due.*

This verb is only used in the third person of -F- present of the indicative, *il échoit*, sometimes pronounced *il échet;* in -J- *il échut;* in -L- *il écherra;* in -N- *il écherrait;* in -S- *qu'il échût,* &c. in -A- *échoir;* in -C- *échéant;* in -B- *échu;* and in the compound tenses, which are conjugated sometimes with AVOIR, and sometimes with ETRE.

FALLOIR *to be necessary.*

-F-	Il faut,	*it is necessary.*
-H-	Il fallait,	*it was necessary.*
-J-	Il fallut,	*it was necessary.*
-L-	Il faudra,	*it shall* or *will be necessary.*
-N-	Il faudrait,	*it should, would, could,* or *might be necessary*
-P-	(*none*)	
-Q-	Qu'il faille,	*that it may be necessary.*
-S-	Qu'il fallût,	*that it might be necessary.*

The Compound Tenses of this verb, (*unipersonal and defective*) are formed by the addition of its participle past, *fallu*, to the third person singular of the verb AVOIR, as *il a fallu*, it has been necessary, &c.

The expressions, *I must, he must, we must, you must, they must,* &c. are rendered by *it must that I—it must that he,* &c. the verb which follows is put in the subjunctive mood, and in the person indicated by the personal pronoun, which is before *must*, in the English; as I must write—*Il faut que j'écrive;* you must drink—*il faut que vous buviez,* &c. we say also, *il me faut écrire, il vous faut boire.*

MOUVOIR *to move.*

	-A- Mouvoir.	-C- Mouvant.	-E- Mu.
-F-	Je meus, nous mouvons,	tu meus, vous mouvez,	il meut, ils meuvent.
-H-	Je mouvais, nous mouvions,	tu mouvais, vous mouviez,	il mouvait, ils mouvaient.
-J-	Je mus, nous mûmes,	tu mus, vous mûtes,	il mut, ils murent.
-L-	Je mouvrai, nous mouvrons,	tu mouvras, vous mouvrez,	il mouvra, ils mouvront.

-N-	Je mouvrais,	tu mouvrais,	il mouvrait,
	nous mouvrions,	vous mouvriez,	ils mouvraient.
-P-		meus,	qu'il meuve,
	mouvons,	mouvez,	qu'ils meuvent.
-Q-	Que je meuve,	que tu meuves,	qu'il meuve,
	que nous mouvions,	que vous mouviez,	qu'ils meuvent.
-S-	Que je musse,	que tu musses,	qu'il mût,
	que nous mussions,	que vous mussiez,	qu'ils mussent.

This verb is very little used, except in -A- the present of the infinitive.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

The object in giving, here, all its tenses, is to have a model, for-

Emouvoir,	*to move.*	S'émouvoir,	*to be concerned.*
Promouvoir,	*to promote.*		

which are conjugated like it. The compound tenses of *S'émouvoir*, are conjugated with ETRE.

Promouvoir, is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive, and in the compound tenses.

PLEUVOIR *to rain.*

-A-	Pleuvoir,	*to rain.*
-C-	Pleuvant,	*raining.*
-E-	Plu,	*rained.*
-F-	Il pleut,	*it rains, does rain,* or *is raining.*
-H-	Il pleuvait,	*it rained, did rain,* or *was raining.*
-J-	Il plut,	*it rained* or *did rain.*
-L-	Il pleuvra,	*it will rain.*
-N-	Il pleuvrait,	*it would rain.*
-P-	(*none.*)	
-Q-	Qu'il pleuve,	*that it may rain.*
-S-	Qu'il plût,	*that it might rain.*

The compound tenses, of the above *unipersonal* verb, are formed by the addition of -E- its participle passive, *plu*, to the third person singular of the simple tenses of AVOIR; as *il a plu*, it has rained, &c.

POURVOIR *to provide.*

-A- Pourvoir. -C- Pourvoyant. -E- Pourvu.

-F- Je pourvois,	tu pourvois,	il pourvoit,
nous pourvoyons,	vous pourvoyez,	ils pourvoient.
-H- Je pourvoyais,	tu pourvoyais,	il pourvoyait,
nous pourvoyions,	vous pourvoyiez	ils pourvoyaient.

-J-	Je pourvus, nous pourvûmes,	tu pourvus, vous pourvûtes,	il pourvut, ils pourvurent
-L-	Je pourvoirai, nous pourvoirons.	tu pourvoiras, vous pourvoirez,	il pourvoira, ils pourvoiront.
-N-	Je pourvoirais, nous pourvoirions,	tu pourvoirais, vous pourvoiriez,	il pourvoirait, ils pourvoiraient.
-P-	pourvoyons,	pourvois, pourvoyez,	qu'il pourvoie, qu'ils pourvoient.
-Q-	Que je pourvoie, que nous pourvoyions,	que tu pourvoies, que vous pourvoyiez,	qu'il pourvoie, qu'ils pourvoient.
-S-	Que je pourvusse, que nous pourvussions,	que tu pourvusses, que vous pourvussiez,	qu'il pourvût, qu'ils pourvussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with Avoir, *to have.*

Pouvoir *to be able.*

-A-	Pouvoir.	-C- Pouvant.	-E- Pu.
-F-	Je puis *or* je peux, nous pouvons,	tu peux, vous pouvez,	il peut, ils peuvent.
-H-	Je pouvais, nous pouvions,	tu pouvais, vous pouviez,	il pouvait, ils pouvaient.
-J-	Je pus, nous pûmes,	tu pus, vous pûtes,	il put, ils purent.
-L-	Je pourrai, nous pourrons,	tu pourras, vous pourrez,	il pourra, ils pourront.
-N-	Je pourrais, nous pourrions,	tu pourrais, vous pourriez,	il pourrait, ils pourraient.
-P-		(*none*)	
-Q-	Que je puisse, que nous puissions,	que tu puisse, que vous puissiez,	qu'il puisse, qu'ils puissent.
S-	Que je pusse, que nous pussions,	que tu pusses, que vous pussiez,	qu'il pût, qu'ils pussent.

Compound Tenses are conjugated with Avoir, *to have.*

Savoir *to know.*

-A-	Savoir	-C- Sachant.	-F- Su.
-F-	Je sais, nous savons,	tu sais, vous savez,	il sait, ils savent.
-H-	Je savais, nous savions,	tu savais, vous saviez,	il savait, ils savaient
-J-	Je sus, nous sûmes	tu sus, vous sûtes,	il sut, ils surent.

-L-	Je saurai,	tu sauras,	il saura,
	nous saurons,	vous saurez,	ils sauront.
-N-	Je saurais,	tu saurais,	il saurait,
	nous saurions,	vous sauriez,	ils sauraient.
-P-		sache,	qu'il sache,
	sachons,	sachez,	qu'ils sachent.
-Q-	Que je sache,	que tu saches,	qu'il sache,
	que nous sachions,	que vous sachiez,	qu'ils sachent.
-S-	Que je susse,	que tu susses,	qu'il sût,
	que nous sussions,	que vous sussiez,	qu'ils sussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with Avoir, *to have.*

Savoir, to know; must not be confounded with *Connaître*, to know. *Connaître*, is mostly used, in the sense of, *to be acquainted with*; and *Savoir*, in other circumstances.

Seoir *to fit, to become, to fit well.*

-A- Seoir. -C- Seyant. -E- Sis.

-E-	Il sied,	*it fits.*	ils siéent,	*they fit.*
-H-	Il seyait,	*it fitted.*	ils seyaient,	*they fitted.*
-J-		(*none*)		
-L-	Il siéra,	*it will fit.*	ils siéront,	*they will fit.*
-N-	Il siérait,	*it would fit.*	ils siéraient,	*they would fit.*
-P-		(*none*)		
-Q-	Qu'il siée,	*that it may fit.*	qu'ils siéent,	*that they may fit.*
-S-		(*none*)		

This verb, which is only employed in the third person of the singular, and of the plural, of some tenses, has no compound tenses.

Surseoir *to reprieve, to put off*

This verb is seldom used, except in -A- the present infinitive.

Valoir *to be worth.*

-A- Valoir. -C- Valant. -E- Valu.

-F-	Je vaux,	tu vaux,	il vaut,
	nous valons,	vous valez,	ils valent.
-H-	Je valais,	tu valais,	il valait,
	nous valions,	vous valiez,	ils valaient.
-J-	Je valus,	tu valus,	il valut,
	nous valûmes,	vous valûtes,	ils valurent.

-L-	Je vaudrai, nous vaudrons,	tu vaudras, vous vaudrez,	il vaudra, ils vaudront.
-N-	Je vaudrais, nous vaudrions,	tu vaudrais, vous vaudriez,	il vaudrait, ils vaudraient.
-P-	 valons,	vaux, valez,	qu'il vaille, qu'ils vaillent.
-Q-	Que je vaille, que nous valions,	que tu vailles, que vous valiez,	qu'il vaille, qu'ils vaillent.
-S-	Que je valusse, que nous valussions,	que tu valusses, que vous valussiez,	qu'il valût, qu'ils valussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner—

Re valoir, *to return like for like.* | Pré valoir, *to prevail.*
Equi valoir, *to be equivalent.*

This last, makes in -Q- the subjunctive, *que je prévale, que tu prévales, qu'il prévale, que nous prévalions, que vous prévaliez, qu'ils prévalent.*

VOIR *to see.*

-A- **Voir.** -C- **Voyant.** -E- **Vu.**

-F-	Je vois, nous voyons,	tu vois, vous voyez,	il voit, ils voient.
-H-	Je voyais, nous voyions,	tu voyais, vous voyiez,	il voyait, ils voyaient.
-J-	Je vis, nous vîmes,	tu vis, vous vîtes,	il vit. ils virent.
-L-	Je verrai, nous verrons,	tu verras, vous verrez,	il verra, ils verront.
-N-	Je verrais, nous verrions,	tu verrais, vous verriez,	il verrait, ils verraient.
-P-	 voyons,	vois, voyez,	qu'il voie, qu'ils voient.
-Q-	Que je voie, que nous voyions,	que tu voies, que vous voyiez,	qu'il voie, qu'ils voient.
-S-	Que je visse, que nous vissions,	que tu visses, que vous vissiez,	qu'il vît, qu'ils vissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Re voir, *to see again.* | Entre voir, *to have a glimpse of.*

PRÉ VOIR *to foresee.*

This verb is conjugated like VOIR, *to see*, except in -L- the future, and in -N- the present of the conditional.

-L-	Je prévoirai, nous prévoirons,	tu prévoiras, vous prévoirez,	il prévoira, ils prévoiront.
-N-	Je prévoirais, nous prévoirions,	tu prévoirais, vous prévoiriez,	il prévoirait, ils prévoiraient

VOULOIR *to be willing.*

-A-	Vouloir	-C- Voulant,	-E- Voulu,
-F-	Je veux, nous voulons,	tu veux, vous voulez,	il veut, ils veulent.
-H-	Je voulais, nous voulions,	tu voulais, vous vouliez,	il voulait, ils voulaient.
-J-	Je voulus, nous voulûmes,	tu voulus, vous voulûtes,	il voulut, ils voulurent.
-L-	Je voudrai, nous voudrons,	tu voudras, vous voudrez,	il voudra, ils voudront.
N-	Je voudrais, nous voudrions,	tu voudrais, vous voudriez,	il voudrait, ils voudraient.
P-		veuillez,	(*is the only person*)
Q-	Que je veuille, que nous voulions,	que tu veuilles, que vous vouliez,	qu'il veuille, qu'ils veuillent.
-S-	Que je voulusse, que nous voulussions,	que tu voulusses, que vous voulussiez, with avoir.	qu'il voulût, qu'ils voulussent

Irregular, Defective, and Unpersonal Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation.

BATTRE *to beat*

-B-	Battre.	-C- Battant.	-E- Battu.
-F-	Je bats, nous battons,	tu bats, vous battez,	il bat, ils battent.
-H-	Je battais, nous battions,	tu battais, vous battiez,	il battait, ils battaient.
-J-	Je battis, nous battîmes,	tu battis, vous battîtes,	il battit, ils battirent.
-L-	Je battrai, nous battrons,	tu battras, vous battrez,	il battra, ils battront.

-N-	Je battrais, nous battrions.	tu battrais, vous battriez,	il battrait, ils battraient.
-P-	 battons,	bats, battez,	qu'il batte, qu'ils battent.
-Q-	Que je batte, que nous battions,	que tu battes, que vous battiez,	qu'il batte, qu'ils battent.
-S-	Que je battisse, que nous battissions,	que tu batisses, que vous battissiez,	qu'il battît, qu'ils battissent.

The compound tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

A battre, *to pull down.*
Com battre, *to fight.*
Dé battre, *to debate.*
Ra battre, *to pull down again,* [*to abate.*
Re battre, *to beat again.*
S'é battre, *to make* or *be merry*
Se dé battre, *to struggle.*

The compound tenses of *S'ébattre*, and *Se débattre*, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be.*

BOIRE *to drink.*

-A- Boire. -C- Buvant. -E- Bu.

-F-	Je bois, nous buvons,	tu bois, vous buvez,	il boit, ils boivent.
-H-	Je buvais, nous buvions,	tu buvais, vous buviez,	il buvait, ils buvaient.
-J	Je bus, nous bûmes,	tu bus, vous bûtes,	il but, ils burent.
-L-	Je boirai, nous boirons,	tu boiras, vous boirez,	il boira, ils boiront.
-N-	Je boirais, nous boirions,	tu boirais, vous boiriez,	il boirait, ils boiraient.
-P-	 buvons,	bois, buvez,	qu'il boive, qu'ils boivent.
-Q-	Que je boive que nous buvions,	que tu boive, que vous buviez,	qu'il boive, qu'ils boivent.
-S-	Que je busse, que nous bussions,	que tu busses, que vous bussiez,	qu'il bût, qu'ils bussent

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner, RE BOIRE. *to drink again.*

CLORE *to close.*

-A- Clore.	(*none*)	-E- Clos.
-F- Je clos,	tu clos,	il clot.
-L- Je clorai,	tu cloras,	il clora,
nous clorons,	vous clorez,	ils cloront.
-N- Je clorais,	tu clorais,	il clorait
nous clorions,	vous cloriez,	ils cloraient.

This verb, (*defective*) is only used in the above few tenses. and persons, and in all the compound tenses, which are formed with AVOIR, *to have.* Some write this verb with double *r*

Conjugated after the same manner, EN CLORE, *to enclose.*

CONCLURE *to conclude*

-A- Conclure.	-C- Concluant.	-E- Conclu.
-F- Je conclus,	tu conclus,	il conclut,
nous concluons,	vous concluez,	ils concluent.
-H- Je concluais,	tu concluais,	il concluait,
nous concluïons,	vous concluïez,	ils concluaient.
-J- Je conclus,	tu conclus,	il conclut,
nous conclûmes,	vous conclûtes,	ils conclurent.
-L- Je conclurai,	tu concluras,	il conclura,
nous conclurons,	vous conclurez,	ils concluront.
-N- Je conclurais,	tu conclurais,	il conclurait,
nous conclurions,	vous concluriez,	ils concluraient.
-P-	conclus,	qu'il conclue,
concluons,	concluez,	qu'ils concluent.
-Q- Que je conclue,	que tu conclues,	qu'il conclue,
que nous concluïons,	que vous concluïez,	qu'ils concluent.
-S- Que je conclusse,	que tu conclusses,	qu'il conclût,
que nous conclussions,	que vous conclussiez,	qu'ils conclussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner, EXCLURE, *to exclude.*

CONFIRE *to pickle.*

-A- Conf*ire.*	-C- Conf*isant.*	-E- Conf*it.*
-F- Je conf*is*,	tu conf*is*,	il conf*it*,
nous conf*isons*,	vous conf*isez*,	ils conf*isent.*
-H- Je conf*isais*,	tu conf*isais*,	il conf*isait*,
nous conf*isions*,	vous conf*isiez*,	ils conf*isaient.*

-J-	Je conf*is*, nous conf*îmes*,	tu conf*is*, vous conf*îtes*,	il conf*it*, ils conf*irent*.
-L-	Je conf*irai*, nous conf*irons*,	tu conf*iras*, vous conf*irez*,	il conf*ira*, ils conf*iront*.
-N-	Je conf*irais*, nous conf*irions*,	tu conf*irais*, vous conf*iriez*,	il conf*irait*, ils conf*iraient*.
-P-	 conf*isons*,	conf*is*, conf*isez*,	qu'il conf*ise*, qu'ils conf*isent*.
-Q-	Que je conf*ise*, que nous conf*isions*,	que tu conf*ises*, que vous conf*isiez*,	qu'il conf*ise*, qu'ils conf*isent*.
-S-	Que je conf*isse*, que nous conf*issions*,	que tu conf*isses*, que vous conf*issiez*,	qu'il conf*ît*, qu'ils conf*issent*.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Suff*ire*, *to suffice.* | Circonc*ire*, *to circumcise.*

COUDRE *to sew*

-A-	Coudre.	-C- Cousant.	-E Cousu.
-F-	Je couds, nous cousons,	tu couds, vous cousez,	il coud, ils cousent.
-H-	Je cousais, nous cousions,	tu cousais, vous cousiez,	il cousait, ils cousaient.
-J-	Je cousis, nous cousîmes,	tu cousis, vous cousîtes,	il cousit, ils cousirent.
-L-	Je coudrai, nous coudrons,	tu coudras, vous coudrez,	il coudra, ils coudront.
-N-	Je coudrais, nous coudrions,	tu coudrais, vous coudriez,	il coudrait, ils coudraient.
-P-	 cousons,	couds, cousez,	qu'il couse, qu'ils cousent.
-Q-	Que je couse, que nous cousions,	que tu couses que vous cousiez,	qu'il couse, qu'ils cousent.
-S-	Que je cousisse, que nous cousissions	que tu cousisses, que vous cousissiez,	qu'il cousît, qu'ils cousissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Dé coudre, *to rip* | Re coudre, *to sew again.*

CROIRE *to believe.*

-A- Croire.	-C- Croyant.	-E- Cru.
-F- Je crois,	tu crois,	il croit,
nous croyons,	vous croyez,	ils croient.
-H- Je croyais,	tu croyais,	il croyait,
nous croyions,	vous croyiez,	ils croyaient.
-J- Je crus,	tu crus,	il crut,
nous crûmes,	vous crûtes,	ils crurent.
-L- Je croirai,	tu croiras,	il croira,
nous croirons,	vous croirez,	ils croiront.
-N- Je croirais,	tu croirais,	il croirait,
nous croirions,	vous croiriez,	ils croiraient.
-P-	crois,	qu'il croie,
croyons,	croyez,	qu'ils croient.
-Q- Que je croie,	que tu croies,	qu'il croie,
que nous croyions,	que vous croyiez,	qu'ils croient.
-S- Que je crusse,	que tu crusses,	qu'il crût,
que nous crussions,	que vous crussiez,	qu'ils crussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*

Accroire, *to make one believe, to impose upon one,*

Is only used in -A- the present of the infinitive with the verb *Faire,* which serves as an auxiliary.

CROÎTRE *to grow.*

-A- Croître.	-C- Croissant.	-E- Crû.
-F- Je croîs,	tu croîs,	il croît,
nous croissons,	vous croissez,	ils croissent.
-H- Je croissais,	tu croissais,	il croissait,
nous croissions,	vous croissiez,	ils croissaient.
-J- Je crûs,	tu crûs,	il crût,
nous crûmes,	vous crûtes,	ils crûrent.
-L- Je croîtrai,	tu croîtras,	il croîtra,
nous croîtrons,	vous croîtrez,	ils croîtront.
-N- Je croîtrais,	tu croîtrais,	il croîtrait,
nous croîtrions,	vous croîtriez,	ils croîtraient.
-P-	croîs,	qu'il croisse,
croissons,	croissez,	qu'ils croissent.
-Q- Que je croisse,	que tu croisses,	qu'il croisse,
que nous croissions,	que vous croissiez,	qu'ils croissent.
-S- Que je crûsse,	que tu crûsses,	qu'il crût,
que nous crûssions,	que vous crûssiez,	qu'ils crûssent.

The compound tenses are conjugated sometimes, with AVOIR, sometimes with ETRE; with AVOIR, when it expresses the action of growing, and with ETRE, when it denotes the state in which one is.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Ac croître, *to increase.* | Dé croître, *to decrease.*

DIRE *to say*

	-C- Disant.	-E- Dit.
-A- Dire.		
-F- Je dis,	tu dis,	il dit,
nous disons,	vous dites,	ils disent.
-H- Je disais,	tu disais,	il disait,
nous disions,	vous disiez,	ils disaient.
-J- Je dis,	tu dis,	il dit,
nous dîmes,	vous dîtes,	ils dirent.
-L- Je dirai,	tu diras,	il dira,
nous dirons,	vous direz,	ils diront.
-N- Je dirais,	tu dirais,	il dirait,
nous dirions,	vous diriez,	ils diraient.
-P-	dis,	qu'il dise,
disons,	dites,	qu'ils disent.
-Q- Que je dise,	que tu dises,	qu'il dise,
que nous disions,	que vous disiez,	qu'ils disent.
-S- Que je disse,	que tu disses,	qu'il dît,
que nous dissions,	que vous dissiez,	qu'ils dissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner, RE DIRE, *to say again.*

The following verbs—

Contre dire,	*to contradict.*	Mé dire,	*to slander.*
Dé dire,	*to disown.*	Pré dire,	*to foretell.*
Inter dire,	*to interdict.*	Se dé dire,	*to recant.*
Mau dire,	*to curse.*		

are also conjugated like *Dire*, except in the second person plural of -F- the indicative present, and of -P- the imperative, in which they make

Contre disez	Mau dissez. Mé disez.
Dé disez.	Pré disez.
Inter disez.	Dé disez.

Mau dire, takes two *s's* in -C-, *maudissant;* in the three persons plural of -F-, *nous maudissons, vous maudissez, ils maudissent;* in all the persons of -H-, *je maudissais*, &c.; in the third person singular, and in the three persons plural, of -P-, *qu'il maudisse, que nous maudissons* &c.; and also in the three persons plural, of -Q-, *que nous maudissions*, &c.; in its other persons and tenses it is conjugated like DIRE

Éclore *to hatch, to blow, to open.*

-A- Éclore.	(*none*)	-E- Éclos.
-F- Il éclot,		ils éclosent.
-H-	(*none*)	
-J-	(*none*)	
-L- Il éclora,		ils écloront.
-N- Il éclorait,		ils écloraient.
-P-	(*none*)	
-Q- Qu'il éclose,		qu'ils éclosent.
-S-	(*none*)	

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with Avoir, *to have*

Écrire *to write.*

-A- Écr *ire.*	-C- Écr *ivant*	-E- Écr *it.*
-F- J'écr *is*,	tu écr *it*,	il écr *it*,
nous écr *ivons*,	vous écr *ivez*,	ils écr *ivent.*
-H- J'écr *ivais*,	tu écr *ivais*,	il écr *ivait*,
nous écr *ivions*,	vous écr *iviez*,	ils écr *ivaient.*
-J- J'écr *ivis*,	tu écr *ivis*,	il écr *ivit*,
nous écr *ivîmes*	vous écr *ivîtes*,	ils écr *ivirent.*
-L- J'écr *irai*,	tu écr *iras*,	il écr *ira.*
nous écr *irons*,	vous écr *irez*,	ils écr *iront.*
-N- J'écr *irais*,	tu écr *irais*,	il écr *irait*,
nous écr *irions*,	vous écr *iriez*,	ils écr *iraient.*
-P-	écr *is*,	qu'il écr *ive*,
écr *ivons*,	écr *ivez*,	qu'ils écr *ivent.*
-Q- Que j'écr *ive*,	que tu écr *ives*,	qu'il écr *ive*,
que nous écr *ivions*,	que vous écr *iviez*,	qu'ils écr *ivent.*
-S- Que j'écr *ivisse*,	que tu écr *ivisses*,	qu'il écr *ivît*,
que nous écr *ivissions*,	que vous écr *ivissiez*,	qu'ils écr *ivissent.*

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with Avoir, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Circonscr *ire*, *to circumscribe.*	Proscr *ire*, *to proscribe.*
Décr *ire*, *to describe.*	Récr *ire*, *to write again*
Inscr *ire*, *to inscribe.*	Souscr *ire*, *to subscribe.*
Prescr *ire*, *to prescribe.*	Transcr *ire*, *to transcribe*

Être *to be.*

See its conjugation, page 24.

FAIRE *to make, to do, to cause.*

-A- Faire.	-C- Fesant.	-E- Fait.
-F- Je fais, nous fesons,	tu fais, vous faites,	il fait, ils font.
-H- Je fesais, nous fesions,	tu fesais, vous fesiez,	il fesait, ils fesaient.
-J- Je fis, nous fîmes,	tu fis, vous fîtes,	il fit, ils firent
-L- Je ferai, nous ferons,	tu feras, vous ferez,	il fera, ils feront.
-N- Je ferais, nous ferions,	tu ferais, vous feriez,	il ferait, ils feraient
-P- fesons,	fais, faites,	qu'il fasse, qu'ils fassent.
-Q- Que je fasse, que nous fassions,	que tu fasses, que vous fassiez,	qu'il fasse, qu'ils fassent.
-S Que je fisse, que nous fissions,	que tu fisses, que vous fissiez,	qu'il fît, qu'ils fissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Contre faire, *to counterfeit, to mimic.*
Dé faire, *to undo.*
Redé faire, *to undo again.*
Re faire, *to do again.*
Satis faire, *to satisfy.*
Sur faire, *to ask to much.*

Observe, that in the spelling of this verb, I have adopted the orthography of most modern writers.

FRIRE *to fry.*

-A- Frire.	(*none*)	-E- Frit.
-F- Je fris,	tu fris,	il frit.
-L- Je frirai, nous frirons,	tu friras, vous frirez,	il frira, ils friront.
-N- Je frirais, nous fririions,	tu frirais, vous fririez,	il frirait, ils friraient.
-P-	fris.	

This verb, (*defective*) is only used in the above few persons and tenses, and in all the compound tenses, which are formed with AVOIR.

To supply the persons and tenses which are wanting, we use the different tenses of FAIRE, *to make*, with the infinitive present of FRIRE; as *nous fesons frire, vous faites frire, ils font frire*, &c.

JOINDRE *to join.*

	-A- Joi *ndre.*	-C- Joi *gnant.*	-E- Joi *nt.*
-F-	Je joi *ns*, nous joi *gnons*,	tu joi *ns*, vous joi *gnez*,	il joi *nt*, ils joi *gnent.*
-H-	Je joi *gnais*, nous joi *gnions*,	tu joi *gnais*, vous joi *gniez*,	il joi *gnait*, ils joi *gnaient.*
-J-	Je joi *gnis*, nous joi *gnîmes*,	tu joi *gnis*, vous joi *gnîtes*,	il joi *gnit*, ils joi *gnirent.*
-L-	Je joi *ndrai*, nous joi *ndrons*,	tu joi *ndras*, vous joi *ndrez*,	il joi *ndra*, ils joi *ndront.*
-N-	Je joi *ndrais*, nous joi *ndrions*,	tu joi *ndrais*, vous joi *ndriez*,	il joi *ndrait*, ils joi *ndraient*
-P-	joi *gnons*,	joi *ns*, joi *gnez*,	qu'il joi *gne*, qu'ils joi *gnent.*
-Q-	Que je joi *gne*, que nous joi *gnions*,	que tu joi *gnes*, que vous joi *gniez*,	qu'il joi *gne*, qu'ils joi *gnent.*
-S-	Que je joi *gnisse*, que nous joi *gnissions*,	que tu joi *gnisses*, que vous joi *gnissiez*,	qu'il joi *gnît*, qu'ils joi *gnissent.*

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—all verbs, whose present of the infinitive ends

in	aindre	*as*	Crai *ndre*,	*to fear.*
	eindre	*as*	Pei *ndre*,	*to paint.*
	oindre	*as*	Poi *ndre*,	*to dawn.*

also.

Astrei *ndre*, *to subject, to compel.*	Etei *ndre*, *to put out, to extinguish*
Attei *ndre*, *to reach, to overtake.*	Fei *ndre*, *to feign, to pretend.*
Cei *ndre*, *to gird.*	Plai *ndre*, *to pity.*
Contrai *ndre*, *to constrain, to force.*	Restrei *ndre*, *to restrain.*
Enfrei *ndre*, *to infringe.*	Tei *ndre*, *to dye.*

LIRE *to read.*

	-A- Lire.	-C- Lisant.	-E- Lu.
-F-	Je lis, nous lisons,	tu lis, vous lisez,	il lit, ils lisent.
-H-	Je lisais, nous lisions,	tu lisais, vous lisiez,	il lisait, ils lisaient.
-J-	Je lus, nous lûmes,	tu lus, vous lûtes,	il lut, ils lurent.

-L-	Je lirai, nous lirons,	tu liras, vous lirez,	il lira, ils liront.
-N-	Je lirais, nous lirions,	tu lirais, vous liriez,	il lirait, ils liraient.
-P-	 lisons,	lis, lisez,	qu'il lise, qu'ils lisent.
-Q-	Que je lise, que nous lisions,	que tu lises, que vous lisiez,	qu'il lise, qu'ils lisent.
-S-	Que je lusse, que nous lussions,	que tu lusses, que vous lussiez,	qu'il lût, qu'ils lussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Re lire, *to read again.* | É lire, *to elect.*

METTRE *to put.*

-A-	Mettre.	-C- Mettant.	-E- Mis.
-F-	Je mets, nous mettons,	tu mets, vous mettez,	il met, ils mettent.
-H-	Je mettais, nous mettions,	tu mettais, vous mettiez,	il mettait, ils mettaient.
-J-	Je mis, nous mîmes,	tu mis, vous mîtes,	il mit, ils mirent.
-L-	Je mettrai, nous mettrons,	tu mettras, vous mettrez,	il mettra, ils mettront.
-N-	Je mettrais, nous mettrions,	tu mettrais, vous mettriez,	il mettrait, ils mettraient.
-P-	 mettons,	mets, mettez,	qu'il mette, qu'ils mettent.
-Q-	Que je mette, que nous mettions,	que tu mettes, que vous mettiez,	qu'il mette, qu'ils mettent
-S-	Que je misse, que nous missions,	que tu misses, que vous missiez,	qu'il mît, qu'ils missent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Ad mettre, *to admit.*
Com mettre, *to commit.*
Compro mettre, *to compromise.*
De mettre, *to disjoint, to put out.*
O mettre, *to omit.*
Per mettre, *to permit.*
Pro mettre, *to promise.*
Re mettre, *to put again, to set again, to replace.*
Sou mettre, *to submit.*
Trans mettre, *to transmit.*
Se dé mettre, *to resign.*
S'entre mettre, *to interpose.*

The two last have their compound tenses conjugated with ETRE.

MOUDRE *to grind.*

-A- Moudre.	-C- Moulant.	-E- Moulu.
-F- Je mouds,	tu mouds,	il moud,
nous moulons,	vous moulez,	ils moulent.
-H- Je moulais,	tu moulais,	il moulait,
nous moulions,	vous mouliez,	ils moulaient.
-J- Je moulus,	tu moulus,	il moulut,
nous moulûmes,	vous moulûtes,	ils moulurent.
-L- Je moudrai,	tu moudras,	il moudra,
nous moudrons,	vous moudrez,	ils moudront.
-N- Je moudrais,	tu moudrais,	il moudrait,
nous moudrions,	vous moudriez,	ils moudraient.
-P-	mouds,	qu'il moule,
moulons,	moulez,	qu'ils moulent.
-Q- Que je moule,	que tu moules,	qu'il moule,
que nous moulions,	que vous mouliez,	qu'ils moulent.
-S- Que je moulusse,	que tu moulusses,	qu'il moulût,
que nous moulussions,	que vous moulussiez,	qu'ils moulussent

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugated after the same manner—

Re moudre, *to grind again.* | É moudre, *to grind, to whet.*

NAÎTRE *to be born.*

-A- Naître.	-C- Naissant.	-E- Né.
-F- Je nais,	tu nais,	il naît,
nous naissons,	vous naissez,	ils naissent.
-H- Je naissais,	tu naissais,	il naissait,
nous naissions,	vous naissiez,	ils naissaient.
-J- Je naquis,	tu naquis,	il naquit,
nous naquîmes,	vous naquîtes,	ils naquirent.
-L- Je naîtrai,	tu naîtras,	il naîtra,
nous naîtrons,	vous naîtrez,	ils naîtront.
-N- Je naîtrais,	tu naîtrais,	il naîtrait,
nous naîtrions,	vous naîtriez,	ils naîtraient.
-P-	nais,	qu'il naisse,
naissons,	naissez,	qu'ils naissent.
-Q- Que je naisse,	que tu naisse,	qu'il naisse,
que nous naissions,	que vous naissiez,	qu'ils naissent
-S- Que je naquisse,	que tu naquisse,	qu'il naquît,
que nous naquissions,	que vous naquissiez,	qu'ils naquissent.

The Compound tenses are conjugated with ETRE, *to be.*
Conjugate after the same manner—

Re naître, *to revive.*

PAÎTRE *to graze.*

-A-	Paître.	-C- Paissant.	-E- Pu.
-F-	Je pais, nous paissons,	tu pais, vous paissez,	il paît, ils paissent.
-H-	Je paissais, nous paissions,	tu paissais, vous paissiez,	il paissait, ils paissaient.
-J-		(*none*)	
-L-	Je paîtrai, nous paîtrons,	tu paîtras, vous paîtrez,	il paîtra, ils paîtront.
-N-	Je paîtrais, nous paîtrions,	tu paîtrais, vous paîtriez,	il paîtrait, ils paîtraient.
-P-	paissons,	pais, paissez,	qu'il paisse, qu'ils paissent.
-Q-	Que je paisse, que nous paissions,	que tu paisses, que vous paissiez,	qu'il paisse, qu'ils paissent.
-S-		(*none*)	

This verb is very little used; it has no compound tenses.
Conjugate after the same manner—

Re paître, *to feed.* | Se re paître, *to feed one's self.*

These last two verbs, have a preterit definite, and an imperfect of the subjunctive.

-J-	Je repus, nous repûmes,	tu repus, vous repûtes,	il reput, ils repurent.
-S-	Que je repusse, que nous repussions,	que tu repusses, que vous repussiez,	qu'il repût, qu'ils repussent.

The compound tenses of *Repaître*, are conjugated with AVOIR, and those of *Se repaître*, with ETRE.

PARAÎTRE *to appear.*

A-	Par *aître.*	-C- Par *aissant.*	-E- Par *u.*
-F-	Je par *ais* nous par *aissons*,	tu par *ais*, vous par *aissez*,	il par *aît*, ils par *aissent.*
-H-	Je par *aissais*, nous par *aissions*	tu par *aissais*, vous par *aissiez*,	il par *aissait*, ils par *aissaient.*

-J- Je par *us*,	tu par *us*,	il par *ut*,
nous par *ûmes*,	vous par *ûtes*,	ils par *urent*.
-L- Je par *aîtrai*,	tu par *aîtras*,	il par *aîtra*,
nous par *aîtrons*,	vous par *aîtrez*,	ils par *aîtront*.
-N- Je par *aîtrais*,	tu par *aîtrais*,	il par *aîtrait*,
nous par *aîtrions*,	vous par *aîtriez*,	ils par *aîtraient*.
-P-	par *ais*,	qu'il par *aisse*,
par *aissons*,	par *aissez*,	qu'ils par *aissent*.
-Q- Que je par *aisse*,	que tu par *aisses*,	qu'il par *aisse*,
que nous par *aissions*,	que vous par *aissiez*,	qu'ils par *aissent*,
-S- Que je par *usse*,	que tu par *usses*,	qu'il par *ût*,
que nous par *ussions*,	que vous par *ussiez*,	qu'ils par *ussent*.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Appar *aître*, *to appear*.	Reconn *aître*, *to recognize*, *to know again*.
Compar *aître*, *to appear*.	Repar *aître*, *to appear again*.
Conn *aître*, *to know*.	Se méconn *aître*, *to forget one's self*.
Dispar *aître*, *to disappear*.	
Méconn *aître*, *to mistake*, *to forget*, *to neglect*.	

The compound tenses of the last verb, are conjugated with ETRE.

PLAIRE *to please*.

-A- Pl *aire*. -C- Pl *aisant*. -E- Pl *u*.

-F- Je pl *ais*,	tu pl *ais*,	il pl *aît*,
nous pl *aisons*,	vous pl *aisez*,	ils pl *aisent*.
-H- Je pl *aisais*,	tu pl *aisais*,	il pl *aisait*.
nous pl *aisions*,	vous pl *aisiez*,	ils pl *aisaient*.
-J- Je pl *us*,	tu pl *us*,	il pl *ut*,
nous pl *ûmes*,	vous pl *ûtes*,	ils pl *ûrent*.
-L- Je pl *airai*,	tu pl *airas*,	il pl *aira*,
nous pl *airons*,	vous pl *airez*,	ils pl *airont*.
-N- Je pl *airais*,	tu pl *airais*,	il pl *airait*,
nous pl *airions*,	vous pl *airiez*,	ils pl *airaient*.
-P-	pl *ais*,	qu'il pl *aise*,
pl *aisons*,	pl *aisez*,	qu'ils pl *aisent*.
-Q- Que je pl *aise*,	que tu pl *aises*,	qu'il pl *aise*,
que nous pl *aisions*,	que vous pl *aisiez*,	qu'ils pl *aisent*.
-S- Que je pl *usse*,	que tu pl *usses*,	qu'il pl *ût*,
que nous pl *ussions*,	que vous pl *ussiez*,	qu'ils pl *ussent*.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugated after the same manner—

Compl *aire, to humour, to please.*
Dépl *aire, to displease.*
T *aire, to conceal, to keep secret.*
Se T *aire, to forbear talking, to be silent, to hold one's tongue.*

The compound tenses of *Se Taire*, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be*.

POINDRE *to shoot forth, to dawn.*

-A- Poindre. -F- Il point. -L- Il poindra.

Are the only tenses and persons used.

PRENDRE *to take.*

-A-	Prendre,	-C- Prenant.	-E- Pris.
-F-	Je prends, nous prenons,	tu prends, vous prenez,	il prend, ils prennent.
-H-	Je prenais, nous prenions,	tu prenais, vous preniez,	il prenait, ils prenaient.
-J-	Je pris, nous prîmes,	tu pris, vous prîtes,	il prit, ils prirent.
-L-	Je prendrai, nous prendrons,	tu prendras, vous prendrez,	il prendra, ils prendront.
-N-	Je prendrais, nous prendrions,	tu prendrais, vous prendriez,	il prendrait, ils prendraient.
-P-	 prenons,	prends, prenez,	qu'il prenne, qu'ils prennent.
-Q-	Que je prenne, que nous prenions,	que tu prennes, que vous preniez,	qu'il prenne, qu'ils prennent.
-S-	Que je prisse, que nous prissions,	que tu prisse, que vous prissiez,	qu'il prît, qu'ils prissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Ap prendre, *to learn.*
Com prendre, *to comprehend, to understand.*
Dé prendre, *to loosen, to disengage.*
Désap prendre, *to unlearn.*
Entre prendre, *to undertake.*
Rap prendre, *to learn again.*
Re prendre, *to take again, to resume.*
Sur prendre, *to surprise, to deceive.*
Se mé prendre, *to mistake.*
S'é prendre, *to be smitten.*

The compound tenses of *Se méprendre*, and *S'éprendre*, are conjugated with ETRE, *to be; S'éprendre*, is used only in -E- the participle past, and in all the compound tenses.

RÉDUIRE *to reduce.*

-A- Rédui *re.*	-C- Rédui *sant.*	-E- Rédui *t.*
-F- Je rédui *s*,	tu rédui *s*,	il rédui *t*,
nous rédui *sons*,	vous rédui *sez*,	ils rédui *sent.*
-H- Je rédui *sais*,	tu rédui *sais*,	il rédui *sait*,
nous rédui *sions*,	vous rédui *siez*,	ils rédui *saient.*
-J- Je rédui *sis*,	tu rédui *sis*,	il rédui *sit*,
nous rédui *sîmes*,	vous rédui *sîtes*,	ils rédui *sirent*
-L- Je rédui *rai*,	tu rédui *ras*,	il rédui *ra*,
nous rédui *rons*,	vous rédui *rez*,	ils rédui *ront.*
-N- Je rédui *rais*,	tu rédui *rais*,	il rédui *rait*,
nous rédui *rions*,	vous rédui *riez*,	ils rédui *raient.*
-P-	rédui *s*,	qu'il rédui *se*,
rédui *sons*,	rédui *sez*,	qu'ils rédui *sent*
-Q- Que je rédui *se*,	que tu rédui *ses*,	qu'il rédui *se*,
que nous rédui *sions*,	que vous rédui *siez*,	qu'ils rédui *sent.*
-S- Que je rédui *sisse*,	que tu rédui *sisses*,	qu'il rédui *sît*,
que nous rédui *sissions*,	que vous rédui *sissiez*,	qu'ils rédui *sissent*

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Condui *re, to conduct, to lead.*	Lui *re, to shine, to glow*
Construi *re, to construct.*	Nui *re, to hurt.*
Cui *re, to bake.*	Produi *re, to produce.*
Dédui *re, to deduct, to take from.*	Recondui *re, to reconduct, to [lead back.*
Détrui *re, to destroy.*	Reconstrui *re, to construct [again.*
Econdui *re, to discard in a po- [lite manner.*	Recui *re, to bake again.*
Endui *re, to plaster.*	Relui *re, to shine, to glow.*
Entre-lui *re, to shine a little, to [glow a little.*	Rendui *re, to plaster again.*
Indui *re, to induce.*	Reprodui *re, to reproduce.*
Instrui *re, to instruct.*	Sédui *re, to seduce.*
Introdui *re, to introduce.*	Tradui *re, to translate.*

RESOUDRE *to dissolve, to resolve.*

-A- Ré soudre.	-C- Ré solvant.	E- Ré solu *or* ré sous.
-F- Je ré sous,	tu ré sous,	il ré sout,
nous ré solvons,	vous ré solvez,	ils ré solvent.
-H- Je ré solvais,	tu ré solvais,	il ré solvait,
nous ré solvions,	vous ré solviez,	ils ré solvaient.

-J- Je ré solus,	tu ré solus,	il ré solut,
nous ré solûmes,	vous ré solûtes,	ils ré solurent.
-L- Je ré soudrai,	tu ré soudras,	il ré soudra,
nous ré soudrons,	vous ré soudrez,	ils ré soudront.
-N- Je ré soudrais,	tu ré soudrais,	il ré soudrait,
nous ré soudrions,	vous ré soudriez,	ils ré soudraient.
-P-	ré sous,	qu'il ré solve,
ré solvons,	ré solvez,	qu'ils ré solvent.
-Q- Que je ré solve,	que tu ré solve,	qu'il ré solve,
que nous ré solvions,	que vous ré solviez,	qu'ils ré solvent.
-S- Que je ré solusse,	que tu ré solusses,	qu'il ré solût,
que nous ré solussions,	que vous ré solussiez,	qu'ils ré solussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

The above verb has two -E- participles past. *Résolu*, is used when *Résoudre*, is employed to express, *to resolve;* and *Résous*, is used when employed to express, *to dissolve.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Se ré soudre, *to be dissolved, to melt.*

Compound tenses with ETRE, *to be.*

Ab soudre, *to absolve,* | Dis soudre, *to dissolve.*

These two last verbs, have no -J- preterit definite, nor -S- imperfect of the subjunctive.

Their compound tenses are conjugated with the simple tenses of AVOIR, *to have;* to which is added the -E- participle past, ABSOUS.

RIRE *to laugh.*

-A- Rire.	-O- Riant.	-E- Ri.
-F- Je ris,	tu ris,	il rit,
nous rions,	vous riez,	ils rient
-H- Je riais,	tu riais,	il riait,
nous riions,	vous riiez,	ils riaient.
-J- Je ris,	tu ris,	il rit,
nous rîmes,	vous rîtes,	ils rirent.
-L- Je rirai,	tu riras,	il rira,
nous rirons,	vous rirez,	ils riront.
-N- Je rirais,	tu rirais,	il rirait,
nous ririons,	vous ririez,	ils riraient.
P-	ris,	qu'il rie,
rions,	riez,	qu'ils rient.
-Q- Que je rie,	que tu ries,	qu'il rie,
que nous riions,	que vous riiez,	qu'ils rient.

-S- Que je risse, que tu risses, qu'il rît,
que nous rissions, que vous rissiez, qu'ils rissent.

Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Sou rire, *to smile.* | Se rire de, *to laugh at.*

The compound tenses of *Se rire de*, are conjugated with ETRE.

ROMPRE *to break.*

-A- Rompre. Rompant. -E- Rompu.

-F- Je romps, tu romps, il rompt,
nous rompons, vous rompez, ils rompent.

-H- Je rompais, tu rompais, il rompait,
nous rompions, vous rompiez, ils rompaient.

-J- Je rompis, tu rompis, il rompit,
nous rompîmes, vous rompîtes, ils rompirent.

-L- Je romprai, tu rompras, il rompra,
nous romprons, vous romprez, ils rompront.

-N- Je romprais, tu romprais, il romprait,
nous romprions, vous rompriez, ils rompraient.

-P- romps, qu'il rompe,
rompons, rompez, qu'ils rompent.

-Q- Que je rompe, que tu rompes, qu'il rompe,
que nous rompions, que vous rompiez, qu'ils rompent.

-S- Que je rompisse, que tu rompisses, qu'il rompît,
que nous rompissions, que vous rompissiez, qu'ils rompissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Cor rompre, *to corrupt.* | Inter rompre, *to interrupt*

SUIVRE *to follow.*

-A- Suivre. -C- Suivant. -E- Suivi.

-F- Je suis, tu suis, il suit,
nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent.

-H- Je suivais, tu suivais, il suivait,
nous suivions, vous suiviez, ils suivaient.

-J- Je suivis, tu suivis, il suivit,
nous suivîmes, vous suivîtes, ils suivirent.

-L-	Je suivrai,	tu suivras,	il suivra,
	nous suivrons,	vous suivrez,	ils suivront.
-N-	Je suivrais,	tu suivrais,	il suivrait,
	nous suivrions,	vous suivriez,	ils suivraient.
-P-		suis,	qu'il suive,
	suivons,	suivez,	qu'ils suivent.
-Q-	Que je suive,	que tu suives,	qu'il suive,
	que nous suivions,	que vous suiviez,	qu'ils suivent.
-S-	Que je suivisse,	que tu suivisses,	qu'il suivît,
	que nous suivissions,	que vous suivissiez,	qu'ils suivissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Pour suivre, *to pursue, to prosecute.* | S'en suivre, *to follow, to result.*

This last verb is only used in the third person singular of every tense.

TRAIRE *to milk.*

-A-	Traire.	-C- Trayant.	-E- Trait.
-F-	Je trais,	tu trais,	il trait,
	nous trayons,	vous trayez,	ils traient.
-H-	Je trayais,	tu trayais,	il trayait,
	nous trayions,	vous trayiez,	ils trayaient.
-J-		(*none*)	
-L-	Je trairai,	tu trairas,	il traira,
	nous trairons,	vous trairez,	ils trairont.
-N-	Je trairais,	tu trairais,	il trairait,
	nous trairions,	vous trairiez,	ils trairaient.
-P-		trais,	qu'il traie,
	trayons,	trayez,	qu'ils traient.
-Q-	Que je traie,	que tu traies,	qu'il traie,
	que nous trayions,	que vous trayiez,	qu'ils traient.
-S-		(*none*)	

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have.*

Conjugate after the same manner—

Abs traire, *to abstract.*
At traire, *to attract, to entice.*
Dis traire, *to distract, to divert.*
Ex traire, *to extract.*
Ren traire, *to fine draw.*
Re traire, *to redeem an estate.*
Sous traire, *to subtract, to hide, to conceal, to take away.*
Se sous traire à, *to avoid, to escape, to withdraw one's self from.*

Se soustraire à, is conjugated with ETRE, *to be*

VAINCRE *to vanquish, to conquer.*

-A- Vaincre. -C- Vainquant. -E- Vaincu.

-F- Je vaincs, nous vainquons,	tu vaincs, vous vainquez,	il vainc, ils vainquent.
-H- Je vainquais, nous vainquions,	tu vainquais, vous vainquiez,	il vainquait, ils vainquaient.
-J- Je vainquis, nous vainquîmes,	tu vainquis, vous vainquîtes,	il vainquit, ils vainquirent.
-L- Je vaincrai, nous vaincrons,	tu vaincras, vous vaincrez,	il vaincra, ils vaincront.
-N- Je vaincrais, nous vaincrions,	tu vaincrais, vous vaincriez,	il vaincrait, ils vaincraient
-P- vainquons,	vaincs, vainquez	qu'il vainque, qu'ils vainquent.
-Q- que je vainque, que nous vainquions,	que tu vainques, que vous vainquiez,	qu'il vainque, qu'ils vainquent.
-S- Que je vainquisse, que nous vainquissions,	que tu vainquisses, que vous vainquissiez,	qu'il vainquît, qu'ils vainquissent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.

Conjugate after the same manner—

Con vaincre, *to convince.*

VIVRE *to live.*

-A- Vivre. -C- Vivant. -E- Vécu.

-F- Je vis, nous vivons,	tu vis, vous vivez,	il vit, ils vivent.
-H- Je vivais, nous vivions,	tu vivais, vous viviez,	il vivait, ils vivaient.
-J- Je vécus, nous vécûmes,	tu vécus, vous vécûtes,	il vécut, ils vécurent.
-L- Je vivrai, nous vivrons,	tu vivras, vous vivrez,	il vivra, ils vivront.
-N- Je vivrais, nous vivrions,	tu vivrais, vous vivriez,	il vivrait, ils vivraient.
-P- vivons,	vis, vivez,	qu'il vive, qu'ils vivent.

-a-	Que je vive,	que tu vives,	qu'il vive,
	que nous vivions,	que vous viviez.	qu'ils vivent.
s-	Que je vécusse,	que tu vécusses,	qu'il vécût,
	que nous vécussions,	que vous vécussiez,	qu'ils vécussent.

The Compound Tenses are conjugated with AVOIR, *to have*.
Conjugate after the same manner—

Re vivre, *to revive.* | Sur vivre, *to survive.*

***Alphabetical List of Verbs, that form the Compound Tenses with* être ; *or sometimes with* avoir, *and sometimes with* être.**

1. There are in the French language about six hundred neuter verbs, which, like the active verbs, take the auxiliary verb *avoir* to have, to form their compound tenses. The only exceptions are the following: of which some take *être*, and some take either *être* or *avoir*, according to the sense in which the verb is to be employed.

2. *ê* put after some of the following verbs indicates tha they form their compound tenses in French, with *être* to be although, perhaps, conjugated with *avoir* to have, in English *a*, *ê*, put after some of the following verbs, indicate that they sometimes form their compound tenses with *avoir* to have, and sometimes with *être* to be.

3. Those verbs marked *a*, *ê*, take *avoir* when they are meant to express the action, thus:

Monsieur A... a demeuré à Paris.
Mr. A... has lived in Paris.

4. They take *être* when they are meant to express the state, thus:

Monsieur A... est demeuré à Paris pour ses affaires.
Mr. A... has remained in Paris for his business.

Aborder, *a*, *ê*,	*to land.*	apparaître, *a*, *ê*,	*to appear.*
accoucher, *a*, *ê*,	*to bring forth*	arriver, *ê*,	*to arrive, to happen*
accourir, *a*, *ê*,	*to run to.*	avenir, *ê*,	*to happen, to chance*
accroître, *a*, *ê*,	*to increase.*	cesser, *a*, *ê*,	*to cease, to leave off*
aller *ê*,	*to go.*	changer, *a*, *ê*,	*to change.*

choir, ê, *to fall.*
convenir, *a, ê* *, *to agree, to suit, to*
croître, *a ê*, *to grow.* [*become.*
décamper, *a, ê*, *to decamp, to run away.*
décéder, *ê*, *to die, to decease.*
déchoir, *a, ê*, *to decay.*
décroître, *a, ê*, *to decrease.*
demeurer, *a, ê*, *to remain, to stay.*
descendre, *a, ê*, † *to come down, to go down, to descend.*
devenir, *ê*, *to become.*
disconvenir, *ê*, *to deny, to disown.*
disparaître, *a, ê*, *to disappear.*
échapper, *a, ê*, *to escape.*
échoir, *ê*, *to become due, to fall to the lot of.*
échouer, *a, ê*, *to run aground, to miscarry.*
éclore, *ê*, *to be hatched, to blow, to blossom.*
embellir, *a, ê*, *to embellish.*
empirer, *a, ê*, *to make worse, to grow worse.*
entrer, *a, ê*, † *to enter, to go in, to come in.*
expirer, *a, ê*, *to expire.*
intervenir, *ê*, *to intervene.*
mésavenir, *ê*, *to succeed ill.*
monter, *a, ê*, † *to ascend, to go up, to come up.*
mourir, *ê*, *to die.*
naître, *ê*, *to be born.*
partir, *ê*, *to depart, to set off*
parvenir, *ê*, *to attain, to reach.*
passer, *a, ê*, † *to pass.*
périr, *a, ê*, *to perish.*
provenir, *ê*, *to proceed, to come from.*
rajeunir, *a, ê*, *to become young.*
redescendre, *a, ê*, *to come down again, to go down again.*
redevenir, *ê*, *to become again.*
remonter, *a, ê*, † *to ascend again, to go up again, to come up again.*
rentrer, *a, ê*, † *to re-enter, to go in again.*
repartir, *ê*, ** *to set off again.*
repasser, *a, ê*, *to pass again, to re pass.*
ressortir, *a, ê*, *to go out again.*
rester, *a, ê*, *to remain, to stay.*
résulter, *a, ê*, *to result, to follow.*
retomber, *ê*, *to fall again.*
retourner, *ê*, *to return, to go back,*
revenir, *ê*, *to come again, to come back again.*
sortir, *a, ê*, † *to go out.*
survenir, *ê*, *to befall, to happen.*
tomber, *ê*, *to fall.*
vieillir, *a ê*, *to become old*
venir, *ê*, *to come.*

* Convenir *to agree*, takes *avoir* to have, and convenir *to suit, to become, to fit, to be expedient, to be proper*, takes *être* to be.

† Several grammarians conjugate with *avoir* to have, the verbs which are marked thus † in the above list, only when they have *a direct object* :‡ thus, *nous avons passé le fleuve* we have crossed the river. They conjugate the same verbs with *être* to be, when they have no direct object, thus: *La procession est passée* the procession has past.

However, most of the grammarians use these verbs as they do any other marked *a, ê*, that is, they conjugate them with *avoir* to have, whether they have *a direct object*‡ or not, if they are meant to express *an action*, and they conjugate them with *être* to be, when they are meant to express *the state.*

** Repartir *to set off again*, is conjugated with *être* to be, but repartir *to reply*, is conjugated with *avoir* to have.

‡ By *direct object* we understand, in French, the noun or pronoun which is governed in the objective case by the verb, and not by any preposition.

Alphabetical List of all the Irregular, Defective, *and* Unipersonal *Verbs, of the four conjugations, with reference to the pages where they are to be found conjugated.*

However numerous the irregularities of an irregular verb may be, they never occur but in the simple tenses; the compound tenses of all the verbs *regular* or *irregular*, *defective* or *unipersonal*, are all formed in the same manner; that is, with the addition of *avoir* to have, or *être* to be, to the participle past of the verb to be conjugated.

Some verbs have the compound tenses conjugated with *avoir*, others with *être*, others sometimes with *avoir*, sometimes with *être*, according to the sense in which the verb is to be employed. In the following list the letter *ê* put after a verb indicates that the compound tenses of that verb are to be conjugated in French with *être*, although perhaps conjugated with *avoir* to have, in English. And the letters *a*, *ê*, indicate that the compound tenses of that verb are to be conjugated sometimes with *être*, sometimes with *avoir*. Those verbs after which neither *ê* nor *a*, *ê*, are put, have, of course, their compound tenses conjugated with *avoir*.

A list of all the verbs, whose compound tenses are to be conjugated with *être*, or sometimes with *être* and sometimes with *avoir*, is given, page 160.

N. B. Any verb not found in this list, is regular, and must be conjugated on *parler* if the present of the infinitive ends with *er;* on *finir* if it ends with *ir;* on *recevoir* if it ends with *evoir;* and on *rendre* if it ends with *re*.

*** *Some verbs, although regular, have been put in this list of irregular verbs, in order to call the attention of the learner to some peculiarities concerning these verbs.*

A

Abattre	*to pull down, to throw down, to fell* .	battre . . 141
s'abattre, ê . . .	*to fall down*	battre . . 141
aborder, a, ê . .	*to land* (see page 160)	parler . . 38
absoudre	*to absolve*	résoudre . 155
s'abstenir, ê . .	*to abstain, to refrain*	tenir . . . 132
abstraire	*to abstract*	traire . . 158
accoucher, a, e .	*to bring forth* (see page 160) . . .	parler . . 38
accourir, a, ê . .	*to run to, to hasten to* (see page 160.)	courir . . 126
accroire	*to make one believe*	croire . . 145
accroître, a, ê . .	*to increase, to accrue, to augment* (see page 160)	croître . . 145
s'accroître, ê . .	*to increase*	croître . . 155
accueillir . . .	*to welcome, to receive well, to receive kindly*	cueillir . . 127
acheter	*to buy, to purchase* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . 38

achever	*to finish, to accomplish* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99).	parler . .	38
acquérir	*to acquire*	acquérir .	124
adjoindre . . .	*to associate, to adjoin, to give an assistant, to give a colleague* . . .	joindre .	149
admettre. . . .	*to admit, to allow of*	mettre . .	150
aliéner	*to alienate* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . .	38
alléguer	*to allege* (see page 49, art. 100) . .	parler . .	38
aller, ê	*to go*	aller .	122
s'en aller, ê . . .	*to go away*	s'en aller .	112
amener	*to bring* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) .	parler . .	38
amonceler . . .	*to heap* (see page 48, art. 91) . . .	parler . .	38
apparaître, a, ê .	*to appear, to make one's appearance* (see page 160)	paraître .	152
appartenir . . .	*to belong to, to become well*	tenir . .	132
appeler	*to call* (see page 48, art. 91) . . .	parler . .	38
apprendre . . .	*to learn, to hear of*	prendre .	154
appuyer	*to support* (see page 50, art. 103) .	parler . .	38
arriver, ê . . .	*to happen, to chance, to fall out, to come to pass* (see page 160) . . .	neiger . .	123
arriver, ê . . .	*to arrive* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
assaillir	*to assault*	assaillir .	125
asseoir	*to set something or somebody down, to lay some thing or some body down*	s'asseoir .	134
assoir	*idem*	s'assoir .	135
s'asseoir, ê . . .	*to sit down (one's self)*	s'asseoir	134
s'assoir, ê . . .	*to sit down (one's self)*	s'assoir .	135
astreindre, . . .	*to subject, to oblige, to compel, to force, to constrain*	joindre .	149
s'astreindre, ê . .	*to confine one's self*	joindre .	149
atteindre. . . .	*to overtake, to reach, to catch* . . .	joindre .	149
atteler	*to put to* (see page 48, art. 91) . .	parler . .	38
attraire	*to allure, to attract, to entice* . . .	traire . .	158
avancer	*to advance* (see page 50, art. 101) .	parler . .	38
aveindre	*to take out, to fetch out*	joindre .	149
avenir, ê	*to happen, to chance, to come to pass, to fall out* (see page 160) . . .	tenir . .	132
avoir	*to have*	avoir . .	10
y avoir	*there to be*	y avoir .	20

B

battre	*to beat, to strike*	battre . .	141
se battre, ê . . .	*to fight, to combat*	battre . .	141
blasphémer . . .	*to blaspheme* (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler . .	38
boire	*to drink*	boire . .	142
bouillir	*to boil*	bouillir .	125
bourreler. . . .	*to torment* (see page 48, art. 93) . .	parler . .	38
braire	*to bray*	traire . .	158
bruiner	*to drizzle*	neiger . .	123
bruire	*to roar, to make a great noise to rustle, to rattle*	réduire	155

C

cacheter	*to seal* (see page 49, art. 95) . . .	parler .	38
ceindre	*to gird, to encompass*	joindre	149
céler	*to conceal* (see page 49, art. 100) . .	parler	38
célébrer	*to celebrate* (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler	38

cesser, a, ê . . .	*to cease, to leave off, to discontinue,* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
chanceler . . .	*to stagger* (see page 48, art. 91) . .	parler . .	38
changer, a, ê . .	*to change* (see p. 160 & 59, art. 102)	parler . .	38
choir, ê	*to fall* (see page 160)	choir . .	135
circonscrire . . .	*to circumscribe*	écrire . .	147
circonvenir . . .	*to circumvent, to deceive, to delude, to cozen*	tenir . .	132
clore	*to shut, to close*	clore . .	143
colleter	*to collar* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) .	parler . .	38
combattre . . .	*to fight, to combat*	battre . .	141
commettre . . .	*to commit*	mettre . .	150
comparaître . .	*to appear, to give evidence*	paraître .	152
complaindre . .	*to complain to*	joindre .	149
complaire . . .	*to humour, to please, to comply* . .	plaire . .	153
se complaire, ê . .	*to delight, to take delight in* . . .	plaire . .	153
comprendre . .	*to understand, to include, to comprehend, to contain, to inclose* . . .	prendre .	154
compromettre . .	*to compromise, to expose*	mettre . .	150
se compromettre, ê	*to expose one's self*	mettre . .	150
conclure	*to conclude* (see page 51, art. 104) .	conclure .	143
concourir . . .	*to concur*	courir . .	126
conduire	*to conduct, to lead, to carry, to take a person to a place*	réduire .	155
confire	*to preserve, to pickle*	confire . .	143
congeler	*to congeal* (see page 48, art. 93) . .	parler . .	38
conjoindre . . .	*to conjoin*	joindre .	149
connaître . . .	*to know, to be acquainted with* . .	paraître .	152
conquérir . . .	*to conquer, to vanquish*	acquérir .	124
consentir . . .	*to consent, to agree*	sentir . .	130
construire . . .	*to construct, to build*	réduire .	155
contenir . . .	*to contain, to hold*	tenir . .	132
se contenir, ê . .	*to refrain*	tenir . .	132
contraindre . . .	*to constrain, to force, to compel, to oblige*	joindre . .	149
contredire . . .	*to contradict*	dire . . .	146
contrefaire . . .	*to counterfeit, to imitate, to mimic, to forge,*	faire . .	148
contrevenir . . .	*to infringe, to act contrary to* . . .	tenir . .	132
convaincre . . .	*to convince, to persuade*	vaincre .	159
convenir, a, ê . .	*to suit, to fit, to become, to agree, to be expedient, to be proper* (see page 160)	tenir . .	132
coqueter	*to coquet* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99 .	parler . .	38
corrompre . . .	*to corrupt*	rompre . .	157
coudre	*to sew, to stitch*	coudre . .	144
courir	*to run, to hunt*	courir . .	126
couvrir	*to cover, to shelter*	ouvrir . .	130
craindre	*to fear, to be apprehensive, to be afraid*	joindre . .	149
croire	*to believe, to think*	croire . .	145
se croire, ê . . .	*to rely upon one's own judgment* .	croire . .	145
croître, a, ê . .	*to grow, to increase, to augment* (see page 160)	croître . .	145
cueillir	*to gather, to pick up, to collect* . .	cueillir . .	127
cuire	*to cook, to bake, to smart*	réduire .	155

D

débattre	*to debate*	battre . .	141
se débattre, ê . .	*to struggle*	battre .	141

décacheter . . .	*to unseal* (see page 49, art. 95) . .	parler . .	38
décamper, a, ê, .	*to decamp, to run away* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
décéder, ê, . . .	*to die* (see page 160 & p. 49, art. 100)	parler . .	38
décéler	*to betray, to detect* (see p. 49, art. 100)	parler . .	38
déchoir, ê, . . .	*to decay, to have fallen from, to have abated from*	déchoir .	136
déclore	*to unclose*	clore . .	143
décolleter . . .	*to uncover the neck* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . .	38
déconfire . . .	*to defeat totally*	confire . .	143
déconstruire . .	*to take to pieces, to disunite, to analyze*	réduire .	155
découdre . . .	*to rip*	coudre . .	144
découvrir . . .	*to discover, to uncover*	ouvrir . .	130
décrire	*to describe, to depict*	écrire . .	147
décroire	*to disbelieve*	croire . .	145
décroître, a, ê, .	*to decrease, to become less,* (p. 160)	croître . .	145
décuire	*to render syrup more liquid* . . .	réduire .	155
dédire	*to disown, to unsay*	dire . . .	146
se dédire, ê, . .	*to recant, to retract*	dire . . .	146
déduire	*to deduct, to take from*	réduire .	155
défaillir	*to fail, to faint, to swoon, to decay* .	faillir . .	128
défaire	*to undo, to defeat*	faire . .	148
se défaire, ê . .	*to part with, to get rid of, to rid one's self of*	faire . .	148
dégeler	*to thaw* (see page 48, art. 93) . . .	neiger . .	123
déjoindre . . .	*to disjoin*	joindre .	149
démentir . . .	*to contradict, to belie, to give the lie* .	sentir . .	130
se démentir, ê . .	*to belie one's self, to contradict one's self*	sentir . .	130
démettre . . .	*to disjoint, to put out of joint* . . .	mettre . .	150
se démettre, ê . .	*to resign, to have put out of joint one's wrist or ankle*	mettre . .	150
demeurer, a, ê . .	*to dwell, to live, to inhabit* (p. 160) .	parler . .	38
démouvoir . . .	*to cause one to desist*	mouvoir .	136
départir	*to distribute, to divide, to share, to allot*	sentir . .	130
se départir, ê . .	*to desist, to give up, to swerve* . . .	sentir . .	130
dépecer	*to carve* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) .	parler . .	38
dépeindre . . .	*to describe*	joindre .	149
déplaire	*to displease*	plaire . .	153
se déplaire, ê . .	*to be displeased with*	plaire . .	153
dépourvoir . .	*to deprive, to leave destitute* . . .	pourvoir .	137
déprendre . . .	*to loosen, to disengage*	prendre .	154
déprévenir . .	*to unprepossess*	tenir . .	132
dérompre . . .	*to break down*	rompre .	157
désapprendre . .	*to unlearn*	prendre .	154
descendre, a, ê .	*to descend, to come down, to go down* (see page 160)	vendre . .	78
desservir . . .	*to clear a table, to take away, to do an ill office to*	servir . .	131
déteindre . . .	*to discolour*	joindre .	149
dételer	*to unteam, to unyoke* (p. 48, art. 91)	parler . .	38
détenir	*to detain, to keep*	tenir . .	132
détruire	*to destroy, to annihilate*	réduire .	155
se détruire, ê . .	*to kill one's self, to decay, to fall to ruin*	réduire	155
devenir ê . . .	*to become, to become of* (see page 160)	tenir .	132

dévêtir	*to strip, to undress*	vêtir . .	133
se dévêtir, ê . .	*to divest one's self, to leave off part of one's clothes*	vêtir . .	133
dire	*to say, to tell*	dire . .	146
disconvenir, ê . .	*to deny, to disown* (see page 160) .	tenir . .	132
discourir	*to discourse, to talk about*	courir . .	126
disjoindre . . .	*to disjoin*	joindre .	149
disparaître, a, ê .	*to disappear* (see page 160) . . .	paraître .	152
dissoudre . . .	*to dissolve, to melt, to break up* . .	résoudre .	155
se dissoudre, ê . .	*to dissolve, to be dissolved*	résoudre .	155
distraire	*to distract, to divert, to amuse, to take from*	traire . .	158
dormir	*to sleep*	dormir . .	127

E

s'ébattre, ê . . .	*to take one's pleasure, to make merry, to be merry*	battre . .	141
ébouillir	*to boil away*	bouillir .	125
échapper, a, ê . .	*to escape* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
échoir, ê	*to chance, to happen, to fall out, to fall to, to expire, to be due, to fall due* (see page 160)	échoir . .	136
éclairer	*to lighten*	neiger . .	123
échouer, a, ê . .	*to run aground, to miscarry,* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
éclore, ê	*to come to life, to be hatched, to blossom, to open, to blow* (see page 160)	éclore . .	147
éconduire . . .	*to refuse, to discard in a polite manner, to refuse delicately*	réduire .	155
écrire	*to write*	écrire . .	147
élire	*to elect, to choose*	lire . . .	149
embattre . . .	*to lay the tire of a wheel*	battre . .	141
embellir, a, ê . .	*to embellish* (see page 160)	finir . .	54
s'emboire, ê . .	*to imbibe, to soak in*	boire . .	142
émettre	*to express, to set forth*	mettre . .	150
emmener . . .	*to take away* (see p. 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . .	38
émoudre	*to whet, to sharpen, to grind knives* .	moudre .	151
émouvoir . . .	*to move, to stir up, to excite* . . .	mouvoir .	136
s'émouvoir . . .	*to be moved, to be concerned* . . .	mouvoir .	136
empirer, a, ê . .	*to make worse, to grow worse* (p. 160)	parler . .	38
employer . . .	*to employ,* (see p. 50, art. 103) . .	parler . .	38
empreindre . . .	*to imprint, to stamp*	joindre .	149
enceindre . . .	*to enclose, to encompass*	joindre .	149
enclovre	*to surround, to enclose*	clore . .	143
encourir	*to incur*	courir . .	126
endormir . . .	*to cause to sleep, to lull asleep* . . .	dormir . .	127
s'endormir, ê . .	*to fall asleep*	dormir . .	127
enduire	*to plaster, to do over*	réduire .	155
enfriendre . . .	*to transgress, to infringe, to violate*	joindre .	149
s'enfuir, ê . . .	*to run away*	fuir . . .	128
enjoindre . . .	*to enjoin*	joindre .	149
s'enquérir, ê . .	*to inquire*	acquérir .	124
entreluire . . .	*to shine a little*	réduire .	155
s'entremettre, ê .	*to interpose, to meddle*	mettre . .	150
entrer, a, ê . .	*to enter, to come in, to go in* (p. 160)	parler . .	38
entreprendre .	*to undertake*	prendre .	154
entretenir . .	*to entertain, to maintain, to keep up*	tenir .	132

s'entretenir, ê . .	*to discourse with*	tenir .	132
entr'ouïr . . .	*to hear imperfectly*	ouïr . .	130
entrevoir . . .	*to glimpse at, to have a glimpse of* .	voir . .	140
s'entrevoir, ê . .	*to see each other*	voir .	140
entr'ouvrir . . .	*to open a little*	ouvrir .	130
envoyer	*to send*	envoyer .	123
épreindre . . .	*to squeeze out, to wring*	joindre .	149
s'éprendre, ê . .	*to be smitten*	prendre .	154
équivaloir . . .	*to be equivalent*	valoir . .	139
espérer	*to hope* (see page 49, art. 100) . . .	parler . .	38
essayer	*to try* (see page 50, art. 103) . . .	parler . .	38
éteindre	*to extinguish, to put out*	joindre .	149
étinceler . . .	*to sparkle* (see page 48, art. 91) . .	parler . .	38
étiqueter . . .	*to label* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) .	parler . .	38
être	*to be*	être . .	24
étreindre . . .	*to bend close, to tie close*	joindre .	149
exclure	*to exclude* (see page 51, art. 104) . .	conclure .	143
expirer, a, ê . .	*to expire* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
extraire	*to extract*	traire . .	158

F

faillir	*to fail, to have like to*	faillir . .	128
faire	*to do, to make, to cause*	faire . .	148
falloir	*to be necessary* (*must*)	falloir . .	136
feindre	*to feign, to dissemble, to pretend* . .	joindre .	149
ficeler	*to tie with pack thread* (p. 48, art. 91)	parler . .	38
fleurir	*to bloom, to blossom to be prosperous, to flourish*	fleurir . .	128
forclore	*to debar*	clore . .	143
forfaire	*to fail, to trespass*	faire . .	148
frire	*to fry*	frire . .	148
fuir	*to run away, to fly, to flee, to avoid, to shun*	fuir . . .	128

G

geindre	*to whine, to moan*	joindre . .	149
geler	*to freeze* (see page 48, art. 93) . .	neiger . .	123
gésir	*to lie*	gésir . .	129
grasséyer . . .	*to lisp* (see page 50, art. 103) . . .	parler . .	38
gréler	*to hail* (see page 49, art. 100) . . .	neiger . .	123
grésiller	*to rime*	neiger . .	123

H

haïr	*to hate*	haïr . .	129
harceler	*to torment* (see page 48, art. 93) . .	parler . .	38
hypothéquer . .	*to mortgage* (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler .	38

I

importer	*to matter*	neiger . .	123
induire	*to induce, to engage*	réduire .	155
inquiéter . . .	*to make uneasy* (see p. 49, art. 100) .	parler . .	38
inscrire	*to inscribe, to write down*	écrire . .	147
s'inscrire, ê . . .	*to enter one's name in a register* . .	écrire . .	147
instruire	*to instruct, to teach*	réduire .	155
interdire	*to interdict, to forbid*	dire . .	146
interrompre . .	*to interrupt*	rompre .	157
intervenir, ê . .	*to intervene* (see page 160) . . .	tenir . .	132
introduire . . .	*to introduce*	réduire .	155

J

jeter	*to throw, to cast* (see page 49, art. 95)	parler . .	38
se jeter, ê . . .	*to cast one's self* (see page 49, art. 95)	parler . .	38
joindre	*to join, to unite*	joindre .	149
se joindre, ê . .	*to unite*	joindre .	149

L

lècher	*to lick* (see p. 49, art. 100)	parler . .	38
lire	*to read*	lire . . .	149
luire	*to shine, to glitter, to sparkle* . . .	réduire .	155

M

maintenir . . .	*to maintain, to keep up*	tenir . .	132
se maintenir, ê .	*to keep up*	tenir . .	132
malfaire	*to do mischief*	faire . .	148
maudire	*to curse*	dire. . .	146
méconnaître . .	*to disown, to mistake, to neglect, to forget, not to know*	paraître .	152
se méconnaître, ê	*to forget one's self*	paraître .	152
mécroire	*to disbelieve*	croire . .	145
médire	*to slander, to speak ill of*	dire. . .	146
méfaire	*to misdo, to do wrong*	faire . .	148
mener	*to lead, to take to* (p. 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . .	38
mentir	*to lie, to tell a lie*	sentir . .	130
se méprendre, ê .	*to mistake*	prendre .	154
mésavenir, ê . .	*to succeed ill* (see page 160) . . .	tenir . .	132
mésoffrir . . .	*to underbid*	ouvrir . .	130
messeoir	*to be unbecoming*	seoir . .	139
mettre	*to put, to place*	mettre . .	150
monter, a, ê . .	*to mount, to ascend, to go up* (p. 160)	parler . .	38
moudre	*to grind* (*grain*)	moudre .	151
mourir, ê . . .	*to die* (see page 160)	mourir . .	129
se mourir, ê . .	*to be dying*	mourir . .	129
mouvoir	*to move, to stir*	mouvoir .	136
se mouvoir, ê . .	*to move*	mouvoir .	136

N

naître, ê	*to be born* (see page 160)	naître . .	151
négliger	*to neglect* (see page 50, art. 102) . .	parler . .	38
neiger	*to snow*	neiger . .	123
niveler	*to level* (see page 48, art. 91) . . .	parler . .	38
nuire	*to hurt, to do an ill office*	réduire .	155

O

obtenir	*to obtain*	tenir . .	132
offrir	*to offer, to propose, to present a person with*	ouvrir . .	130
s'offrir, ê . . .	*to offer one's self, or itself*	ouvrir . .	130
oindre	*to anoint*	joindre .	149
omettre	*to omit*	mettre . .	150
ouïr	*to hear*	ouïr . .	130
ouvrir	*to open*	ouvrir . .	130

P

paître	*to graze, to feed*	paître . .	152
se paître. . . .	*to feed upon*	paître . .	152
parfaire	*to perfect, to complete*	faire . .	148

paraître	*to appear, to seem*	paraître .	152
parcourir . . .	*to run over, to go through*	courir . .	126
partir, a, ê . .	*to set out, to go away, to depart* (see page 160)	sentir . .	130
parvenir, ê . . .	*to arrive, to attain, to reach* (p. 160)	tenir . .	132
passer, a, ê . . .	*to pass* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
payer	*to pay* (see page 50, art. 103) . . .	parler . .	38
peindre	*to paint, to describe*	joindre .	149
peler	*to peal* (see page 48, art. 93) . . .	parler . .	38
pénétrer . . .	*to penetrate* (see p. 49, art. 100) . .	parler . .	38
périr, a, ê . . .	*to perish* (see page 160)	finir . .	54
permettre . . .	*to permit, to allow*	mettre . .	150
plaindre	*to pity*	joindre .	149
se plaindre, ê . .	*to complain*	joindre .	149
plaire	*to please*	plaire . .	153
pleuvoir	*to rain*	pleuvoir .	137
poindre	*to dawn, to shoot forth, to peep* . .	poindre .	154
posséder	*to possess* (see page 49, art. 100) . .	parler . .	38
poursuivre . . .	*to pursue, to prosecute*	suivre . .	157
pourvoir	*to provide, to furnish with, to supply with*	pourvoir .	137
se pourvoir, ê . .	*to provide one's self*	pourvoir .	137
pouvoir	*to be able, to can, to be at liberty to, may*	pouvoir .	138
prédire	*to foretell, to predict*	dire . .	146
prélire	*to read over previously*	lire . . .	149
prendre	*to take*	prendre .	154
prescrire	*to prescribe, to order, to command* .	écrire . .	147
se prescrire, ê . .	*to lose by prescription*	écrire . .	147
pressentir . . .	*to foresee, to have a foresight of* . .	sentir . .	130
prévaloir . . .	*to prevail, to predominate, to be prevalent*	valoir . .	139
se prévaloir, ê . .	*to take advantage, to glory in, to pride in*	valoir . .	139
prévenir	*to anticipate, to prevent, to prejudice, to prepossess, to forewarn* . . .	tenir . .	132
prévoir	*to foresee*	prévoir .	141
produire	*to produce, to bring forth*	réduire .	155
se produire, ê . .	*to put one's self forward*	réduire .	155
projeter	*to project* (see page 49, art. 95) . .	parler . .	38
promettre . . .	*to promise*	mettre . .	150
se promettre, ê .	*to hope for*	mettre . .	150
promouvoir . . .	*to promote, to advance*	mouvoir .	136
proscrire	*to proscribe, to banish, to outlaw* . .	écrire . .	147
provenir, ê . . .	*to proceed from, to come from* (p. 160)	tenir . .	132

Q

quérir	*to go and fetch, to send for, to come for*	acquérir .	124

R

rabattre	*to abate, to beat down again, to bring down*	battre . .	141
se rabattre, ê . .	*to turn about*	battre . .	141
racheter	*to buy again* (see p. 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . .	38
rajeunir, a, ê . .	*to become young*	finir . .	54
rapiécer	*to piece* (see page 49, art. 100) . .	parler .	38

rappeler . . .	*to recall* (see page 48, art. 91) . .	parler .	38
rapprendre . . .	*to learn again*	prendre	154
rasseoir	*to set down again some body or some thing at his or its place*	s'asseoir .	134
se rasseoir, ê . .	*to sit down again*	s'asseoir .	134
ratteindre . . .	*to catch again, to overtake again* . .	joindre .	149
ravoir	*to have again*	ravoir . .	134
rebattre	*to beat again*	battre . .	141
reboire	*to drink again*	boire . .	142
rebouillir . . .	*to boil again*	bouillir .	125
recacheter . . .	*to seal again* (see p. 49, art. 95) . .	parler . .	38
recéler	*to secrete, to receive stolen goods* (see page 49, art. 100)	parler . .	38
rechoir	*to fall again*	choir . .	135
reclure	*to shut up*	conclure .	143
reconduire . . .	*to conduct back again*	réduire .	155
reconnaître . . .	*to recognize, to know again, to acknowledge, to confess, to be thankful, to reconnoiter*	paraître .	152
se reconnaître, ê .	*to recognize one's self*	paraître .	152
reconquérir . . .	*to reconquer*	acquérir .	124
reconstruire . .	*to construct again, to rebuild, to build again*	réduire .	155
recoudre	*to sew again*	coudre . .	144
recourir	*to have recourse, to run again* . .	courir . .	126
recouvrir	*to cover again*	ouvrir . .	130
recrire	*to write again, to write anew* . . .	écrire . .	147
recroître . . .	*to grow again*	croître . .	145
recueillir . . .	*to gather, to reap*	cueillir .	127
se recueillir, ê . .	*to recollect one's self,*	cueillir .	127
recuire	*to bake again, to boil again, to roast again, to do again*	réduire .	155
redéfaire	*to undo again*	faire . .	148
redescendre, a, ê .	*to come down again* (see page 160) .	vendre . .	132
redevenir, ê . .	*to become again* (see page 160) . .	tenir . .	132
redire	*to say again, to repeat, to tell again*	dire . .	146
redormir	*to sleep again*	dormir . .	127
reduire	*to reduce*	réduire .	155
se réduire, ê . .	*to amount to, to be reduced to* . . .	réduire .	155
refaire	*to make again, to do over again* . .	faire . .	148
se refaire, ê . . .	*to recover*	faire . .	148
refleurir	*to blossom again, to flourish again* .	fleurir . .	128
refrire	*to fry again*	frire . .	148
regeler	*to freeze again* (see page 48, art. 93)	neiger . .	123
régler	*to regulate* (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler . .	38
régner	*to reign* (see page 49, art. 100) . .	parler . .	38
réintégrer . . .	*to reinstate* (see page 49, art. 100) .	parler . .	38
rejoindre . . .	*to join again, to rejoin*	joindre .	149
relire	*to read over again*	lire . . .	149
reluire	*to glitter, to shine, to sparkle* . . .	réduire .	155
remettre	*to remit, to set again, to replace, to deliver up, to put back, to put again, to recognise a person*	mettre . .	150
se remettre, ê . .	*to recollect, to recover*	mettre . .	150
s'en remettre, ê .	*to refer a thing to somebody* . . .	mettre . .	150
remoudre . .	*to grind over again*	moudre .	151

remonter, a, ê . .	*to ascend again, to mount again* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
renaître	*to revive, to be born again, to spring up again, to become alive again* .	naître . .	151
rendormir . . .	*to lull to sleep again*	dormir . .	127
se rendormir, ê .	*to fall asleep again*	dormir . .	127
renduire	*to plaster anew*	réduire .	155
renouveler . . .	*to renew* (see page 48, art 91) . .	parler . .	38
rentraire . . .	*to darn*	traire . .	158
rentrer, a, ê . . .	*to reenter* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
renvoyer . . .	*to send back, to return*	envoyer .	123
repaître	*to feed*	paître . .	152
se repaître, ê . .	*to thirst after, to delight in* . . .	paître . .	152
reparaître . . .	*to reappear, to appear again* . . .	paraître .	152
repartir, ê . . .	*to set off again* (see page 161) . .	sentir . .	130
repartir	*to reply, to answer* (see page 161) .	sentir . .	130
repasser, a, ê . .	*to pass again, to repass* (see p. 160)	parler . .	38
repeindre . . .	*to paint again*	joindre .	149
se repentir, ê . .	*to repent*	sentir . .	130
reprendre . . .	*to retake, to take again, to correct, to chide, to resume*	prendre .	154
se reprendre . .	*to recollect one's self, to correct one's self*	prendre .	154
reproduire . . .	*to reproduce*	réduire .	155
requérir	*to request, to beg, to require, to exact*	acquérir .	124
résoudre	*to resolve, to solve, to decide, to unriddle*	résoudre .	155
se résoudre, ê . .	*to resolve, to be resolved, to change, to turn into*	résoudre .	155
ressentir	*to resent, to be sensible of, to feel still, to have a deep sense of*	sentir . .	130
se ressentir, ê . .	*to feel still, to have remains of, to have suffered by*	sentir . .	130
ressortir, a, ê . .	*to go out again* (see page 160) . .	sentir . .	130
se ressouvenir, ê .	*to remember, to recollect*	tenir . .	132
rester, a, ê . . .	*to remain, to stay* (see page 160) . .	parler . .	38
restreindre . . .	*to restrain, to confine*	joindre .	149
resulter, a, ê . .	*to follow, to result* (see page 160) . .	neiger . .	123
retenir	*to retain, to detain, to hold back* . .	tenir . .	132
se retenir, ê . .	*to forbear, to stop*	tenir . .	132
retomber, ê . . .	*to fall again* (see page 160) . . .	parler . .	38
retourner, ê . . .	*to return, to go back* (see page 160) .	parler . .	38
retraire	*to redeem an estate*	traire . .	158
revaloir	*to return like for like, to repay* . .	valoir . .	139
révéler	*to reveal, to disclose* (p. 49, art. 100) .	parler . .	38
revenir, ê . . .	*to come back, to return, to come again* (see page 160)	tenir . .	132
revêtir	*to give other clothes, to clothe, to dress, to invest*	vêtir .	133
se revêtir, ê . . .	*to put on one's clothes*	vêtir . .	133
revivre	*to revive*	vivre . .	159
revoir	*to see again*	voir . .	140
rire	*to laugh*	rire . . .	156
se rire, ê . . .	*to laugh at*	rire . .	156
rompre, ...	*to break*	rompre .	157
se rompre, ê . .	*to break*	rompre .	157
rouvrir .	*to reopen, to open again*	ouvrir . .	130

S

saillir	*to project, to jut out, to gush out, to leap*	assaillir	125
saluer	*to salute, to bow* (see p. 51, art. 104)	parler . .	38
satisfaire . . .	*to satisfy, to content, to comply with*	faire . .	148
savoir	*to know*	savoir . .	138
secourir	*to succour, to assist, to help* . . .	courir . .	126
se secourir, ê . .	*to help one another*	courir . .	126
seduire	*to seduce, to bribe*	réduire .	155
semer	*to sow* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) . .	parler . .	38
sentir	*to feel, to smell*	sentir . .	130
seoir	*to fit, to fit well, to become*	seoir . .	139
servir	*to serve, to wait upon, to be of use* .	servir . .	131
se servir, ê . . .	*to use, to make use, to avail one's self*	servir . .	131
severer	*to wean* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99) .	parler . .	38
sortir, a, ê . . .	*to go out* (see page 160)	sentir . .	130
soudre	*to solve, to resolve*	résoudre .	155
souffrir	*to suffer, to allow, to undergo* . . .	ouvrir . .	130
soumettre . . .	*to submit, to subdue, to conquer* . .	mettre . .	150
se soumettre, ê .	*to submit, to yield, to give up* . . .	mettre . .	150
sourire	*to smile*	rire . . .	156
souscrire	*to subscribe*	écrire . .	147
se souscrire, ê . .	*to subscribe one's self*	écrire . .	147
soustraire . . .	*to subtract, to deduct, to hide, to conceal, to take away, to withdraw* .	traire . .	158
se soustraire, ê .	*to avoid, to escape, to withdraw one's self*	traire . .	158
soutenir	*to maintain, to sustain, to support, to bear*	tenir . .	132
se soutenir, ê . .	*to stand up, to hold out*	tenir . .	132
se souvenir, ê . .	*to recollect, to remember, to remind* .	tenir . .	132
subvenir	*to relieve, to assist*	tenir . .	132
suffire	*to suffice, to be sufficient*	confire . .	143
suivre	*to follow*	suivre . .	157
s'en suivre, ê . .	*to follow from, to result*	suivre . .	157
surachéter . . .	*to overpay* (see p. 49, art. 97 & 99) .	parler . .	38
surcroître . . .	*to grow out*	croître . .	145
surfaire	*to exact, to ask too much*	faire . .	148
surprendre . . .	*to surprize, to astonish, to deceive* .	prendre .	154
surseoir	*to supersede, to put off, to suspend* .	surseoir .	139
survenir, ê . . .	*to befall, to happen, to come in unexpectedly, to come upon* (see p. 160)	tenir . .	132
survivre	*to survive, to outlive*	vivre . .	159

T

taire	*to conceal, to keep secret*	plaire . .	153
se taire, ê . . .	*to forbear talking, to keep silent, to hold one's tongue*	plaire . .	153
teindre	*to die, to colour*	joindre .	149
tenir	*to hold, to keep*	tenir . .	132
se tenir, ê . .	*to stand, to hold one's self*	tenir . .	132
s'en tenir, ê . .	*to abide by*	tenir . .	132
tomber, ê . . .	*to fall* (see page 160)	parler . .	38
tonner	*to thunder*	neiger . .	123
traduire	*to translate, to bring to justice* . .	réduire .	155
traire	*to milk*	traire . .	158
transcrire . . .	*to transcribe*	écrire . .	147

transmettre . . .	*to transmit, to convey*	mettre . .	150
tressaillir . . .	*to start up, to leap for*	assaillir .	125
trompeter . . .	*to summon with the sound of the trumpet* (see page 49, art. 97 & 99)	parler . .	38

V

vaincre	*to vanquish, to conquer, to surpass* .	vaincre .	159
valoir	*to be worth*	valoir . .	139
valoir mieux . .	*to be better*	valoir . .	139
venir, ê	*to come* (see page 160)	tenir . .	132
vêtir	*to clothe, to dress*	vêtir . .	133
se vêtir, ê . . .	*to dress, to clothe one's self*	vêtir . .	133
vieillir, a, ê . . .	*to become old* (see page 160) . . .	finir . .	54
vivre	*to live*	vivre . .	159
voir	*to see*	voir . .	140
se voir, ê . . .	*to see one's self, to visit one another*	voir . .	140
vouloir	*to be willing, to will, to wish, to wish for*	vouloir .	141

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

Preservation Technologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION
111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111


LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 003 117 911 7